

# Arifureta Chapter 301

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 The Lord's 〇〇..... Vanished?

—

Fresh aroma and faint steam were drifting inside the living room where the morning sunlight was shining in.

「Kousuke-kun. You want one more glass?」

「Ah, thank you.」

The one who was smiling faintly while pouring the after meal tea into the held out cup was Sophie Grant. Emily's mother.

Her almond-shaped eyes that closely resembled cat were exactly like Emily to the degree it would make anyone thought in acceptance that indeed, the two of them were mother and daughter.

Although, her atmosphere was different from Emily. She was very gentle. She wasn't the type with strong self-assertion and unyielding will which would be expressed through her eyes, the sharp look of her eyes gave the impression of deep thought that would see through the genuineness of something when her eyes were narrowed quietly.

She had retired currently, but her former occupation as accountant certainly felt like it suited her.

「Oi oi, Emily. Isn't it fine even if it's your mother who is serving second serving of tea, it's nothing much. Stop getting offended by trivial matter.」

「Yo, you are wrong! Don't say something strange father!」

The father, Carl was smiling wryly at Emily who was puffing out her cheeks 「Mumu-」 when seeing the sight of Kousuke getting tea poured by her mother personally. He said to her some remonstrating words.

Carl was also someone with gentle personality. His glossy blonde hair that didn't show his age seemed to be inherited by Emily. Sophie was also blond haired, but if it had to be said, Emily's hair was closer to Carl's hair.

By the way, Carl's occupation was a restaurant owner that had several branches within the country. He himself was a cook, but right now he was mostly focusing on management.

Although, his skill was the real deal. Even Kousuke who was currently freeloading in a household of Britain that was often ridiculed as the country with worst cooking had his evaluation overturned by the delicious dishes he was treated with everyday.

Emily had also received the initiation in cooking from the pro cook Carl since she was little. Recently she was especially passionate in learning, so she was good in cooking. For Kousuke, Emily's pie dishes were masterpiece.

「What are you saying, Carl? Emily also has powerful love rival. If she want to become Kousuke's number one, then she mustn't let any chance go no matter how trivial. You see, man is creature that is weak against devoted woman.」

The one who said that while elegantly sipping tea with a faint smile was Sierra Grant.

She was suffering from Alzheimer, but right now she was lucid. Perhaps it was Grant family's trait, because Sierra also had a determined almond-shaped eyes, but even her eyelids that previously were mostly closed were wide open right now.

「No, mother-in-law. Telling such graphic talk in front of the people themselves is.....」

「Carl, you are really timid no matter what. If you are a father, then you should support your daughter's battle.」

「No, that's an exaggeration, calling it a battle.」

「It's a battle right? Love is war. Without the spirit of charging forward, how will a girl make the man they are in love with into theirs.」

‘Uu’, father Carl was lost for words. He was basically unable to go against Sierra, and it wasn't just because he was her son-in-law.

Unyielding, hating to lose, with a strong will that was like steel. Those were the nature of the grandmother of Grant family.

Without a doubt Emily's inside was similar with her grandmother. She was still immature and would immediately get teary eyed, she hadn't gotten out from the stage of putting up a false courage or simply being obstinate, but the strength of will that allowed her to run through to the end of the Berserk incident was surely inherited from Sierra.

That *scene that was like in the past* of her father getting talked down by her grandmother in her healthy state made Emily smiled warmly and muttered.

「Fufu, grandma, you've gotten completely better. ....This too is thanks to Kousuke.」

「I'm just the intermediary. The one who did it was Nagumo.....no, it was Shirasaki who did it directly.」

「Certainly that's so, I'm also grateful to Kaori-san, and also to the de, de-de, demon king-sama but.....it was Kousuke who connected us.」

After the Berserk incident, Kousuke asked for a little favor to Hajime.

Yes, it was a request that asked whether Sierra who was afflicted by Alzheimer could be healed.

It was hard to heal a disease like Alzheimer that destroyed cerebral nerves and making the whole brain atrophying even if they used magic medicine. But, Nagumo family possessed a cheat technique. Yes, it was regeneration magic.

The subjugation of Alzheimer disease was also one of Emily's life works. Be that as it may, it was still a long way off until she could genuinely research the magic medicine in Tortus and the like.

Even if Emily was going to research remedy that could be used at earth for the

sake of everybody, couldn't at least her relative get saved first, Kousuke requested.

From Emily's point of view, actually she wished to heal Sierra with her own hand, but thinking of the disease progression, it wasn't the time for being obstinate.

Like that, Emily too went to greet the demon king-sama which doubled as making request too, but.....

Kousuke and Emily who recalled the first meeting with demon king family was,

「.....It was, a sad event huh.」

「u!? I'm sorry that I messed up! But, if possible please don't recall iiitt!」

Emily-chan put her feet on the chair, held down her head with her hands, and became small.

However, even though she put up the chariso guard, the spear of recollection couldn't be blocked.

Just what blunder Emily had made?

If here the mental state of Emily who resolved herself to have an audience with the demon king family had to be alluded, at that time she was extremely nervous. After all, she would meet the mastermind of that “sky *chudon* with one phone call incident”.

Furthermore she was told that even Kousuke who went through Lord Abyssgate transformation wasn't a match against that person. So to speak, she was going to meet Kousuke's boss.

Inside Emily-chan's head was filled to the brim with the scene of a certain Dragoo Quest's great demon king laughing loudly with evil expression inside the demon king castle.

And then, to make it worse, the atmosphere of the demon king house was a bit high tensioned. After all, from Hajime's position it was a situation that exactly felt like “Comrade♪ Comrade♪”.

And then, thinking how Kousuke would become Hauria's clan head in the

dawn of his marriage with Rana, that mean his wives would become a new Hauria family member, so naturally Shia's tension was also rising.

Lured by the two with high tension, the other wives were also getting high tensioned, and eventually they went 「If we are going to meet anyway, then let's answer their expectation and act appropriately like demon king gang!」 and set up a meeting with excessive drama.

「No, that was something that couldn't be helped. Rather, obviously it was Nagumo and others who were in the wrong with their excessive drama and mischief. Even though we were coming to visit normally, why was there a signboard of 『Human, if thou wish to have your wish granted, show me how you overcome the trial!』 at the entrance, what's more when we entered into the entranceway, the place became a dungeon. Anyone will normally get shaking in their boots.」

「Vanessa was really delighted though.」

Yes, demon king-san's mischievous drama——when someone passed through the entranceway of Nagumo house, it would become imitation Raisen Labyrinth~♪. (It was at the level of amusement park's attraction in hard mode. There was no danger involved.)

Specifically, the person entering the entrance would be send to the training artifact, the game world. At the real world, Kousuke, Emily, and also Vanessa who skipped work for the sake of meeting the demon king-sama were collapsing limply at the entrance.

According to Hajime, 「No, you see, it seems they were eager to meet with demon king, so I thought that I will prepare the trials that are appropriate for demon king until they reach the end. I'm being considerate you know?」 something like that.....

Putting aside Vanessa who was absurdly delighted, Emily was teary eyed from start to end, but she cleared it somehow with her characteristic obstinacy and her hate of losing.

Like that inside the throne room of the demon king castle that they finally reached in the game, demon king Hajime who was standing with overwhelming pressure, Yue-sama who was forming the dark clouds and lightning dragon, Tio

who was surrounding the throne in dragon form, Kaori who was floating midair with black wings like a fallen angel, the masked pink who was looking up to the sky, and others were waiting with deep atmosphere. Seeing the demon king family, Emily-chan's eyes finally rolled back showing the white of her eyes and her consciousness flew away.

Emily-chan who returned to reality opened her eyes in the living room of the Nagumo house, then she saw Hajime who was saying 「Haha, that was a great reaction you showed there」 in a good mood, and also Kousuke who was protesting 「You overdid it you idiot!」 to such Hajime, and she felt very relieved.....

*Trickle trickle trickle trickle~*

And she messed up.

The violent shame that was assaulting Emily after the relieve caused her to start crying 'waah waah'. Seeing such Emily, as expected even Hajime thought that he overdid it.

It caused the strange occurrence of the demon king-sama desperately soothing 「It's fine you know~, it's not scary at all~. Loo~k, there is only normally virtuous Japanese person who you can find anywhere here」 while apologizing.

In addition, Yue and others, the wife~s also joined altogether with the soothing after participating in something that created a black history that was too harsh for a girl.

The aftermath of Emily's blunder was also cleaned up in a flash using magic, the adult version Yue gently embraced Emily, Shia caressed her while going 'good girl good girl', Kaori and Shizuku feed her 'aa~n' with sweet confections, Myuu and Remia also talked to her kindly. Only then Emily finally got back to her feet.

.....Most likely, other than Emily, there was nobody else outside the family who ever got pampered gently and considerately until that much by Nagumo family.

「We, well, as the result grandma was healed free of charge.....when I tried talking to them everyone was really kind.....I'm not, bo, bothered anymore by

that!」

Emily-chan acted bravely. She was bothered, every time she saw Hajime she would be absurdly tense. The only salvation was that she was completely opening her heart toward Shia who was especially considerate toward her because she would join the clan.

「Even if you say that, Nagumo and others too are really off from common sense. Emily, tell me properly if something happen okay?」

Surely Hajime too would think 「I don't want the lord telling me anything about common sense」, and even Emily herself would surely think 「Kousuke too feels like that in general.....」, but the one who was there was the maiden in love Emily-chan.

She was a simple heroine who easily blushed red just from the gentle and considerate words.

Her cheeks reddened, her eyes softened from happiness, and she spoke 「Yes.....I'll tell Kousuke properly」 bashfully.

Seeing Emily staring still at him happily like that, Kousuke too also scratch his cheek shyly.....

「My, there is no need for worry looking at this isn't it?」

「Sheesh Emily, she really loves Kousuke-kun.」

「.....That small Emily, is already gone.」

The earnest words and expressions of the family caused Emily to return to her senses in surprise and she turned bright red.

To divert the attention she hurriedly tried to brew a new pot of tea and reached out her hand toward the pot. She was too flustered that she almost fell. Without delay Kousuke followed up on her. He supported her with his hand on top of Emily's hand. Emily-chan got even redder innocently.

It was a heartwarming morning of Grant family. Today Carl also had holiday, so it was a really calm atmosphere.

But, at that time, Kousuke suddenly went 「Hm? This presence is.....」 and turned his gaze to the entrance.

Right after that, *bang* the Grant house's door was opened.

「GOOD MORNING-! Kousuke-san! Your Vanessa has arrived!」

「Go home. Rather go back into soil.」

The one who leaped inside in “banzai” pose with a smart suits appearance was the investigator of Britain national security bureau, Vanessa Paradis. Her appearance was a cool beauty with very short hair, but like this she possessed an extremely disappointing personality.

She was a genuine otaku who boasted that her bible was Japanese manga. And then, she was the self-proclaimed “Kousuke-san's third wife”.

Vanessa wasn't perturbed at all even against Kousuke's sharp remark. She sat down on a chair with familiar attitude as though it was her own house.

‘I am Kousuke-san's wife. In other word, I am also Doctor Emily's relative = a member of Grant family. Any problem?’ That was Vanessa's claim.

※After the Berserk incident, Vanessa who called Emily as “Doctor Grant” now called her as “Doctor” or “Doctor Emily”. Doctor was doctor, so she wouldn't stop calling her doctor it seemed.

「Good morning Vanessa-san. Have you eaten breakfast?」

「Good morning Sophie-san. Also everyone too. Sophie-san, I haven't eaten breakfast yet. I'm hungry.」

The shameless Danessa-san gazed at Sophie with wanting eyes. The cool beauty at the beginning was nowhere to be found.

Sophie chuckled and headed to the kitchen in order to prepare the breakfast share for Danessa.

「And, what's the matter Vanessa? How is your work? Don't tell me, you aren't neglecting your work again aren't you?」

「Seriously, you are going to get fired at this rate. Recently the chief would contact me without fail when she cannot find you anywhere. Try to be at my position where every time I had to listen to that person's chilly voice.」

Emily who was asking while brewing the tea for Vanessa and Kousuke who



was giving candid advice with reproachful eyes.

Vanessa's expression changed as though she really wanted to say 「How vexing!」 and gulped her tea. It seemed she liked the taste, her mouth burst slightly into a smile before she spoke the objective of her visit.

「I'm not coming here for playing. Kousuke-san, we wish to at least be informed when his majesty the demon king came. He came yesterday correct? The chief sent me here, telling me to ask about that matter.」

「Eh? It's amazing that it was noticed. Even though he teleported directly inside the house and then left by teleporting again.」

Hajime teleported directly in consideration so that the bodyguards from the security bureau living around the house wouldn't be spooked. And yet the security bureau also couldn't be underestimated seeing how it was exposed to them like this. Kousuke's eyes widened in admiration.

「From that reaction, as expected his majesty visited here isn't it?」

「Geh, so that was a trap question.」

「Yes. Actually there was a sighting report from another place. It seems that person burned down a part of a forest, our office grasped the information from that commotion.」

「Just what is that guy doing today right after yesterday!? Or rather, what happened!?!」

Yesterday Hajime said that he had date with Shia so he left the rest to Kousuke before leaving. It seemed after that he burned down a part of forest in the northern Britain.

Emily-chan was trembling heavily with teary eyes just from listening to the story. Even Carl and Sierra who were acquainted with Hajime said 「Uwaa」 with a creeped out look.

「The possibility is extremely high that person will contact Kousuke-san if he is in Britain, that's why, why did he burn the forest, what is he planning in this country? Now, Kousuke-san. —Please spit it out.」

「Why am I interrogated!? I don't know anything!」

「No way..... You promised the chief right? That you will report it when doing something in this country. The chief thought that there must be a reason that Kousuke-san didn't call, so I was expressly dispatched here like this, and yet, this is horrible. The salmon sandwich I bought while going to work for my breakfast got thrown into shredding machine before I could eat it and then I got chased out right from the morning to come here. Please talk in deference to such me.」

「No seriously. Certainly that guy came here yesterday, but it was for different matter. I haven't got any idea at all why he would do arson. Also the chief, she is seriously merciless toward Vanessa huh.」

Kousuke raised a dry laugh.

By the way, the shredding machine of security bureau that Chief Magadanese was personally supervising would shred anything.

Whether it was important documents, or Vanessa's rabbit ears hair band, or Allen's smartphone, or Vanessa's santa hat, or Allen's specially made alloy metal chip that was stuffed with the bureau's female members' information, or Vanessa's bible, or the expensive tribute ring that Allen prepared for 「I don't know when the ideal woman who I should give this to will appear after all!」, or even Vanessa's salmon sandwich, the shredding machine could turn anything and everything into pieces in one go.

Recently in the security bureau, it was repeated occurrence that each time the shredding machine was making *whir whir* sound, the bureau members would twitch and tremble, wondering just whose thing was being shredded this time.....

The prided iron woman of Britain mustn't be angered.

The shredding machine of the national security bureau chief-sama was in the process of turning into her symbol.

Kousuke coughed and told Vanessa of Hajime's objective for coming here and his request.

It was at that timing that Sophie finished making breakfast and brought it to the living room, so Vanessa was listening while eating with sparkling eyes.

The crunchy and savory bread, the melting syrupy butter. The fluffy scramble egg, the crispy and juicy bacon. The golden colored vegetable soup that was warming the body until the core.....

「.....Vanessa, are you listening?」

「Yhes? Ih'm hislening yhou nhow? Fhlease, honcinyu」

Munch munch, munch munch, hafuu~ delish-!

The way she was eating made Kousuke doubted whether she was really listening but, 'well fine' Kousuke continued his explanation.

When the explanation was over, Vanessa was also wiping her mouth clean with a napkin at the same time.

「I see. Kousuke-san is receiving another troublesome request with that. Ah, Sophie-san, thank you for the breakfast. It was really delicious.」

「Every time I see it Vanessa-san is always eating with gusto. It makes me feel good seeing you eat happily like that.」

「I've shown you something embarrassing. Because of the bureau's duty, it became a habit to eat quickly no matter what. I am thinking that I should fix this habit, but the meal was delicious that I unconsciously.....」

「You are an investigator of the security bureau. Your body is the asset for your work, so don't be reserved, come anytime to eat okay?」

Based from that warm and fluffy conversation, on the contrary of her words, it seemed that she cared more about "Grant family's breakfast" than "investigation toward Vatican". As expected, perhaps this SOUSAKAN was beyond saving already.

「Vanessa.....you, are you coming for eating breakfast or for work, just which one it is huh.」

「A superior investigator like me is able to do both simultaneously.」

「Is that so.....」

Kousuke could only send a fixed stare at Vanessa who said that with a sharp expression.

「However, if that person's incident is unrelated with this then.....I'm beaten. We are completely unable to grasp his trail after the forest arson. Was there no contact from that person after that?」

「No, I didn't receive any call. I'll try asking him for a bit just what is he doing.」

Kousuke called Hajime from the smartphone that was prepared for the clone in Grant house. However, there was only the announcement of 'signal doesn't reach~' coming and the call didn't connect.

「It cannot connect..... It's a rare chance where that person is in our country, so the chief said that she wish to use this chance to give her greeting no matter what though.....」

「No, it's better to stop that. After all, he is in the middle of date with Shia-san.」

「That's.....certainly.」

「Well, the plan for the conference at Japan is still not realized yet, so it's not like I don't understand the chief's feeling.」

「Yes. How the Grant family went to Japan by themselves unnoticed also caused the chief to feel plainly shocked. This matter is pretty much determined to be the matter of highest priority, so if that person just give the OK, the chief is planning to match that person's convenience as much as possible and head there immediately.」

「Nagumo too is busy with various things after all. It's sad that this matter for that guy isn't that high in his priority.」

For Hajime, there wasn't much merit for him to have connection with Britain's security bureau. If it was about connection, then it was enough to just go through Kousuke. Hajime was entrusting Kousuke with that responsibility.

And so, Hajime's priority was his own project and the simplification of the gate to go to Tortus, then the troublesome matter that was actually befalling him.....it would be great if it was something like that, but for Hajime this matter was at the level of happy family activity > meeting with the chief-san.

So far as it went, Hajime himself too had set up a day several times where it

was convenient for him, but the timing was bad and it was Chief Magdanese who was unable to match the schedule no matter what at those occasions.

After all, the connection with Hajime would only be in her position as the security bureau chief, she wouldn't be acting as the representative of Britain government. If she carelessly spread the connection with Nagumo family and some fellow who meddled with them appeared, that would affect the national security with certainty.

Within her overlapping busy schedules, Chief Magdanese had to act in a way where her surrounding wouldn't suspect her, what's more she had to be absolutely secretive before she could go outside the country for the conference with the demon king.

Because of that, the schedules of the two sides kept missing each other, and the current situation was where there was still no prospect for the conference.

「It can't be helped. I'll report to the chief exactly what I'm told here. Although, we will want to hear about the circumstance of the arson, so if that person contact, will Kousuke-san please notify us?」

「Hm, well, I'll do that. As expected, I'm also curious.」

When the talk came to a stop, Vanessa more or less also had the self-awareness that she was in the middle of work, so she stood up from her seat. She was planning to quickly return to the bureau and gave her report.

「Regarding Vatican, I don't think that we will be able to be of assistance, but just in case, I'll report this to the chief too. Also, if it's information regarding company, we too are able to get our hand on it easily, so if we understand something from our side, we will notify you.」

「About the company, it seems Nagumo will take care of it himself so I think it will be fine but.....I guess. I'll depend on you.」

Vanessa nodded, then she said 「Well then everyone, let's meet again at dinner」 full of motivation to pester for dinner while leaving.

But, at that timing, Kousuke's expression suddenly stiffened and he stopped moving.

「Kousuke? What's the matter? Have you snapped seeing Vanessa's shamelessness?」

Emily tilted her head and asked. But, Kousuke didn't react even to her question. He was staring still at empty air without a single twitch.

「Kousuke-san?」

「Oi oi, just what's the matter?」

The expression of Vanessa and Carl became dubious. Sophie and Sierra were also gradually looking worried.

「He, hey, Kousuke? What's wrong? Answer me, please!」

Emily's voice finally turned anxious while her hands were shaking Kousuke's shoulders.

There Kousuke's gaze finally moved toward Emily as though he finally came back to life and he opened his mouth.

「-, there was a bit of something with my real body. Right now, he is around Vatican's.....perhaps it's a library or a monastery I think but.....it exploded a bit.」

It seemed something happened with the real body. His words were a bit ambiguous because he instantly saw Emily's expression and so he spoke in a way to not worry her excessively.

Though it seemed that it brought the opposite effect. For Emily and others it instead became the basis of imagination of a serious situation. Everyone's expression was tense from the sudden serious atmosphere that visited.

Although, this was about Kousuke. From the point of view of Emily and others, he was the fantasy strongest hero that was outside common sense. There was no way anything bad would happen to him.

And so, they were watching Kousuke's condition with a vaguely optimistic feeling, but.....

That feeling was literally pulverized like illusion.

「-!? What!? Red mist!? Is it poison gas!? Shit-, it's one thing after another!」

Perhaps Kousuke had no leeway to really control the clone. Most likely, the clone was tracing the words from the real body as they were, conveying the urgent situation.

And then, time flowed for a bit with the situation still being unknown.....

Suddenly, the clone body slipped out a faint words with his gaze still directed at empty air.

——Sorry, for making a stupid choice

Surely those words weren't something that Kousuke actually wanted to convey to Emily and others through his clone. Surely, it was the feeling inside his heart leaking out.

With that small voice as the last, Kousuke——

Vanished.

「Eh?」

It was the dumbfounded voice of Emily. Her expression said that she didn't understand at all what happened.

But, the reality was right before her eyes.

No, there was none.

Kousuke, the clone of Kousuke who was always beside her, had vanished.

「Eh? Eh? Kou, suke?」

There was no one who responded even when she called.

Her mind was still unable to catch up with the reality.

Because this was strange. Kousuke's clone body was excellent. As long as it wasn't lethally wounded or Kousuke himself still existed, it wouldn't vanish that easily.

And then, the clone body in this Grant house was for Emily's protection. Even though he had to hold the burden that couldn't be made light of from the routine magic power consumption, Kousuke had never erase this clone body no matter what.

Therefore, in other words, this was.....

The proof that “something” happened to Kousuke that caused him to be unable to maintain his clone body.

「—!!!? Kousuke! Kousuke-!!」

Emily whose thought finally reached that stage became panicked and raised her voice.

「-. Please calm down, doctor!」

「There is no way I can calm down! Kousuke is-, something happened to Kousuke!」

Seeing Emily who completely lost herself, Vanessa who was also stiffening seemed to recover her calm slightly instead.

She strongly grasped the shoulders of the deranged Emily who was shaking her head in denial and,

「EMILY GRANT-!!!」

「——」

She called her name strongly. As though to make her came back to her senses.

Emily twitched in reaction to the voice of Vanessa that was filled with dominating aura. After that the focus of her eyes was finally returning.

「Vanessa.....」

「Please calm down. Doctor Emily, nothing will be solved even if you panic.」

The expression and voice of the cool-headed and professional Vanessa that she met at the very beginning made Emily to recover her calm for sure this time.

Emily took a deep breath. She sent Vanessa a gaze with eyes that had recovered their strong radiance and she opened her mouth.

「Vanessa, what do you think we should do?」

Vanessa nodded once toward those words. While Sophie, Carl, and also Sierra



were staring at Vanessa with held breath, she answered.

「What we know right now is that Kousuke-san's main body is at Vatican, and something happened there. And then there is high possibility that even the common tourists are witnessing that “something”.」

「Ah, I see. Kousuke said that he was around a place like Vatican's library or monastery before.」

Carl and others also hummed in agreement and continued.

「He also said something about explosion. The Vatican garden adjacent to it is a tourist attraction. Although it can be visited only on a subscription basis, at this time there should be some tourist there.」

「It's something so great that make Kousuke-kun lost composure. It could be, that the tourists at the cathedral, the plaza, or the art museum also noticed the explosion.」

「I see. What Vanessa-san wish to say is that gathering information is simple, isn't that right?」

‘Exactly’, Vanessa nodded. Before long the commotion that occurred in Vatican would surely got broadcasted. At the very least, the objective fact of “An explosion occurred inside Vatican” should be reported grandly. If they coordinated with the intelligence department, they should be able to obtain quite a lot of information.

「Anyway, I will report to the chief. If it's the chief, she will surely obtain information somehow about what happened to Kousuke-san. Although, personally I'm not that worried. Even if he is unable to maintain his clone, if it's that Kousuke-san then he will surely get in touch with us no matter what kind of situation it is.」

「.....Yes. Yes, you're right, Vanessa!」

This was the hero that they believed in. He was going to be absolutely all right. Yes, she strongly believed that.

「The problem was at our side instead. I think it will be all right but, now that the absolute protector Kousuke-san is gone, what's going to happen to Grant

family.....」

「Is there a possibility of us getting targeted?」

Vanessa shook her head at Carl's question that was asked with a grave voice.

「No, currently there is no sign of anything like that. Just as we told you all some time ago, we made it so everyone thought that the Berserk incident has come to an end, there is no problem. Although, there is something on my mind. The reason Kousuke-san headed to Vatican.」

「.....It was because Vatican is gathering information of returnees.」

「Yes. And then, there is the uproar this time. It will be fine if this is just me over thinking it but, we shouldn't be taking an optimistic view. Doctor, also everyone else too. I recommend everyone to evacuate temporarily to the security bureau for the time being.」

Certainly, if this was a case that was related with the returnees, not just Kousuke, even Grant family that was connected with Nagumo family which was the core of the returnees might get affected in some way. Such possibility couldn't be said to not exist.

Till the end it was only at the level of "just in case", but nothing could beat being prepared.

「Yes. I agree with Vanessa's suggestion. It also seems like the information about Kousuke will reach the security bureau faster, it will be smoother to rely on the security bureau's strength to decide how we should act from here on.」

「.....You're right. There is also the chance of the worst case. Vanessa-san, my apologize but can we depend on you?」

「Of course. I will also contact the bodyguards at the vicinity, everyone please make your preparation.」

Vanessa who was taking action promptly was an active elite investigator who was excellent as expected. She made calls one after another, reported to Chief Magdanese too, and concluded the arrangement quickly.

Like that, several bodyguards from security bureau who were living around Grant house gathered, pretending that they would have a fun outing together

with neighbors to deepen their relationship. It looked like they were clamorously enjoying themselves if seen from the side, however they were nervous inside their heart. The group departed toward the security bureau.

—

—

—

A virtuous looking man who was watering the garden in front of a certain house, a male worker who was cleaning the street, an old man walking his dog, a young woman jogging— they were staring fixedly at the cars procession of Emily and others.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

For some reason it became like the latter part of prologue.

The story doesn't progress, I'm sorry (sweat)

There were a lot of questions in the review column, so I'll explain.

About the timeline of the school trip, I'm thinking to make the school trip arc to happen after the Vatican arc.

And so, about the little girl onmyouji (?) who appeared for a bit, Kousuke hasn't meet her yet.

I'm thinking to write it someday, so at that time it will help if you readers think of it as happening after Vatican arc.

—

PS

Thank you very much for the many suggestion for Fleur Knights candidates!

'Ah, come to think of it...' There are also characters who I noticed like that, they are greatly of use as reference.

I want to introduce the rank eight and ninth when I'm writing about Fleur Knights again.

Also, from the review, I noticed that the previous chapter was the 300<sup>th</sup> chapter.

Thank you very much for the congratulating comment!

—

PS2

Just in case, I also wrote this at the beginning of the previous arc, so please pay attention.

This work is—fiction! It's completely unrelated with actual organization, country, or institution!

Vatican came out here, but it's the Vatican of fiction world.

Please be understanding even if facility or section that originally doesn't exist in reality appear.

Please be so kind to put on your mind filter.

# Arifureta Chapter 302

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Dear Sir, Nagumo-sama. Vatican Is Really Bad News, Seriously

—

A little bit before Emily and others witnessed Kousuke's disappearance and went to the security bureau.

Kousuke who arrived at Roma late at night was staying in a cheap hotel like before when he was at Britain.

Although, it wasn't like before where it was really a worn out hotel, while this hotel was cheap, its quality was fine and it seemed able to cure the body that was a bit tired from the long flight by sleeping throughout the night.

Especially when there was no gun fight that was started upstairs or any intruder breaking the window and entering like in Hollywood movie. Kousuke welcomed the morning safely, finished his preparation quickly and left the hotel.

And then, he was enjoying the pleasant morning sunlight and air of foreign country while for the time being he entered into a café to have breakfast because one couldn't fight with empty stomach.

「Well, it's not like I'm going to war, it's still the first day, so I'll look around the location while sightseeing at the same time.」

Kousuke talked to himself like that while deciding the menu.

The waiter wouldn't notice even if he called out, so he went by himself to

order.

The café's auntie who only noticed that there was a Japanese customer after her shoulder got tapped showed a shocked expression, but Kousuke didn't pay it any mind. Because he was a man of experience. In stealth.

He ordered a set of croissant, salad, and several kinds of ham sliced thinly. And then a cup of cappuccino.

It wasn't salmon sandwich. It wasn't, salmon sandwich. It wasn't-!

「Oh? This cappuccino.....it's delicious.」

The cappuccino was exquisite. Inside the relieving gentle sweetness, a subtle bitterness could be felt, making him felt like he could keep drinking many cups of it. The croissant too wasn't bad. It was crispy and fluffy, with aromatic fragrance that delighted him.

「Yup, I only entered randomly but I hit the jackpot. Though they don't have salmon sandwich here.」

His seat was beside the window, so he brought his breakfast into his mouth while gazing at the townscape of Roma.

The beautiful street of stone paving, the buildings that were overflowing with atmosphere. There was no high rise building to protect the scenery, which made him felt like he was slipping into a fantasy world. The atmosphere somehow reminded him of Tortus.

Naturally, what crossed at the back of his mind was his lover, the rabbit eared Onee-san. At the next "gate opening", she would stay fully in Endo family house.

Her staying here would also be a type of test case in preparation when the "this and that" related to Hauria in Tortus had also calmed down to a certain degree and they built their base at this side, so she would come here together with several other Hauria.

Although his family would also be there, he would be living together with Rana.....

His wild delusion swelled out.

And then, Emily-chan who flew into his delusion as though in interception.

「.....」

He had finished introducing Emily to his family too, and his family had already accepted her. The Grant family too had accepted Kousuke as their family.

He had no intention of washing it away.

He had no such intention but.....actually, until now Kousuke still hadn't conveyed his feeling toward Emily clearly with words.

Even though his surrounding was approving, but his Japanese sensitivity that had been cultivated within himself since he was born was smoldering, and he was unable to express well the feeling inside himself using words. It would also be fine if there was some kind of impetus that broke through him cleanly but.....

「No, that's just my excuse. It's only me being simply good-for-nothing.....」

He mocked himself while bringing the cappuccino into his mouth and looking at Emily using the information sharing ability of his clone body. But, the cup was already empty.

Wondering just what he was doing indulging in reverie even though he was coming for a mission, the self-deprecating smile on Kousuke's lips became even deeper. He then decided for the time being to order another cup of this delicious cappuccino that he encountered in this trip.

「Excuse me~. Another cup please.」

Naturally, no one noticed him.

He walked briskly and tapped the auntie's shoulder once more.

「Hih!? Who!?!」

「.....It's the Japanese customer who ordered just now. Can I ask for another portion of cappuccino and croissant?」

After a moment, the auntie smiled while saying 「Oh my, geez, I'm so forgetful!」 to cover up her mistake before she hurriedly began to prepare Kousuke's order. She was an auntie with plump body and good-natured face, so

he couldn't hate her no matter what. Although, in the first place he was used to this treatment so he wasn't angry.

Kousuke returned to his seat in looking a bit dejected like usual. He stared at the townscape with a feeling that was different from before. The face of Kousuke who was getting a faraway look seen from the side was giving off sorrow that was unexpected to be coming from a teenage.

「Here, enjoy. Cappuccino and croissant.....」

「Ah, two of them.」

「Yes♪」

Surely the auntie understood that Kousuke liked the croissant. She took out two croissants from her basket that looked somewhat bigger and placed it on his plate in a pleasant mood.

And then, perhaps to cover up how she forgot Kousuke's existence just now, or perhaps she was merely curious, the auntie didn't leave right away and talked with Kousuke who was biting into the croissant in delight.

「You look really young. Are you with your family?」

「Aa~, no, I'm alone.」

「My! You are still in your first year at middle school right? Could it be you are an oversea student?」

「No no, I'm sightseeing here. I'm planning to go to Vatican after this. Also, I'm 18.」

「Oh my, forgive me! It's hard to understand the age of Japanese people.....」

The auntie flapped her hand looking like 「Good grief me」, then she began to talk about various things. Perhaps it was a universal truth that all auntie liked to talk, or perhaps it was just that this auntie liked to talk.

Kousuke got the feeling that it was the latter case while politely listening.

Since coming home to earth, Kousuke's footwork was light and his travelling abroad was increasing in frequency. He was enjoying the encounter in the middle of his travel——whether it was with people, thing, or anything. And so,



Kousuke also liked people who liked to talk.

Such auntie was teaching Kousuke about the sightseeing spot in Vatican, the efficient route, the delicious restaurant and little-known good sightseeing spot with a practiced way.

「Anyway, that place is completely crowded, so I recommend you to go in early morning if you want to go up to the dome. In general, the place is already packed full slightly before eleven o'clock.」

「I see. I'll keep that in mind.」

By the way, what the dome here referred to——was about the dome of Cathedral San Pierro. It was a lovely place where people could take unobstructed view of Rome and Vatican, but it was a cramped place, so often people would have to wait when it became crowded.

Kousuke who had finished his breakfast and drank the cappuccino stood up thinking that he should depart soon.

「Also you see——」

「.....」

The auntie who loved to talk seemed to continue talking. Was Kousuke a really good listener?

He was unable to say clearly that it was enough already. Kousuke whose act was typical for a Japanese in a sense sat back down.

「Recently, it looks like there are a lot of tourists here.」

「? Will there be something soon in the future?」

「No. There isn't any plan like that, that's why it's strange. From what I heard, it seems that in these few months the average number of the tourists is increasing by 1.5 times.」

This auntie incredibly loved to talk. He wondered just where did she get that data.

There was no immigration and emigration process to enter Vatican, there were also Vatican personnel that were coming back and forth to there from

Roma, so perhaps it was because of that.

Then the auntie lowered her voice slightly 「Also」 while bringing her face closer to Kousuke and said.

「The people who were coming here for sightseeing a few months ago, it looks like they are visiting here repeatedly with amazing frequency.」

「They are visiting the same place?」

The auntie nodded. It seemed that it was information that was obtained from the network of the local citizen who put their root in Rome. When he asked, it seemed there were a great number of such tourists among the customers who were visiting this café and the restaurants of the auntie's acquaintances.

There was also a possibility that those people were staying here for long because of work, but their appearance seemed to be normal couple, family, or a group of friends who came for sightseeing.

Certainly, it was a strange story.

Although, there was also the possibility of celebrity posting things about Rome or Vatican in their SNS account, causing the topic to become popular temporarily.

In fact, it seemed the auntie was also thinking that was the cause.

「I thought that you came here also because of that.....」

「Aa~, no, I'm not. Or rather, I have never heard anything like that in internet though.」

「Isn't that right? I also tried investigating what kind of celebrity is popularizing this area, but I didn't find anything like that at all. I was thinking of having you telling me if you know about it but.....it's unfortunate.」

This auntie didn't just like to talk, it appeared she was also a rumor lover & gossip lover & investigation lover.

Kousuke smiled wryly while saying 「I'm sorry of not meeting your expectation」, then there the auntie finally noticed that Kousuke had finished his breakfast since a long time ago and 「My, good grief me, I got too absorbed in talking!」. She flapped her hand while showing an embarrassed smile.

Kousuke paid the bill and headed to Vatican while thinking that he had just heard a strange story since the morning.

It was a rare chance, so he tried slowly experiencing walking through the “Via della Conciliazione” where the cathedral was visible ahead. His smartphone’s camera kept making clicking sound.

He would show it to his family when he returned home. He also took selfie. Currently, a supernatural phenomenon like the camera failing to capture Kousuke’s image had never happened.

Before long the plaza and obelisk of San Pietro came to view. There he could see the Swiss guard standing gallantly with colorful outfit and stiff posture, and the tourists who were visiting early.

「Oo.....as expected, it’s a great view.」

The cathedral in front of him went without saying, the line of pillared corridor with several hundred trees surrounding the plaza, and then more than a hundred saint statues lining up above it were also stunning.

「It can’t be helped that I have to hurry because of the mission but.....as I thought, it’s better to come to this kind of place in group rather than alone.」

He didn’t hate travelling alone, but as expected it was better if there was friend, family, or lover to speak their impression to each other and shared the feeling. Kousuke looked around at the tourists around him while speaking to himself feeling a bit lonely.

Putting that aside, he changed his feeling while subtly tensing his expression.

「.....The auntie said that it will be crowded around 11 o’clock but.....there is already quite a lot of people here.」

It appeared that the story about the number of tourists increasing suddenly was a fact. Even though the time was still around nine o’clock, a quite large crowd had formed.

Kousuke pulled himself back together and thought a bit 「Now then, what to do from here」.

Actually some time ago he tried to contact Hajime to ask him to confirm the

location of the person who stole the information from the aforementioned company, but the signal didn't connect.

In the first place, they didn't know if the thief was really from Vatican, so this was to confirm it for sure. If it was true then it would be easy to investigate.

Although, it was pointless to plead for something that didn't exist. In his first plan, he was thinking to climb to the dome and took a bird-eye view of the whole place but.....

When he looked, there was already a line formed in front of the entrance to the dome.

「It's not like I can just climb physically but.....」

There were two ways to get up to the dome. First was to climb using elevator until midway and then continuing to climb using stair, or climbing the stair right from the beginning, but there would be more than 500 steps if people used the stair right from the start, so most people used the elevator.

Although, even after using elevator, people would still need to climb more than 300 steps, in addition the stair was getting narrower the more one climbed higher.

If it was Kousuke then he could climb without feeling bothered by that, even so this situation wasn't suited to look around the surrounding without rushing.

「H~m. Well, I'm here already, let's wait while also sightseeing a bit.」

He would try waiting for one or two hours. If it looked like the queue wasn't smooth at all, he would use the outer wall and climb physically. He was thinking of such absurd thought while changing his smartphone into selfie mode and walked.

—

—

—

About two hours from then.

Kousuke whose heart was completely stolen by the solemn and wonderful

works of arts and structures returned to his senses suddenly due to the hunger that he slightly felt.

「Crap. I was completely absorbed. Even though I'm in the middle of mission, I was normally sightseeing instead. ....How terrifying, Vatican. It's too beautiful.」

Kousuke pretended to wipe the sweat that didn't even come out.

It wasn't like he would get scolded by doing this, but somehow it felt like he would get rebuked 「What are you doing slacking off like that」 by Hajime, so he tried to cover it up acting like a completely timid person.

It wasn't like he was going around looking at everything, but he had went around quite much at the places that were open to public, so he thought that he should soon start infiltrating for real under the pretense of “I'm just normally intruding here, any problem?” and acted to realize that.

But, at that time,

「Hm?」

Kousuke stopped moving from the strange presence that he suddenly felt. He closed his eyes to concentrate a bit, and then, his gaze turned under his feet——more accurately toward the ground as though he was seeing through to the underground.

「There is underground passage? Well, it seems underneath the cathedral is a tomb, and it's not strange even if there is a underground passage that isn't open for public but.....」

The problem was, the current location of Kousuke and the direction the person walking underground was heading to.

「.....An underground passage that is connected to outside, huh.」

Yes, Kousuke right now was at the edge of the northwest side of Vatican's art museum. And then, the person walking underground was heading to the north without stopping. It was obvious that there was an underground passage that was connecting outside and inside.

Kousuke who got interested got outside from the door of the Vatican's art museum, then he followed the direction where the person underground was

heading to.

Not much time had passed before he arrived at a slightly old four storey building standing inconspicuously between buildings. The first floor seemed to be a general store, where it looked like the item selection and the shopkeeper got no motivation.

Perhaps the upper floor was for living place. Even though it was afternoon, the curtain was closed and the situation inside couldn't be observed.

Because it was close to tourist attraction spot, quite a lot of people were passing by, but no one even turned their gaze toward the general store.

That was how inconspicuous and quiet the atmosphere of the building was.

「.....The person went up huh. Directly to the fourth floor without even showing their appearance.」

Kousuke was observing the general store from the other side of the street without particularly hiding it. He sensed the presence of the person underground going up the aforementioned building.

When he tried detecting the presence inside, it seemed there was no one at the second and third floor, but there was just one person at the fourth floor.

For now, he would try searching inside. Deciding that, Kousuke was going to move, but before he could a person appeared a few meter beside him crossing the street.

He casually turned his gaze toward that person. It was a young man with hair of ash brown color and a face that looked really sullen. Although, his height was around 170 cm. He was wearing a really normal looking trouser and hoodie while carrying a large leather rucksack on his back.

「.....」

Looking in a glance, he looked like a local without anything particularly standing out, he could also be thought as a tourist.

But, Kousuke understood. At the very least, this young man wasn't someone with respectable occupation.

The way he moved and the motion of his gaze showed it. But it was the

atmosphere enveloping him that especially gave the feel of “someone familiar with fighting”. It wasn’t a sense that was grounded from definite basis, but Kousuke who had survived through the carnage in Tortus somehow understood it.

As expected, the young man watched his surrounding slightly before entering into the aforementioned general store with a nonchalant face.

He then chatted for a bit with the shop owner who looked unmotivated.

「Nice timing there.」

Kousuke started walking toward the general store with a faint smile.

He entered the store casually.

Normally, Kousuke would be able to enter inside without anyone paying attention even without him doing anything. In fact, even though Kousuke felt a bit down of that fact, he still entered the store without doubting that fact, but.....

Here unexpectedly,

「.....」

「——tsu」

The young man saw Kousuke.

It wasn’t that his gaze was accidentally directed at Kousuke. He detected someone entering the store and his gaze moved toward Kousuke accurately.

Kousuke praised himself how he was able to stop the bewilderment inside his heart to show out.

He headed toward the spot where drink was sold inside the store without missing a beat.

(He noticed me? Certainly I didn’t even use any invisibility but.....seriously?)

Inside his heart, 「This isn’t the time to feel happy isn’t it, me!」 he calmed his heart like that while thinning his presence bit by bit by reinforcing his invisibility.

The gaze that was fixed on him slowly moved away.

「? What's the matter, Aziz?」

「.....Nothing. I'm going.」

「Yeah, good work.」

Their conversation continued with a naturalness as though no one else was there. The young man called Aziz then went up the stair inside the store.

Kousuke normally followed behind him.

The store owner looked as though he didn't even notice him when he passed through him. Kousuke's invisibility was in different dimension from Presence Isolation. It was something that truly should be called as "Presence Thinning", in situation where he was seriously turning invisible, it would become something dreadful where a normal person wouldn't notice even when he waved his hand in front of their eyes.

「.....?」

(Seriously!? He isn't noticing me, but this guy, he is at least feeling something out of place!)

The young man suddenly turned around inside the cramped stair and tilted his head. Kousuke immediately leaped up to the ceiling and stuck there, so the young man's gaze didn't find him.

「Is it.....just my imagination?」

The young man muttered that and shook his head, then his sullen face became even more sullen in discontent while he rushed until the fourth floor as though to pull himself together.

(From Nagumo's story, the guy who stole the information about us from Reletense Company wore tight coat and mask, and also using primitive weapon. Well, there is no way he can keep walking dressing like that though.....)

If that person immediately returned by riding airplane after attacking the company, then the timing would match with now. Kousuke raised his vigilance while muttering inside his heart.

There was only one door at the fourth floor. The young man called out 「..... It's Aziz」 in front of the door.



「Aziz. Welcome back, I thought you will come soon.」

The one who opened the door was a woman with the atmosphere of a refined lady, looking like she was around sixty years old. With her gentle look, it felt like she would be called “mother” by those who was close to her even if they were unrelated.

The door was opened largely and the woman moved aside to welcome in the young man.

Kousuke also slipped in following Aziz’s timing.

「.....」

「Welcome back, Aziz. ....? What’s the matter?」

Inside the room there was one more person, a man with masculine look around the middle of his thirty. Seeing Aziz looking around restlessly with a suspicious look the moment he entered the room, his expression turned doubtful and he asked the young man.

「No. It feels like someone is watching me since some time ago.」

「.....Because it’s you who possess outstandingly sharp senses is the one who said that, I cannot just deny that out of hand but.....no matter how you look, there is only us here you know?」

No, there was another at the ceiling, clinging there.

Though, of course that person didn’t say that. Although, the senses of the young man below were really worthy of praise.

(This guy is seriously not normal. To be able to notice something is out of place even when I turn invisible.)

Kousuke was feeling more nervous than usual. Below, the man stroked his chin while opening his mouth.

「Could it be there is spy camera here?」

「My. Leda-kun. If it’s about that, the regular inspection had just been done the yesterday you know?」

「If Madam Maya had checked then surely there is no doubt about it.....」

Kousuke thought. 'Doing regular check for hidden camera normally, these guys aren't normal as expected'.

This building that was connected to Vatican through underground passage..... Just who in the world these people were he wondered.

He didn't know if these people were related with what he should investigate, but at the very least they would make a nice starting point. It could be said that he hit the jackpot.

Kousuke used all his effort to turn invisible and held his breath. Ahead of his gaze, the conversation of this unknown and not normal people was continuing.

「Well, we will be careful just in case. Even so, I will leave after this for work though.」

「.....Recently, there is a lot of work isn't it?」

「Yeah. I'm sick of it, really. What about you Aziz? If I remember right, you were investigating about the danger level of that ancient ruin right?」

「Yes. That was the work of the management department.」

「I see. Recently it's not just worshipper, even corporations are also getting active.....it will be great if it's just normal relic.」

「The possibility that there are worshippers in that company is by no mean small.」

「.....It's only bad news that are coming from all over the world. These people who are searching for salvation even though they understand that it's a temptation that goes against god, they will be inevitably increasing in number.」

The man named Leda shook his head with a dark gaze.

「.....I think it can't be helped to think that the cause is the returnees.」

Kousuke was startled by Aziz's words. It was a grand jackpot. It seemed that this was a bingo.

Maya who was listening to the conversation of the two silently spoke with a slightly rebuking tone.

「Aziz. Jumping at shadows can become our greatest pitfall. We shouldn't

speaking uncertain words.]

「But.....what those guys did to our comrade」

「Certainly that's true but, in the end there is no one dead. Isn't that also a proof that they have conscience?」

「.....」

Young man Aziz sullenly fell silent looking like he wasn't convinced at all. It seemed that looking expressionlessly sullen was his default look, but right now he was definitely in a bad mood——or rather, he seemed to be sulking.

Seeing the opinions of Maya and Aziz about themselves the returnees were in opposition of each other, Kousuke was at a loss of how to judge their position.

Perhaps, Vatican and the people affiliated with it were gathering their information to try to meddle with them. Such suspicion was somewhat mollified by the peaceful and rational words of the woman called Maya.

Aziz who was childishly unable to hide his displeasure and Maya who looked troubled.

Leda was making a wry smile toward those two. In order to slightly back up Aziz who was in disadvantage, he spoke while shouldering the baggage.

「Well, there is no doubt that disquieting matter was increasing around the time of these returnees' return. Their mysteriousness and their strength that even us cannot approach.....it's not unreasonable for Aziz to be alert against them when he is thinking about his family.」

「Certainly that is true.」

Maya's expression was looking even more troubled. Leda opened the door with a teasing expression and spoke when he passed Aziz by.

「Besides, Aziz doesn't want his beloved “big sis” to come near such fellows, right?」

「Leda-san」

Young man Aziz's voice clearly contained anger. Leda said 「Oo, scary! Scary!」 and dramatically averted his face to hide his expression, then he said 「See you」

and got out.

「I hate how that person like to make fun of other.」

「H~m, Leda too was a stiff and serious child too in the past though.」

The sensitive atmosphere from before changed completely into a calm one.

Aziz turned on his heel and signaled Maya with his gaze. Maya nodded and circled to behind the desk inside the room and pulled out halfway several drawers of the desk.

And then, at the end she tapped the corner of the desk lightly.

Right after that, *gakon* there was a sound of something coming off. Aziz pushed the wall inside the room and the wall sunk inside. It seemed that it became a sliding door. After the wall was shifted to the side, there was a cramped stair going down that could be passed by one person there.

Aziz quickly slipped into that cramped stair that was located between walls. He only nodded with a gaze at Maya who was waving her hand to him smilingly and quickly closed the door.

(As expected, it's too cramped that it's impossible to slip inside together.)

Kousuke who was still clinging on the ceiling turned his gaze toward the desk. He had at least confirmed the procedure clearly, but he wasn't clear with the extent of how much the drawers had to be pulled. In the case that it was measured in millimeter, it would be quite troublesome to try it himself.

(It will be great if that Maya person will also get out though.....)

Most likely that would be asking too much. This place was most likely the outside house and also the base of these people who were affiliated with Vatican, and this Madam Maya seemed to be the manager here. It was hard to imagine that she would easily leave this place.

(Let's hope she isn't as sharp as Aziz-kun.)

Kousuke prayed so inside his heart while using the opening when Maya took her gaze off from the wall of the hidden passage to land down in front of it.

And then, he quickly summoned a clone at the other side of the wall.

Furthermore, using Hajime's specially made artifact, he switched position along with the space with his clone before erasing the clone that appeared inside the room.

In exchange, a black stone with small glint fell on the floor with a plop.

the abyss is always unevenly distributed

——Abyss-style Air Ninja Art Banei no Kagerou (TN: Banei no Kagerou = Heat haze of myriad shadows)

By the way, this substitute technique that was making use of one time use artifact, it was previously named "Banchi Zaikuu". The lord's skill name would change depending on his mood at the time! (TN: Banchi Zaikuu = Myriad earth empty existence)

I exist in the place that I seek

Kousuke who entered inside the hidden passage was following behind Aziz while keeping distance from him.

(Even so it's deep huh.....)

From his instinct, it felt like the stair descended until two floors below underground level.

When he investigated using compass while advancing, as expected this underground passage was heading toward inside the Vatican. After advancing for around 200 meters, there was a corner that was heading to the west. If the measurement he calculated inside his brain was correct, it directly passed through below Vatican's art museum in a straight line from outside, and midway the passage stretched toward the direction of Vatican's garden.

Before long, Aziz who advanced until the end of the underground passage faced the wall there and put his palm on it.

A mechanical light scanned his palm. *Kashun* a numeric keypac appeared. He typed in the password. *Vin* it made such sound and the floor slid, and a stair that headed further underground appeared.

(Why is only that place is modern huh!)

Kousuke made a tsukkomi in his heart.

After Aziz passed through, Kousuke also slipped through the floor using the same pseudo substitute technique like before toward the stair.

After going down the stair that felt like one floor below, a thick metal door appeared. It was a double leaf door that could slide to left and right, a large cross was carved at the middle.

(Finally, I arrived at the headquarters of the mysterious group.)

Following after Aziz inside the opened door, Kousuke also slipped in.

The space inside was surprisingly wide. First, the ceiling was stupidly high. He guessed that it reached 15 meter. Thick pillars were lining up in systematic order, the width and length of the space was also very spacious. The place was basically made from stone with the vital spots reinforced by metal.

A lot of people wearing habit were moving around busily, looking carefully there were passages at the sides of this space's wall.

It was an underground space that was like the smaller version of Tokyo's outer floodway that was remade into middle age style.

(Seriously.....the position, it's right under the forest in the middle of the art museum and the monastery. To think there is this kind of huge space here)

Kousuke who was overwhelmed for a while went 'hah' and returned to his senses seeing people passing him by nearby.

(If it's this scale, the possibility that someone who doesn't belong to Vatican made this underground passage secretly and planning something not good..... isn't likely huh. There is no way the Vatican side won't notice this.)

In other words, this must be a facility of something for an organization within Vatican that wasn't made public.

Kousuke weaved through the people and carefully advanced forward.

Everything that his sight caught was interesting.

The people wearing habit while doing something like crafting work on several large stands.

What their hands were holding was,

(Baton? Also.....isn't that assassin blade thing? I saw it before in movie! That's, chain? Uwaa, are they engraving cross seal on every single ring of the

chain? That one.....bow gun huh? Oi oi, they are coating the arrow with strange liquid though!? These guys are clergyman aren't they!? They are clearly making dangerous weapon though!?)

Inside Kousuke was making a storm of tsukkomi with the dangerous looking middle age weapon on parade.

Other than that, there were people intently making a written copy of a large and old book that looked like it would crumble anytime, and then even though it was underground, there was furnace and a person who was blacksmithing, people who was meeting or perhaps doing lecture while writing something on thing that was like a blackboard, people who were holding the weapons created by the previous people while doing mock battle, "scenes that weren't normal" was pressing on Kousuke like surging waves.

It was though he was taking a trip in another world, or getting into a time slip to the middle age period.

(Dear sir, Nagumo-sama. This is really bad. Vatican is really bad news, seriously. An outrageous secret is hiding underground here.)

Inside his heart, Kousuke was weeping 「I wanna go home already. I wanna eat Emily's apple pie.....」.

When he was fighting the security bureau, inside his heart he was also feeling really fed up inside his heart, but even so he got some composure in his heart. Their organization, action, and equipment were extremely within reality and common sense after all.

To think that right after he infiltrated here, that common sense would receive a beating like this. He had never even imagined it.

What's more. Since some time ago his senses felt helplessly itchy. He was thinking that it was this unrealistic space that was making him to feel that, but the people coming and going—especially the people who seemed to be training, when he looked at them, he felt a strange déjà vu.

It felt indescribably strange, like he knew them really well, but he didn't.

Like that, he was advancing deeper inside while being somewhat escaping from reality. Then he came to see an atrium that had second and third floor.

The deepest wall was shaved and made into cloister while rooms were made inside the stone wall.

At both sides, there were spiral staircase made along the pillars, furthermore there was an elevator right at the front. It was an old type with iron bars fence and steel cage that was pulled by wire.

Both the stair and elevator went through the ceiling and stretched until above. Most likely it was going until the surface.

When he noticed, the presence of the young man Aziz was inside the front room at the third floor.

It seemed that his attention was diverted from Aziz while he was getting bewildered by this space's absurdity.

He blundered. Kousuke hurriedly went to the third floor to gather information.

But, before that, he caught sight of a strange person and his legs stopped.

(.....? What is he doing?)

That person was a youth at the latter half of his teenage. He was looking up fixedly at the room that Aziz entered. What caught Kousuke's attention was his expression rather than his action.

He was terrifyingly expressionless, but it felt like there was disquieting shadow that was like malice or hostility that flickered inside his eyes.

The youth suddenly looked at his wristwatch. And then, he made a terrifying faint smile, then entered one of the side passages for some reason and lowered his body low on the ground near the wall.

It was as though, yes, as though,

「.....Anti shock posture?」

Kousuke murmured that. He got goosebumps.

Instantly, there was a terrible explosive sound. And then a raging shockwave.

「GUaAAAAAAH!?!」

It was unclear who screamed. Was it Kousuke or other people?



His senses were agitated, for an instant, he fell into unconsciousness. He didn't even have time to feel aware of his own body getting blown away. His body was struck several times, and at the end, his back collided with the wall and Kousuke finally stopped.

「Kahah!? Tsu, what-, happened!？」

The air in his lung was forcefully ejected due to the impact and his breathing was thrown out of order, but he scolded his numb body and immediately switched into battle readiness. He stood on his knee in low position while observing the situation around.

「-, explosive? It's not.....an incident.」

The secret space underground now was completely different from a moment before. Pillars were crumbling here and there, the rubbles of ceiling and wall were scattered everywhere, and “things that were human” were similarly scattered.

The atrium that reached until the third floor was also mostly destroyed, one of the stairs was collapsing. The elevator's wire was also severed. From right above that elevator, the ceiling fell and a hole until the surface ground was opened. A faint light was shining in.

It was too terrible to be an accidental explosion. Above all else, the pillars that were supporting the underground space were mostly undamaged. Seeing how the destruction was focused on the surrounding of the place where people were working, this explosion was obviously the work of someone.

Kousuke himself, if he didn't have his trained tough body and the combat outfit he was wearing on his casual wear——the clothes artifact that was weaved with metallic fiber that was provided with various defensive ability like stab-proof, bulletproof, cold resistance, heat resistance, impact resistance, and so on——he might be seriously wounded.

In fact, the impact went through that defensive ability and damaged his internal organ somewhat seriously.

Inside his heart, Kousuke cursed himself 「Idiot me, I'm too careless」 while taking out a small container shaped like a test tube and drank in the recovery

medicine inside.

At the same time, a voice of a female resounded. Although that voice was agitated, but there was dignity in it.

「Kuh, situation-, situation report! Everyone! Are you safe!?!」

Looking there, a woman came out from the room where Aziz should have entered just now. She leaned her body forward from the railing of the cloister and raised her voice.

From a glance, she was a beautiful woman. Her age seemed to be around twenty. Her soft and wavy long blonde hair, her gentle looking drooping eyes, the twin hills and tight waist that were clear to see even from above the loose habit, and then her long legs.

It appeared there was also an explosion inside the room, her clothes and hair were messed, and although there was blood trickling from her head, she had brilliance in her that couldn't harm her charm with just that much.

Surely she was giving an impression of a gentle big sister usually, but right now in this chaotic situation, her expression was becoming grave and stern seeing the dead entering her sight.

「Guh, kafuh——it's, dangerous-. Claudia-sama-」

「Aziz! Also Wynn and Anna too! You shouldn't move! You all are seriously wounded!」

From behind the female——Claudia, the young man Aziz showed up with staggering steps. His state was literally wounded all over his body. At both his sides, a blond haired youth and a girl at around the middle of her teen were standing with similar expression that was covered in blood and distorted in pain.

How were their damages different from each other even though they were in the same room? From how the woman was called using “-sama”, perhaps Aziz covered for the woman.

Claudia reached out her hand toward Aziz. At that timing, a voice was raised from the side passage.

「Claudia-sama! There's a problem! The seal-, the seal of "mirror gate" is unraveling-」

「!? Aumale, what do you mean——」

Claudia's expression was clearly paling even from afar. It seemed that a situation that was worse than this disastrous explosion was occurring.

Furthermore, the situation was moving as though to keep worsening.

「Guah!?!」

「What, you all!?!」

Scream and angry roar echoed. When everyone was taken aback looked at the voice's direction, countless people were coming down from the stair and elevator hole and started attacking the people who barely escaped from the explosion disaster.

Surprisingly, all of the intruders were dresses as though they had just sightseeing not long ago. Their appearance was like tourist, however, they were killing people without hesitation.....

The situation was rapidly worsening. The chaos was deepening, and despair was running rampant at the same time.

Kousuke too was unable to decide his next move seeing the unexpected abnormal situation that was happening one after another.

There was possibility that Vatican was gathering information of the returnees, so he came to investigate their objective and how much information they had, and yet, that Vatican was being attacked.

The side that he should help, the reason why he should help, and in the first place even the reason why he should interfere didn't come to mind.

(Should I take advantage of this chaos and search only for our information? But.....)

Kousuke's instinct was insisting to him to make sure of this situation. His danger sense was throbbing, telling him that the situation might be moving beyond salvation if he left it alone.

「Claudia-sama! Right now it's the seal! If the "key of cross" is gone, at this rate-」

「Kuh, but.....」

Claudia was holding a huge metallic cross of about two meter unnoticed. She was hesitating seeing her comrades getting attacked.

「Leave this place to us! Claudia-sama, please take care of the seal! It's only the "mirror gate" that we cannot allow to be opened! Anna, go to the chief! Aziz, Aumale! I'll leave Claudia-sama to you!」

Right after he said that, the man called Wynn leaped right away from the third floor with a demonic look. He splendidly performed the art of falling safely ukemi and went to rescue his comrades who were being attacked.

「Claudia-sama! I will bring the chief here without fail!」

「Anna!」

The girl who was called Anna too, without showing any sign of minding her face and her side that were wet with blood, from her breast pocket she took out a circular rod——from its shape it was likely to be a tonfa, and she lengthened it fully. She drove in an anchor on the stair's upper part and leaped until the stair right away like a pendulum.

And then, she descended and hit the attackers flying while rushing away with great speed.

「Kuh, Aziz.」

「I'm fine. Let's go, Claudia-sama.」

Claudia nodded in respond to the determined words and gaze of Aziz. Then she shouldered the huge cross while dashing away.

At the first floor, the man who raised his voice just now about the seal something——Aumale was waiting somewhat impatiently. He guided Claudia and Aziz in a hurry.

「Wait, oi oi, that guy..... Shit-, I don't get what's going on at all. Well, at this kind of time the best thing to do is to trust the instinct.」

Even while cursing, Kousuke manifested his clones and assisted the people wearing habit that looked like they were going to get finished off by the attackers.

At the same time, the main body of Kousuke chased after Claudia and co who vanished inside the passage.

「Wait, this is labyrinth!」

The passage was dark and there was almost no lighting. In addition after advancing for a few meters, he suddenly encountered the path branching into five roads.

Without delay Kousuke used his skill “Tracking” to search the newest footprints. He could sense their presence, but just with that he wouldn’t understand the direction. If he entered the shortest route, when actually he had to take a detour through a different path, he would have to return here. Even though it was troublesome, it was necessary to track the footprints.

「The second from the right.」

Even if ordinary person wouldn’t be able to understand it, for Kousuke, the subtle way the dust was brushed, the way the dust floated in the air, the coloring of the floor, and so on told him where the footprints were. It was just like a police dog chasing after the target’s footprints.

But, even after that he kept encountering branch roads every time he advance for around ten meter, each time he had to differentiate the footprints before moving, so he was getting left behind by the three people ahead who were moving without hesitation.

「From their presence.....this is the last branching paths?」

The presences felt really close. It seemed Kousuke’s prediction was right on the spot.

『——!? ——!!』

『——! ——』

The echo of some kind of angry yells reached him. Right after that, a short scream of a woman could also be heard.

Kousuke understood which was the right path without even finding the footprints and he was going to go there.

At that moment,

「Kuh!? What!?!」

There was “red mist” surging from deeper inside the passage. It was flowing with intense momentum like high pressure gas leaking out. The mist dyed the whole passage red in the blink of eye.

Kousuke immediately put up a barrier using his kunai.

「Red mist!? Is it poisonous gas! Shit-, incomprehensible things keep happening one after another!」

Kousuke spat out curses that he couldn't hold back while even so rushing through the last path in order to ascertain the situation. And then, ahead there was the remain of a tough metallic door. It seemed to have gotten blown away by explosion. Kousuke sent it a glance while leaping into the deepest room.

Like that, what Kousuke witnessed was,

「What, is.....this.....」

It was a large mirror. The height was three meter, the width one meter. The mirror was enclosed with terrifying relief of countless people lying on top of one another in heaps.

But, Kousuke didn't know if it should be really called a mirror.

The reason was, what was called a mirror was something that reflected the sight of its opposite side on its surface. What it reflected was the thing right in front of it. A mirror should be reflecting the stone wall, the red mist, and Kousuke on its surface.

And yet, what was reflected on that mirror—no, what could be seen at the other side of the mirror another world with rust colored cracked ground and blowing red wind that was like wind of blood. And then, the red mist that was intensely gushing out from there.

The worlds, were connected.

This was just like,

——Isn't this like Nagumo's "gate"?

Kousuke who was dumbfounded and was at a loss for words felt impact at his leg. Taken aback, he came back to his senses and looked down, over there was the young man Aziz collapsed on the ground.

「Aumale, he-, kafuh, a traito-——Claudia-sama, she-. That guy, to the world at the other side-」

「O, oi you, don't talk! You're dying!」

A large knife was stuck on his back. The position was a lethal one. And yet, the young man Aziz didn't even seem care of his own condition, his hazy eyes that were almost losing light were earnestly looking at Kousuke.

「Please-, that person——Claudia-sama, please-」

Even though he was on the verge of death, Aziz grasped Kousuke's leg with unshakeable strength. Kousuke unconsciously held his breath.

The young man Aziz acted as though "the last thing he could do was only to beg", his face that looked expressionlessly sullen all that time crumbled down, and he was pleading with tears flowing out.

「Please, I beg you-. My, big sister-, my family——please-」

「.....You」

The face of Aziz was soggy with tears. Looking from nearby, he was shockingly young, no, childish. With his tall height and sullen face, he looked like he was only a bit younger from Kousuke, but perhaps he was still thirteen or fourteen. He was about the same age like Kousuke's little sister Manami.

In the end, did this young boy understood, just who it was he was pleading at? Most likely, from his wording that seemed to be directed toward stranger, he must understood that the other party wasn't a comrade that he recognized.

Kousuke looked at the mirror that they called "mirror gate". Inside the spouting out red mist, far away, something bizarre with humanoid shape could be seen holding a human shape on its side.

Furthermore, he could see the ground undulating, and something unknown in innumerable number surging in.

Near the mirror, the thing that was carried by the “big sister” that Aziz mentioned—the woman called Claudia, the huge cross was carelessly left to lie there.

Kousuke thought.

Honestly speaking, this was already beyond his capacity. At the very least, this wasn't a matter that should be faced and dealt with alone.

The Nagumo family should come to deal with this, or at the very least he wanted them to cooperate with him. Based from what he saw at the abnormal phenomenon in front of his eyes, the case this time was undoubtedly in a dangerous level for Kousuke.

When he diagnosed himself, he was feeling strangely weary and his mind felt tired, and then he felt subtle pain around his lung. The cause was surely the red mist that he slightly came into contact with just now.

There was no guarantee that he would be able to come back if he went to the world at the other side of the mirror.

Thus, that option was the same as suicide.

This was an abnormal situation that should be dealt with, so the best thing to do was to erect a barrier that cover the whole mirror, devoted himself to defensive battle, then contact Hajime, or at the very least Yue and others and asked them for help right away.

If he had to say more, it was an impossible choice to rush into a place that was far from being unknown, it was even a place that was surely filled with extreme danger, and furthermore it was for the sake of saving a woman he didn't know. He learned what reality was in the other world. He couldn't respond to all the voices asking for help.

Such reasons why he “couldn't answer” the young man's wish were listed inside his heart, but,

「.....God.....please, grant us salvation.....please.....」



「God dammit. Those words are what I hated the most.」

Kousuke muttered with a small voice where his words couldn't even be heard. On his expression, a bitter smile surfaced, as though his answer had been decided right from the beginning.

Because this was an abnormal situation that couldn't just be left alone.

That was one reason.

Because the wish of the little brother who wished for his big sister salvation caused his own big brother and little sister to cross his mind.

That was another reason.

‘But, well, the biggest reason is.....

Cause, somehow, I’m like a hero.

I want to answer, the wholehearted trust that “those girls” directed at me.....’

His thinking that had came to a clear conclusion of “I cannot save anyone at all” in front of the reality that he experienced in the other world was brushed aside. For just a little bit, inside Kousuke.....yes, if it had to be said, a face of a “man” peeked out.

‘This ain’t a death flag right?’, Kousuke’s bitter smile deepened. But in a complete change, a strong light dwelled within his eyes.

Inside his heart, “Sorry, for making a stupid choice” he apologized to his comrades and family, and then to Rana and Emily while kneeling on one knee beside the young man Aziz.

And then, he pulled out the knife stabbing on Aziz’s back, sprinkled the recovery medicine, and then he forcefully jammed in one more bottle into his mouth.

「Drink it all like your life is depending on it, Aziz-kun. It will be meaningless if you die.」

Young man Aziz drank it all while coughing *cough-cough*- and his cloudy consciousness was getting slightly clear. He looked at Kousuke in a daze.

His expression looked as though he wanted to say that god had answered his

prayer that was asking for salvation and sent His messenger here for him.

Kousuke stood up and wore his sunglass. At the same time he threw several kunai around the glass and finished the preparation for a barrier to go up after he went in.

And then, taking position in front of the mirror, he looked back across his shoulder and spoke with a fearless smile.

「My bad, but no matter what I'm no good with god. Unfortunately I'm unable to play the part as His messenger but.....young man. I'll grant you your wish.」

He said such thing, Kousuke-san who was slightly entered by the lord.

Young man Aziz asked dumbfounded.

「You are.....who?」

Kousuke unsheathed his short sword. He took battle stance against the squirming existence at the other side of the mirror while,

「Me? I am——」

Kousuke answered just like usual.

——Just the demon king's right hand

Immediately after, Kousuke rushed into the mirror world.

In order to answer the wish of the young man who thought of his family, his big sister from his heart.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Just in case, one more time.

This is different from the actual Vatican! The stage of this work is in a fictive earth!

The organization, people, and group here are different from reality!

I'm sorry for being long-winded.

—

PS

The update of Arifureta daily life has been posted in Gardo.

I burst out laughing at Myuu's exclusive Schutaif lol What sacrilege that is really hard to describe lol

If there is something like that at the rooftop of department store or amusement park, surely it will become a hellish scene with agonizing scream.

If you like, please go there to watch Hajime-san's shuddering design sense.

# Arifureta Chapter 303

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Aby Through The Looking Glass

—

AN: ↑ Subtitle. From the review of the previous chapter, it hit the spot for Shirakome, so I used it.

You who wrote the review, thank you very much!

Thank you very much for the other readers too who are always writing fun review!

---

Bloody wind was blowing violently, cracks ran through the ground, and there were countless mountains of rubble and craters.

There were black clouds in the sky. Hell fire was running between the clouds, it was like magma overflowing from crevice on the ground. Thunder was roaring constantly, the world was being dyed with the redness of blood and flame.

“The world at the other side of the glass” —the other side of the unknown large glass hidden underground Vatican was truly a place that was worthy to be called as “hell”.

「Tsu!? —My clone!？」

The one who slipped out the shocked voice was Kousuke who rushed into hell in answer of the voice of a young man who was seeking salvation.

The moment he passed through the glass, his link with the clone at Grant

house was severed, at the same time his sense was telling him that he could summon clones at maximum number. His clone was dispelled unintentionally.

「As I thought, the world is different.....」

No matter how excellent Kousuke's clone was, it couldn't be maintained continuously when he crossed over world. Even though the clone was able to move independently, its source of power was the magic power of the main body. As expected when the connection was severed by the interval of worlds the clone became impossible to maintain.

An ashamed feeling crossed at the corner of his mind that surely he made Emily and others worried with this, but the strange and supernatural pressing situation before his eyes didn't allow for unnecessary thought.

Countless shadows were squirming inside the bloody wind that became even more terrible like a thick sandstorm.

「Shit-. How troublesome.....」

He unconsciously let out a curse.

Whether it was the condition, the environment, and then the situation, everything was the worst.

It appeared the blood wind had quite that bad effect on human body. Since the moment he stepped in here, Kousuke was feeling it all the time——the pain as though his lung was stabbed, his prickling skin as though he was burned, stamina and vitality, and then his spirit, the energies for the sake of living felt like they were slipping out from the core of his body.

This world wasn't kind at all for living person.

In addition, due to the bloody wind that was increasing in thickness and intensity, he lost sight of the strangely shaped humanoid and his rescue target.

Kousuke's Presence Detection normally had the range around 150 meters in diameter. If it was a presence that he had memorized, it was possible to continue to sense the presence within 300 meters at maximum, but he couldn't detect his target's presence within his range.

In exchange, the presences of a great number of “something” where it

seemed stupid trying to count them were astir.

Anyway, he at least understood the direction to a certain degree. He had to advance toward that direction, caught the presence of the woman within his range once more, rescued her, then escaped.

(The time limit is.....ten minutes I guess.)

He pushed up his sunglasses. He readjusted the position of the mask that was covering his lower face until his nose. He muttered inside his heart and imposed a time limit over himself.

Instantly, repulsive voices resounded directly inside his brain.

—*Human-! Human-!*

—*There is a human-! Living, human-!*

—*Feed-, feed-*

「These things talk-!? Or rather, they noticed me!?!」

To even say he was thunderstruck was not enough to express how shocked he was. In addition, he wasn't happy at all even though he got noticed. Rather, he got goosebumps and it felt like there was a block of ice sliding down his spine.

But, there was no free time to stiffen from the indescribable repulsiveness. The many "something" mixed inside the surrounding bloody wind attacked.

Their speed was like a wild cheetah assaulting their prey with its top speed. In addition, their tricky movement that made use of the surrounding rubbles and craters was like monkey freely going through sea of trees as they pleased.

The bizarre movement and abnormal speed made it next to impossible to deal with them at the first encounter. A normal human would surely get done in by the first move.

「I've got no time to care of this!」

*Hyun*, a streak of sword flash ran inside the bloody wind. Right after that, Kousuke's figure appeared a few meter ahead. His pose with one hand pushed up his sunglasses while staying unmoving was truly striking. Even though he still hadn't entered the Abyss Lord mode for real.

The result was naturally.....

The attacking “something” ——bloodshot dark red eyes, hair and teeth that grew sparsely, bizarrely long limbs, thin and ashen body that had deficit here and there. And yet it was only their stomach that was strangely bloating up. It was as though they were monster like ghoul——all their head tumbled on the ground without a single exception.

And then, they got up normally.

「No way!?!」

Kousuke-san who entered Abyss Lord mode for a bit. He reflexively returned to normal mode.

The ghoul-like things that he had definitely beheaded was regenerating their head with the cut section bubbling and swelling up. Their tumbling heads were withering rapidly and were blown away by the bloody wind.

Even during that time, the ghoul-like things attacked him one after another.

「Chih. Even though I don't have time, it's rea~lly troublesome!」

He also unsheathed his second short sword.

He dodged the incoming hands and beheaded them while passing through.

He trampled those that came crawling toward him, used those who came leaping at him as footstool, and jumped further. The kunais that he let flew using Telepathy Stone skewered five of the things altogether.

With a midair rotation, he mowed down the ghoul-like things that jumped at him, and crushed the enemy underfoot with his feet when he landed.

And then, all those enemies regenerated and got up as though nothing happened.

「They're immortal!? There is no end to it!」

They came from all directions. The rain of ghoul-like things that leaped out from the bloody wind even caused the sky to become temporarily not visible.

「Can't be helped-, ——”Black Vortex”!」

Gravity magic “Black Vortex” ——a magic that deployed gravity field to the

selected direction.

Kousuke made himself freefalling toward the sky and forcefully blew away the swarm of ghoulish things falling from over his head, opening the path to break through.

And then, below, the ghoulish things who were reaching out their hand at Kousuke were piling up to form a small mountain. He got goosebumps seeing that sight while deploying gravity field to the horizontal direction. He began freefalling toward the direction of his target.

「Guuh, it's harsh as expected-. Yue-san is seriously a monster.」

The body was burdened because it radically changed direction from freefalling to above toward horizontal direction, and also due to the enormous magic power consumption from using gravity magic continuously. Kousuke raised an anguished voice.

In actuality, the gravity magic that Kousuke could use in battle was extremely limited. The change of gravity's direction to stand on ceiling or wall, the conferment of gravity field, increase and decrease of gravity with him at the center——he could do things at that level.

If he wanted to do things like Yue, compressing the enemy to death instantly, swallowing all enemy attacks and compressed them while making a gravity sphere in return, mixing elemental magic with gravity magic, and so on, he had to spend much time on it, and he also couldn't use them consecutively.

Yue could activate something like basic gravity magic “Black Vortex” as easy as breathing without any incantation and did pseudo-flight freely with it. She made it look simple, but in actuality even that was only possible with super advanced skill of simultaneously controlling multiple gravity magic from speed adjustment and direction adjustment, and even continuous neutralization of the normal gravity.

The same like how Hajime and Shia had no magic talent and were unable to properly use gravity magic.

Although Kousuke possessed some talent, he was originally a frontliner, in addition he couldn't manipulate magic power directly, and to speak further, he



didn't even possess abnormal amount of magic power. For him, the age of god magic called gravity magic was his trump card, at the same time it was also a magic that was too advanced with bad usability.

Also, Kousuke's flight time was only around thirty seconds. Though it would be a different story if he was in Limit Break state or in the deepest state of Abyss Lord mode.

Once more he grumbled that the bride of the monster of the abyss was a monster as expected! which he wouldn't be able to say face to face even while continuously activating gravity magic desperately. However, he finally detected the presence he was expectantly looking for as the compensation of consuming magic power like crazy.

His remaining flight time was about ten-odd seconds, but his speed was that of someone freefalling. It was more than enough to close the distance of a few hundred meters.

Kousuke held his breath and shifted his mask to drink recovery medicine during that time to recover his body's damage and magic power. And then, he took out a recovery medicine from the Treasure Warehouse and moved to drink it.....

Just before he could,

——iaAAAAAAAH

There was a repulsive shriek piercing his ears.

「Kuh!？」

Kousuke instantly stopped the “Black Vortex” and shifted his trajectory by falling normally. Instantly, very bizarre creatures passed through in grazing distance to him.

They were ghoul-like things with wings of thin membrane that looked transparent. Other than wings, they had trait of sharp fangs and extremely irregular head that had their brain exposed, bringing about an unimaginable ugliness.

「What is it this time!？」

Kousuke raised his voice with irritation mixed in because he dropped the medicine when the impact from the graze in passing and because he breathed in the bloody wind without mask.

He returned his mask position to normal, at the same time he used the technique “Wood Splinter Dance” —the derivation skill of “Shadow Dance” to leap using dust and dirt midair as instantaneous foothold—to leap and avoid the “thing” that flew toward him from another direction.

But, even here the problem was the pure number of the enemies as expected.

The winged ghoul-like things that rushed at him from all directions while letting out shrieks that disturbed the mind were rapidly approaching one after another in trajectories that totally ignored aerodynamics. Finally, one of them succeeded in tackling Kousuke.

「Woaahh!?!」

——*Living-, human!*

Kousuke got cold sweat seeing the jaw that snapped close *gakin-* before his eyes. Of course, he didn’t make the blunder of getting hit directly and firmly guarded using his short sword, although no matter what he was at disadvantage midair.

He was pushed by the momentum of the enemy’s rush and they plunged through the storm of bloody wind like that. From behind, a new player came in a pincer attack!

Kousuke’s eyes slowly narrowed.

「——Can you all, stop already? ——”Gouka Beni Senpū”」 (TN: Hell Fire Crimson Whirlwind)

Whirling Dark Flame of the Abyss

Fire Ninja Art   Wind Ninja Art

Whirling Dark Flame of the Abyss

——Abyss-style Katon – Futon Combination Skill Gouka Beni Senpū

A vortex of flame swallowed the surrounding while spreading to the sky and earth. It was a defensive magic toward all direction that created a tornado of flame that was whirling with the caster at the center.

The ghoul-like thing that was biting on the short sword and also the one who

attempted to do pincer attack from behind, and not just them, even the things below and above that were looking for chance were also dragged into the magic flame altogether.

And then, *PAN* after the sound of wind bursting accompanied the disappearance of the flame tornado, the person who was pushing up his sunglasses meaninglessly.....

That was, Kousuke.....

No, starting from the irritation that the situation wouldn't progress smoothly, his binding of the heart finally came off——it was the Abyss Lord!

「Hou. It appears their regeneration is faltering before my abyssal skill isn't it?」

Lord Abyssgate was staying midair with the power of the Air Force boots while narrowing his eyes behind his sunglasses with a striking pose.

Just as he said, the winged ghoulish-like things who got hit by “Gouka Beni Senpuu” were turned into dust and carried by the wind without regenerating.

Were they weak against flame? Or perhaps because it was an attack by magic? If it was the latter, then would physical attack be effective as long as he coated it with magic power?

Although, the time to verify that was scarce.

Inside the thick encirclement where the winged ghoulish-like things were surrounding him in spherical shape, the lord made a fearless grin and readied his short swords in cross shape.

There was no particular meaning in that!

「If you think you can stop this me, the noble of the abyss, then feel free to try! The dead of the hell!」

It was unknown since when he became a noble! But, he was always introducing himself as lord, so let's not pick at minor details!

The lord bent his knee midair like a tightened coil, then the next instant, he leaped out like a cannon shell. At the same time, he activated gravity magic

“Black Vortex” once more.

He barrel rolled his body while cutting apart the winged ghoulish thing that came from the front.

Following the orbit of his slash, the two short swords carved the afterimage of shining red cross midair.

The short swords that were originally jet black were containing radiant light right now.

——Short Sword Brilliant Lightning and Flame Sword of Ruin

It was an artifact that performed “pseudo light saber transformation” by compressing advanced flame element magic to coat the sword.

Magic + blade of super high heat that melted everything. It was unclear which one of them was effective, but as expected, the winged ghoulish thing that was slashed withered and vanished without regenerating.

The lord sneered 「Fuh」 toward the things that rushed at such lord only with number as expected.

The winged ghoulish things came attacking from left and right.

「Where are you looking?」

「Your above is empty you know?」

There were two black silhouettes. They were falling from above, at the same time the heads of the two winged ghoulish things were sliced and their bodies were falling with tailspin.

A newcomer reached out its long hand from the front.

「Who do you think you are standing against?」

It was pierced from right below and vanished while getting blown away. The third black silhouettes twirled midair and took position.

The three silhouettes——the three clones surrounded the main body of the lord from left, right, and the front in delta formation.

Although the enemies were pushing using their number, the three clones attacked suicidally with the resolve of taking down the enemies with them.

When any of them vanished, a new clone would appeared from the outset and unleashed a one hit kill.

The winged ghoulish-like thing had no way to stop that advance that was like a surging wave. The lord finally broke through the encirclement.

「Muh, out already!」

At the same time, it seemed like that also meant breaking through the very thick storm of bloody wind.

*Bobah* The lord slipped through the storm of bloody wind with such sound and got out to the other side. However, he unusually lost his words and got into a daze.

「What is.....this place?」

Black clouds and cracked sky. Although the density was lowered, the bloody wind that was blowing violently and the dried and cracked ground hadn't changed.

But, there was something that made the lord gazed at wonderment.

「A, city? This place」

Yes, what was reflected in the lord's eyes was a devastated city's townscape.

There were numerous half-destroyed buildings that gave the impression of skyscraper. Roads that were bulging or gouged. There were also sections that were turned into mountains of rubbles, and also a large hole that reminded anyone watching of hell.

Far away at the other side of the spreading devastated city, there were mountains glowing red with flowing magma. A gigantic lake that seemed to be made from the magma could be seen too. The expression of "kettle of hell" was truly fitting for it.

The saying of the world of the end undoubtedly referred to this.

The lord thought that without any particular reason.

——////////

——HUMAaaAAAAAN

The lord brought down the winged ghoul-like things leaping out from inside the storm of bloody wind behind while scolding himself for stupidly getting dumbfounded like this.

He concentrated and searched for the location of the presence he detected in more detail.

And then,

「——Found you.」

The lord became a streak of shadow and rushed through the air.

—

—

—

A voice could be heard.

A repulsive voice that disturbed the heart.

The voice of the arch-enemy that she had heard for thousands, tens of thousands times.

The heat of hell and slimy shadow caressed her skin.

Aa, it was the usual dream again.....

Claudia thought so, but she wondered why.

Even though it should be a dream, it felt more real than usual.

She wondered if that demon that continued remain clinging inside her brain was something that granted pain and suffering that was this raw.

——*The time, came*

She wondered why.

Its words were different from usual. “That guy” first would sneer, and then said it. “*If the time come*”. Like that, it would the continue, saying “I’ll violate, lodge inside you, and go to the boundary of interval”.

‘Aa, I see’. Claudia understood inside her hazy consciousness.

The time, had come. The reason why “the guy” who took away both her parents let only herself escaped. It was the time, to carry it out.

It was the time, the most terrifying time!

「Uh, a?」

Buzzing and thunderous wind hit her ears. The wind that caressed her skin accompanied by discomfort and agony and the dull pain in her solar plexus were gradually awakening her consciousness.

Claudia groaned while slowly opening her eyes. She was in a state where her consciousness was still half in the dream world, but the discomfort and agony, and the intense out of place feeling that gave her the sense of weightlessness was pushing her consciousness rapidly to the surface.

「——kuh」

Her consciousness that became clear made her noticed the thing coiling around her torso. That sensation, presence that made her feeling sick in display of her soul’s rejection of that thing that was just too repulsive.

『*The time, came.*』

A terrifying sneering that was unthinkable to come from this world reached her ears.

It wasn’t a dream. It wasn’t a voice that could be heard from dream. The voice definitely, reached her ears right now!

「——!？」

Claudia raised a soundless scream. Her hazy mind was noisily raising the red alert alarm sound. The warning her soul gave her was rapidly restoring her consciousness.

『*The false kings has vanished, the annoying seal was undone. My empty body, will obtain——I’ve been waiting, Claudia. The body that will give birth to me.*』

The sneering laugh that sounded like metal getting scratched by claw resounded once more. Just from that, it felt like human’s heart could be easily turned mad. The laughing voice was just too blasphemous.

What entered the sight of Claudia who lifted up her gaze was a nightmarish reality.

“Shadow”. A condensed “shadow” that took the shape of human. Countless flames were rushing like blood vessel, spurting out from the cracks of the “shadow”. Its eyes, mouth, nose, were existences shaped by hell fire. The left arm stretching out from the thing’s body was holding Claudia’s body!

「You are——kafuh, cough-!?!」

Claudia opened her eyes wide and tried to say something, but the dull pain on her solar plexus caused her to cough.

At the same time, that dull pain shook her memory back.

「-, Aziz! Aumale!?!」

She looked around while still being carried by the thing’s arm. She could only see storm of bloody wind and desolated townscape. The people she was looking for, weren’t there.

But, the answer unexpectedly came from her arch-enemy.

『Kakaka-. If it’s that human, he already became the nourishment for my body. It was his reward for being useful.』

「A, aa, such thing.....」

“That human” ——Claudia guessed that it undoubtedly referred to Aumale.

Aumale Garret. He was Claudia’s comrade and also her subordinate. And then——the “traitor” who caused the incident this time.

Claudia recalled. Due to Aumale’s report, together with Aziz she hurried to the “hall of mirror gate” that connected to the foreign world——to “hell” in a hurry.

Aumale reported in panic that the seal of the “mirror gate” was loosening, that at that rate the “gate of hell” would open.

But, what was reflected on the eyes of Claudia who arrived at that hall was the “mirror gate” with its seal in pristine condition.

When Claudia was going to ask what was the meaning of that, it was Aziz’s



anguished voice which entered Claudia's ear.

When she turned around to see what happened, she saw the figures of the two clinging on each other as though they were embracing. It was as though, when Aziz turned around just like Claudia to ask what was going on, Aumale grappled him.

And then, her important step-younger brother fell on his knees.

They weren't related by blood. However, since the time he was taken in when he was a child with similar circumstances like her, Aziz became her family as though he was her little brother. And that beloved little brother of her was sinking on his own puddle of blood.

Why? Why, Aziz was collapsing? Why, a knife was stabbed into his stomach? Why, was so much blood flowing out like that?

Claudia who was unable to immediately understand the scene happening in front of her eyes screamed to call out at Aziz. Aumale smoothly approached her who was like that.

What Claudia remembered was the impact she felt right after that on her solar plexus, and how the "Heavenly Light Cross" she carried was taken and thrown away.

There, Claudia was taken aback with surprise and felt around her chest. Because she was made to abandon the "Heavenly Light Cross", she confirmed on her body thinking 'could it be', but.....

The result that was just as expected caused blood to leave from her expression.

*『Is this, what are you looking for?』*

「! Return it!」

Even though Claudia understood that it was pointless, meaningless, and laughable, she couldn't help but to yell it.

Something like a tentacle that was stretching out from the shoulder of the "shadow" had an antique reddish brown cross with chain attached dangling from there. That was exactly the reason why Claudia's face went pale. It was

the secret treasure that only Claudia was permitted to bring. It must not be handed over to the enemy no matter what.

In front of the “shadow” who was sneering at Claudia’s agitation, she slowly closed her eyes.

She wasn’t giving up.

It was the reverse.

It was for fighting.

She had no weapon and also no comrade, but since that day, from that time when the nightmarish scene of her childhood was carved into her heart, she had determined, resolved, and prepared herself!

「——Oh Lord, please hear the prayer of Thy child. Please grant Thy compassionate and lamenting voice within mine heart. Please bestow the divine protection to Thy devout believer——」

It was the manifestation of power that could only be used by very little part of people even within the organization Claudia belonged too. The exercise of miracle by chanting scripture.

Faint jade colored light wrapped around Claudia and burned the arm of the “shadow” that was restraining her!

But,

『*Kakaka-. Good, struggle. It’s a delicacy.*』

The unbothered sneering laugh and hell fire that was mixed with blackness coiled around Claudia. And then, an even more intense pressure assaulted Claudia. An unpleasant sound rang out from her ribs. Intense pain pierced through her brain.

「Kuh!? ——Oh Lord, I beg You to cut down the evil of the wicked, and help the righteous to stand firmly. The shield of God protects me. Those with just heart is saved by God.」

But, Claudia didn’t stop praying. She wouldn’t stop just because of pain.

The gentle phosphorescence wrapping around Claudia like firefly light was

increasing in radiance, causing the arm of the “shadow” to smoke white.

In front of such Claudia, the lump of shadow was slowly.....

『Claire? Why are you tormenting your mother?』

「-!？」

The prayer that caused miracle stopped. Though she immediately restarted,

『How horrible you are, Claire. You are still planning to torment your father?』

「Sto, stop!」

She missed those voices, and yet those voices contained hatred that stopped her prayer for sure this time.

In front of Claudia’s eyes——were the figures of her dear mother and father. The two who only had their head left.

She got flashback of that day’s scene. To shake it off, Claudia tried to strengthen the power of miracle further, but the two was looking as pained in proportion with her effort.

「u, aa——」

Shadow loomed over her determination from that day.

She understood. This was an illusion. A nightmare that this foreign world and the “shadow” showed her.

She understood.

But,

『Stop it, Claireee』

『Please, don’t hurt us even more than this』

To think, that her heart was this weak. Claudia harbored an emotion that resembled despair while stopping her words of prayer completely.

And then, the blazing hell fire. It burned Claudia’s skin as though to say that it was her punishment.

「aAAAAAAAAAAAAH!？」

『*The greatest flesh that will conceive my body. I won't destroy it.*』

But, although it wouldn't destroy the body, it seemed it didn't mean that it wouldn't torment her. Unpleasant voice that was smeared with sadism and scorn scorched the wound.

Burn scar that was like welt was carved on Claudia's body like a seal. Intense pain blocked her throat. Far from praying, even her will of resistance was messed up.

Small tears spilled out from Claudia's eyes.

The tears that were immediately blown away into nothing by the bloody wind weren't because of the pain, but because of her mortification.

She had accumulated diligent study for more than ten years for the sake of this day.

She repressed the negative emotion of hatred and resentment that would give strength to the "shadow", in order to fight with heart of purity and unselfishness, in order to negate the nightmarish childhood scene nesting inside her heart.

And yet, she couldn't do anything.

Because she was betrayed by a person who she believed in. Because she witnessed her little brother was lethally wounded. Because she didn't have any weapon in hand.

She couldn't even make those excuses.

She believed that she could do more. With the diligent study and experience she had accumulated, her daily prayers, and her faithful heart, she believed that she had been bestowed with the strength to overcome the "shadow".

But, this was the result.

「.....O Lord-, grant me Thy hand of salvation-. Lend me Thy strength-」

『*Kakaka-*』

She asked for salvation to God pleadingly, but what came back was laughing voice that fanned up disgust.

The light of salvation didn't shine down——

(O Lord, why, won't You answer me.....)

She couldn't hear God's voice——

Then, at the very least,

(.....Please, please)

She wanted to be punished as someone who would become great sinner for mankind after this. She wanted to be given punishment for her sin of being unable to resist evil.

And then, she prayed for salvation even if only slightly to her comrades who were like her family who fought until the bitter end——

『.....? .....*Human?*』

That call wasn't directed to Claudia.

The “shadow” suddenly stopped. Even while gasping in pain, Claudia somehow lifted up her face. And then, she understood even within her hazy mind. It wasn't her who was addressed.

The “shadow” looked around the surrounding suspiciously.

Right after that, there were countless sounds of slicing wind!

『!?!』

The “shadow” swept its arm. Following its arm's trajectory, a whip of hell fire flew and struck down the countless things flying toward it.

One of the things stabbed ahead of the gaze of Claudia who was being held.

It was a short sword with shape that Claudia had never seen before. A blade of extended diamond shape, with guardless handle attached, at the end of the handle it became ring shaped. A strange shape. Even though it was jet black colored as though to absorb light, for some reason it was shining faintly.

「This is.....」

Her eyes opened wide. She understood even though she had never seen it before. It was a short sword that was suitable to be thrown even while

containing many utilities, something that shouldn't be used by the existence of this foreign world.

Yes, it was a “weapon that human used”!

「Where do you think you are going?」

A human's voice could be heard. A voice of a young man. It came from the other side of the bloody wind in front.

「I don't know the situation, but let me say that I cannot admire this. Learn some more about the way to escort woman.」

The “shadow” narrowed its eyes quietly.

Claudia too was also directing her gaze toward the voice in surprise.

Like that, he appeared.

「Although, perhaps this warning is a bit too harsh for you whose figure is only like a shoddy portrayal.....in any case, this is a request from a courageous little brother. I'll have you return that woman.」

A man in black appeared as though melting out from inside the bloody wind.

The sunglasses and the mask that was covering almost all his lower face caused his face to be unknown. His figure walking calmly with a short sword in one hand made one apt to forget that this was a foreign world that was like hell.

She thought that her comrades came to save her, but this person's figure didn't exist within Claudia's memory. He looked like a youth from the Orient who was younger than her but.....

That man——was making a turn adroitly for some reason. He pushed up his sunglasses sharply. He crossed his arms, and made a striking pose! Just why in the world!

Claudia's brain was flooded with questions!

The “shadow” swung its hell fire whip with no question asked. Perhaps the whip broke through sound barrier instantly, because it left the bursting sound *PAN-* in its wake, arriving at its target within an instant.

Normally, the youth would be struck by the hell fire whip without even any time to blink and got burned to ash, or his body would be bisected and his life came to an end.

Of course, the youth——who had snapped seeing Claudia who was worn-out from torture and the sneering laugh of the “shadow” that was filled with delight which he could hear while he was approaching the two of them——the lord easily struck back the whip with a blazing hot short sword.

The eyes of the “shadow” snapped wide open. And Claudia was also the same.

In front of such monster of the foreign world and the woman who he ought to save, the lord grinned fearlessly——and declared.

「From here on, unreasonableness will be performed. Lament your wretched luck of being in front of the abyss and fall to ruin.」

Claudia thought.

‘Aa, my Lord, I’m grateful.

To grant salvation to this one.

But, o Lord.

Please, tell me one thing.

——Why is Your messenger, still turning and posing like that?’

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

—

PS

The comic of Arifureta’s original version has been updated at Gardo.

Karm-san is seriously terrific. Also, Yue-san’s reluctant face really hit the spot.

When I read it, Yue and Shia at that time certainly felt like that huuh, it’s nostalgic.

It's distributed freely at Overlap-sama's homepage, so if you like please go read it by all means.



# Arifureta Chapter 304

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Fleeing Is This One's Forte

—

『*A mere human. Know your place.*』

The voice of the “shadow” gushed out haughtily, without any doubt that it was the superior existence.

At the same time, it swung its arm while the whip of hell fire that branched and increased into more than ten rushed toward the lord from all direction. Every single one moved in a speed that was impossible to avoid by ordinary human if they reacted after seeing it.

*Zuban-*, the sound of the lord's body getting mercilessly torn apart into little pieces resounded.

Claudia almost raised her voice unconsciously. She was about to let out a mere scream or perhaps a grieving voice. But, either way there was no need for her to do that.

Along with an anticlimax sound *bofun*, the figure of the lord that should have been melted and slashed into fragments vanished when they noticed. In his place a black short sword— a kunai appeared midair.

Then, where was the lord?

『*Foolish.*』

「Not really, isn't that right?」

Instantly, the lord appeared behind the “shadow”. Using substitute technique, he switched location with one of the kunai that was deflected at the opening of the battle.

But, the “shadow” instantly pinpointed the lord’s position and in less than a moment it attacked. Its sharp tail lengthened and pierced without it even turning around.

The lord got his stomach pierced, however, he grinned widely.

The next moment, a kunia came flying in the way that pierced that lord from his back.

As expected, it seemed the “shadow” didn’t expect at all that an attack that would pierce the attacker himself would come. The kunai pierced the “shadow” without giving it any leeway to strike down the kunai.

『*Guh!? Impossible!?*』

The agitation of the “shadow” could be felt. Rather than getting surprised because it got hit, the cause of its surprise was more that the damage of the attack was unexpectedly big.

A part of the “shadow” was vanishing like mist at the center where the kunai stabbed deeply. The kunai was naturally in the state of scorching red.

The clone body that got hit by the tail vanished from the damage. At the same time, the “shadow” unleashed an attack that swept through the area behind it.

It was unknown just how many branches of whip the “shadow” could produce. Whip of hell fire that easily numbered more than a hundred gouged out the road of rubbles completely, the buildings at the surrounding were pulverized. Buildings that got its bottom pillar broken were collapsing altogether. Thunderous sound shook the world, and dusts were rising up.

And then, a voice could be heard from nowhere.

Earth Ninja Art Come into my world of abyss

——Abyss-style Doton Jutsu Naraku no Kairou (TN: Naraku no Kairou = Corridor of Naraka)

Immediately after,

「Kya!?!」

A cute scream that didn't suit the hellish battlefield resounded.

『*You bastard-*』

The “shadow” looked at its left arm that was holding Claudia and raised an angry voice, but it was already too late.

The lord that slipperily appeared from inside the ground held Claudia with a posture of holding her from below. And then, with a wide grin he displayed  
Air      Ninja      Art      The abyss is always unevenly distributed  
Abyss-style Kuuton Jutsu “Bankage no Kagerou”.

The lord accomplished forced substitution to the coordinate of another slightly away place along with Claudia and the air around him. Naturally, the arm of the “shadow” that was dragged into the space teleportation was severed. The attack that was immediately unleashed toward the lord also cut empty air in vain.

The lord tossed away the arm of the “shadow” that was clinging on Claudia while holding her in princess carry.

『*The body that will give birth to me-. You lowly human dare!*』

「You are just a “lowly shadow” right?」

Thunderous sound.

The moment the “shadow” turned its focus at the recovered Claudia, the lord's kick that was falling horizontally with freefalling speed hit the side of it.

Martial      Art                                      Fall      Into      The      Deep      Darkness  
——Abyss-style Taijutsu Kicking Style Juutsui Engeki Kyaku (TN: Heavy crash flame kick)

Added with the momentum from horizontal freefalling using gravity magic “Black Vortex”, the moment the kick impacted, the lord increased his body weight by several times over to raise the destructive power. Furthermore using enchanting type magic, he wrapped his leg with flame element magic.

It was a technique he only thought just now! Of course the naming too!

「Hm. It's not a bad technique for something that I used for the first time. But.....the technique's name needs further consideration.」

The “shadow” was sent flying to crash into the building right beside it.

The lord landed down *step* on the spot where the “shadow” was standing on until just a moment ago and muttered such thing. It seemed that the naming wasn’t really fitting. It seemed that another Hauria clan meeting would be necessary.

Founder Baltofelt! It would be his turn there!

「E, eh? Ah? Tw, two people? Different person? Bu, but the same.....or rather, the power just now-」

Claudia-sama was in the middle of great shock! Her jade eyes were swirling on and on.

It wasn’t strange for her to be like that. Even though the two people were wearing mask, but their appearance until their atmosphere were as alike as two peas in a pot.

In addition from the her view point who knew better than anyone about the mightiness of the “shadow”, her natural enemy, this person easily recovered her back from that “shadow”, and in the end, he even blew away the “shadow” that should be completely unaffected against physical attack using a single kick. Furthermore, the kick had the strength to send the “shadow” crashing into a building.

In the end, the conclusion she formed within her confusion was,

「As I thought, aah, the Lord’s messenger is——」

「Hello, I’m the demon king’s right-hand man.」

「Eh!？」

An abnormal situation where the God’s messenger introduced himself as an underling of evil. Claudia-sama’s eyes were swirling once more.

But, at that timing, from the other side of the building where the “shadow” crashed into, a roar that would shook anyone’s sanity thundered. At the same time, countless flashes surged from the building. It was a sight that looked like countless lasers sweeping through everything.

*Zuzuzu-*, the building was *starting to slip down* due to its own weight.

「You must be confused but there is not time. I'll save the explanation for later. Right now stay quiet and let me save you!」

「Eh? A, ye, yes!」

Claudia's head nodded up and down honestly and quickly. The lord fixed his hold on her and began to turn back through the path he came from with great speed.

「Hold it back!」

「「Roger!」」

A clone leaped forward in front of the lord and became a vanguard, then the remaining two clones appeared with *pon-* sound and charged toward the “lump of shadow and hell fire” that was visible at the other side of the destroyed building.

Claudia opened her eyes wide saying 「Clo, clones!? It's the mystery of the eastern!」。 It seemed that she was unexpectedly knowledgeable about subculture. Or perhaps, because of her position she knew a lot about the mystique side.

He wanted to be spared from a second Danessa. Inside the lord was wishing strongly that it was the latter.

But, there, seeing the “shadow” that was increasing its pressure and repulsiveness, Claudia was taken aback and raised her voice.

「Please wait! That thing-, the “key of holy cross”! We have to take it back!」

It seemed it was something really important.

But, taking it back was an impossible request. The proof was how Claudia was coughing hard and the little amount of blood that she coughed at the same time.

The cause was one. It was the bloody wind of this foreign world. Its toxic substance was gnawing at Claudia. The lord didn't understand the how, but it seemed that Claudia wasn't affected like this while she was restrained by that “shadow”, but damage was accumulating within her now with certainty right after he took her back.

It was clear that it was necessary to escape from this foreign world even for a second faster.

And then, it wasn't just Claudia. Rather, different from Claudia who was under a kind of protection, the lord was already under the effect of the bloody wind for quite some time.

Claudia was looking up at the lord's face pleadingly inside his embrace and noticed that. It was hard to notice because of the black mask, but the mouth area was changing color. In addition, right now, a trickle of blood was flowing down slowly from the sunglasses.

Blood vomit, nosebleed, tears of blood. Even he who showed up like a savior was also being gnawed by this environment that was harmful to human.

But, even so, that key was the only thing that mustn't be stolen no matter what. Rather, even if Claudia had to throw away her life, that was the only thing.....

「No need to worry.」

「Eh?」

Different from the composed act until just now, the lord's voice gave the impression of slight fatigue. But, mysteriously a voice that was calming was directed toward Claudia.

The lord slightly pulled closer his arm that was circled around Claudia's shoulder so she wouldn't fall and he turned his palm to face above.

Claudia was pulled closer with a jerk and her face became pushed onto the lord's neck. Because of her special position, she had no experience of getting embraced by a male who was near her age. Even while understanding that this wasn't the time, she held her breath while her heart was skipping a beat.

But, what happened right after that caused her to gulp even more.

「It's a bit of bad habit of mine to have sticky fingers. An accessory this beautiful doesn't match that kind of chap that look like shoddy picture, that was why my hand moved by itself.」

「Tha, that is-」

The ring in the lord's finger emitted light. Light flashed on his palm. From there, what appeared was exactly what Claudia asked to take back, a cross necklace that was endowed with artistic beauty despite its antique feel——“the key of holy cross”.

It seemed Aby-san somehow also snatched “the key of holy cross” when he dealt the kick. The “shadow” was enraged when Claudia was taken from it, creating an opening. But despite that, what a quickness. Certainly, the lord's sticky fingers was bad just as he personally stated.

「I don't know what is this “thing” but.....if it's that important, don't let it get stolen again next time okay?」

「Ye, yes-. Thank you, very much.」

Claudia slowly reached out and took the “key of holy cross”. She put it around her neck and then grasped it tightly as though embracing it into her chest. She then said her words of gratitude.

And then, she looked up once more at the lord wonderingly, thinking 「Just who in the world this person is?」.

But, even that conversation was forced to come to an end due to the pressing matter.

「Chih. One got destroyed. One more time, I'll leave it to you okay, me!」

「It's more troublesome than expected but, just leave it to me, me.」

The lord cursed, at the same time he summoned a clone. Yes, one of the two clones that were left behind to hold back the “shadow” was annihilated.

Because he had already consumed a considerable amount of magic power, he only put a little magic power into the clone bodies to save energy, and he also in a state where he sealed the techniques that consumed large amount of magic power. But for a clone to be annihilated in this short time, he couldn't stop from getting a shudder.

There, the lord rushed into the storm of bloody wind once more. The ghoulish things rejoiced as though to say 「The prey returned!」 and rushed the lord.

The ghoulish things approached like a muddy stream. The clone body who

acted as vanguard resolved to accept some damage and charged forward. The clone slashed with shining short swords in both hands, discarded them, then mowed down the enemies with flame element magic.

「I have question, do you have a way to seal that mirror entrance?」

The lord's main body, even with his hands occupied, he used magic and threw all his kunais that were manipulated using telepathy stone to the surrounding to prevent the enemies from approaching, while asking Claudia that.

It was a sudden question, but Claudia nodded firmly.

「This “key of holy cross” is for that.」

「I see. Even my sticky fingers can be useful sometimes.」

Winged ghoul-like things attacked from the sky. Kunais flew and shot them down, but the full use of clone bodies, diverse use of gravity magic, the numerous consecutive magic, and above all else, the long stay in this environment, and the body strengthening and revitalization that were continuously activated all along.

His magic power had become lower than twenty percent.

Unfortunately, both his hands were full. The unceasing attack of the ghoul-like things, and the control of the clone bodies to hold back the “shadow” made him unable to spare the time to drink recovery medicine.

But, if he could just return to the original world, Claudia would seal the gate. He could recover himself after that. Right now speed was of the most importance. It would be the lord's victory if he just arrived at the destination!

「Hahah, a carnage like this has been so long. Not bad!」

The vanguard clone was crushed by number.

He used the skill “Shadow Dance” to make the ghoul-like things rushing him as his footsteps.

He leaped across them while summoning a clone at the same time. He burned away the enemy at his landing point using fire ninja art and secured the escape route while turning the surrounding into quicksand using earth ninja art and made the enemies stumbled.



For himself he used “Wood Chip Dance” to rush away using grains of sand as foothold. Against the countless arms reaching toward him, he used the combination technique of illusion and gravity magic “Shadow of Slanted Death” and broke through everything by a paper’s breadth.

The enemies surely want to get a bite of him no matter what.

Against the lord whose momentum couldn’t be stopped, the ghoulish things tried to stop him physically by forming thick and dense wall of flesh at the front.

The kunais floating midair formed circle formation in front of the lord. The kunais that were forming circle formation like a barrel of gatling gun started to rotate clockwise in high speed. They were even turning red hot. They looked just like a ring of fire in circus.

But, naturally, it wasn’t something for a fierce beast to hop through.

It was for digging.

There is no hope in stopping deep darkness

——Abyss-style Katon Futon Combined Formation Houou Daishouha (TN: Firebird’s Great Flight)

The ring of flame that flew forward in rotation like a cannon ball mercilessly gouged the flesh wall of the ghoulish things with the blades of flame and wind that whirled like a tornado combined with the high speed rotation of the kunais themselves.

Something that should be called a tunnel of ghoulish things was created, the lord sprinted through it instantly before the tunnel was plugged.

「.....Amazing. What power.....」

Claudia was unconsciously forgetting herself while watching in fascination. Words of admiration reflexively slipped out.

But, right after that, Claudia noticed. *Gofuh*, a small coughing sound could be heard from the mouth of the young man carrying her while running.

Looking closer, the stain on the mask was getting bigger than before. It was clear that he was vomiting blood once more.

Claudia was ashamed.

She should be a “person standing in the side that protect”. And yet, she was simply getting carried like a princess while quietly watching the person who saved her getting hurt!

「——The Lord consecrate those who saved. O wicked people, know this. What protects me is the love of God. What break thy is the anger of God.」

「! This is.....」

The lord, no, Claudia’s surrounding was shined with jade colored light. The jade light that was shining like a spherical barrier repelled or even exterminated the ghoulish thing that touched the edge of the light.

「.....I see, so this is the out-of-place feeling that I’ve been sensing all this time. As I thought, you know about Tortus aren’t you?」

「Tor, tus?」

The lord asked with surety, but the reply he got was a confused expression.

But, that power was.....the lord was going to ask further, but in an instant, his words stopped due to the vanishing of the clones that were tasked to hold back the “shadow”.

Because his remaining magic power had decreased until less than ten percent, he almost didn’t circulate magic power and his attack method was also limited to only wrapping his short swords with magic power, so it could be said that it couldn’t be helped.

But, the presence of the “shadow” that came chasing with outrageous speed was giving him no leeway as expected.

Right now wasn’t the time to satisfy his curiosity. The priority was to definitely return to their original world!

The lord swallowed his question and in exchange he theatrically sighed 「fuh」 like usual.

「Fuh, you’ve guts. That helps.」

「I will protect you. I won’t let even one of the like of low level demon come near.」

Even though her whole body was burned and the influence of the bloody wind was clearly weakening her, the light residing in Claudia's eyes was getting stronger instead.

Seeing her determined expression, the lord let out 「fuh」 that was longer than usual.

And then, he summoned two clones around him. This time he didn't send them to hold back the "shadow", but charged in delta formation to penetrate the avalanche of the ghoulish things in one go.

A severe and repulsive pressure approached from behind. The ghoulish things that kept advancing endlessly no matter how many were turned into ash.

It was a game of tag where their lives were at stake, however, the end finally came to view.

「There it is!」

「That's.....」

At the gap of the swarming ghoulish things, the form of the "mirror gate" could be seen. The ghoulish things were advancing in desperate frenzy, but they were turned into ashes one after another and got pushed back just barely.

What came into their sight was a flickering light that was like an aurora with the color of dead grass. In a glance the swaying curtain of light looked unreliable, but that light that was deployed to cover the whole surface of the mirror wasn't approached by the ghoulish things at all.

Furthermore, arrows, bullets, throwing daggers, and the likes were flying out from inside the aurora of dead grass color, piercing and exterminating the ghoulish things one after another.

「It seems your comrades are waiting for your return huh?」

「Yes, it appears so.」

The lord glanced at the teary Claudia and smiled wryly inside his heart.

Just in case, the lord also stabbed kunais in the minimum range and deployed a barrier (the type that could be penetrated from inside while isolating things from outside) to protect just the mirror surface, but like this perhaps it was

meaningless for him to do that.

「I'll ask just in case, but that aurora-like light, it's a type that will be okay even if we touch it right?」

「Yes, of course. That's the "light of sacred destruction" that the chief used. It's the light of protection that will destroy only the wicked. It doesn't have any effect on human.」

「Magnificent. Then, we will charge right into it like this!」

「Yes!」

A terrific roar thundered from behind. The voice sounded as though it was shaking with frustration from being sure that its prey would definitely escape.

Claudia looked behind from across the lord's shoulder. The girl was also similarly frustrated. She wondered just for what all the training she had accumulated until now. Wasn't it for the sake of this day?

Although she was suppressed right from the beginning because of betrayal, but for her to be forced to retreat helplessly like this.....

She suppressed the negative feeling that was about to bloat up and shook her head. Right now she had to survive. And then, she had to give her all to not let the residences of this world to cross to the human world.

However, someday, she would without fail.....

「-, Dodge!」

「Roger!」

A whip of hell fire rushed like a laser, piercing through all the ghoulish things in between.

It was the last struggle of the "shadow". Even still, it was a strong threat.

The clones at the lord's left and right immediately leaped to the back. They lined up after each other in the whip's line of fire toward their main body.

Come, the dragon of dark abyss

——Abyss-style Doton Futon Combined Formation Tenshou no Houryuu (TN: Dragon of the summit colliding on heaven)

One clone stabbed his short sword into the ground and the ground instantly protruded. It struck the ghoulish things around as though the ground was piercing the sky, at the same time it formed a thick earth wall.

—Fifty meters remaining until the “mirror gate”.

The earth wall stopped the whip of hell fire on its track even if only for a few seconds.

The wall was pulverized, and whip of hell fire that stretched like a spear pierced the clone, exterminating it.

Gravity Ninja Art

—Abyss-style Juuton Jutsu Naraku no Mashu

By my evil hand, sink, into the deep darkness (TN: Evil influence of Naraka)

A super gravity field was formed around the second clone. The rushing whip of hell fire was falling toward the ground, as though it was being grasped by the hand of the devil that was crawling out from hell.

With the lord’s remaining magic power, the gravity magic could only be activated for around two seconds, but it was worth it to maintain the magic until the very end.

The second clone was torn to pieces by the whip’s overwhelming momentum, but,

—Thirty meters remaining until the “mirror gate”

At the other side of the “mirror gate”, they could see people wearing habit or cassock opening their eyes wide in surprise.

「Kuh, coming! My barrier won’t be able to endure that attack without a sacred vessel!」

「It’s enough if you just repel the rabble.」

The last clone cut open the path forward.

The whip of hell fire rushed. Kousuke rotated with a twirl and performed back step run while deploying his kunais. He deployed the barrier of space isolation.

—Twenty meter remaining until the “mirror gate”

It was enough. He bought enough distance!

「This is just a second-hand opinion, but according to the demon king——」

Turning around, then a dash with full power. At the same time, the clone who acted as the vanguard also turned around. When they passed each other, the main body and the clone body were both grinning widely.

——Ten meters remaining until the “mirror gate”

The “shadow” was approaching rapidly. The last clone who leaped in front of it traced what the lord’s lips were saying.

「Self-explosion, is romance.」

Light flashed. A terrific explosion blast mowed down the surrounding without sparing anything. The charging “shadow” also wasn’t an exception.

After all, the last explosion was added with the release of a flame element magic that was activated with all the lord’s remaining magic power which he poured into the clone.

The “shadow” wasn’t blown into nothing like the ghoulish things around, but it was forced to back away without being able to sprint forward or anything.

A roar resounded once more. The last attack was unleashed along with a shriek that polluted the human mind. The whip of hell fire stretched for Claudia, but.....

「My bad, stalker. This is my win.」

——The remaining distance until the “mirror gate” .....zero

The lord leaped into the “mirror gate: with Claudia in hand. He embraced her as though to protect her and rolled on the ground inside the previous underground room. And then, at the end he entered a kneeling pose on one knee and looked at Claudia.

Claudia returned the gaze with eyes that were filled with strong light and she nodded firmly.

「Under the name of the Lord, o the fortress of the oppressed. Let the solid gate repel the wicked.」

She prayed so while lifting the “key of holy cross”. The “key of holy cross”

emitted an intense light and the “mirror gate” also shined in resonance.

And then, liquid that looked like mercury overflowed from the relief, covering the mirror surface in the blink of eye——

『*The day of the end is near! The path is already connected! Just wait! The body that will give birth to me——*』

The terrifying scream was interrupted, and the mirror returned into a normal mirror that reflected only the underground room and the people in it.

Silence filled the underground room. Inside the underground room, several people clad in habit or cassock were all still staring still at the “mirror gate” while holding their breath.

They had just witnessed before their eyes a critical situation that was beyond description. It seemed they were unable to immediately comprehend that it had happened for real.

「Cough-, guh」

That silence that came from such terrifying experience, was broken by a pained voice.

Those people went ‘hah’ in surprise and turned their gaze toward the voice, there they saw an unknown young man——Kousuke, getting on all four with red smoke smoldering from his whole body.

It seemed after returning to the human world, thanks to the closing of the “mirror gate”, the red mist gnawing into Kousuke was dispersing.

And then, Kousuke himself was in a state of a step before running out of magic power completely, he was suffering from the damage gnawing into his body——

「Ho, honored messenger, are you——」

「Uu, just what the hell with that『unreasonableness will be performed』, it’s just painful, the skill name is also really painful. Painful history was produced by a loot」

The figure of the young man who was writhing from the wound of the heart rather than external injury could be seen there.

It appeared, self-explosion was romance. However, it seemed that depending on the type of the self-explosion, there was one that brought nothing but pain.

Claudia who was gently laid down before Kousuke got on all four was also writhing like Kousuke with red smoke rising from her body. Even so she still called out to Kousuke worriedly. But seeing his pain that seemed somewhat different from what she thought, her quirky tone changed into a doubt, asking「.....alright?」.

While she herself was in a state where it was the best she could do to maintain her consciousness, she was still worrying about Kousuke. Seeing such Claudia, Kousuke felt like the wound of his heart was healed slightly.

She was surely a healing kind of Onee-san..... While thinking such idiotic thing, she felt the girl's virtuous nature and let out a relieved sigh, feeling glad that he saved her.

And then, while holding back the pain of his tired heart, Kousuke pulled down his mask and grinned widely.

「It's fine already. Your little brother too.」

「——aa」

Hearing those words, Claudia guessed why this young man came to save her. At the same time, she recalled the hopeless situation of his little brother before she fainted and color left from her face.

But, her heart immediately calmed down.

Because Kousuke was on all four, and also because Claudia was lying down, Kousuke's face right now could only be seen by her.

Due to Kousuke's soft expression, and the ambience of his eyes that could be faintly seen even through the sunglasses due to this very close distance, Claudia felt reassured even without any basis.

That Kousuke's words, were stating the truth.

Because of that large relieve, her stretched nervous tension snapped, her extreme fatigue and great injury rapidly taking away her consciousness.

The current Claudia couldn't go against that. Because the savior in front of her



who she didn't even know his name was giving off so much gentle atmosphere.

An overwhelming sense of relieve enveloped her.

In the end, she wondered how long it had been since she felt this much relieve.

Even though her whole body was pained, even though she couldn't sleep.....

While understanding that, Claudia let go of her consciousness with a greatly relieved expression.

Kousuke smiled slightly at Claudia who relaxed herself limply while taking out a recovery medicine from the Treasure Warehouse and drank it.

But, at that time,

「Originally, we should say our thanks.」

It was a heavy voice that was filled with dignity. 「Aa~, come to think of it, I'm surrounded by THE – suspicious people of Vatican huh」, thinking that, Kousuke turned his gaze toward the voice while sweating coldly a bit. Just in case, he put on his mask again before lifting up his face.

There, he saw an old man at the middle of his seventy wearing a priest cassock.

Although, despite the many layers of wrinkle that were carved on his face which gave the impression of such age, his straight back and dignified posture, his sharp gray pupils, his swept back hair that was growing in ample despite the all white color, all of those made him looked younger. While the old man was wearing the outfit of a clergyman, his aura felt like a veteran soldier.

One of his hands was holding an opened book. Curiously, that book seemed to be made from metal plate. It wasn't just the binding of the book, the whole book was made from around five thin sheets of metal piled up on each other.

It looked quite heavy, but he continued to hold it with one hand without difficulty.

*Zari*- The sound of feet moving resounded.

Kousuke's Presence Detection told him that several people in this place were

moving to surround him. The only path to exit was already blocked.

「But, who are you, and why are you here. Depending on your reason, I believe that we might need to judge you rather than thanking you. ....Now then, you. Will you quietly put down your weapon and agree to be restrained?」

Now then, what should he do.

Honestly speaking, it was Kousuke who want to know things. His original mission was also to investigate that. He had the thinking that he might be fine with following what the other side said if they would offer him information without hiding anything.

Because based from what he saw through Claudia and Aziz, these people didn't seem that bad.

Although, this situation right now.

Putting aside the old man in front of him who Claudia called as chief, the people surrounding him were releasing killing intent, seeming like they were going to attack anytime.

Even if it was Kousuke who had taken back Claudia from the foreign world, it didn't change that he was an intruder. And then, these people just got a lot of their comrades killed by many intruders.

In addition, it seemed that young man Aziz was carried away in order to get treated, so he wasn't here. In that case, these people should have been told about Aumale's betrayal. Inside them there should be a jumbled feeling of paranoia.

On top of that, although he had brought back Claudia, she was in a tattered state.....

In the end, how much they would listen to him?

How much they would answer if he asked them?

From the word "restrained", they didn't intend to have a "dialogue" but an "investigation". The prospect was slim, and even in case the event progressed smoothly, a considerable time would be spent.

And then, the greatest problem was the demand to put down his weapon.....

Unknown identity, unknown objective, and then enormous threat level.

Their demand for him to put down his weapon was extremely natural, and Kousuke could understand that. But, having his artifacts investigated wouldn't be good at all.

"Mirror gate" "Key of holy cross". And then Claudia's power, and the words "sacred vessel" that she said while they were escaping.

These people.....most likely possessed the knowledge and skill to investigate artifact to a certain degree.

(Gi, giving the artifacts to the Vatican without Nagumo's permission..... impossible! I cannot imagine what kind of punishment will wait!)

The demerit of agreeing to their demand was too great.

Perhaps these people felt uneasy toward Kousuke who was pondering without answering. Or perhaps, they were wordlessly insisting to each other to quickly subdue him and finished up, because the killing intent of the people around became exceptionally stronger. Everyone readied their weapon and prepared to fight.

Blood was rising into their head.....that must be a factor that caused them to be like that, in any case a precariousness of a situation that was just a step away from explosion could be felt.

Kousuke smiled frivolously (it couldn't be seen because of the mask) while asking.

「Not surrendering my weapon, no restrain. A peaceful dialogue while drinking tea. How does that sound for you?」

The answer that came was the doubling of the killing intent! The voices of heart「Don't screw around bastaaard!」 came rushing at Kousuke!

Kousuke tried insisting「I can understand the feeling of you all! But see, I had at least risked my life to save your comrades you know!?!」.

Their tension wasn't swayed. Though there were several people who showed confusion in their eyes.

Even the "chief" seemed to understand that Kousuke wouldn't obey. He

looked extremely calm, but the flame of rage was flickering inside his eyes.

His self-restraint was really something, but from his point of view, he just got a lot of his subordinates murdered with no question asked, what's more their holy ground Vatican was ransacked as the enemy pleased. It seemed that welcoming an unknown intruder politely was an impossible talk for him.

「It's unfortunate. Your strength is a threat, but it seems right now you are really exhausted. We will use this chance. I'll pray that you will understand our situation and listen obediently.」

The “chief” waved his hand slowly.

Right after that, a blonde haired youth——someone who emitted conspicuous killing intent even among these people, a youth who was called Wynn in Kousuke's memory rapidly drew near with a thin sword in one hand.

(Aah, geez. Even though I'm tired! Although, there is no way I can obediently give up my weapon! Because I don't want to get punished!)

Kousuke couldn't possible put on air whimsically to think for long in front of these people who were brimming with killing intent. He had bought time to let the recovery medicine displayed its effect to a certain degree.

The damage on his body was deep, and his recovery rate was still thirty percent but.....

「Well, it's enough.」

「What!?!」

The thin sword was swung to hit the target with the flat of its blade. Seeing Kousuke used it as a foothold, Wynn let out a shocked voice that was unable to believe it.

「You won't get away!」

A girl with braided chestnut hair——Anna leaped forward with tonfas in both hands.

She surely thought that midair Kousuke wouldn't be able to do anything. Of course, Kousuke casually dodged. He somersaulted forward using the dust midair as foothold.

「Hee!?!」

Anna-chan passed through empty air where there was no one with a stupid voice. She looked at Kousuke with an expression that wanted to say「That's foul isn't it!?!」.

「My bad, if we are going to talk, let's do it after both our sides has cooled down a bit yeah?」

While saying that, two men were attacking in the timing when Kousuke was about to land. They were blown away by midair spinning kick from a body agility that could only be thought as inhuman. Kousuke dashed toward the exit passage in full speed.

「Stop!」

「Surrender!」

Two men blocked the passage ahead. Both men had shaved head with no eyebrows. Their faces were also similar, were they skinhead brothers?

In any case, invisibility full throttle.

「Ha?」

「Ah?」

The skinhead brothers splendidly split their questioning tone with each other. Below them, Kousuke easily passed through with a slide.

Kousuke's invisibility that wouldn't be noticed by a normal person even if he was right in front of them. Even people who had received combat training would fall into a state of “unable to react immediately even if they could see him” depending on the situation.

Just like how people wouldn't be aware even if they noticed grass swaying in front of their eyes, the brain didn't realize that there was something that they needed to react to.

「What are you doing! Bacchus, Bruce!」

「Kuh, sorry-」

「What's that just now!?!」

Even after they returned to their senses from Wynn's angry yell, the skinhead brothers were shaken from the strange phenomenon. Further angry yell from the chief 「Don't let him get away!」 made them to turn around in panic and chased after Kousuke.

「Somehow.....that person, is strange!」

「I know!」

Wynn also agreed with what Anna said with half-screaming voice.

Kousuke was running ahead with his back turned toward them, but even when they tried to aim at his back with projectile weapon, for some reason they couldn't fix their aim. Far from that, if they didn't concentrate strongly, even though they were chasing right behind him now, it felt like they were going to forget who they were chasing.

Before long, Kousuke easily reached the former wide space. His figure vanished behind a pillar for a moment, but his pursuers immediately caught the sight of him rushing up the stair.

「I'll restrain him! ——Flow and seize. Like the seven times transparent silver, refined in the hearth of high palace.」

Right after that, one of the tonfa that Anna had was enveloped in faint light. Chain of light flew out from its tip.

Kousuke threw a glance toward the disturbing presence approaching him from the back.

「No matter how I see it, that's Shirasaki's favorite, "Binding Shining Chain", thank you very much, god damn it all!」

As expected, other than "mirror gate" and "key of holy cross", they seemed to have other special weapon.

Kousuke who was in the middle of rushing up the stair was bound by the chain of light rushing at him.

「I got him! The Mr. oddball!」

「Who is the oddball! Braided tonfa-chan!」

Kousuke-san vanished with a pop. Only the reverberation of his tsukkomi remained. Then only a small stone, the one-time use artifact for the use of the substitution technique was left behind. It was disposable, so it was just a rock after use.

「Wha-!? He vanished!? What's going on!？」

「-, as I thought, that guy is also someone chosen by a sacred vessel.....」

Wynn and others stopped moving from the confusion. One of his comrades, a youth with pointy hair and Oriental face carrying an antique-looking rapid-fire bowgun went 'Ah' and raised his voice while pointing his finger.

「Not the stair! The elevator!」

When everyone went 'hah' in surprise and looked there, they saw the figure of Kousuke climbing up by kicking on the wall.

「Lee! Do it! Don't kill him!」

「Got it! but, don't blame me for some injury okay!」

Saying that, the bowgun user youth who was called Lee fired a metal arrow toward Kousuke.

「Whoops!」

「What thee!？」

In respond to the arrow that was flying through the air, Kousuke stabbed one short sword on the wall to stay in position, then he struck down the arrow with another short sword.

The amazing feat caused Lee to raise a surprised yell, but he immediately fired consecutively, not wanting the target to get away. Seeing Lee's skill that fired all the arrows aiming at spots that weren't lethal, it made Kousuke understood that the youth was indeed first class.

But, the six arrows flying at him were all struck down or cut apart with a short sword in hand. After that Kousuke naturally continued to go up.

「As expected, it's impossible for him to do the same with bullet right?」

One of the skinhead brothers just now, the one called Bruce was readying an

old looking rifle.

By the way, because of the gunshot sound the rifle made, it couldn't really be used inside the city. And due to their work, bowgun and rifle——which one was better was something that Bruce and Lee often clashed about.

Although, right now there was no need to hold back. The rifle that could fire five shots consecutively was fired by Bruce without reservation.

Of course, everything was cut apart.

「「「「「「「.....」」」」」」」

Including the “chief” who came later from behind, everyone were staring speechlessly in wonderment.

It was more or less a “sham bullet slashing” with trick of using gravity magic to pull the bullets toward the short sword, but for them who had no way of knowing that, it was certainly a scene that made them doubted their eyes.

「In my personal opinion, I'm quite able in escaping. Well then, let's meet again if the destiny will it.」

*Clink*, Kousuke sheathed the short sword on his back, and then he dashed up the wall in one go after saying only that. Like that he vanished toward the surface.

After that, there were only them who were still standing dumbfounded.

—  
—  
—

Kousuke who got out at the surface for the time being climbed up the dome of San Pietro Cathedral and took the panoramic view from there.

And then, he grimaced seeing the disastrous situation inside the city of Vatican that still had black smokes rising silently.

It seemed it wasn't just Vatican's library, the art museum and the church, and even the administration building were also exploded.

It appeared the fake tourists who assaulted here had already retreated.



Within his sight, he could only see the tourists who were all shaken up while evacuating, and the staffs who were leading the evacuation and putting out the fire while yelling angrily.

Of course, that didn't mean that the attackers didn't slip within those scared tourists again but.....

「What a terrible thing to do.....」

Kousuke muttered unconsciously. There, his instinct suddenly whispered to him.

Using his sunglasses' distance viewing function, he turned his gaze outside Vatican that were being left behind by the tourists.

And then, he found it.

「That guy.....」

Outside Vatican, on the rooftop of a building where it was just right to look at the library, he found the figure of a familiar man. The man was also using a binocular sometime to observe the situation inside the Vatican.

「Why doesn't he come? What is he doing there?」

When Kousuke voiced that question, the man suddenly——dropped his shoulders in disappointment. And then, he checked his watch and turned his gaze once more at the seriously chaotic Vatican. He laughed faintly and turned around.

「.....Let's try following him.」

Kousuke took off his sunglasses and mask, his tattered coat, then he took out a new coat from Treasure Warehouse and wore it.

And then, he leaped down from the dome and ran to chase the man.

The man who the young man Aziz called “Leda-san” at the base outside Vatican, who should be his comrade.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The newest chapter of Arifureta Nichijou de Sekai Saikyou was updated in Gardo.

The ABYSS at the front cover. In the end, does it mean the abyss, or perhaps the person that is pointed by the arrow.....

Mori Misaki-sensei's sense is shining bright!

Also, Kaori-san in Nichijou, I'm liking how her dangerousness is increasing more and more lol

It can be read in Overlap-sama's homepage, so if you like, please go check it.

# Arifureta Chapter 305

## Arifureta After III Valentine Day Special Program

—

AN: happy valentine

---

「Yoo, *friend* Hajime-kun! It's a great morning too today!」

「Good morning, *friend* Hajime-kun! Ah, let me hold your bag for you until in front of the classroom.」

At the morning in February with its intense cold. Hajime who arrived at school was greeted by his classmates Nakano Shinji and Saitou Yoshiki who was purposefully standing by nearby the shoe rack, lying in ambush of him.

For some reason they were addressing Hajime like a close friend with amiable smile that looked gross. In addition, they were calling him with his first name, something that they had never done even once before.

Hajime directed a suspicious gaze at the smiling two. For the time being, he confirmed that there was no ordinary student around who was watching.....

「Kaori. Recovery magic please.」

「Right, this looks like a serious illness. I'll go with the highest class magic. ——"Holy Scripture"!」

Kaori who was going to school with him showered down the light of highest class light element recovery magic "Holy Scripture" with pinpoint precision toward Shinji and Yoshiki's heads.

*Flash* The two's head shined.

「Who are you calling seriously ill!」

「That's right! We are acting like usual right? Aren't we friends——」

This time a divine light showered down on the two's head. It was the age of god magic that surpassed the highest class recovery magic——regeneration magic.

「Stop it, Shirasaki-san! Stop applying magic wordlessly like that!」

「I'll also said this in advance, stop looking at us with a pitying gaze like that as though we are tremendously pitiful people!」

The two tried to brush off the radiance dwelling in their head by tapping their hair. Hajime was sighing while changing his shoes.

「And? Why are you two coming at me with behavior that is inviting nausea like that right from the morning? If you two are picking a fight, I'll respond with the harassment methods that I had thought of until 108 types of them though.....」

「「We are super sorry」」

Shinji and Yoshiki bowed their head with beautiful harmony. However, it appeared they had some kind of objective, they were only moving their mouths mumblingly without trying to talk.

「What's the matter with the two of them I wonder?」

「Who knows? Perhaps they picked up and ate some strange thing? More importantly let's go quickly to the classroom.」

Hajime urged Kaori to keep going looking terribly uninterested. Shinji and Yoshiki were following after them slowly.

While they were going to their classroom, they were feeling a strangely restless and nervous atmosphere and attention, especially from the first years. Hajime and group getting attention were something regular, but this felt more than usual.

「? What? The atmosphere is strange somehow.」

「H~m, you're right. I wonder what's going on.....wait, ah, so it's that.」

It seemed Kaori guessed something from the attitude of the underclassman girls.

「What's going on?」

「Ahaha, see, it's that. The thing that is also making Myuu-chan high spirited.」

「.....Aa, Valentine huh.」

‘I see’, Hajime nodded. Behind him, Shinji and Yoshiki twitched.

「Yep. It will be tomorrow. Look forward to it, Hajime-kun. I'll make an extraordinarily delicious one for you.」

「I see. I'm happy to hear that.」

From behind, *gan gan gan*- the sound of fierce collision resounded. When the two looked back wondering what happened, there the sight of Shinji and Yoshiki bashing their head on the corridor's wall looking like they were going to shed tear of blood was.....

Hajime and Kaori looked at each other and,

「Come to think of it, is your father all right? This is you Kaori we are talking about. Surely you prepared one for your father every year right? Last year the event passed through uneventfully because it was right in the middle of the returnee commotion after all. Won't he hold expectation for this year?」

「Otou-san is really restless since the day before yesterday you know? It's so embarrassing to watch him act like that.」

They were conversing as though nothing happened while starting to walk once more.

From behind 「You guys!? What are you doing!? There is blood coming out!? Like waterfall!」, the voice of a creeped out teacher could be heard, but it was like the BGM of a boring morning.

「You know Hajime-kun, Otou-san casually left a valentine special edition magazine on the table. And then, he kept sending glances from slightly far away, checking whether I noticed or not. Geez, as a daughter, my father acting

like that is something that I shouldn't see, it's embarrassing.」

「To, Tomoichi-san..... Is it because of me, that he is feeling his share will be in danger this year so he made that kind of preparation?」

「Right, perhaps so. Recently he is casually sounding me out everyday.」

The backbone of Shirasaki family seemed to play his hand every day in order to obtain chocolate from his daughter. Hajime let out a dry laugh saying 「Well, I understand his feeling」.

While the two were talking like that, they arrived at their classroom.

From the discussion between the wive~s, it was decided that they would do “going to school with just two of them” by turn, so Yue and others were already inside the classroom.

「.....Nn, Hajime, you safe? Kaori didn't do anything to you?」

「What do you mean by that I wonder!? I wonder!?」

Without even giving any greeting, it was Yue-sama's “Kaori bullying first thing in the morning”. Hajime headed to his seat while giving a brief glance at the two who were starting their daily morning ritual with the usual ‘gyaa gyaa’.

「Short time no see de~su, Hajime-san!」

「Good morning, Hajime.」

While the classmates were saying 「Good morning」 at him one after another, Shia and Shizuku were approaching him, one with a hop *pyon* while the other with a slow walk.

After Hajime returned their greeting, Shia was hopping up and down *pyon pyon* while pressing with 「Please listen to me-, Hajime-san!」.

「What's up? Did something happen on your way to school?」

「That's right. Surprisingly, a hero appeared after so long!」

「.....? Amanogawa? How did he return to earth.....」

If speaking of hero, then it was Amanogawa Kouki who quickly left school after returning to earth and went back to Tortus doing “holy precincts’ monster exterminator”. Now after more than a year had passed, the degree of freedom

in “opening gate” was increasing, and yet there should be no way that he was able to freely return by his own power.

Hajime tilted his head looking puzzled. Shia shook her head left and right and answered.

「It's not that hero, it's about the people who are confessing to me or Yue-san that recently has decreased in frequency remarkably.」

Hearing her words, the classmates who were nonchalantly eavesdropping were making understanding face saying 「Aa, certainly. To attempt to lay their hand of the demon king's wife, they are indeed hero」 in agreement.

About half a year after returning to earth, not to mention the students in this school, even people from the neighboring schools, universities, and on top of that even working adult were often doing “street confession” to Yue and co.

Although, they didn't just get rejected, in the middle of their confession, their words were chopped down along with their love or their ulterior motive.

The number of people with their heart broken, or even their body crushed couldn't be counted. The rumor spread and the frequency was gradually decreasing. And recently due to their flawless attitude in their relationship with Hajime (there was also the effect of the recognition obstruction artifact though), such heroes were vanishing but.....

「Seriously? Why is it happening again suddenly..... Is it that? Are they in need of smash? I'll pin down their location even right now using the compass.」

The boys of the class all entered defensive stance for their crotch. Their motion that was without the slightest disorder was truly beautiful. Their simultaneous shivering from Shia's words after that 「No no, if it's necessary then we will do the smashing ourselves so it's all right」, it also had a magnificent synchronization rate.

「It must be that. As I thought, because the valentine is close, there must be people who take action with resolve.」

「From the male's side? Normally it's the reverse.....aa, I see. So it's just like Nakano and Saitou.」

If they were good friend with Hajime, they might receive leftover chocolate from Yue and co. Such ulterior motive was transparent from the two. The people doing street confession must be also taking action betting on the one in a million chances.

Although, there was no way unknown people confessing at this late would have any chance somehow, but today, there were people doing street confession. Just what in the world they were thinking?

Hajime tilted his head in confusion, however he immediately went 「Hm?」 and looked around the classroom.

It seemed Shia's mention of 「Valentine」 caused reaction. The girls in the class were strangely restless. They who had survived the scene of carnage in the other world possessed guts and composure that were incomparable with normal high schooler and the like, but now their atmosphere was somehow restless.

Among them, Miyasaki Nana who were talking with Sonobe Yuuka and Sugawara Taeko threw a question casually.

「Hey hey, Shizuku-chi~. Shia-chi~. Sure enough, you two will give Nagumo-chi chocolate right~?」

「But of course desu! Today, when we get back home, all of us will make chocolate together with Myuu-chan too!」

「Yes. Although, this is the first valentine for Shia and others, so we won't just make chocolate to hand to Hajime, but we are going to try making various things too.」

After Shia answered 「I'm looking forward to it desuu!」 energetically, Shizuku replied while glancing at Hajime looking a bit embarrassed.

The boys in the class were getting a faraway look seeing the two like that. They then let out conversation that sounded like escaping reality 「I think this year it will be just from Kaa-chan again I think」, or 「Haa? What are you saying? Valentine will be abolished from this year right?」. or 「Right right, if I'm not mistaken, it will be decided as a violation international treatise in order to protect the dignity of male student or something, so it will get abolished you



know?」, or 「There was a large demo wasn't it? Abolish this unfair system! or something」, and so on. That was the conversation of Tamai Atsushi, Aikawa Noboru, and Nimura Akito, those three.

Exasperated gazes from the class's girls were poured on those three.

When Nana heard what Shia and Shizuku said, she made a wide grin and poked repeatedly on Yuuka beside her.

「You hear thaaat, Yuuka-chi. Everyone will give chocolate to Nagumo-chi they say~」

「So, so what?」

「It's not so what riight~. Yuuka-chi too need to work hard. Staying as just a mistre——」

「I'll send you flying, Nana.」

When Nana was about to say something, Yuuka grasped her mouth *mugyuu* and stopped her. Nana tried to make Yuuka let go with muffled 'mui mui\*', but the fingertips of Yuuka who was blushing faintly were displaying powerful grip like a vise and wouldn't let go.

Taeko chuckled in amusement and turned the aim of the talk at Hajime.

「What do you think Nagumo-kun? Yuuka's chocolate. Yuuka is also good at making sweets, that's why the taste is guaranteed you know?」

「Wai-, wait Taeko!」

Yuuka stopped her in panic, but it seemed she was curious about Hajime's reaction, because she was sending him restless glances.

During that time, it seemed she was forgetting to manage the strength in her grip. Her claws were digging into Nana's lips, causing Nana to turn teary saying 「Hi, highh, it will get shredded-!?', but Yuuka-chan didn't notice.

While the class's attention was inadvertently focused on him, Hajime was staring in puzzlement before his gaze turned to empty space as though he had recalled something.

And then,

「Come to think of it, yesterday, when I went to your restaurant to drink coffee yesterday, you made me ate a test piece choco stick as freebie right? That was certainly delicious. Like, the bitterness was exquisite or something.」

「Wai-, Nagumo-, I told you to keep it secret!」

The classmates thought.

This girl, she damn stole the first move!, in their mind.

Yuuka more or less explained 「It's a test piece and I don't know whether to put it into menu, so keep it secret!」 at the restaurant, but seeing Yuuka's absurdly flustered act, it was highly possible that it was just her excuse on the surface.

‘Doing something like giving it at the big day is impossible, but he came to the restaurant at great timing like this.....perhaps I should make him eat the choco that I had secretly practiced to make’, it was something like that.

Yuuka's shoulder was grabbed hard. If she turned around, that person would be there.

「Yuuka-chan?」

「Hih!? Tha, that's not it! It's a misunderstanding!」

From behind, Kaori-san brought her face closer *nuu* with a nice smile. Even though she was making persistent exchange with Yue until just now, and yet unnoticed she had stood behind her.

And then, Yuuka's two best friends withdrew from that place with similar “unnoticed” speed.

Yuuka was making various excuses of this and that. Kaori stared at her while smiling cheerfully. Everyone averted their gaze from those two and resumed talking as though nothing had happened.

But, there, this time it was Ryutaro who dropped a bomb.

「Then, Nagumo. In the end, which one that will make you happiest when you received it? Will it be the one from Yue-san as expected?」

「Ryu-kun!? Delicacy!」

The composed Ryutaro who would receive chocolate for certain this year, what's more it would be a serious chocolate. The atmosphere of the boys in the class was like 「This bastard stealing a march like that」 where it felt like they would spit out anytime.

Ryutaro didn't have even the slightest ill will when he said that, but for such a simple question it was truly lacking in delicacy. The classmates, especially the girls were candidly listening attentively.

Yue brushed up her fluffy golden hair with one hand *fuaasaa*-. The triumphant look on her face was unsurpassed by anything. It seemed that she believed that she was number one without even a shred of doubt.

‘Say it! Now, Hajime, say it! Say the obvious and only answer!’

She seemed to want to say that.

Shia was going 「Mumumu-. Hajime-san, it's fine to choose me as number one sometimes you know?」. Her unseen rabbit ears were flopping *myon myon* in an appeal.

Shizuku was smiling wryly, but as expected she was sending him a gaze that was slightly in expectation.

Kaori and Yuuka too were also stopping their small judgment and sent glances.

The boys got the premonition of carnage and gulped tensely.

Like that, inside the classroom that was visited with a strange silence, Hajime answered.

Easily.

「Eh? The one from Myuu though?」

‘Why are you asking something so obvious?’, his puzzled face seemed to want to say that.

In a sense, that answer should be just as expected. He wouldn't give vague answer like 「Everyone」 or 「Anyone」. 1 or 0. White or black. The demon king's answer could only be one!

Ryuutaro said 「O, ou.....I see」 while his gaze was darting around. While he was doing that, *thud* there was a sound of something collapsing.

「Yu, Yue-san!? Are you okay!? Yue-san falling on all four is super rare though!」

「Wait Yue! Get a hold of yourself!」

Yue was crumbling down on all fours. Shia and Shizuku rushed toward her in panic.

In addition, Suzu requested for rescue to Kaori.

「Kaorin! Recovery magic!」

「Heey, Yue♪ Just now, how do you feel? Yue who got her first position taken away by her daughter after feeling convinced that she is number one, how do you feel about that? Hey hey, heey I'm asking you♪」

「Kaorii, just because you are often get bullied, don't corner Yue-san by making full use of this chanceee!」

Kaori was speaking provocation just like Miledy while walking around Yue with light footsteps singingly *ranranra~n♪*. Yuuka was flustered while sending her remonstrating words.

「.....This is-, the taste of defeat! Ah, I'll call out Kaori behind the gymnasium later.」

Yue-sama reflected upon the defeat while swearing vengeance toward Kaori.

As expected, Hajime felt a bit awkward seeing that and he made his justification.

「No, well, see. It can't be helped right? That Myuu, she is really getting into it. She is making choco cake since around a week ago. And she even said something like, 'even though there is four kinds in one quarters in pizza, 'it's strange that there is nothing like that in choco cake'.」

「Haa? Could it be she meant that? She want to make a whole cake that is made from four type of cakes into one?」

Hajime smiled wryly and nodded at Ryuutaro's words that were meant to

say「Oi oi, Myuu-chan's concept is just too tricky there」.

「She was working hard that wholeheartedly saying 『Myuu will present papa with the best quarters choco cake nano!』 while there was chocolate cream stuck on her nose tip you know? I thought I was going to die in agony there.」

Understanding voices 「Aa~」 came from here and there inside the class. Indeed, it was an overly powerful mental attack from the beloved daughter. Surely it inflicted lethal damage to the father.

Yue also stood up while saying 「.....Nn. I too, when I was told 『Myuu will present Yue-oneechan with cherry as crimson as your eyes nano!』, I got nosebleed」 while recounting about her dying experience. Color of understanding was gradually appearing in her face.

Shia and others were also talking. According to their story, it seemed Myuu intended to present each Oneechan with chocolate cake that expressed each of their characteristic trait.

「That's, it must be unbearable. Aa~, I also want Myuu-chan's chocolate now.」

「Right? I'm thinking, that if it's for Myuu's sake I'll destroy the world.」

「What are you going to do destroying the world」

「I'm wrong. If it's for Myuu's sake, I can pillage all the cacao and sugar in the world.」

「No, that's not really different from previously.」

Hajime displayed his doting parent quality. He could actually do what he said, so it wasn't really a laughing matter. Ryutaro made tsukkomi at such Hajime. Not just the classmates, even Yue and others were also showing exasperated face.

—

—

—

The morning of Valentine day.

「.....」

Hajime was wordlessly sending a fixed gaze at the breakfast on the table.

On the plate that was plastic wrapped like onigiri, a very bizarre black object was placed.

When he shifted his gaze to the side, there was a letter placed there.

『To my beloved son. It's valentine choco that is packed with plenty of love from mother. Enjoy it as breakfast replacement. It's not a failed work you know? This is just a result of not succeeding using this method.』

She was saying something like what Edison-san would say, but in the end it seemed she was just pushing the cleaning up of her failed work to her son.

Then where was the success work?

「How passionate isn't it, ufufu.」

Remia who seemed to be the one who was making the real breakfast arrived while going 'my my ufufu'.

Hajime said thanks to her while taking his seat. He completely agreed with her.

The success work, that was to say the actual chocolate must be brought by Shuu anyway within his bag so that he could it in his company while boasting about it, while laughing loudly in front of his subordinates who were bachelor and didn't have lover.

Shia who was also coming out from the kitchen spoke cheerfully.

father

「By the way, we have given ours too, so Tou-sama's bag is littered all over with chocolates. That Tou-sama, it seems he will line everything up on his company desk.」

「He is really planning to instigate everyone there. Even though some people were just grumbling to him that they got dumped by their girlfriend or their wife return to her parent's house.....」

「It will become a scene of carnage there nano~!」

Myuu was sitting beside the exasperated Hajime while happily saying the words that shouldn't be said, looking like she was really in enjoyment. Hajime-

papa's cheeks were twitching slightly.

After that, Yue and Tio also arrived and they began breakfast like usual.

「Papa, papa.」

「Hm?」

Myuu who was stuffing her cheeks with the sweet rolled egg exclusive for herself called out to Hajime. There was a scrap of rolled egg stuck at the corner of her lips, Hajime took it while tilting his head.

Myuu tensed her expression and spoke while having her mouth wiped.

「Today, come back home faster than wind, nano.」

「Leave it to me. I'll even fly across space.」

「No, let's just go back home normally. Or rather, it will be Myuu-chan who come back later if Hajime-san get back that fast.」

Shia's tsukkomi exploded.

Myuu had worked hard from yesterday evening until the night, so it appeared her valentine preparation had finished. Myuu's specially made quarters choco cake and the character choco for all the Oneechan were slumbering slowly within the refrigerator.

It was a rare chance, so today Kaori, Shizuku, and also Aiko would come to Nagumo family house to accept Myuu's choco.

After finishing breakfast, for some reason Tio and Remia left the house first. Usually the student group would be first, but were they busy today?

Even while thinking it was strange, it would be troubling if some bunches who were still harboring ephemeral dream for Yue and others were to be crowding around them nonchalantly, so today Yue and Shia, and even Myuu who would be going to nursery school went out of the home together.

By the way, this year Myuu would enroll into elementary school. Hajime-papa had finished producing a backpack artifact that was fully loaded with gimmick like missile, laser, and the like. It could even be used to freely fly in the sky. The functions would make even Tony Otark-san's eyes snapped wide open.

Myuu was holding hand with Hajime while talking excitedly about the valentine party tonight. Yue and Shia and naturally Hajime too were hearing her talk while feeling warm and fluffy right from the morning.

Like that, the group arrived in front of the station. Originally they would ride the train here, but Myuu's nursery school was at the other side of the station, so today they would cross the street and went until the nursery school.

The heartwarming atmosphere of three high school students and a little girl caused man and woman, young and old, going to school or to work to send them glances. Their expression loosened as though they had that warmth shared with them slightly.

But, at that time, there were two silhouettes running toward them from behind the cover of a large object in front of the station. It was two girls wearing sailor uniform, one with black hair and the other one with emerald blond hair.

「Goshuji—Hajime-kun♪ I wish thee wouldst receive this valentine choco!」

「Uu, Ha, Hajime-san. Please accept this.....」

The people at the surrounding opened their eyes wide in surprise at the sight of a young man who was already accompanied by two beautiful girls getting valentine chocolate from another two beautiful girls.

The females were half creeped out thinking 「Uaa, would this become carnage? Or rather, that boy, is he totally popular!?', while the other half seemed to be in admiration, but the males were clicking their tongues in synchronization.

The heartwarming atmosphere until just now vanished. Now there was the air of peevishness that seemed to really want to say 「Fall to hell!」。Naturally there must be some men among them that also had fiancée or girlfriend, but for every man to be like that without exception must be because of the appearance of Yue and others as expected.

But, for Hajime it wasn't the time for that. Or rather, the people at the surrounding also noticed something out of place in proportion to the degree that they paid attention.



‘Eh? Somehow, those two.....are they really student?’, was in their mind.

「Ti, Tio. Remia.....you two, what are you doing?」

Yes, the two who came wearing sailor uniform like adolescent youth, to be frank they were Tio and Remia. It seemed this was why they left the house earlier.

Tio looked triumphant, while Remia looked so red he was worried that she might explode at this rate.

「Just as thou couldst see, we art trying to have the person in our heart to receiveth our valentine choco.」

「I know that. What I’m asking is about this abnormal situation that make me want to escape reality.」

「We too wisheth to try experiencing the springtime of student for a bit.」

*Sharara* Tio twirled on the spot. Her skirt fluttered gently. Her black hair flowed in the air. *Wink* She finished it with a wink, then Tio-san asked.

「How’s that? Mine “sailor uniform look”, it’s really tempting correct?」

Hajime grinned widely and said.

「It’s really creepy, Klarus-san.」

「I’m called with mine family name!? Klarus-san, that hurts though!?!」

‘That reaction is just strange!’ Is what Klarus-san seemed to want to say.

‘Rather, it’s your head that is strange’, Hajime wanted to say, but, well, this was Tio. She was a pervert from the start. Blundering like this was her forte.

The problem was,

「Remia.....」

「Please, don’t say anything.....」

Most likely, she got carried away by Tio’s momentum and she thought that this would be a display of her playfulness, but it seemed that when the time came to practice it for real, she was so embarrassed she could die.

It was without a doubt that the uniform looked good on them in a sense, but

the atmosphere they were clad in was completely that of an adult, so no matter what they looked like they were doing indecent cosplay. That point was the problem.

Even from among the people around, some were stopping still even though it was a busy time in the morning and began to stare hard at the two. Such people continued to appear from the crowd.

Remia wouldn't meet Hajime's gaze no matter what. Myuu briskly approached such Remia.

「Mama.」

「Myu, Myuu?」

Myuu looked up at her sailor uniform mother and *plop* she put her hand on Remia's hand. She then spoke with an expression that looked really like a kind adult woman.

「Mama, you must be tired. Myuu will help out more, that's why let's take a bit of rest?」

Remia crumbled. She said 「I want to return to sea!」 while crouching and covering her face with both hands.

「Oops, we wouldst be late if we doth not go soon. Then, Goshujin-sama, these art choco from me and Remia. Please accept them.」

「Aah, yeah, well, that's. Thanks.」

Hajime's face was conflicted, however, it was more or less something prepared for him, so he said thanks and accepted.

Tio said 「Both of us wouldst send off Myuu. Now, let's go! Remia, Myuu!」. She helped Remia stood up and pulled her hand while carrying Myuu in her arm and rushed away.

「Wai-, please wait a second, Tio-san!? Don't tell me we are going to the nursery school looking like this!?!」

「Is there any problem?」

「There is nothing but problem! How will the teachers and other parents look

at us!? I'm begging you please let me change~~~~~e!」

The scream of Remia who was mercilessly being dragged away while demanding to change clothes resounded in front of the station.

However, there was no way for seaman race to win against the physical strength of dragon race. The mother and daughter were easily dragged away by the hopeless dragon-sama.

「In a sense, it's Remia's figure like that that is rarer than the sailor uniform appearance.」

「Remia-san getting flustered like that cannot be seen that often after all.」

「.....Nn. A sad incident.」

Hajime, Shia, and Yue, the three of them nodded to each other with half a smile. Then they entered the station as though nothing had happened.

—

—

—

After arriving at school and going to the shoe rack, a booby trap was activated.

「Hajime-san, this is a really elaborate mechanism. My family will be in admiration seeing this.」

「.....Nn. Recently, the technique of soul sisters is rapidly improving.」

Seeing the trap that was prepared near the shoe rack, Shia went 「Hohou」 in admiration, while Yue immediately thought of the perpetrator in her mind and made a complicated expression. Hajime was staring fixedly.

He dismantled the trap, changed into his indoor shoes, and advanced toward the classroom inside the school building that was filled with vague giddy atmosphere. Then at the front he saw Aiko and the vice principal.

The vice principal had his back turned on Hajime and others while facing Aiko. Aiko immediately noticed them and greeted with her gaze. It seemed that she was in the middle of talking with the vice principal.

「——That's why, please focus your mind constantly in this kind of day.」

「Ye, yes. That's, yes, of course, vice principal-sensei.」

It seemed Aiko was receiving pointer. Like last time, Hajime and co erased their presence and sneaked behind the vice principal.

「Especially, Hatayama-sensei. You have the tendency to be too close to your students. Don't do anything like making ruckus together with them!」

Hajime took a fighting pose behind the vice principal. And then, he told Aiko 「This guys is always nagging on and on and on and on every day, let's send him flying at least once!」 using his strong gaze and provoked with punching gesture.

「That's obviously out of the question!」

「Wha, what? Ha, Hatayama-sensei! What do you mean by that!? Don't tell me, you. You have also prepared that.....」

By the time Hajime and co were approaching sneakily, the vice principal's talk only entered from her right ear before going out from her left ear. Because of that she was wondering what the vice principal meant by “that” and tilted her head.

If she remembered right, the gist of what the vice principal was talking about until just now was about being careful so that nothing like illicit sexual relationship or the like would happen because of the valentine day.

And then, because of the returnee commotion previously, the project of making a manual that listed out the countermeasure for every situation carried out. The other day, an instruction was given for the teachers to think of countermeasure that could be put into the manual, about the correct way to deal with the students who would enter a festive mood in this kind of eventful day.

Aiko was convinced 「That's it!」. She felt terrified of her own deductive ability!

「Of course, I have prepared it! There is no way I'll forget!」

「What, the!? .....No, you must mean that. You mean, it will be for your fellow teachers right? Well, if it's you being considerate.....」

Aiko went 「Uh」 at a loss of words. “Fellow teachers” ——in other words, vice

principal seemed to be holding expectation that Aiko was having several ideas.

But, but still!

「I'm sorry.....I only have one.」

「What, the.....」

Vice principal-sensei was shaken. His wig was already shifting. Behind him, Hajime and co were watching the exchange between Aiko and vice principal with deep interest. No, it was only Shia who slowly and quietly reached with her hand to attempt righting the shifted wig. What a kind rabbit.

The vice principal pushed up his glasses twice or thrice and asked while getting complicatedly self-aware of the surrounding. Of course, Hajime and co were also continuously moving to his blind spot in accordance with the motion of his gaze.

「Hatayama-sensei. That's, I'll ask just in case but.....that's, who are you planning to give it to?」

To who? It was obvious. The one who gave the instruction to think of idea was the vice principal. Then, the one she would hand it to would be,

「Obviously it's for vice principal-sensei!」

「!!?」

Mayday! Mayday! The wig is going to fall down even now!

The wig was sliding down in accordance with the heavy trembling of the vice principal due to the great shock. The vice principal didn't even notice the danger above his head while his mouth was opening and closing like fish, then,

「I said it before but.....I have, a wife and a child alreadyyyyyyyyyyy-」

「Eeh!?」

Vice principal-sensei turned around in a flash and ran away.

Hajime and co instantly retreated to the side, but Shia's finger that was trying to fix the wig's position grazed the wig and became lethal instead.

The wig fluttered in the air.....

The cool and clear morning sunlight was reflected with a momentary flash on the vice principal's head.

「Se, sensei! Vice principal-senseii! Your wig-, your wig feeell! Don't enter into the staff roooooom-! The atmosphere there will be unbearable agaiiiiiin-」

Aiko caught the wig midair and chased behind the vice principal. Her voice resounded inside the building.

「.....Nn. A sad incident.」

「Even though it's valentine, there are a lot of sad incidents.」

「Surely, valentine is made up with nothing but this kind of things that shouldn't happen.」

Hajime and co looked at each other with a really conflicted look before they headed to the classroom together.

They entered the classroom and greeted their classmates, then immediately after that,

「Gooodd mo~~~rning! Onee-samaa! Your beloved step sister has come!」

junior

The soul sister kouhai-chan made her entrance. The atmosphere 'she came as expected' flowed inside the classroom.

Kouhai-chan clicked her tongue as soon as she saw Hajime and muttered.

「Chih. Damn senpai, you are tenacious. So you are safe.」

「I can hear you there, kouhai who is making yakuza face right since the morning.」

Kouhai-chan leaked out a murmur that sounded like a confession of being the perpetrator of the morning booby trap.

But just when Hajime thought that, kouhai-chan made a cheerful smile and presented a choco.

「It was only my passion surging out for a bit. Please accept this as my apology, Nagumo-senpai.」

*Murmur*, part of the boys—especially Shinji and Yoshiki were shaken. This

man could receive chocolate from even kouhai-chan who was considering him as her sworn enemy!? Was what they thought.

Hajime stared still at kouhai-chan, then he put the bite sized choco into his mouth. And then, after he chewed a few times, he spoke with an expression as though he had just his expectation proved.

「Oi, kouhai. You put too much laxative inside.」

*Murmur*, the classroom was stirred. *Pyuu~* Kouhai-chan was whistling with feigned ignorance. Shudder ran through the classroom at her terrifying act of serving poison to the demon king.

Thanks to the “Poison Resistance”, nothing happened to Hajime. He briskly approached kouhai-chan. Kouha-chan ran away.

Without moving to cut off her path, Hajime pinioned her from behind!

「Wha, what is it senpai!? This is sexual harassment you know!？」

「Nn~, you, you still have some left right? Come on, I'll try sampling it a bit.」

With a way of talking that was like a delinquent extorting someone, Hajime put his hands on kouhai-chan's armpits and shook her up and down. A scream 「stop iiitt~」 came from kouhai-chan, but of course, Hajime didn't stop.

「Where is it.....hm? Is it here?」

「N, noo. Where are you putting your hand into——hyahn. Wai, don't go theree!」

The demon king-sama flipped kouhai-chan's shirt, thrust his hand around the stomach area and groped around. Without even being able to escape, her raw stomach was groped around. Kouhai-chan was writhing while turning red.

As expected, Shizuku couldn't bear to see the super sexual harassment that occurred right in the morning and she cut in.

「Wait Hajime! No matter what that's overdoi——」

「Oo, there it is. This one is for Shizuku right?」

Saying that, Hajime took away a choco that was enthusiastically wrapped from between her skirt and stomach. Was she warming it by Hideyoshi

style.....? It was worrying whether the chocolate had melted or not. (TN: The tale of Hideyoshi warming Nobunaga's shoes by putting it inside his clothes.)

Kouhai-chan went limp on the legs, her face was bright red while she was breathing roughly. She was murmuring 「My stomach that became squishy from sampling food too much got toyed by senpai.....」.

Hajime mercilessly tore the wrapping of the chocolate for Shizuku and put the content into his mouth.

「Aa~~~! The serious chocolate I prepared for Onee-sama's sake! How dare you! Even if it's senpai, this is unforgiva——」

「As I thought, something is put inside. This is.....aphrodisiac right?」

「I don't really understand what is senpai talking about there.」

Shizuku's fierce gaze pierced kouhai-chan. Even the classmates were sending her piercing gaze with creeped out expression that seemed to want to say 「Uwaa, this girl really did it」.

Kouhai-chan was starting to trickle cold sweat a lot. Then she ran away like a darting rabbit.

Demon king-sama circled around her. And then, he stuffed the remaining aphrodisiac filled choco into kouha-chan's mouth, then pinioned her and blocked her mouth with his hand to make her swallow.

‘Muuuh, muuuh’ kouhai-chan groaned, but her resistance ended up in vain and she gulped. Hajime who saw that released her, then right away,

「I, I'll remember thiiiiiss——, this damn brutish senpaiiii-」

She spat out a parting threat and ran away. Perhaps the medicine was a powerful one with immediate effect. She was writhing strangely while walking pigeon toed. It was truly a scene that made one went speechless.

「That girl, where did she get her hand on something like aphrodisiac?」

Atsushi tilted his head while saying that, then Noboru and Akito shrugged their shoulders and replied.

「She is the female high-school student who has adventure everyday. Surely



she got involved with something again and obtained it at that time.」

「It's troubling because that sound possible. That girl, it feels like one day she will get a secret treasure that she picked up from somewhere.」

‘Certainly’, everyone nodded.

After that, Nana distributed chocolates that the girls of the class made to the boys. Shinji and Yoshiki wolfed down the chocolate while crying.

Actually, Myuu also had Hajime brought an assortment of mini choco for the classmates, saying 「For always taking care of papa, nano」. The classmates whether boys or girls ate it with relish.

Yue and others who didn't know it went 「.....Somehow, she is like a good wife」, and they made a slightly shuddering expression at Myuu's detailed attention.

By the way, about the chocolates that the girls prepared, other than the chocolates for the boys, they also prepared “offering for demon king-sama”. A single bead of chocolate from each of the girl classmates, they were all put together inside a square box.

No matter how the boys saw it, the dedication put into it was at different level from the chocolate they received. Somehow it gave a “serious” atmosphere, it was an extremely splendid chocolate.

The lightless eyes of Kaori and Yue looked around staringly at the girls, but the girls averted their gaze quickly with a splendidly harmonious movement.

Also,

「Ah, this one is from me!」

The moment Suzu said that and pointed at one of the chocolates, it went without saying that Ryutaro then challenged the demon king into a duel.

Of course, Suzu immediately presented him with the serious choco and the two of them brought about an atmosphere that was unique to a couple where they began to act shyly with each other, it was also went without saying that after that the boys challenged Ryutaro into duel.

Also, at the corner of the roused up classroom, Tsuji Ryoko secretly handed

over choco to Nomura Kentarou. Hajime and others noticed that, but they pretended to not see anything with a lukewarm feeling.

「? The choco that was over here, anyone know where it is gone to?」

Nagayama Juugo noticed that the mass produced chocolate for the boys that he had secured for himself was gone and raised his voice.

「Ah, sorry. I ate it.」

「Uoh!? Wait, Kousuke huh. So you are here.」

「I'm here. I came normally. I was beside you for about ten minutes already.」

Kousuke who was moving his mouth in chewing motion. With this everyone finally became aware of Kousuke.

Right away, Shinji and Yoshiki were reminded of something and picked quarrel with him.

「Oi, Endo. You bastard, why are you eating choco normally huh?」

「Eh? Wha, what's with you. Is there anything wrong with me eating it?」

「Obviously! You bastard, you have someone to give you serious choco already. Several of them! Yes, several! These chocolates are for the boys who aren't blessed! Leave! "Nonchalantly a harem bastard" like you, just leave! Abyss lord, vanish!」

It was as though he was driving away evil spirit.

Kousuke was overwhelmed and backed away while making justification at least.

「No, I haven't received any chocolate here. Rather, the plan is for me to be the one giving the present.」

A shock ran through the boys. Certainly, they had heard that the custom of "from female to male" was uniquely applied in Japan. At abroad, the mainstream seemed to be "the male conveying their love to female".

Although, for a friend of them to plan to practice it for real, from their point of view it was a shock as though they were shown the difference of status between them.

「.....So, so, this is, the nonchalantly the mankind's strongest.」

「The demon king's right hand man.....that title ain't just for show.」

「The abyss of Abyssgate Lord.....it's deep.」

「Don't call me Abyssgate」

With this and that, Hajime and co were heating up until Aiko came for the morning assembly. After that, they staved off the second and third attack from kouhai-chan and her fellow soul sisters, Hajime got aimed by a strangely passionate male kouhai, and the backbone of Shirasaki family who came until school to pick up his daughter after school was over and got turned away by the said daughter. It was after all of those they finally returned home safely.

Aiko and Kaori, Shizuku, furthermore even Liliana was taken away from the kingdom. That night the house of Nagumo family was bustling with the valentine chocolate party.

Myuu's quarters chocolate cake was made with splendid workmanship. It was a whole cake, what's more it was huge. Midway Hajime got heartburn, but he finished eating all of it with the support of chugging in espresso.

It seemed that Myuu obtained self-confidence in making sweets after seeing Hajime's eating manner that was hearty and joyful. It felt like this would become her hobby.

This activity was very feminine compared to doing war game or having dogfight with JSDF, so Hajime-papa praised himself in his heart that it was the correct move to finish eating everything using guts.

「Hajime. Nice guts there, but wouldn't it be fine even if you shared it with Tou-san?」

「It was a cake made by Myuu for me. I won't give it to anyone.」

Hajime who looked somewhat pale and Shuu who was making lifeless eyes.

Actually, in the company when Shuu grandly flaunted off the chocolates from his wife and daughters-in-law with a triumphant look, the bachelor & no girlfriend subordinates (+subordinate whose wife returned to her parent's home) snapped and caused a coup d'état. All the chocolates were plundered by

them right in front of his eyes.

In the end, he couldn't eat even a single one and returned home with lifeless eyes the whole time.

Although Sumire said 「I thought that would happen」 and gave him a fondant chocolate that she saved as reserve. After eating that, it seemed Shuu's mind was mostly recovered.

And then, while hearing about the sad incident in the nursery school from one other person who was making eyes like a dead fish, Remia, the valentine day of Nagumo family kept going on.

—

—

—

「.....Nine o'clock huh. When is Hatayama-sensei going to come to give the chocolate.....」

Inside the staff room, there was only the vice principal alone. He was doing overtime work until he had finished the work share for one week, but he still showed no sign of going home.

He who was recently rumored to get strangely passionate with work after that was finishing his work for the future one after another until he received a call from his wife who had snapped.

The day he became the headmaster was near.....perhaps.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I still had some more material left that I want to write, but the characters had already reached 14000 so I refrained. (TN: 14000 in kanji character)

Other soul sisters, mob classmate, girls of other class=>Hajime, Shirasaki-papa's early morning battle, etc, etc,

I'm thinking to write them in another chance again.

# Arifureta Chapter 306

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 The Fate of Traitor

—

TN: I uploaded the valentine special program one chapter before this.

For those who haven't read it, please take a look.

---

Even though Vatican was in the middle of enormous chaos, after observing that situation, for some reason this man that should be their comrade— —Leda went away from the scene.

Kousuke who witnessed that was following him even now.

Leda picked up a taxi midway and began to move, so Kousuke was sitting cross-legged right now on the roof of that taxi.

As always, whether it was when the taxi stopped from traffic light or there was another car running right behind, no one noticed him. He was relaxing leisurely while taking out his smartphone suddenly.

And then, he called the person he wanted to talk with.

『Kousuke!?!』

The other side picked up faster than the first ring could end. The voice that sounded like an angry yell when calling his name sharply reverberated inside his ear. Kousuke reflexively distanced the smartphone from his ear.

The other party became even more anxious when he didn't reply and she let out words 『Kousuke! What's the matter!?! Are you safe!?! Say somethiing!』 like

machine gun.

The clone that had been always beside her had vanished. 「Well of course she would get worried」, even while thinking apologetically like that, Kousuke hurriedly replied.

「My bad, Emily. I made you worried. I'm fine.」

『Kousuke.....』

She was sobbing. He could hear small voice 『I'm glaaad, really glaad』 muttering from the other side.

It caused his feeling of guilt to become worse, at the same time his heart was warmed that Emily was worried about him so much like this. That hellish foreign world was really making his blood running cold. Emily's voice was like a hearth, melting down Kousuke's frozen heart.

「How is it at your side right now? Is there any problem?」

『No, I'm fine. Right now with Vanessa's recommendation, we are receiving protection from the security bureau. Hey, Kousuke, just what happened?』

‘As expected’, Kousuke let out a relieved sigh. The Berserk case was over, and the situation was one where it was fine to think that there should be almost no one who would target Grant family, but it was really like Vanessa to make this careful and steady judgment which paid attention to the worst case.

Kousuke was opening his mouth to tell at the very least about the gist of what happened, but before he could a different voice interrupted him.

『Abyssgate. This is Magdanese.』

「It's Kousuke, madam chief.」

The way she called him wouldn't change no matter how many time he told her. Somehow it was turning into an exchange that was like greeting between them.

『Explain the situation, including the matter of mister Nagumo befo——』

『Kousuke-san! This is your Vanessa! Are you really safe?』

『.....Agent Paradis. Right now I'm talk——』

『About everyone of Grant family, this Vanessa, yes, this Va – nes – sa-, is securing their protection! Please praise me! Please reward me!』

『Paradis. Stop fooling——』

『Specifically, whisper “You have done really well, my honey. I love you”——』

Right after that, from the other side of the smartphone, *uin uin* the groaning sound of a machine was resounding. At the same time 『Aaah, what are you doing with my jackeeet! Even though I had it custom-made because of my admiration to Kingsmon!?!』 such scream could be heard.

It seemed the chief’s cutting machine was working hard.

『Abyssgate. I’m turning on the speaker. Please report.』

「Yes, ma’am!」

Chief Magdanese’s “please” that sounded like the growl of a beast with her emotion suppressed caused Kousuke to do seiza on the taxi’s roof and began his report.

He reported only the summary swiftly and talked about the cause of his clone vanishing. A deep sigh leaking out could be heard from the other side of the smartphone.

『What should I say, they are holding an outrageous secret there.』

「I completely agree.」

『And, Abyssgate. What is your impression? Are they too also the same like you guys?』

「That was what I thought but.....perhaps, it’s different. It’s similar but.....they didn’t react to the wording that I used.」

『Is it not possible that they were covering it up?』

「I think their reaction was genuine. The situation also wasn’t one where they could use such tactic. Perhaps, the route from where they obtained power was different from us. Although, both powers are really similar, so I don’t think that they are completely unrelated.」

From the other side of the smartphone, several voices could be heard talking



to each other. As expected, the information that there were actually other people who possessed power that was similar with the returnees was something that even Chief Magdanese could immediately make decision about the plan going forward.

『Hey, Kousuke. And then, what would you do? Can you come back here?』

While the security bureau side was talking, Emily asked him worriedly. Her voice, if Kousuke wasn't misunderstanding, there was pleading that was mixed in it. There was her wish of 「Come back」 「Don't be reckless anymore」 to him.

「I'm sending clone to there.」

『What about Kousuke yourself?』

「I'm.....there are various things I have to dealt with. As expected there are many things in the situation this time that I cannot just leave alone. Right now I'm in the middle of tailing a suspicious fellow.」

『.....I see.』

Emily didn't say 「Come back」 to him even while feeling down. Surely she didn't want to be a hindrance to the role and will that Kousuke was holding.

Somehow, for Kousuke, it was something that was stimulating his heart terribly much but.....

He somehow suppressed the feeling of excessively wanting to writhe and continued the talk.

「Emily. About the matter from here on, can you go to Japan until the situation calm down?」

『To Japan?』

「Yeah. I think nothing will happen but, like Vanessa, this is just in case. With me getting involved with Vatican and the group that attacked it, there is no guarantee that they won't make a move to Grant family right? I can also send two clones to the place of my family and Grant family, but it will be safer if both families are together.」

He could hear the voice of Emily consulting with her parents and grandmother, and also Vanessa who seemed to be beside her.

After a while, Emily gave him a reply that sounded a bit happy.

『Right, I'll do as Kousuke say. I also want to meet again with mother-in-law and everyone else, also, the chief is——』

『Abyssgate. We will also come along. Allen, me, Paradis, and several other agents. In case you need help at your side, you can contact Pays.』

It seemed she was planning to go visit Nagumo family house at this chance.

「Bernard huh. Roger. But, you know? I don't mind if you go to my house but, even if you go to Nagumo's house the person won't be there.」

『Right now it's just the right timing for our side. At worst, we can at least have a talk with one of the wives. That will be enough. Mister Nagumo is a devoted husband right? If we can leave a good impression with his wives, then that will be a good result. If I keep asking for too much, then no matter how much time passed the progress will keep being zero.』

「Well, certainly.」

As expected from Chief Magdanese. It seemed she wouldn't let go of the chance.

After that, they talked for a bit more, then Kousuke cut off the call after telling his intention to contact Nagumo house about the visit as well as reporting about the case this time.

Chief Magdanese and co would also depart after finishing various preparations, in that case Kousuke was pondering whether it would be faster to send his clone from Roma to join them quickly at London, or to send his clone to Japan's airport.

While thinking such thing, he tried to contact Hajime just in case, but as always he couldn't reach him. Not having other option, he contacted the Nagumo house.

From the time, right now it was about eight o'clock at night in Japan, so someone should be in the house but.....

After the calling tone rang out several times, the voice of a little girl came from the other side of the smartphone.

『Yes! This is Nagumo! Who is this!?!』

An energetic voice. The polite wording might be the result of the upbringing. Kousuke unconsciously broke into a smile and opened his mouth.

「Yo, Myuu-chan. This is Kousuke.」

『.....Who is it? How do you know Myuu's name nano?』

「Yes!?! Wai-, that's a harsh joke! This is me, me! You know me right!?!」

Myuu's voice became stiff with wariness and asked once more. Kousuke was seriously depressed thinking that he got forgotten while insisting about his identity.

But, his speech that was too shaken was a miss.

『Mamaa——!! It came nano! Finally it came to our house nano! The 'it's me, it's me' scam nanoo——!!』

「Wait! Myuu-chan wait! This is seriously ain't a laughing matter! This is Kousuke you know!?! Your papa's friend Endo Kousuke you know!?!」

The telephone in Nagumo house was an artifact. In other words, it also had a function to search the caller, and if the caller was an insolent person, it could do distant attack by making use of the other party's phone.

Kousuke was trembling with fear knowing that his smartphone could turn into a brutal weapon at any time while making desperate explanation.

Then, it seemed that he got through,

『My? Endo, Kousuke.....papa's friend.....aah, Aby——not, Endou nano! Long time, Endou! Are you healthy nano?』

「Eh? What's with that flow!?! Or rather, just now, you almost said Abyssgate.....no, for now let's leave that aside, you are calling me Endo without honorific!?! That's how you are calling me!?!」

『Endo, your tension is too high nano. Has something good happened to you nano?』

「There isn't! Rather I went to hell just now! Wait, that's not it! Before this, didn't you call me something like "Kousuke-oniisan"?」

『Myuu is a woman who won't look back to the past nano.』

「What are you saying! Even if it's ok to not look back to the past, what's with the lack of honorific? Did I do something to Myuu-chan?」

『Nope. Endo didn't do anything. Just, at the virtual space training, Myuu always get thoroughly bashed by Aby at level 1, so Myuu thought that calling with just Endo doesn't matter anymore nano.』

「So it's that gameee-!?!」

The artifact for full dive into virtual space that was prepared for Myuu's sake. The item that was previously turned malfunctioning because of Kaori and Yue before they got lost into it.

Myuu who was using it correctly for training faced mock battle in stages from level 1 mode against Kousuke and all the Oneechan.

And then, in the game world Kousuke was always Abyssgate.

Myuu who was gradually getting irritated by his speech and action there lowered Kousuke's hierarchy inside herself even at the real world and reached this kind of conclusion.

『Ah, Endo. Shizuku-oneechan will take the call nano.』

「Ah, yeah. Got it. But, it's not Endo, but Kousuke-oniisan——」

『Endo-kun? What's the matter?』

「.....It's nothing.」

Kousuke-oniisan gave up various things.

「So Yaegashi is also over there today huh.」

『Yes. Kaori also came. Right now she is exchanging pro-wrestling technique with Yue.』

「I, I see.....what about the others? Is there anything happening over there?」

『.....Everything is all right. Okaa-san and Otou-san still hasn't returned home though. Has something happened?』

As expected from the sharp Shizuku. It seemed she felt a presence of unrest

from Kousuke's question.

Kousuke reported how Hajime and Shia who were in the middle of their trip came to Grant family house the other day, and then what happened at Vatican.

『It's hard to believe so suddenly.....people who can use magic and artifact in Vatican.....and also the hellish foreign world.....』

「Yeah, I also still cannot believe it here. Although, it's the truth. Right now I'm following someone who is their comrade but also seems like involved with the attackers. As soon as I find out something, I'll contact again but.....can you try contacting Nagumo from your side too?」

『Wait a bit.』

It seemed Shizuku also asked for confirmation at Yue and others too.

After a while,

『We also cannot get in touch with him here. But, Yue said that both of them are definitely safe, so we think they are fine.』

「Even though you cannot contact them, but she know that they are safe? Is it artifact?」

『.....It seems it's "love".』

「I, I see.....」

Yue-sama. It seemed she was able to confirm the wellbeing of Hajime and Shia with love. The principle of it was unclear.

「Anyway, I'll investigate some things here for a bit more. I think it will be fine but, it's the fact that Vatican want our information, and that Vatican got attacked. You guys over there too, pay attention to the surrounding. Can I ask you to contact the others too?」

『Right, please leave it to us. I'll tell everyone to be on guard.』

The returnee group had dedicated telepathy network for emergency time. Everyone was supplied with artifact that could convey information that felt like 「Directly to the brain!？」 for emergency time.

『Then, what will you do? Is it better if we also go to Vatican? We will head

there if you need help.』

Kousuke was thinking for a bit hearing Shizuku's reinforcement proposal.

「No, I'm still all right. The "mirror gate" something was at least closed already, and there are also still things to investigate. Rather, I think I want you all to stay in Japan yet for now. There are a lot of things that should be protected there, and actually I'm also planning to make Emily and others to evacuate there. Even though Nagumo isn't there, but if Yaegashi and others are there then I could feel relieved.」

『Is that so? Then it's fine though.....』

「I'll contact if it's necessary. With Yue-san there, you all can instantly come here anyway.」

『Certainly that's true. I understand. But, Endo-kun too, don't be too reckless. I won't forgive you if you make Rana-chan and also Emily-chan cry you know?』

「O, ou.....roger.」

Kousuke patted down his chest thinking that it was now fine with this while also telling that Britain's security bureau chief and her agents also planned to accompany Grant family, and how they wanted to meet and greet with Yue and others if possible.

Like that, Kousuke cut off the call. A beat later,

「.....nn. Endo, long time no see. You cut your hair?」

「Douwaah!?!」

Yue-sama, above the running taxi she desce☆nded!

Of course, Kousuke tumbled and fell! The car behind was approaching! Midair consecutive leap!

「.....Nn, welcome back.」

「I'm baaaack! But Yue-san, seriously spare me from teleporting in suddenly!」

Kousuke somehow calmed down his pounding heart, but the culprit in question was only tilting her head expressionlessly.

「Or rather, you are in plain sight of the surrounding.」

「.....Who do you think I am. I'm putting up a barrier so it's fine. More importantly, Emirin?」

The Emirin that she mean referred to Emily. With this and that at the first meeting and how Shia was favoring her really much, Yue also became partial with Emily. It was to the degree that she gave her a nickname.

「Aa~, right now she is under the protection of the security bureau though.」

Other than with Kaori, Shizuku, and Liliana, Kousuke fundamentally used polite language or semi polite language to the wife~s. No matter how he couldn't go against them. His humble appearance looked like a subordinate who was constantly shrinking back in fear against his boss's wife.

「Could it be, Yue-san come to pick them up?」

「.....Nn. We made her cry last time, so this time I come to pick her up courteously.」

‘Also.....’ Yue continued,

「.....I heard that the chief of Britain's security bureau want to meet. Now that Hajime isn't here, it's necessary for me as his first wife to deal with it *so we won't get underestimated.*」

Yue-sama said that with a fearless smile. Kousuke pressed his hands in prayer inside his heart toward Chief Magdanese.

It seemed Yue traced this location from Kousuke's smartphone. Then she used her own smartphone to investigate the coordinate of security bureau headquarter. And then, she turned her gaze to empty air slightly and.....

It seemed she managed to locate the coordinate for the teleportation destination.

「Ah, if you are going to teleport, can I ask you to also bring my clone?」

「.....nn」

*Pop* A clone body popped out. It would be teleported together with Yue to Emily's location.

「.....Endo. Contact if necessary. Help will come.」

「Yue-san. Thank you——」

「.....From Kaori.」

It seemed she would forcefully teleport Kaori to here. The image of Kaori suddenly getting thrown into Europe by teleportation, and then getting indignation with teary eyes floated in Kousuke's mind.

Kousuke nodded 「Tha, that's reassuring」 while trickling cold sweat. With the situation as it was, he believed that they would really come if he asked but..... he felt a bit uneasy.

「.....nn, then」

Yue-sama vanished with the same abruptness like when she descended. Instant teleportation that didn't even need gate. It was as though she wasn't there right from the start. Yue-sama was Yue-sama. Her way of life that was too freedom was truly like her husband. They were spouses that resembled each other.

「Well, with this Emily will be fine. ....Though the chief's stomach might not come out of this safely.」

Kousuke was murmuring that while resting his body until the taxi stopped.

—

—

—

After driving about an hour, the taxi stopped at the outskirts of Roma. Midway, the taxi also did meaningless U-turn and detour several times, so it seemed the passenger was paying attention so to not get tailed.

Surely he had never even dreamed that there was someone riding on the roof.

The taxi arrived in front of an old church built from red bricks. They were at the outskirts of a quiet residential area where the surrounding gave an atmosphere that was even more like middle age Europe or Tortus compared to Vatican.



The man who came down from the taxi——a man in his mid-thirties with sharp gaze, Leda was brushing up his black hair roughly while confirming that the taxi had completely left. After that he started walking toward the mansion.

He knocked on the wooden door that was facing the street. After that the church's door was slightly opened and a man with muddy eyes looked at Leda. And then, they whispered something to each other with a low voice, before the door was opened with creaking voice and Leda got beckoned to enter the church.

The man who was beckoning him in was clad in kinked cassock. Seeing that this place was a church, this man was surely the priest here.

Although, looking at his plump body, his loose flesh on his chin, and the smell of alcohol drifting from him, he was a terribly delinquent priest. If he wasn't wearing cassock, he would look like a drunk father no matter what.

The inside of the church was desolate. There was no sign at all that there was ever a mass that was held here. It looked terribly bleak, as though it was lacking even more warmth than outside.

Inside such church that already looked unused, at the deepest part——the area around the altar, there were four men.

There was a man who was wearing a suit that was obviously custom made in a glance, a man who was wearing fatigues for construction works, a young man who still looked like a student, and a normal old man who looked like he was only going out a bit for a stroll.

There, the delinquent priest and the suspicious Vatican staff joined them. The members didn't look like they were related in any way to each other.

「I heard. It looks like it failed huh?」

The man in suit said to Leda with a grave expression. The other members were also directing to him gazes that were filled with emotion that wasn't so good.

But, Leda who was receiving the concentrated gazes that were like bed of nails in a sense only shrugged his shoulders nonchalantly without concern.

「I have done my own role. That Aumale also accomplished his role before becoming a martyr. I don't know whether those lots fought harder than expected or if their luck was good.....or perhaps, if “that person” failed.」

「Watch your mouth!」

The man in fatigue grabbed Leda's collar. Leda raised both his hands in pose of surrender and spoke even more.

「But, it's the truth that the damage inflicted was serious. The “mirror gate” was also opened.

“That person” was unable to accomplish the objective even with such things having been achieved. I think it's only natural to think that “an irregular situation” occurred that caused such failure.”

「He is the person who will become the king of the new world! Such thing, is impossible! You, you and Aumale, weren't you two cutting corners too much!? Perhaps you got moved by affection——」

The man in fatigue grabbed even stronger as though he was scared of something. Leda let out a long sigh, twisted the hand of the man, and kicked him flying when he backed away while groaning in pain.

The man in fatigue crashed on his back on the church's long chair. Glimpse of dark flame that showed lack of sanity could be seen inside his eyes.

「Calm down. Certainly the matter didn't progress perfectly, but the top priority which was “the opening of mirror gate” was accomplished. The “wind of lamentation” flowed out to this world. Now when the strength of “that person” is increasing, there won't be any significant obstacle for the plan.」

The man in fatigue seemed to be mollified somewhat by those words. The other people were also sighing in relieve and pulled themselves together.

But, at that time, everyone suddenly fell silent. Their movement stopped as though they were machine that was cut off from electricity. They were looking at empty air with vast gaze.

And then, everyone simultaneously twisted their head with a snap and looked to the church's ceiling.

「-!?!」

There, the dumbfounded Kousuke was hiding. His face was filled with shock that said 「How did they find out!?!」.

At the same time, Kousuke noticed. Inside the church that was gloomy even though it was still afternoon, their eyes were shining faintly red.

*Click*, that sound resounded. Everyone took out a handgun. In an instant it was clear that they weren't trying to simply intimidate. Everyone pulled the trigger without the slightest hesitation.

「Nuwah!?! That's too much killing intent isn't it!?!」

Firing shot resounded consecutively. Kousuke twisted his body from the ceiling and dodged.

Splinters scattered one after another from the wall right at the side. It seemed that they had none of respect for the “house of God” as something sacred.

Although, just this much wasn't a significant problem. He had once fought the demon king-sama who should be called as the world's strongest gunner with his super precise as well as god speed gunshots.

This was just a mere six handguns. Normal bullets that weren't even accelerated electromagnetically and only got aimed roughly couldn't even graze Kousuke.

Using the ceiling's beam and wall, furthermore even the supporting pillar and electric light, Kousuke agilely jumped around inside the room.

By doing that, naturally the moment the bullets ran out arrived.

(They aren't even covering for the other members while they are reloading. ....Looks like they aren't trained.)

Even while thinking such thing, Kousuke landed right in the middle of them who were trying to exchange the bullet magazine.

「You——gahah」

「Guah」

The man in fatigue and the youth took a stance to seize Kousuke, but before they could, a palm strike and elbow strike struck each of their solar plexus and silenced them.

Furthermore, the priest and old man who had finished reloading got their jaw kicked with a midair spinning kick together and they were sent flying. Kousuke hit the man in suit's crotch with a reverse kick at the next moment.

The priest and old man got their consciousness blown away by concussion, while the man in suit fainted in agony with rolled up eyes.

Kousuke smoothly approached Leda who was positioned the farthest. He entered right into his bosom instantly and moved to put an elbow strike to his solar plexus without pause, but,

「——」

「Oh?」

Leda lightened the impact by jumping backward by himself. It seemed he still got considerably damaged, but he managed to suppress it with only getting his breath knocked out of him.

*Pan-* A dry sound of gunshot could be heard, but it was the ceiling that got drilled rather than the target. Kousuke approached once more and directed the gun muzzle along with the arm holding it to the ceiling.

「Chih」

A click of tongue. Leda reflexively pushed out his arm. It was a form for palm thrust, but *shan* a clear sound came at the same time and a blade snapped out from his wrist.

Kousuke stepped diagonally inside toward the arm that he twisted up. He evaded the assassin blade while at the same time he twisted Leda's arm that was holding the gun. Furthermore, he also prompted the movement of body weight.

「Gua!?」

With the arm getting twisted to a wrong direction, the body instinctively moved to avoid the danger. That was to say, it became an unintentional

forward somersault. Because his arm was restrained, he couldn't even perform ukemi and his back struck the hard stone floor.

However, Leda didn't stop moving. He aimed the tip of the snapped out assassin blade toward Kousuke and jerked his wrist.

At that moment, *bachin-* along with the sound of spring popping out, the assassin blade was detached and shot out.

「Get quiet for a bit.」

Kousuke casually dodged the flying blade and pulled up Leda's arm while putting his foot on Leda's shoulder. And then, he twisted in a flash.

*Gokin-* Such raw sound echoed. Leda raised a wordless scream.

Kousuke rolled him to lay upside-down and bound his arms with wire on his back.

「Now then, there is various things I want to ask but, for now, how did you notice me? What's more it was everyone.」

「.....」

Leda's face grimaced in pain, even so he sent Kousuke a belittling gaze. He was showing that there was no way he would do what he was told just because of simple pain.

(Well, there is no way he will answer honestly just from getting asked huh. It looks like this guy even betrayed his comrades after all, a normal way won't work.)

Kousuke sighed while rummaging his chest pocket. What came out then was an artifact in the shape of a five yen coin with string attached.

「It seems you are busy with various things but.....won't you retire here and try becoming a fantastic villager?」

「Ha?」

Leda-san was resolved to stay silent, but Kousuke's words were just too cryptic that he let out a dumbfounded voice.

——Brainwashing artifact “Betting on the pride of villager”

The five yen coin made from crystal was hung down in front of Leda who was unable to move. *Swi~ng, swi~ng.*

「You are gradually becoming straa~nge. You are becoo~ming straa~nge relatively speedi~ly」

「You, just what the hell you are doiing~~」

The brainwashing started relatively speedily. Leda-san's articulation immediately became odd and his eyes started to twirl around. Even though he was a member of a secret organization and familiar with battle, as expected it seemed he was unable to resist the charm of villager.

But, originally like that he should say out the standard words of 「I am villager of oo Village~」, but here an abnormality occurred.

Leda's eyes that Kousuke thought he was only seeing a trick of light before this——was shining red once more.

「O, oi. What's with those eyes——」

「No! No more-! Save me-!!」

Suddenly, Leda began to say 「Save me」 repeatedly with agonized voice.

Kousuke was anxiously wondering if “Betting on the pride of villager” was malfunctioning. In front of him, Leda raised his voice even louder.

「Just how many you think I have saved! Is it still not enough! Why won't you answer!? How many more do I have to save until there is salvation for *me*!? I cannot bear it anymore-. Human's, dirtiness is unbearable!!」

It was a scream as though he was puking out blood. Tears were flowing, however, there was no sadness in those eyes but hatred and despair. And then, there was a clear rage in them.

「Oi-, get a hold of yourself! Look at me!」

「No, no more. This world is hell. Human is making it hell-. Why do I have to protect you guys!? That's right-. There is no need to protect. Something like the inferior race who will fall into temptation already when I noticed no matter how much I sacrifice myself, no matter how many times I saved them, they can just perish-」

Kousuke made Leda to lay down face up and he peered into Leda's eyes.

Leda continued to act deranged and discharged out incoherent words.

Inside his eyes that showed red radiance, Kousuke saw some kind of shadow. When he noticed, there was the whispering voice of someone who reached even his ear. It was repulsive, words that were obviously different from the language of human. It gnawed into his heart and caused a sound of devouring that soaked like black ink dying a white ground.

Leda was receiving the influence of the unknown "something"!

「Shit-. Just what the hell is going on!」

Kousuke cursed while lifting up the "Betting on the pride of the villager".

The fundamental of this artifact was soul magic. It was to be used to do things like changing will in order to brainwash for the sake of interrogation or sever the anxiety about the future, but depending on the application it could also be used for mental recovery.

But, before it could exhibit its effect, Leda was,

「Aa, that's right. Exactly. God won't answer. He won't grant salvation. Then, there is no choice but "that person". Aa, please. Please save me. My god. My king!」

With a broken expression that was streaked with tears of despair.....

「? Tsu, you stupid idiot!」

Leda foamed from his mouth and his eyes rolled up. His body was convulsing fiercely.

Most likely there was something like poison capsule that was put inside his mouth from the start. Kousuke immediately took out a recovery medicine and tried to make Leda drank it, but he had a hard time doing that because of Leda's fierce shaking.

And then, the time limit easily came. *Twitch-*, Leda convulsed with even more intense twitch.....and stopped moving.

At the same time Kousuke noticed. The faint groaning voice.

「Wha-, you guys too!？」

Yes, even the people who he made to faint earlier were simultaneously swallowing something. Surely it was a really powerful poison. Everyone expired in less than a few seconds.

The six people severed their own lives while yelling “God doesn’t answer” inside the obsolete church.

「Wha, what the hell.....」

Even Kousuke was completely dumbfounded.

But, at that moment, a hand reached out to Kousuke’s collar. The perpetrator was Leda who should have already died. His hand grabbed Kousuke’s collar like a vise and jerked him closer. Leda’s eyes that were nearby were bloodshot, they were turning into something terrifying where only madness could be felt.

Kousuke immediately tried to shake it off, but before that, Leda’s mouth opened. The voice was similar but not from his voice just now, a hoarse and extremely unpleasant voice that was beyond description.

*『The equilibrium has collapsed. The door will be opened before long. The king of hell who obtained flesh. His eternal reign will begin.』*

A sneering voice that was like the condensed unpleasant sounds for human was resounding as though it was directly scratching and plucking at the mind.

Leda’s eyes opened wide and foam came out from his mouth. He continued to laugh for a while, and then he stopped moving again. The uneasy presence had already vanished too and nothing could be felt.

It was an abnormal and foreign situation that brought about shuddering terror. The silence that returned inside the church was terribly eerie.

Kousuke who was dumbfounded for a while muttered in a low voice before long.

「.....This guy is like Nagumo huh.」

The great monster who crawled out from the abyss, who once moved easily made the equilibrium crumbled, could open door that crossed over worlds freely, and ate monster flesh. If he felt like it, something like world domination



would be a child's play.

Indeed, it sounded like their demon king-sama. Right now that demon king was breaking contact.

Kousuke shook his head and chased out the strange thought. Even if they were a bit similar, there was no way Hajime would do anything troublesome like world domination.

His only reason to make a move was only for his important people, especially his family. If someone turned their hand on that "important thing", what was waiting for them wouldn't be domination but a trampling down.

「Well, there is other monster that I happen to know huh.」

Kousuke imagined "that" which he faced at the hellish place while he looked around inside the church once more and sighed.

「For now, let's copy their ID and.....I should contact Vatican anonymously.」

He couldn't do anything like disposing corpses, so he would leave all the troublesome thing to Vatican.

After that, Kousuke rummaged around their chest pocket and took picture of their identification paper using camera. He also recorded their face picture and the like.

And then,

「Now then, who are these guys, what is their point of commonality.....h~m, how should I investigate it.....」

For a moment, 'Should I rely on the security bureau.....?' Kousuke thought, but,

「Ah, come to think of it, that guy, he is strong at this kind of information huh.」

Kousuke recalled someone who was suited to it. He decided his next action.

Like that, he hid a letter inside Leda's pocket and gently closed his opened eyes.

「Who will save someone whose job is to save other.....huh. Leda-san, what

did you see and experienced, that broke your heart like this?」

Leda's yell. Surely that was the yell of someone whose heart was broken and completely exhausted. Was the other people here like that too?

That repulsive whisper, did it instigate these people who were completely tired and sought salvation and lured them into death?

If that was the case.....

Kousuke narrowed his eyes slightly.

He knew about the unreasonable reality that couldn't be done anything about it. He knew, how was it to have one's heart broke. He knew the greatness of hope that was brought before one's eyes. He knew how difficult it was for someone who broke once to pull themselves together and stood up.

That was why,

「Now I don't want to back down from this case anymore.」

He couldn't back down, not only that, he wanted to see it through until the end.

Kousuke who stood up offered a silent prayer in front of the corpses of them who wouldn't speak anymore.

And then, he left the church with a firm gait.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

About the update next week, I will be a bit busy and might take holiday.

Even if I take holiday, perhaps it will be for a week or two weeks, please pardon me.

# Arifureta Chapter 307

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 ILS

—

TN: It has been two weeks, this is Shirakome.

The update will resume from today.

The content is becoming a bit vague, this chapter feels more for rehabilitation for me but,

Best regards.

---

A certain place in Britain.

Within the city where buildings were built cramped with each other, there was a restaurant with wooden plank standing quietly around the outskirt.

—ILS

A cute letter font was decorating above the entrance in arch shape.

It seemed to be the name of the restaurant. It was really small, but there was a sentence “I Love Salmon” written under it, so it could be understood that it wasn’t the abbreviation of some kind of organization or system, but a mere sentence of salmon lover.

The wooden plank had salmon dishes that seemed to be regular menu—ninety percent of it was salmon sandwich dish though—written on it, so it could be immediately comprehended that it was a café that was offering salmon food.

For some reason, a sentence “Those who pass through this door, throw away all your preconception” with oppressive calligraphic style. Two lines were drawn on top of it and a sentence “Enjoy salmon sandwich normally!” was written on empty space with cute font that felt mellow.

It was as though an obstinate cook wrote words that were strangely obsessive, but a girl completely rejected it and rewrote the sentence.

Well, in fact it was exactly like that.

「Boss~. Please look! I finished a cute salmon illustration! Let's put it in front of the café!」

「Rejected.」

Inside the shop, a cute female with brunette hair in short bob style——the employee in this café named Samantha was holding up a sketch book energetically.

Seeing that, a hard faced and short haired large man who was continuing to polish a glass that was already shiny behind the counter——shop manager Woody completely rejected the proposal.

「Why!?!」

「Don't you understand!?!」

It seemed Samantha-chan didn't get it. She looked puzzled.

Samantha——a university student who was nineteen years old this year, she was doing part time job at this shop while attending college. A pain in the neck who tended to be careless and blindly believed other people.

Previously, Samantha was working in the café that was chosen as the place for handing over Emily to Gamma Pharmaceutical in the Berserk incident. She carelessly declared 「This café's salmon sandwich isn't that delicious!」 loudly and got fired.

After that, she had her eyes opened to the deliciousness of salmon sandwich in ILS that she found by accident. She begged to manager Woody and got hired. That was the chronology of the event.

To be frank, Woody who came to that café as unlawful agent from Gamma

Pharmaceutical washed his hand from that business due to Kousuke's salmon sandwich transmission, and like this he opened a business of café that specialized in salmon sandwich.

Actually, beside the café occupation, manager Woody also doubled as an informant using his experience as former human of the underworld. At first, many suspicious people came and went from this café and he didn't have intention to hire a civilian girl like Samantha but.....

He completely recalled, 「Eh? This girl, isn't she the girl from that café? The girl who got addressed by boss and then blundered?」.

Somehow his awkwardness was growing knowing that. And then, seeing her figure that was stuffing her cheeks with his prided salmon sandwich while making rave review, and how with sparkling eyes and full mouth she said 「I will be the evangelist of salmon sandwich! Please hire me!」 which made him worried about her future, manager Woody folded.

Samantha who became an apprentice evangelist of salmon sandwich (?) with such sequence of event seemed to be greatly displeased with outer appearance and management of ILS.

The evangelist tried to do something in order to improve this café that tended to have slow business so that it would be advertised more.

Even now she was swinging around her sketch book while insisting her displeasure.

Manager Woody opened his mouth with a weary face.

「No matter how I see it, it ain't matching the atmosphere of this café. What's this, this excessively cute illustration. My café is somber, a café for hardcore salmon sandwich lover.」

「That's the reason why there aren't that many customers here! Let's make this place cuter! The target should be the young girls!」

Indeed, the illustrations that were drawn on the sketch book was a cute deformed salmon swimming and picture of cute salmon that explained the menu. If the pictures were put on the signboard at the front, it would surely attract the attention of young woman.

Although, it wasn't like manager Woody wanted to make his café modernly stylish so that his café would be teeming with young females.

Rather, it was the opposite. A famous café that was known only to those in the know. It would be fine if it was a café where only regular customers would gather and rejected first time customer that came without introduction. The café was barely scraping by with only the sale every month, but he was properly earning money as informant, so there was no problem with his living.

And so,

「Rejected.」

「Whyyyy! Boss, do you have any motivation!? Do you think you can take the world like that!?!」

It seemed that within Samantha, manager Woody was like a master. Of course, it wasn't in the sense of the master of café. If it had to be said, it was a master in the sense of an expert.

He was the master of salmon sandwich road. What Samantha meant seemed to be something like 'How can you stay like this without having your name reverberating throughout the world!'.

「I understand. Then, not just young girls, how about this illustration so that boys will also visit!? I have confidence with this one!」

Saying that, Samantha lifted up her sketch book once more.

Manager Woody's expression convulsed. He massaged his temple as though enduring a headache while responding.

「I'm really unwilling, but let's say we make this café cute. But still, no matter how I look that picture ain't cute at all! That's a monster! What kind of imagination you have to think that young man will come with that picture!? If we put up that kind of thing here, this café will completely turn strange! Just what are you planning with my café huh!?!」

On the book, there was the picture of deformed salmon. Limbs were growing from fish torso, and for some reason it was wearing a skirt, while winking with fish eye.

Certainly, it was a monster no matter how one looked at it.

Manager Woody launched a tsukkomi, however, Samantha made an irritating gesture that looked like 「Good grief」, then she began to explain like a teacher remonstrating an ignorant student.

「Boss, don't you know? This is the so called “anthropomorphication”. It's the essence of Japanese culture! It seems that Japanese people will love anything by anthropomorphing them. Such culture right now is getting prevalent to the degree it is spreading throughout the world.」

「Spit it out, Samantha. The one who planted that kind of half-baked and prejudiced knowledge, was it Paradis-neesan?」

「Yes! Vane-oneesan taught me!」

It seemed the two had been really close to the degree that she called Vanessa with a pet name. Even though he was an informant, he overlooked how the employee of his own café got encroached! Woody held his head.

But, at that time a somewhat awkward voice resounded.

「That's.....sorry.」

「Oou!? Who——wait, ain't this boss!」

When he noticed, a Japanese youth was inside the café smiling wryly. Samantha raised her voice 「Kya!?」 in surprise.

Kousuke harbored a subtle feeling of guilt for some reason due to his inability of controlling the missionary work of the subculture evangelist Vanessa. He apologized while sporting a wry smile.

「I told you to stop calling me boss didn't I, Woody.」

「Aa~, sorry. It was a habit. Then, head. What is it today? Are you going to have a take home like usual?」 (TN: Head in the sense like headmaster, head director, *etc.* I know it sound strange, but that's how it is in the raw. Bear with it)

「No, calling me head is also a bit.....well, for now, it's okay I guess. Today I came for a request of “that side”.」

「Oops, is that so.」

Manager Woody's eyes narrowed slowly. It was a sharp gaze that was fitting for a former human of the underworld.

Kousuke sat on the counter seat. Samantha was looking alternately at Kousuke and manager Woody whose atmosphere changed while her eyes sparkled.

「Good afternoon, mister Kousuke. Seeing that you are here, how about a new salmon sandwich dish? It's a new concept that I thought of that the boss okayed.」

「Samantha, hi. So there was new recipe again. Right, I'll have that. I think I'll eat it while Woody is investigating.」

Not to mention Kousuke who often came to buy salmon sandwich, even Vanessa, Grant family, and furthermore the agents of security bureau were also frequently coming here as regular customer, so Samantha was acquainted with them.

By the way, regarding manager Woody's hidden face, he properly explained it in the interview, so Samantha also knew about it. It seemed Samantha who was full of curiosity was also unable to resist the little smell of the extraordinary.

Although, the point of how she was trying to reform such café to have fancy atmosphere was a mark of how she was truly a pain in the neck. The visit of the agents would be receding like that.

Samantha went behind the counter with light footsteps and immediately began to prepare the new salmon sandwich variant. Manager Woody and Kousuke began to talk while glancing at her.

「And, what kind of situation you are poking your nose into this time? Is it related with the forest burning case by "that person"?」

「As expected, your information is fast. About that matter, I also don't know anything about it. I cannot contact him.」

「Then.....could it be, it's the explosion incident of Vatican?」

Manager Woody gave coffee to Kousuke while making a half-exasperated



expression because it felt like this would be another troublesome case.

Also, “that person” manager Woody referred to was about demon king Hajime.

Kousuke couldn't help but smile wryly everytime at Woody's way of speaking that really sounded like talking about a mastermind of a secret society.

Kousuke explained blah-blah yadda-yadda about the incident at Vatican.

A fantasy human like Kousuke actually also existed in Vatican. Such information seemed to be a shocking fact for manager Woody who was a former human of underworld who worked under an occult organization.

「As I thought you didn't know huh.」

「Well, although I belonged to Hydra, I was like a private soldier of Kaysis. I was just an underling among underling. I can boast a wide information network due to my connection from my mercenary period, but a secret information of a country is something that doesn't reach my ear as expected.」

「Well, guess so. Rather, I wonder if the top brass of Hydra didn't know about this, like Kaysis and also Jefferson and others?」

「I wonder about that. I think they might know seeing that they were an organization with long history but.....」

Actually, the top brass of Hydra knew about it. But, thinking about that *organization's objective*, it was meaningless even if they laid their hand on it. In addition, throughout long years, that organization had received painful retaliation many times throughout the process of confirming it, so they were unable to lay their hand on it even knowing about it.

Back to the topic

「More importantly, I want to know the connection of those guys. I think there is an organization that they belonged to but.....」

「Hmm?」

Kousuke showed the recording of ID and face picture of five people——Leda and others who died strangely in the church to manager Woody.

Manager Woody took the smartphone and took a look. After that he transferred the data into his own smartphone.

「From a glance, there isn't anyone with big name in the underworld. Can I take a bit of time with this?」

「Around how long it will take?」

「It will depend on the comparison result in the database that I have and contacting my acquaintances, so I cannot say. Well, this is a request from head, so I'll do it super express. For now, please wait for thirty minutes.」

「Got it. Until then, I'll taste Samantha's new salmon sandwich.」

「I don't know about being evangelist, but her motivation is amazing and her skill is also good. Please enjoy to your heart's content.」

Samantha brought the new salmon sandwich at that timing. Manager Woody's evaluation about her seemed to make her got into a really good mood. Manager Woody's expression became one of 「Damn it」. Samantha-chan, she was the type who would blunder when she got carried away.

Kousuke waved his hand casually to Woody who was entering his work room as informant at the back while turning his gaze to the salmon sandwich that was brought to him.

「Here, please enjoy. It's the new work, "miso mustard salmon sandwich"!」

「Miso mustard!?!」

The new recipe seemed to be a Japanese style salmon sandwich. It seemed that the influence of a certain SOUSAKAN <sup>agent</sup> caused Samantha to develop interest to Japan. She seemed to get the idea from miso cutlet sandwich and set out to develop a salmon sandwich that used miso.

She didn't use raw salmon, but a salmon that was fried with thin coating with somewhat soft miso curstard coating it a lot. The shredded crispy cabbage also had mayonaisse applied on it.

Kousuke put it into his mouth a bit timidly.

A beat later

「De, delicious.....」

「Yes-! Yes! Yaaahaaaa!!」

Samantha, she made powerful guts pose repeatedly.

If manager Woody was a master for Samantha, then Kousuke was the grand master. Or perhaps a maestro. No, he was the founder of salmon sandwich road, he was already the salmon sandwich god.....

As a trainee, the word of praise from the salmon sandwich god was truly the highest peak!

「Yep. It's seriously tasty. But, well, as expected, I like sandwich with raw salmon the best I guess.」

「!？」

Samantha fell on all four. She was hitting the floor *bang bang* in vexation. Dust was going to rise up from her doing that, so Kousuke wished that she would stop it.

「Samantha. Can you give me the standard salmon sandwich too?」

「.....Yes. I will bring it right away.」

Samantha disappeared behind the counter with a face that looked like the emoticon (´•ω•`). The day the title “trainee” was taken away from here seemed to be still far away.

Exactly thirty minutes after that.

While Kousuke was making trivial talk with Samantha about salmon sandwich, manager Woody got out from the back room.

「How is it?」

「.....Sorry. I don't get any good information.」

Manager Woody scratched his head awkwardly. However, his expression looked conflicted and baffled to be said that he simply didn't obtain any information.

「If, there is an organization behind those guys, it feels like it will be better to rely on the intelligence bureau. If it's head, you will be able to request them

through security bureau right?」

「I think I can do that but.....」

From manager Woody's state, there must be something. Kousuke questioned him with his gaze. Manager Woody made a coffee for himself, then he drank it all with one gulp before starting to report his investigation result.

「I investigated using various pulls too, but I cannot believe that those guys has connection with underworld organization. Lawyer, university student, priest, retired former teacher. Everyone of them has clear background. Other than that Vatican's man called Leda that is. In addition, it's like these guys have nothing connecting them. Like participating in some kind of convention, or having transaction with each other.....there is no connection at all.」

「Are they hiding it so thoroughly you cannot find it?」

「I cannot deny that possibility. That's why, in that case you better rely on the intelligence bureau, or give me a few days to put serious effort into investigating this.」

If it was manager Woody who had underworld information network, Kousuke thought that he would be able to pull out all information regarding their connection, but it seemed it couldn't go that easily.

「But you know, head. There is a bit of "common point" that bother me.」

「Common point?」

「.....All of these guys, the people close to them are dead. By so called tragic incidents.」

「! Specifically?」

From what he was told, for the lawyer it was his fiancée, for the college student it was his parents, for the priest his wife and son, for the former teacher old man it was his son and daughter-in-law, for the laborer it was his wife. They lost their important people. Killed. What's more, all of those happened in the shape of betrayal by someone they trusted.

Kousuke recalled the scream of death agony from Leda.

——This world is hell. Human, is making it hell

Was that man, also saw a “tragedy” that made him thought like that.....

「Also, there is one more point. The former teacher old man, and the college student, about them.....」

Manager Woody’s report caused Kousuke who was about to get absorbed into his thought to return to his senses feeling taken aback.

「After their incident, they got involved with police several times.」

「Police? Were they gotten involved with incident again?」

「No, it’s the opposite. They caused incident.」

「.....What kind?」

「Even if I said incident, it wasn’t at the level of getting jailed. There were only things that only got them strictly warned.....the former teacher was with his wife, while the college student was with several of his friends. Both of them tried to influence other people to stop believing in religion.」

——God won’t answer. He won’t grant salvation.

Leda’s words crossed Kousuke’s mind once more.

「The man called Leda, was someone from Vatican.....the holy ground of religion right? Thinking about his act of betrayal too, I think this is really suspicious.」

「Certainly.....」

Manager Woody had picked up good information in this short time. Kousuke didn’t say that with words, but inside his heart he sent his praise to Woody.

Then, at that timing, Samantha who was endeavoring to make new anthromorph salmon illustration quietly so that she wouldn’t be a bother seemed to be actually listening. She suddenly opened her mouth.

「Saay, Mister Kousuke.」

「Hm? Samantha, what’s the matter?」

Even while addressing Kousuke, Samantha sent a glance at manager Woody. Just in case, she confirmed to the manager Woody whether it was alright for her to enter the conversation.

This point where she could discern that in the end she was just an employee made anyone couldn't hate her despite her being a pain in the neck. Manager Woody thought that while nodding with a wry smile.

「You see, that act of overdoing it in making someone to stop having faith? Actually, there is also my friend who experienced that.....」

「Eh? Seriously?」

「Seriously. It was about two months ago I think? The boyfriend of my friend went through misfortune in his family. My friend, she said that she would support her boyfriend, but after that, the condition of that boyfriend seemed to turn strange.」

「Strange you say? Like what?」

「My friend said, that he was scary. It was like he was a bit not normal. And then, me and several other friends had discussion with her. But then, it seems that there also quite many friends of my other friends who are like that boyfriend too.」

「That many?」

It seemed that such kind of people had appeared here and there since around a year ago. After a while, those people would return to how they were before, so it didn't seem like to become a widespread topic, but.....

「Yes. And also, that's.....」

「Hm? What's wrong? Is there something else in your mind?」

Samantha faltered as though it was difficult to say. After she was urged to continue, she started with 「Saying it like this, is a bit bad but.....」 while saying.

「Everyone said it. It's as though——”they are possessed by demon”, they said.」

「.....」

*Silence*, inside the empty café, even more silence was falling. Even the air felt like it was getting colder somehow.

It was manager Woody who broke the silence.

「Head. Do you know about demon worshipping cult?」

「I heard about it before. It's that right? The cult that appeared in movie, doing ritual of sacrifice or something?」

「Well, something like that. Even in reality, that kind of demon worshipping organization existed. Of course, there isn't just hidden organization, they are a group that is recognized even at the surface. As expected, they aren't doing sacrifice or the like. They merely people who are charmed by the existence of demon.」

「Hm, well, it's everyone's freedom to believe anything.」

That kind of people also existed in the world.

In fact, there was also an organization like Hydra that seriously sought for occult. Because their objective was merely to “personally use the mystique” that was unrelated to god or demon, religiousness didn't take root within them, so they were of a type that was a bit different from the normal image of occult organization.

「About that demon worshipping organization, when I was still with Hydra, I heard a bit of rumor. In the end, it was just a talk that is like urban legend, there was no credibility in it.」

As an informant, he was somewhat reluctant to report about a mere rumor. Manager Woody talked while scratching his cheek.

「It's a group that is worshipping demon, but they aren't an organization.」

「They are a group, and yet not an organization? Do you mean they are like a mob without anyone controlling them?」

「No no, they are organized to a terrifying degree. They aren't an organization but a group.」

「???」

A lot of question marks floated above Kousuke's head. Even manager Woody smiled wryly saying 「It's incomprehensible isn't it」 while continuing.

「Every individual in the group has the same objective and belief. However, they aren't gathering at all. And yet, they will make a move when it's necessary

without making arrangement with each other beforehand. A jogging woman, a man who is walking his dog, a child playing soccer, a patrolling police.....anyone who is doing normal activity right in front of you. Normally they even go to the mass at Sunday, very normal people, but one day, they will suddenly make their move.]

「What, is that?」

While saying that, Kousuke recalled something as expected. When Leda and others were in the middle of talking, they saw Kousuke without any sign beforehand. It was at exactly the same timing, as though they had arranged it beforehand.

At that time, their eyes were shining mysteriously.

「With our business circles as they were, those guys that are behaving eccentrically, those guys doing stupid thing, those talks that are like urban legend, we called those things with ridicule like this——”demon possession”.」

If, there was actually people who were possessed by “demon” in the true meaning, not in figurative expression or just a mental problem, and they were normally living casually? They were slipping among society, into household, and then one day, they suddenly obeyed the voice inside themselves and then started acting like a different person?

Manager Woody operated his smartphone and sent something to Kousuke’s smartphone. Seeing that, Kousuke tilted his head.

「A college professor?」

I don’t really know the detail but, he is a professor in the field or something like religious study, and he is quiet famous in that area. ....The college student just now, he attended his seminar. In addition, that professor, in this half a year he took flight to Roma nearly thirty times.]

「.....Hee. It’s slight but, that’s not a bad connection. As expected from Woody. It’s not just for show that you opened your eyes to salmon sandwich.」

「Thanks to you head.」

Manager Woody mad a manly grin. In fact, he was really deserving praise to



investigate this much in just thirty minutes.

Just having and knowing information didn't really mean anything. Only after analyzing, conjecturing, and connecting them that they became useful. There were many cases like that. Perhaps it was better to say instead that informant's work was to collect pieces of information into one complete information.

At that point, manager Woody was without a doubt first class. That was how he wasn't troubled about living expense despite his café was only scraping by. This was more of his lifework rather than being an underling under Kaysis's command.

Kousuke drank all his remaining coffee and stood from his seat.

But, at that time,

「E, err. Something like demon possession, they aren't real right?」

‘I have to ask this at least!’ Samantha asked with that kind of feeling. Seeing how her expression was greatly twitching, it seemed she was completely scared from the words of manager Woody and Kousuke's behavior just now.

Although, the fantasy man, and the man who was converted into salmon sandwich by that fantasy man couldn't say 「Obviously it's just nonsense」.

Kousuke and manager Woody looked at each other and smiled wryly at the same time.

「Wai-, what is it!? Why are you two smiling, at this timing! Tell me it's a lie boss!」

Manager Woody. He was making a smile filled with implication while taking payback for the monster illustration she showed him before this.

「Samantha.....my bad. I should have you leave before we started talking.」

「Boss?」

「Do you know? *That kind of thing* will visit those who know their existence.」

「!?」

「Be careful when walking at night in the street okay?」

Shuddering chill caused Samantha to shiver from the tip of her foot until the

crown of her head. Her eyes opened widely and her painstaking piece of work fell on the floor with a clatter.

Kousuke sent an exasperated gaze at manager Woody thinking ‘This guy is really childish huuh’.

It seemed manager Woody noticed that gaze. He was about to open his mouth to say 「I’m joking」 with a wry smile but.....

Before he could,

「Booss! Please give me shelter tonight-!」

「Haa?」

「Is it alright for you if your important worker get attacked by demon!? Of course it’s not! I understand! And so, tonight I’ll stay in boss’s house! Thank you very much!」

「Wait wait. I was only joking just now.」

Manager Woody, 41 years old. Single. Living in apartment. Recently he was half living together with a stray cat that settled down there.

Samantha-chan. 19 years old. Active college student.

「This is concerning.」

「Head, please don’t make that kind of scorning gaze when you know the situation. It’s not like I’m scaring her because I’m aiming for this.」

Manager Woody made an expression that seemed to say ‘spare me’ in respond to Kousuke’s muttering.

He said 「I was joking」 one more time to Samantha, but,

「No, I won’t get tricked! I understand. Yes, surely, those guys are already setting their eyes on me. Like that, when I go out from this café, behind me..... at the street at night, people won’t be around unnaturally, I will feel a bad premonition somehow, and I will quicken my pace. And then, there will be footsteps approaching from who know where! There won’t be anyone when I turn around! But footsteps are certainly approaching! I will run away to escape, and somehow arrive in my home. After that, I’ll lock the door securely, and

peek outside from the peeking hole. There won't be anyone outside. Aa, I'm glad. I got away! Yep, perhaps it was just my imagination. Yup, surely that's it! I'm stupid! I was overly self-conscious! How embarrassing! Kyah. I will be like that while turning my gaze inside the room.....over there is the demooooooooonnn-. Boosss! Please save meeeeeeeeeeeeeee!」

「Rather, it would be me who want to be saved by head.」

Samantha's bad habit——the habit of believing blindly. Or perhaps it should be said as bad habit of delusion. Anyway, if she had believed something like this!, she wouldn't believe anything else most of the time.

Even though she was still in the stage of delusion, Samantha was already throwing tantrum while clinging on manager Woody.

The face of manager Woody had zero happiness from having a young girl clinging on him. He was normally fed up, feeling creeped out at Samantha who was pleading to stay with him while crying. He sent a gaze that was pleading for help to Kousuke.

But,

「Eh!? Head!? Wai-, it's fine if you don't be out of recognition only at this kind of time though!? You are here right!? You are still inside right!?!」

「Boss! Who are you talking with!? If it's mister Kousuke, he already exited from long time ago! Hah, don't tell me-. The hand of the demon is already reaching me!? Help meee, boooooosssss-!」

「That's why, it's me instead who want help.....」

Manager Woody's tired voice was drowned out by Samantha's tantrum and didn't reach anyone.

After that, a staff of security bureau visited to fill his stomach, and saw Samantha who was crying while clinging on manager Woody, while he was holding her face with an eagle grip to tear her off from him.....

The staff judged that manager Woody was doing assault to his female employee.

It almost became a big case.....

—  
—  
—

「Here huh.....」

In front of a splendid university in Britain, Kousuke was looking up to the window at the highest floor while muttering.

That spot was the classroom of the person who might become a lead from manager Woody's information——Professor Riley Littman.

Kousuke nodded once and entered inside the building.

「.....」

He walked through a dimly lit corridor and climbed the stair that didn't have light shining in despite the fact it had skylight.

Kousuke had gone several times accompanying Emily to the university she was attending, but somehow this building felt “different”.

He couldn't feel the impression of “a building of education that belonged to university” from it at all.

It was more, like.....yes, as though he was getting lost inside a gloomy cave.....

(Come to think of it.....I'm not seeing anyone since some time ago. Is it holiday? No, but, only this building? There were students at other place normally.....)

It was eerie. Kousuke gathered strength in his body naturally while thinking such thing.

Like that, Kousuke kept feeling strange tension while arriving in front Littman's classroom.

He didn't make an appointment. If he had some kind of connection with Leda and others, he might guessed Kousuke's intention and escaped.

And so, he infiltrated inside the room with stealth like usual——

「It's not locked. Don't just stand there like that, please come in.」

「-!？」

He was already activating his stealth. And yet,  
(I'm noticed!?)

Furthermore, it was from across a door.

「What's wrong? You won't enter? You come to visit me right？」

Kousuke hesitated for a moment, but he immediately resolved himself and put his hand on the door.

*Gii*, the door made small creaking sound. It echoed excessively.

「Welcome, to Littman's classroom. Although, aren't you a bit too late, exorcist？」

Inside the room was filled to the brim with vast number of books. Books that were placed flat and piled up formed several towers, creating a strained situation where it wouldn't be strange for the piles to fall anytime.

And then, the moment Kousuke stepped inside, he felt discomfort. *Splat* sound resounded from below his foot.

Looking there, the floor surface was flooded out. Flooded floor was the natural enemy of a room that was littered with books. It was just too strange.

Above all else, it smelt weird.

There was a strange smell. It was like something was scorched, a smell that pierced the nose terribly.....

Kousuke's body took fighting stance.

He had smelt this before. This extremely unpleasant smell. Only recently.

In the foreign world at the another side of the mirror.

「What.....are you？」

There was a man within the unpleasant smell, between the mountains of books. Gray hair laying flat limply on his head, and a face full with wrinkles that was lacking in vigor. Severe hook nose, and grey eyes with piercing glint.

His age was around the latter half of his seventy.

He was wearing a suit with good tailoring that was obvious from a glance. One hand was holding a stick, and his back was relatively straight for his age.

That man——Professor Littman raised an eyebrow at Kousuke's question.

「——“What, are you”. Hm, strange. I thought you came to me knowing the situation but.....the exorcist who hindered “that person”. No, perhaps I should call you Vatican's hidden ace? There is nothing about you at all in the information of Leda and others.」

(This guy, he know about what I did in that world!?)

Professor Littman pressed forward with his conjecture from Kousuke's faint agitation.

「You are agitated. So it's unexpected for you that I know. But, why is it unexpected? It's obvious that I know. You should know about the obvious. Because you are here by identifying me. ....Hm, if that premise is wrong, I see, you aren't related with Vatican. Or perhaps, even if you have relation with them, you aren't related with exorcist. Then, why did someone unrelated like you moved to rescue the “mother body”? Why, are you here? Besides, although “that person” didn't display his original power, you escaped him. What is that power?」

Professor Littman spoke while linking one by one the information available and unraveled the mystery.

But, Kousuke was unable to cut in at the words of the professor that was like talking to himself.

(What? It's not just smell. This feeling.....)

The coiling unpleasant presence.

Then, at that time, following some kind of thought process, professor Littman reached the answer.

「I see. You. You are——returnee huh.」

Kousuke lost count how many surprise he had felt. This room's abnormal atmosphere, and the way Professor Littman was talking, Kousuke felt how he almost getting swallowed by the other party's pace. He scolded himself inside

his heart and pulled himself together quickly.

「I see, I see. If it's like that, then it's no wonder you still don't know.」

「What?」

「About the people that are not of this world.」

*Clack clack*, Professor Littman was knocking the floor with his leather shoes and stick while adding on his words looking really like he was teaching.

「You, you must not be ignorant. Even if human cannot be all knowing, human has to fight ignorance constantly. That is the duty of the race that possess the highest intelligence.」

「.....」

「Therefore, I will give you a lecture about “them” to the ignorant you. You, you who have fought and escaped “them” from “hell”. After sealing the “mirror gate”, are you relieved? Did you see hope in the future after taking back Claudia Barenberg?」

The question of Professor Littman in truth was nearly that of a mere monologue to himself. It looked like he was asking question to Kousuke, but his eyes were constantly wandering to empty air.

「You. Certainly, “they” cannot open the “mirror gate” and descend to this world. They who in essence are without flesh body are unable to cross the gap of “hell” and “this world”. They have no strength to maintain their existence.」

「They have no flesh body?」

Certainly, no matter how many time he cut those ghoulish things, they kept regenerating. He was able to destroy them for the first time after using magic in conjunction with his attack. Although, he thought that they had flesh body. Therefore Kousuke spontaneously asked, but as expected Professor Littman continued talking without even looking at Kousuke.

「But, there is exception to everything. They can exert influence to this world even if only slightly. Sometimes, it will be as whispering voice, sometimes as shadow, sometimes it will be as something that seems to be predestined.」

The shadow that was visible inside the eyes of Leda and others. So that was

the “people of hell” that Professor Littman mentioned.

「People who are strongly influenced. People who offer their own body. There are a lot of human who carry them inside their heart. Because they only have meager influence, they possess the way to make use of that influence to the maximum.」

‘But’——Professor Littman’s eyes caught Kousuke once more.

「The power of “that person” is immense, his influence is also vast. Humans who have connection with the other side are increasing, and then, finally “the wind of lamentation” is released to this world.」

「——What you mean by “wind of lamentation”, is it that bloody wind?」

Professor Littman nodded slightly. His eyes weren’t seeing empty air anymore. He was looking at Kousuke.

「The gap of “hell” and “this world” is wavering. Just now, I said that they cannot cross the gap of world without “mirror gate” but.....now is different. In this time when this gap is wavering, if there is a medium that can easily connect the interval, they will be able to descend to “this world” with strong body maintaining their existence.」

For example, mirror. A mirror that reflected another world, especially when there was opposite mirror, the gap of world could be shaken just with that.

For example, thick mist. Heavy mist that shut the field of vision where it was impossible to look even an inch ahead, it could also shake the spot of “this world” itself.

And then, water.

The world was connected by water. Water was a natural “gate” that crossed every world.

Kousuke was taken aback and dropped his gaze to the floor.

「The lecture is over with this. Now, please experience hell after this.」

「Chih!!」

Swift attack. Kousuke closed the distance instantly, grabbed Professor



Littman's neck and slammed him on the floor.

Professor Littman opened his eyes wide. But.....his eyeballs immediately rolled and caught Kousuke. His eyes weren't grey. They were eyes that shined glaringly red.

「The gate, has opened you know?」

「Kuh!? You——」

Kousuke's voice was drowned out.

Because right after that, the flooded floor bubbled fiercely, and countless “something” flew out along with a shriek.

---

—

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Please take care of me again from today.

I'm ashamed to mention this right after the resumption but,

In Gardo comic, three manga version were updated.

#### 1. Arifureta original version comic

- Sonna-chan, she is normally beautiful! At the future she will become a user of “Elusive Phantom” that even the hero cannot detect.....

#### 2. Arifureta Nichijou de Sekai Saikyou

- Kaori-san's dangerousness is accelerating. Nichijou's Kaori-san, where is she heading to?

Mori Misaki-sensei, thank you very much! Please do it more lol

#### 3. Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou Zero

- The spinoff light novel “Zero” has comic version by the work of Kouchi

Ataru-sensei. It's the story of Miledy and others, the Liberator.

Surely a lot of people think it. It's a lie that Miledy is this cute.

Kouchi-sensei! Thank you very much!

All can be read for free so,

Please go take a look at Comic Gardo by all mean as one way to kill time.

(You can go there from Overlap-sama's homepage.)

# Arifureta Chapter 308

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 The Security Bureau's Future Is...

—

Bubble rose up tremendously from the water on the floor as though it was seething.

Instantly,

——*ia*AAAAAAAAAAAAAH

Disgusting shriek infringed inside the room.

「——!？」

An unseen impact attacked Kousuke. The hand that was holding Professor Littman's neck was forcefully torn off and he was blown away until the wall in one go.

He collapsed the towers of books while colliding on the wall with an impact that cracked the surface.

「Gahah」

The air inside his lungs was forcefully ejected and Kousuke lost his breath.

He landed on one knee. When he raised his gaze, he could see Professor Littman got up with a bizarre movement like a marionette and countless shadows running on the wall.

The shadows with hard to describe shape were running from wall to wall like

shadow picture.

「Guah」

An impact hit him once again from the side. Kousuke was sent flying by an unseen existence and he crashed on the wall once more.

(What!? What is there!?)

Something was there. Innumerable things. But, he couldn't see the figure. There were only shadows reflected on the wall.

At the same time when he fell on the floor, Kousuke trusted his instinct and leaped to the side. Instantly water splash rose from his previous spot and even the wall behind it collapsed.

Desperately, Kousuke measured the timing and threw his kunai at the shadow on the wall. But, the kunai only pierced the wall and there wasn't any effect to the shadow.

——IAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH

「Guh!?」

Impact came from right below him. His solar plexus was pushed up and Kousuke's body folded into the shape of "<" while floating in the air. Right after that, impact came from right above in a flash. Kousuke was blown to the flooded floor without even any time to breath.

Right after that, he was dragged as though his feet got caught and he was thrown away like that with a fierce momentum.

He flew toward an aged and large bookshelves that looked solid. Intense pain ran from his shoulder. The wood that had gone through many years were smashed by the impact and surged like an avalanche along with a lot of books.

「Hmm. The materialization into this world is successful but.....only the shadow. Although, physical influence can be exerted. It's only a matter of time until complete materialization happen.」

Professor Littman was talking to himself while directing red eyes that were shining glaringly to Kousuke who was buried in destroyed large bookshelf and mountain of books.

Perhaps Kousuke's damage was deep because he didn't stand up.

Professor Littman snorted and jerked his chin. Then, a part of the shadows that were running around on the wall, ceiling, and floor gathered toward Kousuke.

They were like poltergeist. The bookshelf was moved to the side and a large amount of books floated in the air. Like that, Kousuke who was buried under the books floated together with them.

「Guh, kafuh」

It seemed that he was lifted up by his neck, so Kousuke held his neck with both his hands and gasped painfully. He was shining faintly from ejecting magic power in resistance, but the strength that was grasping his neck didn't decrease at all. Blood was flowing from his head, dripping down from his temple.

「Kuh, yo, u-, what the hell, are you-」

「Just as you can see, I am a mere university professor, just a simple researcher.」

「A simple, researcheer? -, that's, a harsh joke there.」

Professor Littman turned his gaze toward the kunai Kousuke threw. Just from that, the kunai was pulled out by itself from the wall and drifted in the air. Following that, the shadow that was projected on the ceiling was slowly approaching near Professor Littman.

Most likely, it wasn't that Professor Littman had telepathic power, but the unseen existence received command from him and brought the kunai to him.

His hand took the kunai that was brought to him and he stared at it in concentration, then he started to talk with a tone as though continuing a lecture.

「No, it's the truth. I just wanted to know. God and demon, heaven and hell. Those concepts, just when and where they were created. I wanted to know the beginning. That was all.」

「De, mon.....」

Kousuke ruminated that one word. Yes, the existence that he encountered in

the world at the other side of the mirror, and also the unseen existence that was trying to break his neck right now, indeed, they were certainly demon.

It wasn't an unknown another world or even unknown creature. This was truly what the people on earth knew as the concept of "hell" and "demon".

「However, you. What is called as record sometimes is something created by those in power for their own convenience, something that is falsified. When I tried to deepen my investigation and interpretation, just who can proof that it's the truth or not.」

Professor Littman looked at the books scattered across the room with a gaze as though he was looking at a rock at the roadside. The books that were destroyed and turned into tragic condition due to the water or because of the shockwave of the battle were glared with shining red eyes.

Kousuke guessed. This situation, Professor Littman's conduct. It must be the result of that phrase that sometimes appeared in story being realized in real life.

「I, see. You, sold, your soul to demon huh.」

「I can buy the truth with that. I think it can be said as a reasonable transaction.」

「From, that so called reasonable transaction.....what did you find out?」

Kousuke didn't struggle anymore. He was asking while looking at Professor Littman with blank eyes that looked resigned.

Professor Littman looked back at Kousuke's eyes.

「Tell me your root.」

It seemed that even this was a transaction. If Kousuke wanted to know his knowledge, then Kousuke should also teach him the secret of his power.

「.....That's fine. But.....you first. It will be unbearable if I get killed right away after talking.」

The opponent was a man who sold even his soul to demon for the sake of his pursuit. Kousuke's condition didn't even make Professor Littman hesitate.

「Very well. Then, you. In the first place, do you understand what is the existence that is called demon?」

‘The hell if I know’, he wanted to spit that out, but he swallowed that feeling and told no wit his gaze.

「They are human. Demon is the ruin of what human once was. However, it’s with the attached proviso that they are human of another world.」

Kousuke thought that he had heard a story like this from somewhere. Kousuke narrowed his eyes, which Professor Littman perceived that it seemed he was in doubt. His mouth warped and he continued his words, as though he was feeling really happy to display his knowledge.

「The world that we human titled as “hell”, is truly in a state that is worthy for the title “hell”, but once it was overflowing with nature and it was a world with rows of cities that were developed even further than the current earth.」

From the beginning, the “hell” was another world with existence that overlapped with “earth”. Although there was gap between world, both worlds would occasionally influenced each other——spirited away, supernatural phenomenon, UMA, etc——due to the closeness.

And then, the residence of the world that was far more developed than earth noticed the earth’s existence.

「Miracle, magic, sorcery.....smoke won’t rise without fire. The live coals that is the cause for the birth of those concepts was, yes, the technology of them who crossed to earth. You understand now? In the period that is called as ancient era, at the far past, miracle and magic also existed in earth. Because the residence of hell brought them here.」

Magical girl existed. Even magician existed. Legendary weapons, chosen heroes, and also great people existed. The mythical beasts and monsters certainly existed too.

Everything was due to the “god’s magic” that was used by the residences of hell.

「God’s.....magic, you say?」

「Yes, that's right, you. The residences of hell, the demons, they performed miracles. For the earthling——they were truly gods.」

Certainly, for people who only possessed primitive technology, people using magic were equal with gods. To say nothing if they could receive that godly work, it could be said that the natural flow was to worship those people.

For the residences of hell, it might be a part of cultural exchange with another world, or perhaps it was because of their greed to rule, it was unclear which was the reason, but anyway they brought the technology called magic to the earthlings, which resulted in earth also accomplishing rapid development.

So to speak, what was called as super ancient civilization was something like that.

「But, you. Destroyed by a power that is too great is something that is repeated no matter the age. Do you understand?」

「I, predicted that. And there, you understood then?」

「Yes, I understood. Of god and demon. Of earthling and otherworlder.」

There was no clear division. If there was otherworlder who sided with earth, there was also earthling who sided with the other world.

But, it seemed definite that there was outbreak of conflict that crossed the two worlds.

As the result, a power that was equal with the work of god transformed the other world into “hell”, and the losers were locked into that world.

「The demons are the otherworlders who lost the conflict, and the earthlings who sided with those otherworlders, reduced to a mere shadow of their former self. My understanding still cannot catch up with the details, but in order to survive in that changed world, they devised a method to survive with only their soul.」

At the same time, the bloody wind that was blowing violently in hell——that which was called as “the wind of lamentation” seemed usable to form transient flesh body which was centered on the soul.

Although, in the first place the “hell” was a world that wasn't suitable for



people with flesh body to continue to exist. Thus, just like how those ghoul-like things looked like that, the flesh body there was constantly incomplete and ugly. As for their ability to think, people whose soul was particularly of fine quality when they were human would have it to a certain degree, but normal people were only able to act instinctually.

「That is the reason why they are trying to descend into this world. If they are able to materialize in earth, they will be able to maintain definite flesh body. Like that, naturally the rank of their soul will rise and they will be able to take back their thinking ability.」

「Is, that all? It's not, right?」

「Correct. “That person” is trying to accomplish his long standing desire. That is to unify and rule the two worlds. He wants Claudia Barenberg in order to become even more complete and mighty existence. So that even if the kings who suppressed “that person” like in the past return, he will be able to defeat them handily.」

「Kings? That's——guah」

Kousuke tried to ask more, but he was interrupted from having his neck choked strongly.

「Hm. It's not like I don't want to continue my lecture for a bit more but, it looks like the demons are impatient. Let's stop here. Although I am a body that receives the demon's thought, in the end I am just a collaborator. I'm not in a position that can give them order.」

Now, speak of your truth.

Professor Littman's eyes that were containing madness inside were insisting that. Perhaps he should be called as truth fanatic. He would sell even his soul to demon if it was for the sake of appeasing his spirit of enquiry, and he had decided that he wouldn't give a damn to what would happen to earth. His eyes were something chilling even for Kousuke who had struggled through numerous scene of carnage.

And so,

「Thank you for the lecture. As for my truth.....please experience it in

practice.」

He returned the professor's words before this right back at him. At the same time, *puff* Kousuke vanished with that sound. The place he materialized was of course at the position of the kunai Professor Littman was holding.

「Shih」

「Guah!?!」

It seemed that even demon was unable to capture Kousuke who crossed through space. Kousuke who appeared before Professor Littman launched a midair spinning kick that caught his face, blowing him away.

The place he was flying at was the large bookshelf that had temporarily hid Kousuke's figure. But, Professor Littman didn't crash to there.

「For now, sink.」

The bookshelf that was full of gap from losing books was blown away as though in eruption. What showed up was another Kousuke— —a clone body.

Yes, while his figure was hidden by the collapsed bookshelf, Kousuke created a clone body and made it stayed inside the bookshelf. The clone body put on stealth with all seriousness, while the main body Kousuke intentionally emitted magic power to show his existence strongly. It was a gamble but it seemed that the clone manage to hide properly.

A heel drop kick by that clone shot down the flying Professor Littman. A perpendicular drop after horizontal flight. Professor Littman bounced on the floor like reeled up fish.

The demons moved. Countless shadows were running on the wall and ceiling. Presently there were several demons inside the room. They were unseen and their presence couldn't even be sensed. Most likely because their materialization was still incomplete their state became even more troublesome instead.

Although, just how much time had passed until now. Kousuke of course had the objective of pulling out knowledge from Professor Littman.

But, his biggest reason was to solve this troublesome situation. It was for the

sake of buying time, for the technique that he could activate as long as he had time even though he had no aptitude for it.....

「——”Absolute Calamity”!」

In order to use the age of god magic!

The black star of calamity formed and whirled in the middle of the room. The magic that he finally managed to activate after chanting for more than two minutes was displaying its tremendous effect amply.

Books, fixtures, and then the demons who were unseen but existing too, anything and everything were pulled and swallowed in.

Gravity magic “Absolute Calamity” pulled in the surrounding similar like “Black Heaven Destitution”. It was a magic that pulled object into it, but different from the final secret art “Black Heaven Destitution”, it didn’t have the power to annihilate the things that were pulled in, it could only compress.

Most living this would be pressured to death by that point so there was no problem, but for demons, especially when they weren’t completely materialized, they were mostly only soul, so it was doubtful whether compressing them to death would work.

And so, just in case Kousuke tossed in flame element magic noncommittally.

「Aa~, ouch ouch-. Geez, punching a person as they pleased like this. Burn splendidly there, you bunch of demons.」

The “water” that acted as substitute tunnel for crossing over the gap of the world should be evaporated too with this, so surely there wouldn’t be anymore demon that newly appeared after this.

Kousuke let out a sigh and let tension slipped out from his shoulders.

「Guh, uh」

「Oops, spare me from watching even more suicide.」

The clone that launched heel drop kick restrained Professor Littman while confirming whether there was any foreign object inside his mouth or if he was carrying drug somewhere in his body. As expected, the clone discovered a small case filled with pills inside the professor’s pocket.

Kousuke quickly took out “Betting on the Pride of Villager” to make the professor’s soul leaned toward his side before the whisper of the demon could drive him into frenzy.

Previously, Kousuke was interrupted before “Betting on the Pride of Villager” could completely exert its effect.

Even if the demon’s whisper had powerful hypnotic effect and brainwashing effect for the receiver, it should be impossible to break the artifact’s effect when the soul magic was completely applied. At the very least, as long as the demon wasn’t a powerful individual like that demon which was called as “that person” who possessed abnormal power.

「But, no matter how I think about it, the demons’ root is similar with the story of Ehito that I heard from Nagumo huh. Ehito’s former world should be destroyed already, so there shouldn’t be any relation though.....」

If, the fundamental root was the same, then even the age of magic might not.....

In any case, in order to protect the mind of Professor Littman, Kousuke dangled “Betting on the Pride of Villager” in front of him.

Then, just before he made the artifact went swi~ng swi~ng,

「Do you have time to bother with me?」

「My bad, but I won’t go along with your stalling.」

「There is no need for me to stall. Things are already happening. You, returnees. We aren’t underestimating you all. We are on guard against you all, even more than against Vatican. In reality you are really a threat, however, you. As expected, you cannot go as far as differentiating the attention of ordinary people and dealing with them right?」

「.....What do you want to say?」

Professor Littman’s face was drenched with nosebleed from Kousuke’s spinning kick. His face warped unsightly and he said.

「Your comrades, and family. And then.....Emily Grant, are they important for you?」

「Tsu! Sleep!」

Kousuke activated “Betting on the Pride of Villager” with maximum effect. The professor’s consciousness was grasped in a flash and then it was fixed into a stupefied state.

After that, he immediately tried to connect his consciousness to his clone.....

But at that moment, he instead received an emergency notice from his clone body.

That at exactly right now, they were under attack there.

—  
—  
—

Returning back in time slightly.

After Emily and others grasped the unique state of Vatican and the situation that was happening at present there from Kousuke’s phone call, the main members of Security Bureau were gathering in the chief office.

Right now Allen was arranging the procedure for the voyage to Japan, while the high ranked officials from each department starting from Bernard who would be staying behind were doing briefing session to discuss the plans while Magdanese was away.

Emily and others were sitting snugly at the corner of the chief office while idly staring at that flurried state of the bureau staffs.

「That’s all. Any question?」

After a while, it seemed the briefing was over. Chief Magdanese said that while looking around her subordinates. Everyone of them were only looking straight at Chief Magdanese. It seemed they had no question.

「Good. Then everyone, carry out your duty.」

「「「「「Yes, ma’am」」」」」

They were the well trained dogs of the queen. All the Grant family members thought of such impression in their heart.

The briefing session was over, but for some reason the bureau staffs didn't exit the room and gathered toward the Grant family—more specifically, toward Emily with smile on their face.

Just like Bernard Pays who was the person in charge of the assault division, there were also many members of department that engaged in fighting scene, so the sight of tough looking men smiling at her caused Emily's cheeks to twitch slightly.

「Doctor Grant. Long time no see.」

「Captain. It's been a long time.」

Putting aside Vanessa and the bodyguards around Grant house, Bernard from the assault division normally didn't interact with Emily. To tell the truth, the last time Emily directly met and talked with Bernard was at the Berserk incident.

It went without saying what about the other staffs. She had only talked several times with her bodyguards and their coworker, that was all.

Even though they had never really interacted, the atmosphere of the bureau staffs toward her was excessively friendly. Emily was bewildered at that but..... the reason they approached her immediately became clear.

「By the way, is that guy Abyss alright? You talked with him right?」

「Aby-san. I heard he stuck his nose into something outrageous again? As expected from him!」

「Missy Emily. When will Abyss come here?」

「How is the lord doing? If he ask to lend him our strength, we are going to fly there right away.....」

「Our division is also prepared you know?」

Lord Abyssgate was greatly popular. The chief was massaging her forehead. Her subordinates who were nodding seriously when she told them to carry out their duty, were drawing close to a civilian while going 'Aby Aby' right after that. Surely she was getting headache.

「Hoo~. Kousuke is really popular. As expected from the man Emily chose.」

「Wai-, grandma!? What are you saying in front of people——」

「Isn't it fine, Emily. Mother, is really proud somehow. Kousuke-kun is already like my own son.」

「That's right. As a father, I'm feeling half relieved and half conflicted though.」

It appeared the tension of all Grant family members was rising up seeing their daughter's sweetheart was unexpectedly popular among the staffs of the national security bureau.

「Well, that's because Aby is our, or rather, he is Britain's hero after all!」

「I'm jealous at Bernard who fought together with him.」

Everyone nodded in agreement at Bernard's words.

It seemed, for them Kousuke was a hero that Britain was proud of. Nowadays when American comic hero was rising to prominence, their mood was like 'Even Britain won't lose! If Ironoan is going to call Spideoman as helper, the Captoin should call our Lord Abyssgate by all means!'.

Hearing that, Emily turned herself small on the chair. She was feeling embarrassed and shy. A hero was accompanied by heroine. She was turning smaller from imagining for a bit that it was her while shaking *purupuru* from shame.

That figure of Emily that was like a small cute animal caused all the tough looking men to showed a warm smile while they were getting heated up like 「As expected, she is the heroine!」.

Pulsing blood vein was finally emerging on the forehead of their queen. Her eye glint was saying 「Stop screwing around and work」.

In fact, Chief Magdanese was opening her mouth with cold aura wafting from her.

「.....You all. I said to carry out your duty——」

But, before she could complete her sentence.....

Golden spark surged in the middle of the chief office.

「——!?」

「-, chief!」

Allen quickly leaped toward Chief Magdanese. Bernard and others also pulled out their handgun from their waist and stood up in front of Grant family.

In front of the supernatural phenomenon, everyone moved without stiffening not just because they were trained elites, but the biggest reason was thanks to the precedent of Lord Abyssgate.

The golden sparks intensified further and before long became shining sphere.

Right after that, the light burst into a flash. Chief Magdanese and others reflexively covered their eyes.

After the light settled down.....

「「「「「——」」」」」

Everyone was speechless. They who moved precisely even in front of a supernatural phenomenon, and even Chief Magdanese didn't even twitch. They couldn't move. They were only opening their eyes widely with their mouth kept gaping open.

What was reflected in their eyes.

That was the perfect form of the concept of beauty.

「.....Hello, it's me.」

Though the first voice was comical.

Yes, what appeared from empty air with fluttering golden hair——was Yue.

Furthermore, she was clad in golden light with halo floating on her back. It was the adult version Yue-sama!

After teleporting away from Kousuke, she didn't immediately transferred to here. She first teleported to nearby, then she intentionally transformed into adult version and changed clothes. After she finished, she thought of various show and picking the best timing, Yue-sama made her entrance!

Even the word peerless was still insufficient. 'The molding of god, no, rather it might be the goddess herself who descended', that was what everyone there was thinking in a daze. The adult version Yue who showed her seriousness with



her entrance was just that intense in various meaning.

「Yu, Yue-oneesan?」

A voice timidly resounded inside the chief office that was frozen still. Emily was staring questioningly at Yue.

Yue erased the halo of magic power light as though nothing happened and she landed gently on the floor. Her loose black dress spread out airily. Her soft and fluffy hair was also floating around gently, so it was as though everyone there was losing their way into a dream world.

Everyone, starting from Bernard were watching Yue-sama's countenance in fascination while going 'pohee~' as though their soul was slipping out from their mouth.

Seeing them like that, Yue who was convinced of the success of 「Strategy  
tengen toppa  
heaven piercing first impression so that the first wife of the demon king won't get underestimated!」 made a guts pose with a 'humph' from her nose.

And then, when she turned her gaze to Emily,

「.....Nn. Emirin, long time no see. Did you cut your hair?」

「I'm not.」

「Nn-', for some reason Yue nodded strongly.

「Err, Yue-oneesan. Why are you here.....」

「.....I came to pick up Emirin. Also.....」

Yue's glance burst toward Chief Magdanese. But, the one over there was the cornerstone of the country's defense who was even said as the woman of steel who was married with Britain. She recovered herself in a flash and right after that she faced Yue with a straight and dignified posture.

「Nice to meet you. I am Sharon Magdanese. The chief of the national security bureau. Am I not mistaken to believe that you are the "wife of the demon king"?」

It was a polite wording toward a superior, however, Chief Magdanese faced the unexpected meeting with the attitude that wasn't abased by any mean.

Chief Magdanese was looking firm, but Allen and some others saw through her that she was quite nervous.

Her atmosphere was as though she was facing the top leader of foreign country, or when she was attending an emergency meeting where a great disaster for the national security might be incurred if even a single misstep happened.

That tension awakened the other staffs and they similarly held themselves with that tension.

Inside the room that was overflowing with feeling of tension, Yue who was addressed was,

「.....Indeed! I am Yue. The woman who is the demon king's first wife!」

She took a striking pose *sharan* that was filled with dignity. One of her hand was on her waist, while her other hand was making horizontal peace sign above her eye. She tilted her center of gravity slightly. With serious face.

The pose was as though she was an idol from somewhere. Though her face was tense rather than bright.

A painfully silent atmosphere was dominating the place. *Tic tac, tic tac*, the sound of clock's hand was resounding extremely clearly.

While no one was moving, Yue silently released her pose and,

「.....Emirin, I failed. What to do?」

「You are asking me!?」

Emily who was asked for help. 'Why did you get too worked up!? If you are going to regret it than act normal from the start!' She seemed to want to say that. Certainly, when looking from the side at Yue's face that was subtly throwing her gaze to empty air, it also looked like she was in regret.

From Yue's view, she was convinced that she managed to give the impression of 「The demon king's wife is goddamn outrageous as expected!」 from her first show.

And so, if Chief Magdanese took an attitude that made light of her even then, she would give her cold reception in cool Yue-san mode, but if the chief

behaved politely following manner, she thought that she would kindly relax the tension but.....

She completely killed the atmosphere instead. Inside her heart she was incoherently trembling with shame. It was to the degree that she unconsciously asked for help to Emily.

Somehow, the gaze of everyone inside the room was focused on Emily.

Emily jerked with a twitch, her gaze swam around restlessly in panic.....

She abruptly glared at the staffs. And then,

「I, I am Emily! The wife of the abyss lord, the right-hand man of the demon king! In the future!」

With one hand put on her waist, horizontal peace sign above one eye, and one leg bent with her body tilted forward *sharararan-!!*

She blundered with teary eyes and bright red face.

She didn't know what to do, so for the time being she thought that she would self-explode together with Yue.

‘We will die at the same time! Yue-oneesan!’

It felt like such voice of the heart could be heard from the trembling Emily-chan.

*Shi~n* The chief office fell dead silent. However, different from the atmosphere killer Yue, now the atmosphere was warm as though the room heater was turned on. Emily-chan's kindness was softening the adults!

Emily-chan silently became small. She held her head with both hands and buried her face onto her knee. ‘Don't look at me.....’ It felt like such voice of the heart could be heard.

With Emily's sacrifice, the room's atmosphere returned. Yue gazed at Chief Magdanese once more.

*Jii-*, with her default stare she observed Chief Magdanese.

Yes, unblinking stare was Yue's default look. That was her normal state to the end.

But, there was no way Chief Magdanese who was meeting her for the first time knew that. Rather, the sight of a beautiful woman sending her an unblinking stare caused her to gulp her saliva, and her misunderstanding exploded.

「I, I am Magdanese. The iron woman who is married with Britain! That's what they call me.」

All the staffs cried at the chief's desperate compromise! As expected, there was no *sharan*, but she was at least taking pose of one hand on her waist! If it was for the sake of the country's defense, she would throw away all her embarrassment and pride, the woman here was truly an iron woman!

Yue's face turned like 「Eh, what are you doing suddenly?」, but she somehow felt that Chief Magdanese too was doing her best to revive the atmosphere of the room that Yue murdered.

She suddenly smiled and,

「.....Nn. Nice to meet you, Magdanese. I'm inviting you too to our home.」

‘The first wife bestow her recognition! Our chief is given recognition!’ The staffs burst into an uproar ‘waahh’ all at once!

Emily dissolved her state of charismo guard toward reality and looked at Chief Magdanese with disbelieving expression.

Toward such Emily, Chief Magdanese gave a small thumb up with a clear expression that looked as though she had lost something. Emily cried seeing the spirit of sacrifice of the chief.

After that, Chief Magdanese who was strangely wrapped with a sense of translucency together with Allen and a part of the staffs, and then Grant family were teleported by Yue to Japan.

After they left, there were the figures of the staffs making great ruckus like 「The demon king's first wife, was seriously bad news! In various senses!」. There were also a part of the staffs who went 「If we can become the demon king's subordinate, then we might be able to look at that person from nearby again.....」 with one of their hands tightly grasping letter of resignation.

The bureau chief-sama who lost something, and the staffs whose soul were stolen in various meaning by the demon king's wife—especially the senior staffs.

The future of the national security bureau, in the end.....

Also, a clone of Kousuke who was made to standby outside the security bureau for the sake of the show was muttering 「A~, yeah yeah. This is the usual, the usual」 when Yue didn't come to pick him up too. he entered the security bureau with trudging footsteps, got told by Bernard that Yue and others were already going back to Japan, and then he contacted Yue with dead eyes.

Yue hurriedly returned with a bit awkward expression and he was safely collected.

It went without saying that the positivity level of the staffs who were able to see Yue for the second time was raised further toward the lord. Though Kousuke was filled with sadness.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I cannot reach until the attack...

Sorry for ending it at strange place.

# Arifureta Chapter 309

Grandma

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Sharon-Obaachan

—

There was a strange tense situation in the living room of Nagumo house.

One party that created such tense situation was sitting on the excessively fluffy sofa of Nagumo family. Sharon Magdanese, the chief of Britain's national security bureau.

I'll die if I avert my gaze.....

She was *looking down at beside her* with a rigid expression as though to say that.

*Jii-, Jiii~~~*, the one staring at Chief Magdanese was the demon king——'s beloved daughter.

It was Myuu.

「.....」

「.....」

For some reason the two were unmoving while staying silent. The two were sitting with their back straight, both their hands were put above their lap in good manner. It was only their face that was staring at each other.

While the two were like that, the Britain group of Allen, Vanessa, and Grant family were watching over them while gulping their saliva nervously. Yue and others, the Nagumo family were also the same.

They were alternately sending glances at Myuu and Chief Magdanese.

Everyone was thinking.

What's this atmosphere.....like so.

By the way, the talk between Chief Magdanese and Yue who was the representative of Nagumo family ended without any particular problem.

Emily and co arrived from Britain to Nagumo house in Japan instantly using Yue's teleportation. There wasn't even any "great dungeon when the entrance was opened" like Vanessa was hoping for. There wasn't even any sudden entrance from Shuu or Sumire to take delight in the visitors' reaction.

Also, participating in the talk from Nagumo family side other than Yue were Tio, Kaori, Shizuku, Remia, and Myuu. Only them. It went without saying why Hajime and Shia weren't included. Sumire and Shuu seemed to be busy with their work, so tonight they would sleep outside and didn't return home. Aiko also didn't come tonight.

And, the guards of security bureau right now were standing by around Nagumo house. It seemed they were arranging cars for transport in Japan and also other procedures, but actually, they weren't present because it wasn't desirable to put multiple guards on one's side while having talk for the purpose of building friendly relationship, or rather, frankly speaking they would be meaningless even if they were present. That was the consideration (?) of Chief Magdanese.

The topic of the talk also wasn't anything like Chief Magdanese demanding anything or trying to set restriction. Till the end this talk was only for both sides to meet each other, and for Chief Magdanese to say that if Nagumo family contacted her beforehand when they had business in Britain, then she would be able to give her cooperation. The topic of the talk wasn't that much different from the agreement that she had exchanged with Kousuke at the Berserk case, so Yue too wasn't particularly in objection.

If Chief Magdanese was actually trying to start something, Yue planned to be Yue-sama, so Chief Magdanese's consideration in that area could be said as expected from the chief of the people who were shouldering the national security.

Her feeling of wanting to build a friendly relationship was certainly conveyed to Nagumo family side. Yue also promised that in the future, she would also pay attention to the other party's convenience when having meeting, so for Chief Magdanese it was a talk that she could be satisfied about.

Like that, the talk was over and they moved to the topic of how Emily and her family would go to Endo house, while Chief Magdanese and her men would head to the hotel they had reserved, it was then,

Myuu who had been quiet all that time suddenly made a small run *totetote* and sat beside Chief Magdanese. Then she began to stared *jii* at her.

Even when Chief Magdanese asked 「What is it?」, it seemed that Myuu was curious about something, she only stared passionately at Chief Magdanese without doing anything else. Before long, for some reason even Chief Magdanese also stared back at Myuu wordlessly.....

It seemed that Vanessa finally became unable to endure the silence and,

「Allen, you are the chief's aide right? Do something about this atmosphere.」

「!？」

She whispered into Allen's ear. Allen sent Vanessa a gaze as though he was looking at a superior who was going to send him to a suicide mission.

「Tha, that's too unreasonable! Although she is a little girl, the other party is the daughter of the demon king you know!? If by some chance I hurt her feeling.....are you telling me to die!？」

「From the start you are someone who is devoting your life for the country right? It's fine, go.」

「That's too cruel! Or rather, if it's speaking of devoting life to the country then you are the same!」

「My life already belong to Kousuke-san. I cannot die for the sake of country.」

「Even though you are security bureau's agent!？」

Allen and Vanessa were acting a comedic duo whisperingly, but the mutual gaze of Myuu and Chief Magdanese was completely unwavering.



「.....Re, Remia? What is Myuu doing?」

Yue was also unusually bewildered and asked for help from Myuu's actual mother. Remia smiled 「My my, ufufu」.....and quickly vanished to the kitchen saying 「I'll prepare another serving of tea there」 while going 'my my ufufu'.

「Sh, she escapeth, leaving us behind.」

「.....Damn you Remia-. What brilliant withdrawal.」

Kaori lifted her waist saying 「I, I'll help o——」, but Shizuku intercepted with a firm hold on her shoulder. 「Rather, I'll do the helping——」 She was in the process of saying that, but Kaori also grabbed her shoulder firmly.

The atmosphere that was brought about by Myuu and the chief had a strange tension in it, to the level that even the veteran wife~s were unable to endure it.

It was unknown whether the two in question could hear the surrounding's tumult, but finally Myuu broke the stalemate.

「Chief-san.」

「What is it?」

「Is papa scary? And all the Oneechan too?」

「.....」

Instantly, Yue and others went 「Geez Myuu, you are making provocation in this timing!？」 while sending her a gaze as though they were looking a terrifying child. But, Myuu's state that didn't seem like she was in amusement at the slightest caused them to immediately tilt their head.

On the other hand, Chief Magdanese was at a loss of words. She was right in front of those "Oneechans". She wondered what was the correct answer. There was no way she could give a noncommittal reply seeing that although the other party was a little girl, she was still the beloved daughter of the demon king.

But, while she was at her wits' end searching for the best answer, Myuu took action. Her little fingertip snugly touched Chief Magdanese's hand.

「It's not shaking, but it is.」

Contradictory words. However, Chief Magdanese couldn't say anything in

denial. Because she thought that she was seen through.

Chief Magdanese had the confidence that she wouldn't be seen through even when facing foreign country's top authority or terrorist, but it seemed the daughter of the demon king had far better eyes than even them.

As expected from the demon king's daughter, she was a bit too abnormal which made her fit to be called that. To think that she even had that kind of ability. Or perhaps, was she also receiving unique tools from her father just like the lord?

If that was the case, she was addressing her at this kind of timing with some kind of aim.....

When Chief Magdanese heightened her vigilance to the same level when she was facing Yue, Myuu stared fixedly at her once more while asking.

「Is Chief-san, protecting a lot of people?」

「.....Yes, that's right.」

「Do you have amazing power that enable you to protect a lot of people?」

「No. I don't have amazing power like all of you.」

「Even though you are shaking, and you don't have power, you will protect them?」

「That is, my job. But, that's right. About not having power, I'll have to correct you a bit on that.」

Against a little girl as her talking partner, putting aside her wording, Chief Magdanese was giving Myuu answer seriously without looking down on her by all means. Her gaze flowed toward Allen and Vanessa.

「They, the bureau staffs who are putting their trust on me, they are my strength. And then, I'm also putting my trust on them. They are exactly the "amazing power" that the chief of the national security bureau is wielding.」

Allen went 「CHIEEFF!」 with tears flooding out from his eyes, while Vanessa took a chuuni pose. Was it the pose of a savage eagle?

The chief acted as though she didn't see it.

Myuu continued to stare fixedly *jii* at Chief Magdanese. When she heard those words, in a beat, her mouth formed a wide smile as though she was convinced of something. It was a smile which made the previous serious expression that even gave off tense atmosphere felt like a lie. It felt like anyone would break into a warm smile seeing that smiling face.

Even Chief Magdanese wasn't an exception. Her expression turned a bit surprised.

Myuu spoke to such Chief Magdanese with a somewhat happy expression.

「You see, Chief-san. Myuu too, also has no power whatsoever nano.」

「Eh?」

Chief Magdanese's pupils turned into dot. When she had been putting up her guard wondering just what kind of absurd power this little girl before her eyes had, but she was actually a powerless little girl.

Yue and others also opened their eyes wide hearing Myuu's words. Remia was secretly peeking out her face from the kitchen.

「Myuu won't be able to do anything without receiving help nano. Myuu won't be able to protect anyone, and unable to beat the bad guy too nano.」

That wasn't true, thought Yue and others, especially Kaori and others who were at that place at that time.

Once, Hajime despaired and transformed into an incarnation of destruction. At that time the one who stood in his way was this small hero. Even within the storm that would erase her existence just from getting touched, Myuu didn't take even a single step back.

Recalling that, Yue and others nodded 「Aa, I see」.

The reason of Myuu's sudden action. That was, surely, because she was feeling sympathy.

She had no power herself. However, she also had something she wanted to protect, something she should fight for.

Chief Magdanese was the same like her, however, this woman had protected far more people than her, in a far longer time.

Thus, Myuu's interest was strongly attracted to her.

The gaze of Yue and others became warm at the unexpected emotion of Myuu.

Even though she had been presented with numerous artifacts and grew day by day from receiving the special education from the Oneechans, it seemed Myuu hadn't become haughty. From the lack of failing in her sense of values toward "strength", she was undoubtedly the demon king's daughter even though she wasn't related by blood with him.

「About your question just now.」

「Myu?」

Myuu tilted her head. Chief Magdanese returned a straightforward gaze to her while answering.

「I'm scared of your father. All your big sisters are also really scary. After all the "amazing power" that you mentioned is something that can thoroughly destroy what I deem important. I'm feeling really terrified.」

「My.....papa and also all the Oneechans won't do anything like that nano.」

「Yes. It seems so.」

As long as us, or anybody else didn't do "something stupid". Chief Magdanese added that inside her heart while continuing.

「I also think so because of this talk right now. Far from that, as long as our interest matched each other, then surely we will be able to cooperate with each other. Saying this surely won't make your big sisters feel good but, that "cooperation" will also become my, the security bureau's strength.」

I came here today for that, Chief Magdanese said.

When Chief Magdanese sent a glance to Yue and others, they shrugged their shoulders with a wry smile. I pray that the "cooperation" won't become anything like "making use", for both sides' sake.....Chief Magdanese certainly read such implicit words between the lines and nodded.

And then,

「That's why, you do that too Create a lot of people who will cooperate with you. All of those people will become your strength. If you do that, surely you will be able to protect what you want to protect, and fight what you want to fight. You are the demon king's daughter. Then, you should be able to do it far better than someone like me.」

Chief Magdanese finished with a gaze that although strict, contained kindness somewhere in it.

For a while, myuu stared fixedly *jii* at Chief Magdanese. Chief Magdanese also gazed on Myuu. Their expression was mutually stiff without any smile, but there wasn't any strange tension like before at the slightest.

While no one was saying anything, before long Myuu showed a soft smile that was the same like before and yet even warmer and fluffier.

Immediately after that, Myuu suddenly clambered up on the lap of Chief Magdanese.

In respond to this, even Chief Magdanese seemed surprised. Unusually, she silently accepted Myuu's cute act of aggression with a posture as though she was held up by a gun.

Allen went 「Awawa, doing that to the chief..... Chief! Please don't get angry!」 looking greatly flustered while covering his mouth with his hands, while Vanessa was staring hard at the rare scene. During that time Myuu entrusted her back on the stiffened Chief Magdanese and moved around her butt to make herself comfortable.

When she finally found the best position, she looked up to Chief Magdanese and spoke. Along with the finest, dazzling smile.

「Sharon-obaachan! Myuu will do her best!」

「!？」

**KRAKKATOOOOMM!!** Everyone there hallucinated the scene of Chief Magdanese getting struck by lightning.

「Sha, Sharon-obaachan?」

Chief Magdanese repeated with a hoarse voice. She who had devoted her

everything for the country's protection until now had never been called like that.

Allen went 「Awawa, calling the chief like that..... Chief! Please don't get angry! For the sake of the country!」 looking greatly flustered while covering his mouth with his hands, while Vanessa kept clicking her camera at the rare scene without stopping. During that time Myuu was sending an upward gaze at the stiffened Chief Magdanese while fidgeting.

「Myuu's Obaachan. ....Is it no good, that Myuu said that?」

「I am Myuu's Sharon-obaachan you know?」

It was an instant reply. With a tense and grim expression, the chief of Britain's national security bureau——fell!

Allen's eyes immediately snapped open in shock, while Vanessa yelled「I, I don't want this kind of chief!」.

Yue and others thought, 「Eh? It feels like déjà vu.....ah, it's the same like that time with Okaa-sama and Otou-sama」.

Myuu's expression burst into a bright expression without caring of the surrounding.

「Sharon-obaachan! Stay here for today nano! Talk with Myuu nano!」

「Eh.....I, I guess. But, Myuu. Sharon-obaachan has to work in the hotel after this too.....」

This was a sudden voyage, and even though it was night at Japan, in Britain it was still daytime. There were various things she had to do, like informing the outcome of the talk and also the content of it to the headquarter of security bureau, and she also had to receive report from there too.

Even Myuu was able to guess that much.

「It's an important work. Please understand. Myuu is a good child right?」

「.....Yes nano. Myuu is a good child.」

Dejection, gloom. Although she was talking understandingly, Myuu looked absurdly down seeing that her invitation to stay the night was rejected.

And so, Sharon-obaachan was,

「Allen. I'll write my letter of resignation. Please take care of the rest.」

「Chief!?!」

「It's not chief. It's Sharon-obaachan.」

A firm declaration! Chief Magdanese who was called as the cornerstone of national security abandoned the country's protection!

Everything was for the sake of the beloved granddaughter. Chief Magdanese resigned and became Sharon-obaachan!

For the time being, Allen's eyes rolled and he fainted. It appeared that the chief he respected unexpectedly got overloaded in her heart's capacity. Even Vanessa was shrinking back in terror.

「Te, terrifying..... Our chief was completely subdued by the demon king's daughter!」

「Vanessa. I understand your feeling, but be quiet for a bit.」

Even while making such tsukkomi, Emily was also sending Myuu a shuddering look. What was terrifying wasn't just the chief who was taking impossible action, rather it was Myuu who made her to take such action.

「.....Nn-. Ee~rr, Magdanese?」

The situation had become strange, so as the first wife, Yue kept at it and went forward. Sharon-obaachan spoke with a grim expression.

「Ms. Yue. I want to adopt Myuu into Magdanese family. Will you allow it?」

「.....Obviously it's not allowed.」

Yue's reproachful gaze stabbed forward.

It seemed Chief Magdanese had lost her sanity somewhat from the unprecedented moe attack.

Shuddering gazes were poured once more toward Myuu who had melted the iron woman into flabby level.

「Myu?」 It didn't seem like Myuu understood what she had done, perhaps

that was the minimum salvation that could be taken here.

If she acted while aiming for this, yes, if for example she intentionally acted in order to obtain “cooperation”, then Myuu should already be called as not a witch but a little witch. In a sense she was more of a magician than Yue and others.

「Sharon-obaachan. You are going to stop being “Chief-san” nano?」

Myuu’s expression turned sad. Chief Magdanese’s expression went like「!?」.

「It’s Myuu’s fault?」

Was it perhaps because she was acting gloomy.....thinking that Myuu got dejected.

And so, Chief Magdanese was,

「Myuu, let’s talk again slowly next time. Sharon-obaachan has to work after this.」

She declared that with a tense and grim expression. It seemed she retracted her resignation declaration. Allen also exposed his happiness「Returned! The chief has returned to normal!」 while getting revived.

Myuu’s expression also became similarly tense and she saluted for some reason.

「Please work hard in work nano! Chief Sharon-obaachan!」

Chief Sharon-obaachan’s expression that was constantly cold to the extreme like tundra was collapsing into a slovenly face like a nightmare and returned salute.

Emily said.

「That chief, is making that kind of face.....as I thought, in Nagumo family even the little kid is terrific. Isn’t it, Kousuke?」

「What, you only realized that this late huh, Emily.」

Everyone thought.

‘You are there!?’



Even though Yue brought him here, but just by being a bit quiet without talking, even the wife~s forgot Kousuke-kun (clone body).

In a sense, he was also the same when talking about being terrific.

—

—

—

After that, Emily exited Nagumo house and went to Kousuke's house.

Yue could also sent them off to Endo house using teleportation, but the bureau staffs who were waiting outside had prepared cars, so Kousuke declined.

Chief Magdanese, Allen, and several guards headed to their hotel right away. It was already late at night with the clock pointing at nine o'clock, so they would delay meeting with Endo family for the next day. After they finished with that, they would arrange to return back to Britain through the embassy. They had no record of departure from Britain, so they couldn't use normal flight.

As for Kousuke, he along with Grant family, Vanessa, and three guards who he knew well from guarding Grant family from close by similarly used cars to head to Endo house.

At the entrance, a woman who seemed like an important authority being surrounded by foreign men with stern look.....

That woman treated the people of Nagumo family courteously.

Then multiple black sedan type cars that were procured from who knew where.....

The neighbors were properly observing even at nine o'clock at night. 「It's Nagumo-san's place again! It's mafia! Foreign mafia is coming to greet them there! Dear-, what to do!」 「Oi, you! I always told you, don't peek like that! There is a limit even in being impolite.....hmm, no matter how many times I see it all of them are really beautiful huh」 「.....Dear?」 That kind of conversation was unfolding here and there inside the neighbors' houses.....perhaps.

It seemed that Chief Magdanese somehow felt the gazes that were showered

at them from the gap of curtain of such neighbors. Her cheeks were grandly twitching. 「There is really no meaning of doing unofficial talk」 She thought.

The demon king palace in the residential area.

Even Chief Magdanese was unable to anticipate only this.

Myuu who came to see her off waved her hand energetically while saying.

「Sharon-obaachan! Do your best in your work nano! Come to play again!」

「Yes, I'll come again to play. Myuu too, if you have a chance come to visit. Sharon-obaachan will take you anywhere you want to go.」

The chief didn't come here to play by any means. It was impossible for the staffs whose eyes snapped wide open in shock from witnessing the nightmare of a dere dere chief to make such tsukkomi.

「Allen, get a hold of yourself! Protect Sharon-obaachan! Nano」

「Eh!? It's only me who got called without honorific!? What's more with self-important tone somehow!? Your "nano" there just sounded like unimportant addition you know!?!」

Surely Myuu had discerning eye to look at people. During the brief period of waiting for the cars, there was time for the Britain group and Nagumo family to chat with Myuu as the center, but during that brief time, Myuu seemed to have guessed from her surrounding's behavior, of the right way to interact with Allen that was.

Am I right?, Myuu looked at Vanessa questioningly. Vanessa sent her a firm thumb up.

「Endo too! Protect Emily-oneechan properly! Nano」

「Me too as expected huh.....」

Kousuke laughed drily while beside him Allen was getting on all four while yelling that「Even a little girl-, even a little girl treat me like this-. God! Is there a kind girl for me in this world!?!」. He kindly patted the shoulder of the professional killer who was being a bother for the neighbors.

Kousuke was making gentle eyes. Allen smiled with teary eyes saying「Aby-

san, my bosom friend」, Kousuke also said「Putting aside being friend, my name, it's Kousuke」and returned a smile.

Like that, Kousuke and others departed from Nagumo house.

They split into two cars and headed to Endo house.

In the first car, Kousuke and Emily sat on the back seat, Vanessa on the front seat, while one of the guards was driving. In the second car, Emily's mother Sophie, the father Carl, and the grandma Sierra sat on the backseat, while the remaining two guards sat at the front. That was the arrangement.

The topic inside the car was naturally the story about the dere dere chief. Vanessa immediately sent the smiling face of Chief Magdanese that she took to Bernard and others in the headquarters. Right about now, the headquarter was surely falling into chaos. How much SAN point of the staffs would decrease.....

The main culprit of the cyber terrorist was the SOUSAKAN their fellow staff.  
agent

「If you aren't doing it moderately, your important thing will be put into shredder by the chief again you know?」

「However Lyle-san. If this kind of important information is kept secret, I will  
saiban be put to trial by my colleagues before getting the shredder.」  
saidanki

The driver, bodyguard Lyle O'Connor——his age was in the middle of his thirty. A man who looked good with short black moustache——was smiling wryly.

Like that they were driving for a while getting excited. At the point when it would be ten more minutes before they reached Endo house, Vanessa's mobile phone rang out.

When she looked at the display, there was the letter of "M" there. In other words, it was from the chief-sama. Vanessa's complexion turned pale in a flash. She wondered if her crime had been found out already.

Nevertheless, this was the call from the absolute queen. She pushed the receive button quickly without hesitation!

「Ye, yes, this is Paradis dessu. Chi, chief——」

『Paradiiis! We are under attack! How is the situation over there!?!』

An angry yell resounded inside the car. That was undoubtedly the yell of Chief Magdanese that communicated the emergency situation.

At the same time,

「Lyle-san-! From the right!」

「!? ——Shield 2-! Enemy-! From three o'clock!」

At the same time with Kousuke's warning, bodyguard Lyle used his radio to contact the car behind him while stepping on the accelerator with amazing reaction speed. By stepping on the pedal swiftly, it was for avoiding from having their route blocked by the opponent.

But, it was a disaster that the car wasn't the usual exclusive car for the bureau. The car didn't accelerate as fast as he imagined. It allowed the car that came charging from the right path to crash on the trunk part of the car.

「Kyaa!?!」

「Emily!」

Right after the collision, Kousuke embraced Emily, so Emily didn't seem injured. Even so, it was a collision by a car that came rushing in high speed. The impact was something terrific.

In addition, because the car received impact at its back, the car of Kousuke and co was grandly rotating. Bodyguard Lyle handled the wheel with a desperate look to right the balance of the car.

They were in a crossroad at that time so the space was quite large. Thanks to that they could somehow avoid crashing onto guard rail or wall. Even with white smoke rising from the friction of the tires, the cars stopped somehow.

「Goddammit. ——Shield 2!」

『This is Shield 2! No problem here! Two headlights at six o'clock! Five silhouettes around us!』

「Roger! We are retreating from here!」

In respond to the angry yell of agent Lyle, the car behind——code Shield 1

referred to agent Lyle, while Shield 2 referred to agent Rob Garret who was driving the car that Carl and others were riding in——sharply reported the situation.

Agent Lyle listened to that while stepping on the gear once more to takeoff right away. Thinking of the the chief's warning just before this, there was no way this was just an accident. It was out of the question to stay in this place.

Fortunately, the car crashing on them collided on a guard rail and it wasn't moving. Shield 2 was able to follow after Shield 1 without problem.

But, right after the car of Kousuke and co took off with force that made the tires left behind skid mark, someone came rushing from the front. It was a Japanese person around his thirty. That man came rushing right from the front at the car of Kousuke and co that was moving fast.

Without pause, the man leaped on the car's bonnet. Without minding that the car was running, he began to strike the front glass with a hammer he was holding.

「What the hell with this guy!?!」

「Don't tell me-, they are in Japan too!?!」

Kousuke who covered for Emily looked at the man who was cracking the front glass and yelled. Agent Lyle stepped on the brake strongly while the car was advancing fast, causing the man to be sent flying. During that time Vanessa was yelling into her phone.

「Chief! Right now we are under attack! There is no injured! The attacker is a male in his thirty. A Japanese! The situation there!?!」

『Alonso is injured from gunshot. No danger to his life. The attackers are mostly Japanese. One of them is a uniformed police. Right now Allen is suppressing them. Our car is crushed. Currently we are travelling by foot. The number of passer-by and car here are abnormally few. We are planning to return to Nagumo house somehow.』

「Roger. After linking up with Endo family, we will also head to Nagumo house.」

A slightly relieved atmosphere was flowing. Vanessa kept the phone in speaker mode while throwing her gaze at Kousuke through the back mirror.

「Kousuke-san, the attacker's information. From your reaction just now, you know something correct?」

「Yeah. These guys are——they're coming again!」

The clone already conveyed the information about this attack to his main body. Conversely, the information that Kousuke obtained from his dialogue with Professor Littman had been shared too. He was going to convey it, however, before he could a mid-sized truck rushed out from the front direction of the crossroad.

Looking closer it was a truck that was famous for moving service. And then, the eyes of the driver were shining red, the same like the previous attacker.

「No good-, the road's width-. Aby!」

「It's Kousuke!」

From the width of the road, it was impossible to completely avoid the mid-sized truck rushing from the front. Even if the car moved to dodge, if the opponent felt like it they could move however they like to still crash anyway with the width of this road.

Agent Lyle who concluded so yelled. Kousuke gave his usual reply before pulverizing the window with his elbow strike, then he threw his kunai.

「Everyone, hang on me!」

Kousuke held Emily with one hand while his other hand reached out. Vanessa and Lyle caught on that hand.

The next moment, the light of the truck covered their vision. The truck was approaching right nearby like a wall.

And then, impact. Terrific crashing sound reverberated. The car of Kousuke and co pitched forward with one side floating in the air. Its front was squashed. The mid-sized truck's rear part was also floating——

Kousuke and others stared at that sight from a bit far away walkway. It was impossible to include the car, but teleporting four people wasn't a problem.

The truck and the car bounced several times before stopping. The truck's driver had his face buried into airbag without showing any sign of moving. They had no time to confirm whether to check if he died or not.

Kousuke sighed while muttering.

「It's like watching a zombie movie.」

「That's my favorite genre, but spare me from experiencing it for real.」

People were coming out in drove from the surrounding buildings. From a glance, they were all people who could be seen anywhere. There were also quite a number of foreigners, but around half of them were Japanese. However, everyone's eyes were shining red.

*Kiki-* Braking sound echoed and the car behind stopped in front of Kousuke and co.

「Emily! You safe!?!」

「Father! Yes, I'm fine!」

Carl was unable to contain himself and leaned out from the window, calling out to Emily.

Agent Rob stopped him while raising his voice to Kousuke and co.

「If you need the car then we will remain behind, what are you going to do?」

One car wouldn't be enough for everyone here. Thus, Rob asked whether Kousuke, Emily, and Vanessa would ride the remaining car while the three bodyguards stayed behind. It was fortunate that the truck toppled and didn't block the path. If it was now the car could slip through the side.

Figures of people were approaching. There were also multiple cars coming.

And then,

——*GlllllllH*

——*AaAAAAAAA-*

Repulsive voices were reverberating. Countless shadows were running on the surrounding wall and ground. Light vanished from the surrounding buildings when they noticed, and even the traffic light that was a bit far away was

vanishing right now.

「O, oi oi.....what is it this time?」

「It seems, it's a fantasy again you know?」

Agent Lyle pulled out his handgun while getting drenched in cold sweat. Vanessa spoke frivolously, but her expression was sharp. There wasn't the slightest sign of her usual fooling around.

The street lights were unnaturally flickering. They were dying out in turn starting from the farthest. In the night of cloudy sky where there wasn't even any moonlight, the artificial light going out was as though a wall of darkness was approaching.

At the same time, countless voices resounded inside Kousuke's head.

That was the telepathic voice from the artifacts that were supplied to all his comrades.

『Oi-, you guys hear me!? It's Sakagami here-! For some reason I'm attacked by strange guys!』

『Everyone-, can you heaaar!? This is Nana! It feels like there is something strange in my house though!? Someone help!』

『Yuukaaa! Nanaaaa! Right now, I'm outside but it's pitch black around me! I can hear whispering! I'm no good with horrorrrr! Heeelppp!』

『Taeko!? This is Yuuka! I'm also getting attacked here! The attackers are foreigners, also, there is something unseen too!』

『You guys too!? This is Kentaro! I'm with Juugo now! I can hear disgusting voice here but, I cannot see their figure! Ah, Juugo!? You're okay!?』

『Atsushi here! These guys' eyes are red but they ain't monster right!? Is it bad to cut them!?』

『Someone help me! It's Saitou! Shinji is strange! No, normally he is already strange but, this isn't that, somehow he is cackling crazily! Ah, no, normally he would also cackle sometimes but.....anyway, something strange!』

『Ee!? Everyone too!? I'm Suzu! When I entered the bath, something came



out! Right now I'm suppressing it with barrier but, what's this.....feels like my head is getting strange』

Emergency contact came from the classmates one after another.

Furthermore, Kousuke's——his main body's phone was ringing. The clone and the main body was in a state of information sharing, so the conversation was transmitted in real time.

『Kou-niii! Help! Otou-san is!!』

The chief's voice came from the phone of Vanessa that was still connecting.

『There was a contact just now. The headquarters is getting attacked. Paradis, join up with us quickly.』

This evening, under this cloudy sky, it seemed the demons and worshippers that were possessed by demons were starting to move.

「Kousuke!」

Emily's voice. The last street light finally went out. Vanessa and others turned on their flashlight, but even that immediately died out.

While darkness enveloped them, the reverberation of shriek stirred up their mind.....

—

「Who do you think you are barking at?」

—

Kousuke put on his sunglass.

Even though the surrounding was pitch black.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The previous chapter, there was a scene of Kousuke confirming the safety of Emily and others, but I revised it.

Thinking carefully, Yue brought his clone so he could share information with

it.

I plainly forgot about the clone.....

Perhaps because I'm writing this at the same time with the work for volume 8 publication that is planned to be sold for next month, recently the story feels repetitive no matter what, my apology.

Soon my publication work will be over too, so from next week I think I might be able to develop the story a bit more properly.

Also, I'm ashamed to advertise here but, at the same time with volume 8, the volume 3 of manga and Nichijou version volume 1 are also planned to be released.

Below is the book cover.





It's also showed at the homepage of Overlap-sama.

I'm really thankful to RoGa-sensei and Mori Misaki-sensei. I believe their work has magnificent quality.

I'll be very happy if you readers will obtain them.

Also, the first chapter and the latest chapter are distributed for free in Gardo Comic, so for those who haven't read, how about giving them a try to kill time? (You can go there from Overlap-sama's homepage) A good timing too, yesterday the second chapter of spin-off manga "Zero" were updated there. The story of Miledy and Oscar.

This one too is also drawn amazingly thanks to Kouchi Ataru-sensei, so please if everyone will kindly do me a favor and read it by all means. Kouchi Ataru-sensei's Miledy is really annoyingly cute!

Well then, pardon me for being longwinded.

Best regard for the main story here from here on too.

# Arifureta Chapter 310

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 The Respective Battle Top

—

「Kousuke! It's night right now! What's more it's pitch black!」

Emily made an accurate tsukkomi when Kousuke wore sunglasses.

However, he was already the lord so it was irrelevant! The lord sent a thumb up at Emily that was cryptic when seen from the side. The the lord's gaze looked around toward the approaching cultists and the demons that were letting out repulsive shriek.

Two male cultists who were at the very front leaped toward the lord.

An aging man wearing shabby outfit and a middle-aged man wearing a worn-out suit. Each of them was armed with kitchen knife and something like a crowbar. From a glance the two men looked like a hobo and a salary man who was working in a black company. Their movement was the very picture of amateur just like their appearance suggested.

Although,

「GaAAAAAAAH」

「UaAAAAH」

They were screaming with their saliva flying everywhere. Their shining red pupils were shrinking and only madness could be felt from their attacking figure. In addition, their movement was terribly fast as though their flesh body's

limiter was cancelled.

Their condition that wouldn't be an exaggeration at all to be called as repulsive was enough to make those who faced them to falter.

In fact, Emily, Carl and others were shaking. Even the bodyguards who were used to fighting scene were holding their breath.

An unnatural sound of cutting wind came from behind such Emily and co.

The hazy phenomenon of something without shape exerting their influence to this world. The demons were trying to take Emily and others by surprise right now.

At the front were two cultists who had fallen into madness. At the back were demons.

It was a bit too much for the lord alone.

And so,

The abyss lord is infinitude  
「——Owarinaki Mugenkyou」 (TN: The Endless Dream Lord)

The lord formed handseal that had no particular meaning and chanted such line.

Instantly, clones materialized, two at the front of the lord, and one more behind.

The two at the front immediately passed beside the two men like a wind with low stance that was like crawling on earth.

Then, the cultists raised a scream 「Higih!？」 and tumbled down, sliding on the asphalt ground with their face.

Looking closer, blood was flowing from their hands and feet. The lord severed the tendon of their limbs while passing.

At the same time, the third clone leaped midair to behind Emily and co, and then the clone chanted a line while forming meaningless handseal as expected.

「My bad but, I won't let you touch even a single hair of their body——  
Surging dark flame of abyss  
Gouka Beni Senpu」 (TN: Hell Fire Crimson Whirlwind)

What was generated was a tornado of flame. It was deployed to protect Emily and co, the surrounding that was even darker than the darkness of night was illuminated with brilliant radiance.

When that happened, the unseen demon let out a shriek of death agony that pierced the ear, while agent Lyle and the other bodyguards raised shocked voice「Uoo!?!」, and then, Emily and Vanessa's talking voice of「How can more clones came out from Kousuke clone!? Don't tell me, the one in front of me is the real Kousuke? No, my sixth sense that is limited to Kousuke is saying that the Kousuke in front of me is a clone!」「Muh, that means.....the real body of Kousuke-san used it?」.

Carl and others recovered their mind that was in the verge of panic after seeing their daughter and the SOUSAKAN who were talking normally in this situation. It was something to be greatly thankful about.

In fact, the conjecture of Emily and Vanessa was correct.

As a general rule, Kousuke's clone body couldn't be produced except from the main body. The only exception was when he entered the Abyss Lord mode until the maximum depth of depth V (the depth started from I until V). In that depth he was able to produce clone from another clone.

In other words, the main body of Kousuke who realized the dangerous situation here from the report of his clone immediately used the limit break artifact—Don't ever use it only at me okay?— Last Zell Ver.4 to enter the state of depth V.

In fact, the main body at Britain was making a chuuni pose alone inside the classroom where there was only the unconscious Professor Littman other than him.

Illuminated by the tornado of hell fire that the Lord produced, the approaching cultists and the shadows of the demons flying around became visible.

There were around twenty cultists. The majority were foreigners wearing outfit like traveler. Some number of Japanese who were mixed among them consisted only with people who were the same like the two men just now, they would either looked worn-out somehow, with some looking abnormally thin or

very fat instead.

「What feeling are you all harboring, why did you fell..... My bad, but I have no time for careful consideration. Grovel on the ground before my absolute move of abyss.」

「As I thought! Kousuke, you are now the lord aren't you!? You completely turn into the lord! Do your best Kousuke! Keep a hold of yourself!」

‘Even if you are at depth V, do your best as Kousuke!’ Emily-chan cheered. Hearing that, ‘I wish you’ll be quiet for a bit right now.....’ the lord might be thinking something like that, but for now such thing was put aside.

Against the tornado of hell fire, a car came charging without faltering, rather it was suddenly accelerating as though the driver stepped on the gas pedal in full. The lord made the clones that were produced from another clone to run while sending telepathy to his comrades.

「Everyone, it is I.」

『Kousuke!?!』

『Endo-kun!』

『Abysssss! Shinji is weeping now after cackling like that! He is squatting and won't move even though he is attacked! His emotion is too unstable it's seriously scaryyyyy! Do something!』

With the single line of “It is I”, his comrades instantly guessed that it was Kousuke. Communication came one after another. The abyss lord felt relieved that everyone was safe at present while letting out 「Fuh」 at the depth of his bond with his comrades.

But, right after that,

『.....Endo. Explain without screwing around.』

「YES, MA'AM!!!」

Even though he was in the state of Abyss Lord mode depth V, he immediately stood at attention and saluted toward the extremely cold voice that reached him!

The voice's owner was the first wife of the demon king, the vampire princess.

One of the clones stabbed the bonnet of the charging car with a short sword that was turned into light oaber while increasing the car's weight using gravity magic in addition. While giving a backward glance at the standing up car, the lord who returned into Kousuke for a bit despite in depth V began explaining.

「Listen to me everyone. The true identity of the attackers is demons and their worshippers.」

Kousuke omitted the detail and conveyed only what should be told right now briefly.

He said, the demon worshippers in the end were “human” who was in cooperative relationship with demon, they weren't monster by all means. However, their physical limiter was released, and even if they fainted there was a risk of them waking up from the demon's whisper, so be careful.

It would be to each of their own decision whether to kill or not, in case they wanted to render them powerless, it shouldn't be with a blow to vital point or the like to make them faint, but with binding that made them unable to move with certainty or driving them to a condition where their limbs became unusable.

In that case, there would be a risk of them committing suicide, so to prevent that, he recommended to break their jaw if possible. They would be healed by Shirasaki later anyway, so there won't be any problem to let loose and let them have it!

The invisible enemy——the demon was immune to physical attack, but magic power was effective against them. Even if it wasn't offensive magic, an object imbued with magic power would be effective too, and so on.

「It seems the enemy is targeting us returnee and the people related to us. Right now I'm in a state where I can produce clone without limit. Those who need reinforcement, tell me if you have place where I'm needed.」

His comrades sent voices 「Seriously!? You are in anti demon king mode right now huh!」 「Wait a second! Then why aren't you acting embarrassingly!? Now then, you are imposter right!? (by Yuuka)」 that sounded shocked in various



senses. At the same time, they also sent him the location of their house and the people close to them.

In the middle of their conversation, two more cars came rushing. He smashed the front glass and forcefully ejected the driver and neutralized them, severed the tendons of the cultists' limbs, and crunched their jaws while increasing the number of clones even now. He hurried those clones to head toward the places that his comrades were telling him.

Of course, he also sent some to his own house.

『.....Endo. In other words, if these sickening souls overflowing through the city, and the strange power interfering with human are taken care somehow, then it will be fine?』

「That's right. Though it seems they are coming to this world through medium like mirror or water, so I don't know how much it has to be taken care of.」

『.....I see. Got it. Endo, buy time. In five minutes——I'll bring them down.』

「Bri, bring them down? No, yes, roger.」

Perhaps something happened. Yue's rage was conveyed clearly even through the telepathy. He didn't know what she was planning to do in five more minutes, but it seemed the demons had seriously angered the demon king's first wife, the strongest vampire princess-sama.

In any case, Kousuke was making his clone launch a flying knee kick to the face of a high school girl who was swinging around a hatchet while yelling why it was only she alone who met unreasonable experience, while,

「Fuh. Then, I will enjoy this dance of death until <sup>her majesty the queen</sup> Yue's time limit.」

He made a turn while returning back into the lord nad declared fearlessly——

『Kou-niii! Seriously stop it with that! I'll sever our sibling relationship you know!?!』

『Kousukeeee-, what stupid thing you are saying there! Otou-san is at my limit already! Also the toilet's door is at the limit too! Stop screwing around!』

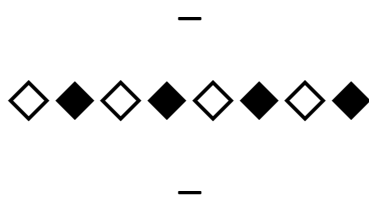
『How much do you think it will take to repair the window glass! Come home

quickly before the house got destroyed even more than this! Also, Sousuke went to a mixer so go get him!』

「Ah, yes, sorry.」

Right after that, he returned back to Kousuke. Even depth V seemed to be cooled down instantly with the serious words from his family.

It seemed his family was taking refuge together in the toilet. Kousuke turned off the mobile phone from where the voice of his parents and little sister came, then Kousuke called the number of his big brother while giving off an atmosphere of feeling like running away from there.



「De, demon or the like is seriously impossible you know~. Yuukaaa, Nanaaa~, you there? Talk to meeee」

『We are also busy here! You heard about the necessary thing from Endo already! Manage it somehow by yourself!』

『At worst, you can run around until Aby came! Do your best~』

Although there was light from building, for some reason the street lights all turned off. The one who was walking while shivering on a street that continued to the station where even passerby had vanished was Sugahara Taeko.

Her wavy brown hair that was braided was swaying in conjunction with her shivering. Tears were gathering in her large droopy eyes and they were going to spill out anytime now.

Her appearance was like a calm type gal, but she had quiet diligent nature. She was walking outside in this kind of place at nine o'clock at night was also because she was returning from her special short course cram school.

Such Taeko in fact was greatly weak against horror. Even when going to amusement park, she wouldn't enter haunted house no matter what even if she died. She was so weak of it until a level where even if her friends were going to

enter haunted house in amusement park with specially high tension, she would be seriously angry with serious face even if she had to break the fun atmosphere.

Thus, even though she was someone with experience of fighting god's apostle in another world, for Taeko this situation right now where repulsive voice and strange shadows were running around in the surrounding was a despairing situation.

——*GlilililH*

——*Humannn! Womaaan!!*

「Hiih!? Don't come hereee!!」

She raised a scream to drown the demon's shriek while lifting her hand and waved it to draw a circle.

By doing that, purplish red light surged and drew a cylinder track around Taeko. It was a sight like a rhythmic sports gymnastics athlete was dancing while whirling ribbon around her.

Right away, a shriek that was different from before echoed. That was the shriek of death agony from the demon attacking Taeko.

「Uu.....if something like this would happen, I'll bring my whip in my bag everywhere with meee.....」

Taeko dropped her forlorn gaze toward her hand. The thing that hand was holding which was destroying the demons was a thin chain. Stylish accessories were attached everywhere on it. It was actually the decorative belt that was wrapped around Taeko's mini skirt.

Taeko's vocation was "Whip Master". Not just whip, she possessed natural talent to freely manipulate string shaped thing.

Originally she possessed retractable whip artifact that possessed electric ability that was given to her by Heiligh Kingdom, but because it wasn't common sense to always bring whip even though she was just going to cram school, she didn't bring it right now.

In the off chance that she dropped her bag and the whip rolled out from it

when it would be bad if it was seen.....

For Taeko such disgraceful situation that was like a male student confessing about his porn book in school was absolutely intolerable.

Although, the whip was hung on her room's wall. Seeing the whip that obviously had seen a lot of use, Taeko's family.....especially her father and little brother were already creeped out.

Just in case, she was at least always bringing something string shaped on herself for when she was meeting forceful men picking up women or if she fell into an unexpected situation, so this time her effort bore fruit.

「AAAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

「Wai-, what is it!?!」

Even while looking like she was going to cry anytime, she somehow kept walking to reach the station. But a man suddenly leaped out from the side path. It was a foreigner youth with blond hair. For some reason he was saying things like 「With this, with this I'll be saved!」 while swinging around a steel pipe with crying face.

‘It's me who want to cry here, who cares of you getting saved or whatever’, Taeko thought inside her heart while swinging her chain.

The chain surged in the air like a living thing and entangled one of the man's foot splendidly. Taeko then pulled the chain with a jerk and the youth tumbled backward with one of his foot pulled up.

The steel pipe was thrown to the air while the back of his head hit the asphalt ground.

There, unnoticed another foreigner woman appeared from behind and charged toward Taeko while screaming. 「Die for me!」 She was also yelling another selfish line with what was likely Dutch language.

「Geez! Quit it already!」

When she snapped her wrist with a jerk, the chain entwined the falling steel pipe. At the same time, Taeko turned her body and swung her arm in large way. The steel pipe was boosted with the centrifugal force and turned into even

more wicked weapon.

*Huyo* The steel pipe caused the sound of howling wind and splendidly struck the woman's leg, making a vivid pulverized sound. Ignoring the collapsing woman, Taeko entwined the chain that was accelerated by centrifugal force and entangled it around her own neck.

And then when she twisted her body and the chain left from her neck, the steel pipe abruptly turn vertically from horizontally and hit the leg of the youth just now from above. The dull sound of bone breaking resounded once more, and the youth's scream also burst out at the same time.

Taeko's movement didn't stop. With a jerk she pulled the bounced up steel pipe closer. The steel pipe came flying toward Taeko with terrific momentum which she dodged by shifting half her body behind.

By doing that, the steel pipe dealt a critical hit on the face of a middle-aged man who was sneaking ut stealthily from a building's entrance. The middle aged man got his head thrown back with blood spurting from his nose. And then,

「——"Lightning Snake"!」

She pulled the trigger of magic that she chanted with small murmur.

The steel pipe and chain became tinged with lightning. Taeko heartily rotated it around herself. The steel pipe and chain that was like a round shield that was made from lightning scattered around the demons that were rapidly approaching her once more.

She was like a fire dancer, continuously rotating chain freely to every direction. Her movement was like she was just doing something in her spare time, however, the chain didn't pause even for a moment and then the chain let go of the steel pipe toward the middle-aged man who was bleeding from the nose.

The steel pipe flew with terrific speed and accurately pulverized the knee of the middle-aged man who was right about to stand up to charge forward once more.

「Yuukaaa, Nanaa~」

Taeko called to her friends with a pathetic voice. But, her attack was merciless, and looking at the disastrous scene around her.....the gap was just too striking. Yuuka and Nana didn't really respond to her, perhaps because they understood this or perhaps because they were simply busy with taking care of themselves.

With her friend not responding and no more enemy showing up, Taeko casually continued to launch attack to all direction to not give any opening for anything to approach.....Taeko's heart wouldn't feel at ease without doing that.

Finally Taeko became tearful.....no, it had gone past that. Her eyes were gradually turning glassy. If someone saw her from the side, they might muttered 「Oh, Taeko's condition is.....」.

But, perhaps such strange state of her became an opening.....

*Kara kara kara-*, a strange sound resounded.

Taeko was taken aback and returned to her senses and turned her eyes toward the sound. That was a hand mirror that was rolling under her feet. Looking closer, the woman who seemed to be a Dutch whose foot was smashed just now had her hand stretched out with a crazy smile on her face.

It seemed she had just thrown her hand-mirror.

「Eh, what is.....ah!?!」

The moment she recalled what the lord had said, it was already too late.

The next moment, an invisible impact surged from the hand-mirror below.

「Uguh」

Taeko was sent flying with choked voice from the impact hitting her stomach. Because she immediately blocked with her arms, she was able to soften the impact somewhat, but her body flew for a few meter and her back hit the ground.

She rolled once and stood on her knee, but her barrier that she made from rotating chain was already gone. Further impact came from the side as though it had been waiting for that.

「Uah」

Taeko was sent flying once more and rolled on the ground. Her physical spec that was trained in another world still had spare strength left, but this was really bad with her balance completely broken like this.

As expected, a fat man charging from the street leaped toward Taeko.

「Fuuuh, fuuuh!!」

「Wai-, noo-, disgusting」

The fat man took mount position above Taeko and he stared hard at her with bloodshot eyes. Furthermore sweat was dripping from him, causing Taeko to spew venom spontaneously.

Perhaps the man was unable to stomach that attitude, because his face distorted uglily and he lifted up the screwdriver he was holding in reverse grip.

Taeko's expression paled. The man's weight must be double of Taeko. In the first place, although she was training in another world but her physical strength itself was low. Taeko's specialty was in dexterity and agility. Even though she could struggle and got away, she had no strength to brush aside the man with one hit.

(Idiot meeeee— . I'm too carelessss-! Aaah, geeez!!)

Although the opponents were invisible something, or human with their limiter cancelled, and also the horror situation that she was not good with, she couldn't deny that she had been careless. Taeko gritted her teeth with the resolve to take the hit and endured the pain——

At that moment, *Bang bang* dry bursting sound echoed.

(Eh? Nagumo-kun?)

The dry sound was gunshot. And then, not just Taeko, for the returnees speaking of gunshot would mean Hajime.

Taeko blinked and ahead of her gaze, the fat man's shoulders were scattering blood, at the same time, the screwdriver fell down. Perhaps even the man's nerves got injured, both his arms were hanging down limply. If the shooter was aiming for that, then their skill must be quite something.

Right after that, a really frivolous tone of a male resounded.

「Miss, are you okay, whoops!」

A sharp kick that gave the sound of cutting wind hit the side of the fat man's head. The power behind the kick seemed to be quite powerful, because the fat man was sent flying with his eyes rolling up. There, *bang* one more gunshot sounded. The man's knee was shoot through.

「When I rushed here from hearing a scream.....what a coincidence this is. —『Chief. I encountered returnee no. 18, miss Sugawara Taeko. I'm in battle at present』」

『Although I sent you there with that prediction in mind, it's godsend that the person is a returnee herself. Explain your identity to her and ask for her cooperation. Then join us again here as soon as possible.』

「Yes, ma'am.」

The man talked through the radio on his ear before he asked the dumbfounded Taeko.

「Eerr, who?」

「Oops, Ms. Taeko. Pardon my rudeness. I——」

The man was about to introduce himself. However, right after that he was sent flying to right behind.

Surely it was a demon attacking him. But, even though the man was sent flying, he rallied his stance midair like a cat. It seemed the moment the impact hit him, he jumped backward by himself and softened the impact. Even if he had been preparing himself beforehand, it was still an astounding reflex.

Furthermore, he backflipped with his hand at the same time with his landing and leaped backward. Right after that, the asphalt where he was just at a moment ago burst.

「So, something like this is the specialty of Aby-san! I'm anti human specialist you know!?!」

Even while complaining, he transitioned from backflip to side leap with flowing motion. The air at the place where he was standing just now was shaking again.



「Ms. Taeko! I'm an agent of Britain national security bureau, Allen Parker! Aby-san's fr-i-e-nd! For sure! No, it won't be an exaggeration even if I say that I'm his bosom friend! No, really! It's not a lie! It's really unthinkable for me to lie! That's why help me please!」

「Eh, ah, understood? Eerr, but, the enemy's figure is.....」

「Please attack at the area around my right at count three!」

The man——Allen's movement changed. Previously his movement had sharpness to keep dodging and parrying the invisible enemy's attack, but now it slightly dulled. With a building behind him, and his left side filled with power pole, he staggered looking as though his foot slipped.

「——"Lightning Snake"!」

Taeko swung her chain toward the place that Allen said in a timing just as she was told. By doing that, a demon's scream resounded in the air.

「Hi, hiih. A chain!? With lightning!? What brutal attack even though she is a pretty girl!? It's too scary! Please absolutely don't hit me!」

Allen screamed half crying seeing the chain of lightning cleaving the wind right beside him.

But, his movement didn't falter at all. He splendidly guided the demon's movement and gave Taeko a chance to attack while taking on the cultists that were arriving further to not get closer to Taeko so that she was protected and could concentrate solely toward the demon.

Allen was sliding while tackling the opponent's foot, and then breaking it while standing up without any pause. Then he accurately shot through the legs of another man. And right after that he performed cartwheel with one hand right away while shooting the legs of different cultist. Next while being upside down, he used his legs to pin the neck of another different cultist who was rushing toward him and then he twisted his body and threw the cultist's head on the ground.

「Noooo!? Just now, it grazed me you know!? Ms. Taeko! Really be careful!」

「.....」

*Hyun hyun*, Taeko's chain was cleaving through the wind. Its sharpness was increasing remarkably compared to when she was fighting alone before this. She was mowing down at her surrounding while sending attack accurately to Allen's surrounding when the timing was right.

Even Allen's movement was increasingly matching her rhythm little by little and her aim was increasing in accuracy.

「Hih!? Why did the chain go through below my crotch just now!? You can attack normally right!？」

「.....」

Because she wasn't alone anymore, her body that was stiff due to the horror situation relaxed.

「Nowah!? Just now, aren't you planning to hit me with that!? Crackle, the crackle sound is ringing! At my neck!」

「.....」

Taeko's feeling tensed because she almost got seriously injured. Her concentration heightened further.

「Ah!? Just now, it hit! It hit me! Ms. Taeko! It's fine to not be that close! Increase the safety margin a bit——ah!? Just right after I said that! Ah!? Wai-, can you hear me!? Ms. Tae——ah!？」

「.....Fufu.」

Taeko's expression vaguely looked like she was having fun, as though she was in a world of her own.

All her classmates who saw Taeko swinging her whip and displayed her stuff with it knew.

She looked like a calm type gal, however at her root she was diligent. She was also a firm person who mediated Nana who had the tendency to get too high-spirited and Yuuka who was unable to be honest when it matter, but actually——

sadist

She was a hidden S.

Yes, Taeko-san whose fetish that was normally hidden got stimulated. The sharpness of her attack was increasing following her uplifted feeling.

By the way, Taeko's father was creeped out when she saw the whip wasn't from imagining his daughter's fetish. It was because he was thinking 「Taekoo, *so you too.....*」, while the figure of his wife——Taeko's mother surfaced in his mind.

Allen's combat skill that neutralized the cultists and toyed with the demons was just as expected from one of the hit man group that was a country's trump card.

His abundant fighting experience and natural combat sense dragged in even the demons into his own tactic.

But, the person himself was teary eyed. He was desperately running around while sometimes making pathetic expression, sometimes screaming, and sometimes complaining.

Seeing such hopeless agent-san who always became a laughing stock even though he was actually amazing, and who kept lamenting all year round how he was unable to make a girlfriend, the hidden S Taeko-san was.....

「.....Cute」

She was exposing an expression that a cat would make when it found a mouse while letting slip a comment that would surely make Yuuka and Nana creeped out for sure if they were here.

—

—

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I'm sorry that this week it also feel half-baked.

My work writing volume 8 will be finished with just a bit more!

I think next week the story can advance with nice tempo, so please spare me this week with something like this.

Also, the true identity of the sender of the letter that Myuu handed to Allen in the previous Christmas project, well, it was her.

In the end, will it develop until romance, or else will it end incompletely.....

Either way, Allen is completely not fated with 「female who will be kind to me」!

Also, this arc doesn't end with 10 chapters.

Sorry for this too.

# Arifureta Chapter 311

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 The Respective Battle Middle

—

「Uoii! Shinji-kuuunn!? Won't you revive soon!?」

A voice of someone at his wits' end was resounding in a corner of the back alley that was away from a shopping district's main street. It was Saitou Yoshiki.

Right beside him, there was also a figure sitting on the middle of the alley while hugging his legs and burying his face on his knee, weeping *hics hics*. It was Nakano Shinji.

From the bottom of his heart Yoshiki thought, 「This guy, is seriously annoying.....」.

After all, right now they were in the middle of assault from multiple humans who clearly weren't normal and unseen enemy——the so called demon. It was reasonable for Yoshiki to want Shinji to stand up right away and escape or fight. Shinji's figure that was too unsightly made him started to think that perhaps he should just leave him behind.

Although,

(Well, it's impossible though.)

Yoshiki smiled wryly while firing wind cannon to a foreign man that was attacking by swing metal bat.

The invisible wind ball accurately hit the man's legs, snapping both his legs to

the wrong direction.

Furthermore, the moment he felt unnatural flow of wind behind him, Yoshiki swung his arm while turning around as though he was unsheathing a katana.

「——”Wind Blade”!」

By doing that, a sharp blade of wind flew following the trajectory of his arm, and right after that a repulsive shriek echoed.

Yoshiki ran his gaze alertly at the surrounding while sighin when he saw Shinji who was still weeping. However, he was unable to abandon him. He didn't even think to do it.

Shadow ran on the wall. He sent wind blade flying there. ....He didn't hear the shriek of death agony.

Missed, he thought. At that time the wind above his head shook.

Without delay, he kicked the sitting Shinji flying while he himself backed away.

「——”Wind Wall”!」

He felt multiple undulation of wind around him, at the same time he deployed wind barrier that blew to all direction.

——i////////-!!

A voice that sounded irritated resounded.

「Oi, Shinji! Are you okay!?!」

「Shinji is.....not okay.」

「Certainly you doesn't sound okay at all huh, goddamn it!」

Shinji rolled on the ground from the kick's momentum, and then he returned back to sitting while hugging his knees which looked artistic in a sense. Yoshiki's expression was greatly twitching seeing that.

Really, he was thinking 「This useless bastard, just what is he doing」, but as expected abandoning him wasn't an option.

.....He had already, lost two friends. In the other world.

Furthermore one of them, Kondou Reiichi was killed by the betrayal of none other than that other friend——the man called Hiyama Daisuke.

He wondered if it was only him who thought of that person as friend.

Certainly, their usual action in the past wasn't something praiseworthy. They were, so to speak a gathering of delinquents.

But, was their relationship, their life so light that it could be so easily sacrificed in order to fulfill one's own desire.....

There was also a time when he shut himself together with Shinji in a room inside the palace, holding their head and unable to move because of how cornered their mind was.

That was why, Saitou Yoshiki was,

「There ain't no way, I'll lose even more friend than this!」

In a “fight where it was possible to lose” something, he absolutely wouldn't draw back. That will of his was firm and sharp.

The wind of Yoshiki whose vocation was “Wind Mage” was filled with his will and it was fired with even more sharpness. With his ability “Wind Perception”, he could sense the flow of wind with even more sensitivity. Even an invisible enemy couldn't escape from the sharp sense of Yoshiki who was protecting his friend.

Although,

「Nowah!? That's dangerous! Shinji! You, just now you almost got stabbed by a beautiful blond haired miss you know!? Did you notice!？」

Yoshiki focused too much on the demon's movement that he reacted lately to a foreigner woman who was approaching from the alley's darkness.

The knife that the woman was holding had its tip almost reached toward the mentally unstable Shinji who weeping. Yoshiki felt cold sweat drenching his body.

The wind pebble that he fired with the fastest speed because it was the basic of the basic magic barely made it in time, but if he was slower just by a moment, then perhaps a knife would be growing bloodily on Shinji's head.

——GYAAAAAAAAA

——*Strengthhh! Hand over, your streeength!!*

「This rotten world is ending! The world is ending! Feel honored that you can become the cornerstone for that!」

「You are living without any worry and inconvenience aren't youuu!? That's just unfaiiir!!」

Voice of desire that was hard to describe resounded from here and there. Man and woman, young and old appeared one after another with bloodshot eyes.

「Hahah. ....Will my magic power, hold?」

The number of enemy caused Yoshiki's cheeks to twitch with cold sweat. He thought that if only he at least carried his artifact——a stiletto that possessed immense support ability in regard to wind element magic, but today he was only wandering in the city.

Or rather, frankly speaking his objective was to hit on girl. Even though he was going to hit on girl, carrying a stiletto around would be completely bad. Normally he would get reported to police.

Inside his heart he was screaming 「Help me right away, Abyss!」. It was then, 「.....Blonde haired, miss?」

Suddenly, there was a muttering voice.

Yoshiki was taken aback and turned his gaze to the side. There Shinji was unexpectedly looking up!

「Shinji! You finally return to your sanity!?!」

「.....Hey, Yoshiki. Where is the blonde haired miss?」

「Shit-, you still ain't sane huh-」

A wind bullet to vent his anger! It shot through the leg of a grandpa holding a long sword that he got from who know where! Did this grandpa just come back from Asakusa? When he visited there before, there was a sword that looked really similar decorating one of the shop there. Why did the grandpa



intentionally choose that kind of weapon.....the grandpa's madness could be felt from it.

Yoshiki dealt with the advancing enemies slightly somewhat out of frustration. Shinji sent a brief glance at such Yoshiki before looking around. And then, he found a blonde haired miss reaching out her hand toward him.

With bloodshot eyes that were shining red abnormally, she was exposing an evil face that was just like Hannya noh mask while reaching out a hand that was holding a knife!

「——trayed」

「What!? Just now, did you say something!?!」

Shinji looked down, and leaked out a small voice that was unclear.

Yoshiki was launched to the sky while screaming 「Gyaa~」, however he immediately killed the demon with striking wind & wind blade while falling. Shinji didn't even register that in his sight while making words one more time that sounded clear this time.

「My feeling is betrayed!」

「You, what are you saying!?!」

Shinji-kun stood up. From weeping, changing into anger. He was shedding tears like waterfall while glaring back at the mad blonde haired miss with mad crying face.

「Yoshiki! I'm sad!」

「Yeah, I'm also sad to have friend with screwed head!」

Yoshiki activated whirling wind to surround him and his screwed up friend. Yoshiki blew away all the demons trying to squash them with number while screaming back angrily at Shinji.

「For the first time in my life, I succeeded at hitting on girl. I was really happy from my heart. I was holding hope from my heart that I might be able to get a college student girlfriend! Because, she was all over me with her body pressing on me mon! When I invited her to karaoke, she said okay with a smile mon! She even gave me her contact number mon! No way, this is jackpot! That was what I

thought mon!」 (TN: Sometime in light novel or anime, girl would add 'mon' to their sentence when they are sulking or pleading cutely)

「That's well, I agree. But, stop adding "mon" at the end of your sentence. I'm going to cut my friendship with you y'know.」

To say the truth, Yoshiki and Shinji's effort in picking up girl more or less succeeded. They saw a single girl college student who looked cute standing alone, so they tried calling out to her thinking that they got nothing to lose.

And when they did that, the girl said that her friend cancelled their appointment at the last minute, so she was wondering what to do now, and then she accepted Shinji's invitation.

'God hasn't forsaken me! Demon king! Lord! Today I will stand on the same stage like you guys!' That was what Shinji thought.

Well, he almost got stabbed the moment he entered a back alley with that girl though.

In other words, the girl was a cultist.

In proportion with the great happiness that he felt, the despair was also equally great. It was to the degree that his mind's equilibrium collapsed when the demon took advantage of the opening and whispered to him.

「I who am like the main character of a tragedy drama, don't you think such me is pitiful?」

「Yeah, now I'm thinking that your head is really pitiful just so you know.」

「And yet, that blonde haired miss, she tried to finish off me who is like this! This is too much!」

「I feel like the meaning of the finishing off you say isn't really right though.....」

「These people, every last one of them is playing with my pure heart!」

「The one who said 『For now, let's just call out a lot to all the girls. Surely we will land a jackpot if attempt a lot right?』 before we went to hit on girl was you yeah? Don't you remember? Oi, the self-proclaimed pure hearted man.」

Yoshiki sent a scornful stare to Shinji who was increasingly stamping his feet in frustration while dispelling the whirlwind. At the same time he sent the cultists leaping on them flying with a squall onto the building and electric pole.

「But, but even so, a main character surpass the tragedy and become strong.」

「Ah, you aren't listening to me huh?」

「The vicious treatment of many women, and the whisper of the demon who is telling me to surrender myself to desire are inviting me to a new front.」

「Certainly, it really feel like a new front. The you right now is unprecedentedly disgusting.」

Yoshiki was slowly taking distance from Shinji who was making a fearless smile (?) with 'ehe eheh' voice. Perhaps even his friendship could only go this far. His resolve from the other world almost crumbled.

「——"Flame Fortress"!!」

Shinji whose vocation was "Flame Mage" instantly created a wall of flame. The demons who seemed to be approaching shrieked.

The brilliantly blazing flame drove away the darkness, and covered the advancing Shinji with a gloom.

Shinji looked over his shoulder to Yoshiki who was watching him dumbfounded from behind.

「Yoshiki, I've made you wait huh. I'm fine already.」

「No, you doesn't look fine at all. Rather you are worsening.」

Shinji-kun whose pure heart was toyed with and received the whisper by the demon wretchedly. Certainly, somehow various things felt wrong from him. His atmosphere was abnormal, like he had gone a full circle right to the perfect form.

The proof of that was how he wholly ignored Yoshiki's tsukkomi.

「Thinking back now, we already know about the summit. Yes, it's Nagumo. Our demon king who crawled up from the very bottom. The harem king!」

Shinji's Flame danced! Dancing like a butterfly, and stinging like a bee! If the

demon king heard his words just now, he would surely get shot!

「Even after tasting despair, we can crawl back up. Into that paradise-like world.」

「I think it's better to not lump the despair that Nagumo tasted and your despair from being unable to get girlfriend together you know?」

「That's why, we were mistaken. It's no good if we are satisfied with just hitting on girl or picking up any kind of girl around there! We have to aim high! Aiming at the paradise! The world where we are surrounded by the ideal girls!」

——Yoshiki, I've decided

Shinji said with a resolved expression. Yoshiki's gaze were turned alternately to Shinji who was looking back to him and the whirling air behind Shinji. He pointed his finger and said 「Shinji! Look in front of you! Front!」 but.....

「Someday, I'll hold a shotgun wedding with idol——」

Shinji vanished. He who received the whisper from demon and got unbound into strange direction was sent flying physically by demon and flew to the other side of a far away building.

The wind was telling him, of the raw sound of *gusha-*, and the pig-like scream of 「Pigiih」.

With the specs of returnee, it seemed his life wasn't in danger, but there was no doubt that he got broken bones at least. Shinji-kun was cornered into a despairing situation really naturally.

The flame vanished and the demons and cultists attacked once more. For Yoshiki there was no problem to endure it using his sensitivity of the wind's movement, but in the end, could he protect Shinji from the unseen devils.....

For now, while defeating the enemies before him Yoshiki was,

「This might be it already for Shinji! Abysssss! Seriously hurrrrrrry!」

He called toward the lord desperately through the telepathy.

Also, twenty seconds after that, a clone appeared by using gravity magic to perform pseudo flight and safely rescued Shinji. Shinji harbored a new objective

in his heart.

—



—

「A, are you all listening? I don't know what happened, but first let's calm down and talk with each other. I am a consultant. Well, that's the business I'm running but.....depending on the situation, I believe I also can become enough strength for your life planning too.」

There was an amazingly handsome man with intelligent look, sweating a lot like waterfall while pushing up his glasses repeatedly. Perhaps he got foreigner blood mixed in him, because he had smooth brown hair and finely chiseled features despite being Japanese. He was a man around his early thirty.

Though in fact, he was already 45 years old.

「O, Otou-san. No matter how I look, I don't think this is a situation that can be resolved somehow by talking you know?」

「Dear. Your legs are shaking like a newly born fawn you know? Don't force yourself and back away.」

The one clinging on the waist of that handsome man while trembling with teary eyes was a super beautiful girl with her hair in ponytail. From her slightly young appearance, her age was about the age of a middle school student. She had long and slender limbs and thin waist, however her breast was brutal in contrast with her appearance.

Beside the trembling man and girl was a beautiful woman who was like a model, standing boldly while tapping a metal bat on her shoulder even though she was sweating coldly.....long and soft black hair, droopy looking eyes, and yet she gave an impression like a gentle big sister, but the fighting spirit residing in her eyes and her familiarity in holding the metal bat displayed a terrific gap.

It was the very picture of a family of beautiful man and woman.

Ahead of their gaze, there were countless intruders banging on an unseen wall as though they were doing pantomime.

When they were enjoying happy family conversation, the window of the living room suddenly broke and several people came attacking.

The son who went into a trip begged his friend to set up “a barrier that isolated the space” for the sake of his family that he left behind. That barrier was protecting the family but.....

——aAAAAAAAAAAAA

「Yaaah, I can hear it again! There is absolutely something here!」

Shadows that were running on the wall of the living room. And then numerous furniture that were suddenly sent flying.

It seemed the unseen existences also couldn't breakthrough the barrier, however, for them who were just normal people, this situation was cornering their mind greatly.

The sight of unseen attack causing ripple to spread on the barrier many times was also really bad for their heart.

But, at that time the beautiful girl's smartphone rang. She was taken aback and accepted the call, right at that moment,

『Mizuki-chan. This is Shizuku, are you all right over there?』

「ONEeEEEEEEEE-SAMAaAAAAAAAA-!!」

A voice that was filled with sob and joy resounded. From the other side of the smart phone, a groaning voice 「Uh」 due to receiving damage in the eardrum could be heard.

『Err, calm down Mitsuki-chan. We understand the situation, and the artifact that Kouki left behind won't be breached that easily.』

「Ye, yes, Oneesama. But, the strangeness is inside our house.....Oneesama, can't you come here?」

Someone who their daughter called with “Oneesama”. The handsome man and beautiful woman showed a joyful look, knowing that there it could only be one person.

These people who knew well about Shizuku-oneesama was indeed, Kouki's

family. The people of Amanogawa family.

The father who worked in management consultancy, who looked intelligent at the outside but a chicken in the inside——Amanogawa Seiji. Then the mother who was a former yankee who once also climbed her way to the top, and now working as an editor in model magazine——Miya. And then, Kouki's little sister who even had fan club until the neighborhood middle school——Mitsuki.

Because she had known Shizuku since her childhood and could trust her more than anyone, and they also knew about her real strength, Mitsuki implored to Shizuku to come save them.

By no means she merely wanted to meet Shizuku. 'If I use this situation, I'll be able to hug Oneesama tightly and sniff her all over!' was something that she didn't think at all.

Even if she was the originator of Soul Sisters, even if she actually loved Shizuku so much that she refused all the confessions that she received in the amount of more than ten per month from elementary school students until even middle-aged man, that she even clearly refused when scouted to enter entertainment industry when walking in the city because of a reason of 「My time together with Oneesama will decrease」, that she even swore an oath that some day she would absolutely obliterate her sworn enemy “Nagumo-senpai” who actually shaved off her 「time together with Oneesama」!

By no means she was calling her Oneesama to come here for the sake of her own desire!

But.....

『I'm sorry. My home is also attacked.....well, I'm not worried about them at all though.....anyway, I think the situation there will be settled before I can go there, so don't worry.』

「GODDAMN-!!」

The little sister-chan's yell that no one in her school had never heard. Without a doubt, she was inheriting the blood of her mother the former yankee and former boss. Kouki's kindness must be inherited from his father.

Kind, ephemeral, and beautiful like a moon. Her bearing was like a noble

daughter who was naïve about the world. Mitsuki-chan who was famed as a decorous beauty even in the neighborhood persisted further. (TN: The 'tsuki' in the name Mitsuki used the kanji of moon.)

「Bu, buuut, Onee-samaa. I'm, really scared.....I want Oneesama to be at my side——」

‘I want you at my side!’, Mitsuki-chan was about to let out an earnestly pleading voice that sounded really fragile which would stimulate one’s desire to protect, but.....

「DORASSHAAAAAAAAA-!! Uncle-, auntie-, Mitsuki! You all safe!?!」

A wolfman sent the cultists flying while appearing! Mitsuki-chan’s earnest desire was also sent flying!

「Ryu, Ryutaro-kun! You came for us!?!」

「Ou! It’s a relieve that the barrier is working properly. Well, It’s Nagumo’s artifact, it ain’t possible for it to be a defect!」

Ryutaro vigorously threw and threw away the cultists present.....he was virtually breaking their limbs and threw them away. Ryutaro who was rushing here as reinforcement warped his mouth into a wicked look with his Mode Werewolf while answering.

The overwhelming battle unfolding outside the barrier caused Miya to be in admiration. Even so she asked worriedly.

「Ryu-chan, is your house all right?」

「Aa, whether it was the bunches with screw looses and even the so called demon there were all taken care off. There is also barrier there, so it’s all right! Even if something happen I can go back right away!」

The Amanogawa house and Sakagami house were at walking distance from each other that could be traveled by walking normally for three minutes. With his Mode Werewolf that was specialized for speed, he could go there in less than twenty seconds.

In addition, his guard dog Karashio and the neighbor old man Fuji were also there, so there was no worry if the opponent was human. The battle strength of



Karashio whose sense of rivalry was blazing due to his Mode Werewolf and old man Fuji's art of fire extinguisher were increasing in sharpness as the year passed.

Ryutaro intentionally rushed here to remove the anxiety of Seiji and his family as fast as possible. Seiji and Miya sighed in relieve while forming a smile.....

「Oi, Ryu-nii. Meet me at the backyard later.」

「!？」

Mode Werewolf's eyes opened wide in surprise. Ryutaro had been acquainted with Mitsuki since she was born, so he knew really well of her true self. Him getting taken to the backyard by her wasn't just an occurrence of merely once or twice. She was extremely terrifying.

「N, no, it's a bit impossible. Look, it's that-, after this, there are other places that I gotta go to right a——」

「aAA?」

It was an evil face that Mtsuki-chan would never show in front of her beloved Onesama and the Onii-chan who she liked very much.

Ryu-nii couldn't win against Mitsuki since the past. He wanted to be spared from getting his fur shaved in the backyard again. And so, he punched a demon flying using his instinct while desperately thinking up a reason to withdraw.....

「Suzu! She is stark naked right now! I've gotta go there right away!」

『!？』

Thought of shock and shame was broadcasted from the emergency telepathic channel that was in open state.

Most likely Ryutaro meant 'Suzu was attacked when she was defenseless while in a bath, I'm worried about her so I want to rush there quickly!' when he said that, but heard from the side, it also could be heard to sound like 'Before Suzu can wear her clothes again I want to pay respect to her naked body no matter what!'.  
As expected,

『Sakagami, you bastard just fall into hell together with the demon.』

『I agree completely with Atsushi. This is why someone with girlfriend is just... think about the situation right now.』

『Die, Sakagami.』

『Sakagami, Yuuka here. As expected I don't think such thing is not suitable right now. Suzu's shame is broadcasted really clearly here.』

『Suzu-chan! You're your clothes quickly! Put up the barrier! The big bad wolf is coming there!』

『Is it because of the Mode Werewolf? What Tsuji said is really right on the spot huh.』

Telepathy came from the comrades one after another.

And then,

『Ryu, Ryu-kun you pervert! What are you yelling in open communication like this! I don't know you anymore!』

「Gofuh」

The werewolf fell on his knees. At the same time, a demon's uppercut burst into action.

The werewolf danced in the sky. It was a truly beautiful parabolic arc.

After that, the werewolf who became the sandbag of the demons consulted with the lord who came rushing 「What should I do to put her back in good mood?」 with a serious face.

—



—

*Gatan-gatan-*, inside a train that was shaking rhythmically.

Two female high school students were sitting side by side in the middle of the train's carriage. One was looking down while pushing out her hand to the front. The other one was folding her legs while putting both her hands behind her

head.

While their surrounding was surrounded by countless passengers with bloodshot eyes.

「This is horror isn't it~」

「Mao, this isn't the time to speak so carefree like that. What are we going to do now? I have aptitude for light element magic but, barrier isn't my specialty you know?」

The one who as laughing 'tahaha~' while saying her impression with light tone that didn't match the situation was Yoshino Mao. And then, the girl beside her who was putting up barrier while sweating coldly was Tsuji Ayako.

Mao's tone and attitude were always unserious. She brushed up her short hair in respond to Ayako's words while laughing 'haha~' that didn't sound serious at all as expected.

「Now now, surely it will be fine. Look, I'm also strengthening the barrier using my bestowal magic.」

Mao's vocation was "Bestowal Mage". She possessed genius talent in magic of bestowal type that was a support magic. Even now she was strengthening the effect of lightl element middle class barrier magic "Holy Wall" that Ayako deployed using her light element bestowal magic "Enveloping Light".

On the other hand, Ayako's vocation was "Healing Master", so barrier art wasn't her specialty. She also could only use the lower version of "Sacred Severance" as magic to protect from all direction.

The phrase of demon and the horror situation just now.

After playing with Kentarou and Juugo, Ayako set out to go home, getting shaken inside train like this together with Mao, when suddenly the lighting inside the carriage was flickering eerily. Then all the passengers were staring on them when they noticed.

And then, while Ayako was bewildered 「Eh? Wha, what?」, a shriek she had never heard before that caused uneasiness resounded, and the passengers also attacked them.

Her immediate reaction that was trained in the other world let her deployed a barrier in time, but both Ayako and Mao were completely rearguard. They were different with a certain bugged Hannya who although she was a Healing Master, yandere power with her wholeheartedness she could even use barrier type magic and binding type magic that weren't inferior even to those with vocation that was specialized for those magic, and on top of that she was even able to skillfully use the power of god's apostle.

Because of that, even Ayako who possessed experience of fighting in war felt quite the strain on her mind in this situation right now.....

And then the final blow came.

*Don-*, the barrier shook. Shrieks and the abusive language of the cultists reverberated. Blood was scattered from the fists of the cultists who were punching too much. The barrier became stickily marked with bloodstain. There were also cultists who were slapping with their palm, so countless red hand marks were pasted.

It was thoroughly a horror.

With teary eyes, Ayako averted her gaze with all her strength from a man on the other side of the barrier whose gaze suddenly almost met hers. She looked down so that her gaze wouldn't meet anybody's gaze.

「I, if something like this would happen, I would stay together with Kentarou-kun for a bit longer.....」

「Hou, hee, “with Kentarou-kun” you say? So Nagayama-kun is unneeded?」

「That's not what I mean!」

Mao laughed teasingly. When Ryutaro was starting going out with Suzu, Nomura Kentarou was wholeheartedly resolved 'I cannot stay like this!', and finally he told Ayako who was the person on his mind since the time in Tortus 「Ho, how about we call each other by our first name!?!」.

It didn't need to be said what kind of evaluation the comrades gave when he didn't confess.

Although, at present Ayako was already satisfied with just that. In that point,

perhaps it should be said that they were similar people.....

But, at that time a whispering voice that froze their spine resounded at the back of Ayako and Mao's mind.

「Tsu——this is」

「Is this that demon's whisper thingy?」

It wasn't the whisper of sweet temptation. It was as though its objective was to turn people mad, a whisper that simply fan the uneasiness and anxiety. A voice that disturbed the mind.

For a moment the barrier shook unsteadily. Perhaps that was the aim, because a violent roar thundered while at the same time an impact shook the carriage where it felt like the train might go off the rail.

An unpleasant sound resounded in the shaking barrier. *Crack-, crack-*. It was the sound of fracturing.

「Fuwah!? Thi, this is bad-」

「Wawah, strengthening, strengthening!」

The two were panicked, but the demon's whisper that disturbed the mind made their concentration unfocused. Mao was making a twitching smile saying 「Why did I leave behind the artifact today of all day huhh」 while he immediately began to write magic circle for offense on her hand.

Although she had no aptitude for it, she would at least be able to use basic level attack magic if an improvised magic circle was prepared. Originally, Mao's artifact——a coin shaped pendant——also had magic circle for offense carved, so she didn't always have magic circle of attack magic ready other than that. Now she was regretting it.

「I wonder if we became too much of a peace idiot.」

「Don't speak easygoingly, reinforce the barierrrr~! It's going to get broken!」

The crack on the barrier became even bigger and the two went pale thinking 「Ah, this won't hold for even five minutes」, it was at that moment.

*Gashan-*, the window glass of the carriage was smashed apart. At the same

time a black silhouette flew in.

The man who smashed through the window of a running train splendidly took a safe landing and performed a turn on the spot! The man pushed up his sunglass sharply, and then took a pose like a warrior who would give punishment in the name of the moon!

「Tonight is a moonless night. That is my domain. For laying your hand on the friends of this abyss lord, at best it——」

「Endou-kun! We've been waiting! We are saveeed~!」

「Oh maaan, for a second there I was thinking what would happen. Endou-kun, take care of the rest~」

Tsuji Ayako, Yoshino Mao. Kousuke was once in the same party with them. For the two of them, no matter what Endo was still Endo.

The abyss lord got a bit loss for words 「Ri, right」 while making a turn once more to pull himself back together!

「Here I come-, bunch of the dead! Mine black flame of the abyss, taste it with that bo——」 「——"Enveloping Light"! Endo-kun, leave the support to us 'kay~」

The lord who loved things like darkness or abyss or blackness shined dazzlingly bright from the support of his reliable comrades.

The lord said 「Ri, right. My thanks」 while sharply pushing up his sunglass *Kui-!* to pull himself back together. He created even more clones while,

「Now, the abyss's——」

「Ah, Endo-kun. About our home——」

「Trampling down is starting!」

The lord didn't let the girl spoke till finish and began battle.

Of course, the clones of the lord were using pseudo flight to also head to Tsuji family house, Yoshino family house, and also to the houses of his comrades who were being away from their home, so there wasn't any problem.

In addition, in each house of the classmates, although it wasn't as good as in Amanogawa family house, the defensive measure of South Cloud Security——it

was a mysterious security firm that rapidly expanded in business recently in Tortus. The crime prevention goods were selling like crazy not just to the royalty, noble, or merchant, but even to the average household——was set up, so the people there wouldn't get harmed so easily.

And so, there was no need to deliberately say 「It's fine」 and explained. The lord was cutting off Mao's words wasn't the result of his indignation, that he wouldn't endure getting his fantastic introduction and speech hindered even more than this by her, not at all.

If he said that wasn't it then that wasn't it.

「Kukuku-. In front of the abyss that is spreading endlessly, even if you are a demon——」

「Ah, the enchantment magic almost run out..... Endou-kun, I'll send the next one now~. If you have any request for support magic then tell me okay!」

「.....」

The lord flashed shinily *pika*~ once more. There wasn't any darkness anymore at all. Right now the lord was really shining in a different meaning.

「Later let's show this to Kentaro-kun and others.」

Ayako who had recovered her calm lifted up her smartphone. A memory that might deal a lethal damage to *Kousuke* was taken.

The former party members with whom they once entrusted each other's life with seemed to be an opponent that was hard to deal with in various senses, whether it was for Kousuke, or for the lord.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

As I thought I couldn't write to the finish and split the chapter.

But, I have also written「The Respective Battle Bottom」to a certain degree, so although I cannot make a firm promise, I'm thinking to post one more chapter at tomorrow afternoon, or at 6 o'clock like usual.

※ The cover for volume 8 that will be on sale at 25 this month is published.



Volume 8 will be the arc of capturing teh sea of trees' great dungeon. The right image is the special version that has Drama CD accompaniment. The drama CD this time has Kaori participating, there is also a dialogue of Yue and Kaori with a mood like in the after story.

At any rate, as always, TakayaKi-sensei's illustration is godly!

Also, various side stories will also be available as special perk in each bookstore, so I will report it to you readers as soon as it's decided.

In the published version, other than correction and revision to the content,



there will also be extra story like usual, so I will be very happy if you reader can pick it up.

My best regards.

At the same time, manga version volume 3 and spin-off comic “Nichijou Volume 1” will also be launched.



They are the work that RoGa-sensei and Mori Misaki-sensei are handling.

I think that the end product is really amazing, so if it please you, please pick them up by all means!

My apologize for being so long winded.

Well then, please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

# Arifureta Chapter 312

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 The Respective Battle Bottom

—

This is consecutive update after Saturday.

A chapter before, 「The Respective Battle Middle」 was posted so,

For those who haven't read it, please start from there.

—

Around the same time when the returnees were attacked everywhere, in the Nagumo family house.....

All the attackers were groveling around the house.

With just one word, the demon king's first wife,

——Grovel

Ordered them to do so.

It was Yue-sama's "Divine Statement".

Whether they were demon or cultist, it was irrelevant. The sense of invincibility was absurd.

In a manner of speaking, Nagumo family house was the demon king castle, so although in a glance it looked like a single house that was somewhat splendid in a residential area, the inside was a completely different thing.

A type of defensive barrier that automatically detected every kind of attack as well as infiltration was prepared in five, six layers with varying form. In case those layers were penetrated, an interception system that was also automatic would attack with heavy weapons, magic, and swarms of grim reapers.

Even if someone was lucky and managed to step inside the house, the moment they stepped in, a teleportation device would activate and the intruder would be forcefully moved to an underground prison that doubled as a battle field that was set up deep inside mountain. (With setting change it was possible to send only the mind to a dungeon of game world)

In case it was a long range attack——for example, even if a nuclear missile was fired, it would surely become a nightmarish sight where the surrounding became empty lot while only Nagumo family house would still stand unharmed.

It was a house that was truly should be called as an impregnable fortress.

Who in the world the attackers could possibly be? What kind of existence the unseen enemy that was wafting off strange aura was?

Yue asked those things from Kousuke through telepathy, but just slightly before that,

「Excuse me for coming so late at nightttttttt-」

Suddenly, the space in the living room distorted. From the opened “gate”, Aiko rolled *roll roll* out. She also didn’t forget to give greeting as befitting a full member of society.

Aiko went along the momentum of her rolling and stopped into a beautiful kowtow, then she said 「eih」while twisting the “Gate Key” that Hajime specially gifted to her which could directly connect to Nagumo family house. After that, the arm of the cultist who was reaching out his hand from the “gate” exactly at that timing was.....

*Plop* It fell on the living room.

Because the gate closed, the arm that straddled through space was bisected it seemed.

It appeared, Aiko was going to a convenience store. Her hand was holding the

bag of a certain convenience store and a box of Yukimi Daofuku was peeking out from it. She was attacked while going home and panickedly escaped to Nagumo house. Only the Yukimi Daofuku that she wouldn't let go no matter what. (TN: Seems like it's a brand of manju snack or something in Japan.)

「Yue-oneechan. Someone's hand is.....」

「.....Nn. There is no such thing.」

*Snap* A single finger snap resounded. The “hand” was swallowed by blue flame, together with the slowly oozing out blood. it vanished in the blink of eye without even leaving behind ash. Annihilation by flame for filth for the sake of Myuu's cultivation of aesthetic sensibility.

「I'm sorry to visit suddenly. For some reason people who give off bad feeling attacked me.」

「Ai-chan-sensei, it's gret that you are safe. Just now we were also attacked. There are quite a lot of people outside.」

「Eh? There are that many suicidal people out there?」

Aiko's statement flew out so naturally in respond to Shizuku's words, but it spoke volumes about her opinion toward Nagumo family house.

Although, it seemed there was no time to sort out the situation with each other leisurely.

Right after that, the emergency telepathies from the classmates were broadcasted to the whole group, and at the same time, the barrier devices that were set up in Shuu's company, Sumire's workplace, Shirasaki family house, and then Hatayama family house raised the alarmed that notified their activation.

And then,

『Everyone, it is I.』

The voice of the abyss lord too.

In this kind of emergency, what do you mean “It is I”, Yue-sama thought with vein pulsating on her forehead.

「.....Endo. Explain without screwing around.」

It seemed the voice of extreme coldness returned the lord back to Kousuke. Yue listened to the starting explanation while running her gaze around. After doing that, the wive~s nodded in the same beat.

「.....Tio, take care of the house. You can also open the underground as evacuation place.」

「Umu, understood. I wouldst protect Myuu and Remia. Go forth, Yue.」

「.....Nn.」

Yue vanished silently.

Almost at the same time,

「I will return soon with Otou-san and others!」

「I'll also go check on the disciples, so I'll be a bit late.」

「Just in case, I'll borrow several Grim-chan okay?」

Saying that, Kaori, Shizuku, and Aiko, the three also teleported to their own house using their "Gate Key".

By the way, before Aiko teleported, she took several white and red balls that were placed in the living room's shelves and then returned to her own house.

Grim

Reaper

What was inside the balls wasn't monster, but mechanical god of death.

Grimball

The balls were "Treasure Warehouse" for storing the Grim Reapers. It wasn't Pooball by any means. Papa wasn't creating it to be similar because of a certain daughter's begging, not at all.

Tio was listening to Kousuke's explanation that was resounding inside the brain while groaning 「Fu~mu」, her hand was pressing her smartphone *pi-pi*-during that time.

「.....It dost not connect as expected.」

「You mean Hajime-san and Shia-san?」

Remia who was going 'my my ufufu' even at this kind of time was asking while starting the preparation to for the people who would come here to evacuate.

honorable stepmother

honorable stepfather

「Umu. The barriers protecting Hahaue-dono and Chichiue-dono were

activated. Naturally, the notification shouldst hath reach Goshujin-sama too but.....」

「Umyu.....where are papa and Shia-oneechan at nano?」

「Who knows. The modified phone of Goshujin-sama doth not connect. Perhaps the notification doth not reach, or perhaps they art in a place or a situation where even though the notification reach, they cannot contact back..... It doth not look like they art merely enjoying their vacation leisurely.」

Seeing Tio folding her arms in contemplation, Remia's expression clouded slightly.

「Do you mean to say that Hajime-san and Shia-chan are also falling into some kind of dangerous situation?」

「Might be so. Although, it's also not a matter that is so worrying. In all probability, they art only in a situaiton where the phone's signal doth not reach. It's not possible that they art unable to move or contact back even though the notification reached them. Goshujin-sama hath the Crystal Key afer all.」

No matter where they could possibly be, if Hajime grasped the situation here, then no matter what kind of obstacle stood on his way, Hajime could ignore it and instantly rushed here. That means, in the first place he didn't notice the necessary to rush here itself.

That in itself was a really abnormal situation for Hajime though.....

「There is no problem nano! It's the long-awaited trip where Shia-oneechan was that happy nano! Making them go back home just because of this degree of trouble is no good-!」

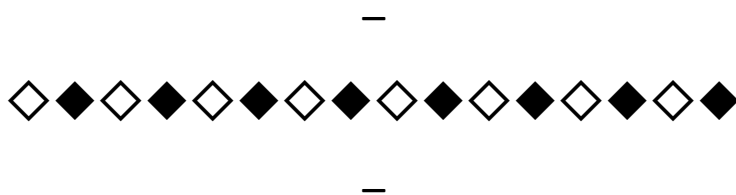
The beloved daughter of the demon king declared that they had no need for papa's help or anything it seemed. Both her small hands made clenched fists, and she puffed her chest, speaking passionately with a rough breathing 「Huff」. She even started shadow boxing with sharpness in her movement, saying 「Bring it on! If they want a fight, then come at us anytime, anyone, from anywhere-, nano!」.

Seeing the figure of such Myuu, Tio and Remia looked at each other's face, and a beat later.

「It's just as Myuu said. If it's Goshujin-sama, he must hath gotten flown away to other world somewhere and flirted around with Shia anyway.」

「Ufufu, that's right isn't it? If the two of them are together, then there won't be anything scary at all. Let's take care of this properly while they are away.」

Saying that, they chuckled at each other.



Right after Aiko teleported to the backyard of her parents' house, she heard the voice of a person she knew well resounding.

「Yo, you guys! Just what in the world! Do you understand what you are all doing!? This is a crime!」

The voice of a young man was saying the natural thing to people who were most likely the cultist attackers.

「Ee? Taichi-kun? So you are visiting the house.....」

Aiko was flustered and a bit troubled that the young man who was her childhood friend, Furukaway Taichi was in her parents' home. The presence of Taichi here itself wasn't something strange seeing how their families knew each other but.....

He didn't know. About the power of Aiko and her students. The returnees publicly said to the society that they went to another world, so he also knew about that, but fundamentally he didn't know what the returnees could do just because of that.

For Aiko, although their families were close with each other, if possible he didn't want anyone other than her family to know about the matter of magic and the like.

When Aiko entered from the back entrance, she saw the figures of her parents, grandparents, and Taichi huddling together in the living room. At the same time, she could also see countless silhouettes carrying things like hoe or hammer for pounding mochi from the veranda's window.



Normally the window would break with one attack, but this was the parents' home of Aiko who was one of the wife~s. There was no way barrier that was installed here could be affected by something of that degree. Naturally, the owners of the disgusting voice resounding from around the house were also firmly prevented from infiltrating.

Although, the very voice itself couldn't be blocked, so everyone there was scared or holding their head because their consciousness was interfered with.

「Okaa-san, Otou-san! Also Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan too! Are you all okay!?!」

「Aiko! Since when you are.....ah, it's by that isn't it?」

「Oo, Aiko! So you came back! Just in the world is going on?」

Aiko's mother——Akiko guessed how Aiko returned home, and her distorted expression relaxed in relieve. Her father——Tetsuo also showed a relieved expression while asked with a voice that was filled with bewilderment. The grandfather——Shirou and the grandmother——Chizu also looked the same.

「A, Aiko!? Why are you here!? Or rather since when!?!」

It was Taichi whose confusion was the deepest. The cultists hitting the window and the figure of his childhood friend suddenly entering inside the living room when she shouldn't be here caused him to become slightly panicked.

Aiko was worried 「U~m, e~rr」 of how to explain, but seeing Akiko and others shaking from the demons' scream, the string of her patience that was in the verge of breaking snapped.

「Anyway! Champion! I choose you!」

Aiko threw the Pooeball——no, the Grimball.

It made *bowan*- sound and let out white smoke. What flew out from there was——a kangaroo.

Everyone, especially Taichi let out their voice 「Eh.....」 while looking dumbfounded. During that time the kangaroo type Grim Reaper that was called Champion looked back over its shoulder and glared at Taichi.....

「Kyuiih!!」

「GOHOoOOOH!?!」

In contrast with its cute voice, it sent a body blow that would make even a heavyweight boxer cried to Taichi's solar plexus. It was a splendid punch that put the twist of the waist behind it. Its fighting pose was beautiful.

「So, sorry Taichi-kun. There is no time to explain so.....I'll properly deal you're your memory later!」

「Aiko.....you.....」

Seeing Taichi's eyes rolled up while he was holding his stomach with his butt sticking up caused Akiko to turn a gaze toward Aiko that looked as though she had witnessed something terrifying.

Even though there was a crowd of attackers right outside, her daughter's first attack was directed to the youth who was her childhood friend. Furthermore, she did that even though she knew that Taichi was still holding lingering feeling of love toward her.

What mercilessness.....

The really complicated gaze from her family caused Aiko's gaze to swim around restlessly. But, her discomposure was only so and so, the explanation from Kousuke that was resounding in her head through telepathy was over then. Knowing the true identity of the enemy, Aiko also understood the method to deal with them. Her expression turned serious right away and she began chanting.

「Healthily~, comfortably~, intensely grow, and strike the enemy!  
——"Pseudo Soul War Tree"!!」

Along with a chanting that felt like familiar from somewhere, the garden of Hatayama family undulated.

Right after that, the mandarin orange tree that was at the garden stretched out its branches largely and then mowed down. The branches that had thickness around as big as human's arm became like a whip. The cultists sticking on the veranda's window had their body bent together and got sent flying.

Furthermore, at the same time when their body struck the ground, the weed

lengthened and entangled them, turning into restriction tool of nature.

Aiko whose vocation was “Farming Master” possessed immense talent for ability and magic that was related with soil and plants. It was to the degree that it was possible for her to change the food production output of the world by herself.

Normally she used her power to cultivate and improve farming, but when the age of god magic called soul magic was added here, it became like this.

All living plants became Aiko’s ally.

Aiko who confirmed that the enemies in front of the window were gone then leaped outside right away.

「Champion! “Beat them up without killing”!」

「Kyuuuh!!」

Champion who received order rushed toward the cultists with pee-a-boo guard style. With amazing footwork and strike, it literally beat up the cultists short of killing them.

Its appearance was a kangaroo-san with brutal eyes. Of course, its inside was metallic because it was a Grim Reaper. Every single one of its punches was the same like a strike of a mass of iron. Just a jab from it caused vivid pulverized sound to come from the body of the cultists.

Although, a machine was a machine. Its attack was completely physical in nature. It didn’t have effective attack against the demons.

In addition, the existence detection from Aiko’s soul magic told her that a great amount of demons were flying around.

——And so, Aiko activated the strongest defense that she installed in collaboration with Hajime.

She stretched up her hands with all her might in a banzai pose while standing on her tiptoes and,

「Vigorously~, comfortably~, increase a lot, fill with greenery~——”Sea of Trees Manifestation”!」

At the next moment, Hatayama house was swallowed by a sea of trees.

Large trees were growing up one after another from the ground around the house. It looked like the super small version of Haltina Sea of Trees. There was even pure white heavy fog generated thoroughly.

If there was anything different, unlike Haltina Sea of Trees, all the trees were containing pseudo soul and became something like treant monster.

It was an underworld that was suddenly created.

It seemed the demons were also shocked by it, a voice that sounded somewhat confused resounded.

Even so,

——GIIIIIIH

They shrieked while charging into the sea of trees.

They were hit by the branches of the Treant imitations, or carved by leaf blades, or smashed by fruit cannons, or stabbed by the roots thrusting out like spear from the ground. Not a single one could reach Hatayama house.

Thus, it was far nastier to the demons than just a barrier. It was an absolute fortress of nature that really should be called as their natural enemy.

「The, the house, it become a demonic haunt.....」

「Aiko.....we are happy you come to save us but, still. This, will it return back to normal?」

「How we will tell the neighbors.....」

Tetsuo lost strength from his waist, Shirou had a distant look, while Chizu was holding her head.

Indeed, they were thankful to their daughter, or granddaughter that she was solving this terrifying situation but.....

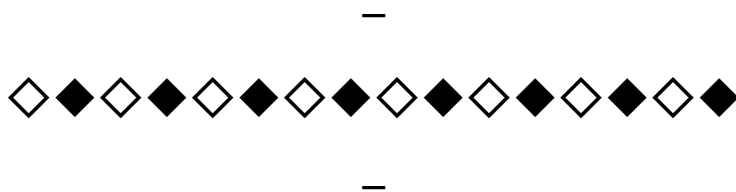
From the view point of the people of Hatayama family who were only ordinary civilian and mere farmer family, a method of creating sea of trees itself to repel the enemy back was truly a “soul-shattering” situation.

「Getting my Okaa-san and others involved like this! It's totally unforgivable!

Yes, I absolutely, won't forgive you al~~~~l!!」

Should this be called a growth, or should it be called “infected”?

Aiko swung up her fist together with Champion who was going ‘Ugaa!’. The people of Hatayama family looked at each other’s face seeing that and made a twitching smile to each other. While deciding that next time they would call Hajime-kun to a special family meeting.



Aiko was manifesting a sea of trees in her parents’ house. Shizuku was making a dry laugh seeing the cultists piling up heaps of bodies all around in her house, and how her family & all the disciples who for some reason were all present trying to subdue unseen enemy happily. Kaori was fighting the enemies while blushing due to her father who was making a ruckus 「My daughter is too angelic!」 when she was descending in angel mode.

Around that time Yue was,

「.....Okaa-sama, are you safe?」

「Yue-chan! I’m glaaad, I’m relieved now. Although, there wasn’t anything particularly dangerous, I don’t really get what it is but the shadow thingy can be sucked with this, so I was just thinking that perhaps I should go to counterattack with this when you came.」

Coming to the place where Sumire was doing her manga work.

Yue rushed here while feeling relatively panicked inside her heart, worrying if in the worst case anything happened to the mother-in-law who she respected, but Sumire herself was giving her a thumb up with a vacuum cleaner in one hand.

Certainly, Sumire’s workplace was also half turned into fortress similarly like Nagumo house, so the attackers couldn’t even invaded inside in the first place. Furthermore she also had an attack method——that was Hajime’s quality artifact, the vacuum cleaner——“Sniper Mark VII” from her absolute safe area,

so there was no problem at all.

Although, the guts of Sumire who somehow sucked in the demons even while turning slightly pale from the sudden incident was quite something.

By the way, because the artifact vacuum cleaner the “Sniper series” was improved until Mark VII, not only it became able to choose what target to suck, it could even suck in things like soul or gravity. In addition, it also could do something like sucking in air and compressed it, then fired it out like an air cannon.

Nagumo family’s vacuum cleaner couldn’t be satisfied anymore with just the absorption power that was eternally unchanging. How far would it go.....

「Eerr, Yue-chan. Is this some kind of incident again?」

「It looks like there is something scary though.....」

Sumire’s assistants, Hagiwara Machiko and Wakai Tsukasa were asking a little bit uneasily. The other assistants were also peeking outside with slightly disturbed look.

The assistants had known Hajime for long, and they were told about the returnees’ situation completely and on top of that they were still continuing to be assistants. Because of that it seemed they weren’t panicked, rather it was really something that they were merely scared for a bit in this situation.

Although, not only the Okaa-sama she respected was attacked, even her important acquaintances also got scared.....

Yue-sama’s blank stare was staring even more fixedly than usual. The coldness contained in her eyes was rapidly getting stronger.

「.....Nn, I will talk about the circumstances later but there is no problem. For now, let’s evacuate to our home.」

She also had to go to the place of Otou-sama, that was why Yue was giving explanation while making Sumire and others to grab on her.

「As expected you also need to go there huh. Yue-chan, please take care of that person okay?」

「.....Nn. I will return right away. And then, I’ll kill the enemy.」

「Ah, yes.」

Sumire nodded up and down repeatedly seeing the cold side of the vampire princess that normally she wouldn't show out.

Instantly, the place switched right away. Sumire and also the assistants were returned into the living room of Nagumo house altogether.

In a flash Yue immediately teleported to Shuu's company.

「.....-, Otou-sama! Are you alright!?!」

「Oh, Yue-chan! So you come to save us!」

Shuu was eating potato chips in his office together with several employers. Yue rushed toward him in panic.

There was a bandage wrapped on Shuu's forehead. Blood was slightly oozing from there.

「.....Otou-sama, your injury.」

「Oh maan, I got attacked when going to the nearby convenience store for a bit of break time. At that time I was too panicked and stumbled. I immediately escaped back to the company, and Hajime's protection also functioned properly so nothing direct hit me. That's why you don't need to look that worried you know?」

「.....」

Yue's expression completely vanished. It wasn't a worried expression. Rather, it was a terrifyingly blank expression that would make anyone looking to hallucinate a block of ice sliding through their spine.

Shuu twitched. Even the company employees who worshipped Yue and would usually warmly welcomed her like 「It's Yue-chan! Yue-chan came!」 「Our healing has descendeed!」 「Someone, prepare tea and snack right away!」 「Now now-, Yue-chan, please sit here where all of us can see you」, were all shaking without saying anything.

Yue put healing magic on Shuu and then looked outside the building. There the cultists were yelling selfish lines even now while hurling abuse to Shuu and others. The demons flying around were making unpleasant whispers and

shrieks.

「O, oi, Yue-chan? Are you okay? Somehow, your face is so scary that I slightly cannot look at you directly you know?」

「.....Nn. There is no problem.」

It was a voice of absolute zero. No matter how anyone looked, she got a problem.

When Yue ran her gaze at the employees she were acquainted with asking if there was anyone else injured,

「W, we're all right here, Yue-chan.」

「O, ou. Everyone is okay, so calm down a bit. Okay?」

「Thi, this is bad. What a gaze. I'm envious of Hajime-kun from the bottom of my heart.」

「Yue-chan, is it okay, is it okay if you step on me just for a bit? While looking down on me with those eyes——ah, president-, hurts!? I'm sorry!」

「Rather, president. You are really loved by your daughter in law huh.」

The company employees averted their gaze quickly even while confirming their safety or expressing their desire.

The report from the lord was over at that timing. Yue sent the telepathy saying 「——In five minutes I'll bring them down」, and then she muttered with the pupil of her eyes contracting.

「.....Everyone, I'm sorry to involve all of you into this. I will kill the enemies until not even a shred of their existence remain behind, so please forgive me.」

「「「「「.....*Please, don't mind us*」」」」」

The wife of the company president's son who sometimes would come bringing supply or doing some kind of chores, not only for her family but often also for them the employees. The girl's existence had become like an idol of the company——that was the impression they had toward Yue. Seeing her dark side right now caused all the employees to talk with halting language.

The senior employees and the management staff of the company who were



friend with Shuu since a long time ago and also known Hajime since he was little were also told about Hajime's circumstance and his strength, but naturally not all the employees were told about it. But, fortunately the members who were remaining in the company tonight in order to work all night were only the senior employees.

Depending on the situation, she thought that it might be necessary to manipulate the memory of some or explained the situation once more, but with this it saved time.

「.....Otou-sama. I already sent Okaa-sama back home. The other family members are also safe. From here I'm thinking to have everyone evacuate to the home. The detailed explanation will be after I massacre the enemies, is that okay?」

「O, ou, it's fine? Ah, no, about the massacre, look, yeah.....」

「.....It's fine. I'll leave the humans half dead. Even if they actually died, perhaps Kaori might be able to revive them. ....Though in my opinion, I think there isn't any need to leave even the ash of some bunches who harmed Otou-sama.」

「Yue-chan. If possible, can you leave at least the ash, or rather their original form behind?」

「.....Nn. This is Japan after all.」

‘If this isn't Japan, you will turn them into ash.....? Are you trying to protect Hajime's stance?’ The cheeks of Shuu who was seeing such Yue were twitching slightly even though she was protecting him.

He was really happy as her father-in-law to see her treasuring him, he felt really warm inside, but.....

When he looked at the eyes of his daughter in law, where her pupils were contracting so much it looked like there was just a single color in her eyes,

(My son. You have become a man with really huge caliber huh.)

Love was heavy. Even the father-in-law felt that when he only felt a fragment of it. Thinking of his son who was receiving that love whole, indeed, his son had

really grown in a big way. Perhaps. Shuu comprehended that for real now.

「.....I'll go to the rooftop for a bit. I'll return right away, so please stay here.」

「Ah, okay. Just in case, be careful, Yue-chan.」

「.....Nn-」

Yue sent a firm thumb up with eyes that were still lightless and then she vanished silently.

Somehow a relieved atmosphere flowed.

「President. The saying that a beauty is scary is true isn't it?」

‘Also a beauty mustn't be provoked’, all the employees nodded to each other in agreement.

Shuu was having a somewhat distant look while,

「My son, perhaps he can only get attracted to girl with strong peculiarity.」

Shuu who was saying that also obtained a wife with peculiarity that was too strong though, and the hybrid resulted into his son.....

It often happened, that the one who didn't understand themselves the most was their own self.

—

—

—

Right after Yue teleported to the rooftop, the demons shrieked and attacked her.

As though to pass through them, Yue flew up to the sky. The inversed gravity invited Yue to the sky far above with the speed of freefall.

At the altitude that was near the cloud, Yue activated the gravity magic “Kalpa of Destruction” while her golden hair was fluttering gently. The demons who were hot on her heels were knocked down to the ground by wide range gravity field.

Without even giving a glance to that, Yue put her hands together in front of

her chest as though to pray.

The cloud flowed. The full moon's face peeked out from the cloud's gap.

With the large moon as the zenith, Yue had the background of the moonlight's halo behind her. She closed her eyes and floated lightly. Her figure that was clad in tranquility possessed indescribable sublimity.

Below, the demons who were desperately trying to rise to the sky were struggling and shrieking. And then, there was the light of the city, of the activity below.

Golden ripple spread.

With Yue at the center, a glittering wave rushed through the whole city.

Blue light came into being inside her joined hands.

The golden ripple was gradually changing into azure ripple. Ripples ran through the city time and time again.

The demons stopped moving in bewilderment. "Something" that was penetrating their soul wasn't dealing any harm to them.

But, for some reason, even though they had the body of demon, when they noticed they were shaking. Their instinct was ringing out the alarm bell loudly, pleading to them to run away right now.

In the sky, an azure light that was far clearer than even the moonlight was shining.

「——*Found it.*」

Perhaps because of an extreme degree of concentration, Yue's words sounded halting.

Right after that,

Yue slightly opened her closed eyes and muttered.

「——"Selection"」

At that instant, a conspicuously stronger ripple rushed out. At the same time, the demons, and then the consciousness of the foreign world interfering to the cultists, and the main body that was granting them power that crossed over the

gap of worlds.....

They felt it without even any reason.

That they were caught.

「——”Flame of Divine Punishment”」

Inside Yue’s opened palm, a small blue star was floating quietly. The next moment, it spread to the city like an aurora pouring down from the sky.

It was a divine flame that penetrated through all kind of obstacles and destroyed only the selected soul, or everything else other than the selected soul. Only those who were allowed by Yue would survive. Those who were ascertained as enemy would disappear.

The demons that were touched by the blue flame of god raised the scream of death agony one after another and vanished.

The cultists also collapsed and lost consciousness from the impact when their mind’s connection to the demons was burned forcefully.

And then, through the small ponds and mirrors inside the city, the flame of <sup>Yue</sup> god arrived until the other world.....

Soundless scream thundered——that was how it felt.

What was transmitted at the end was fierce pain and uneasiness.

The next instant, there was a sensation of the link of the worlds being intentionally severed.

「.....Chih. It ran away. How cheeky for a mere filth.」

The divine Yue-sama who exercised azure flame while wrapped in moonlight. She cursed with a click of her tongue like a demon king. It seemed she was really couldn’t stomach that her relative was attacked.

Although,

『O? Oo! As expected from Yue-san! To think you will make a clean sweep through the whole city!』

『Yue-san, thank you! I’m saveeed』

『The next.....hm, no more come out huh. So it's over.』

『Medic-! Medic-! Shinji's state is too atrocious to even look at! Quickly come help him! I cannot use healing magic here!』

『Ryu, Ryu-kun, you really came!? Are you idiot!? I already wear clothes from a long time ago!』

Voices that were filled with happiness resounded one after another. Hearing that, Yue's mood was also slightly improved. Though Suzu's mood was falling one way downward.

「.....Nn, it's good that everyone is safe. I struck the foundation, but perhaps it escaped. There might be an attack again, so everyone can come with your family to our house. Also, Kaori, the rest, take care.」

『Your instruction to me sounds crude for some reason.....well, fine though.』

The underground of Nagumo house was expanded by space magic. There was a space that could house a large number of people and it boasted amenities that were equal to a hotel. Such a thing was common knowledge among the returnees.

There were calls through telepathy telling that they would head there after this. During that, a silver light rose to the sky from a corner of the city. The human silhouette was clad with beautiful light in the sky and a large pair of wings stretched out widely.

A beat later, silver light shined radiantly in the night sky and rained down to the city like a shower. Kaori was using regeneration magic to restore the whole city.

The figure clad in silver light with spread-out wings was truly that of the god's apostle. Kaori too also looked truly divine.

But, there a strange voice came from Kaori herself.....

『Say, Yue. There are several people who cannot be done anything about with just regeneration magic though. They are obviously dead though!』

It seemed Yue-sama made a mistake with her control when burning with her flame. Several people were totally killed.

Yue nodded once 「Fumu」 and,

「.....I believe that it's those people who are bad for dying just from divine punishment.」

『People normally die when receiving divine punishment isn't it!? Or rather, what's with that tone like it's a completely unrelated matter with you!?!』

「.....I think that it will be great if all the cultists won't be discouraged even from this and work hard to be able to live.」

『Normally if people are killed, they won't be able to live no matter how hard they worked! They can be resurrected but! Yes they can be resurrected but! At the very least that's not a speech that the person who killed them can say isn't it!? Furthermore it sound monotone! At the very least put some emotion to it!』

‘I killed you for a bit but, well work hard to live.’ Certainly, those were incomprehensible words that sounded psycho.

Sublime pillars of light flashed here and there around the city. Surely Kaori was resurrecting the dead people using soul magic jointly with regeneration magic.

「.....You are making it sound like I'm a psycho. Rude. Even though I'm also thinking to help so they can live in even better way.」

『Eh?』

Yue also activated her soul magic. She interfered with the consciousness of the cultists and emphasized their desire to go home. In any case she gave suggestion to them to go home with their own strength while for the time being she applied magic of 「The memory around the last two years, vanish and bego~ne!」.

With this, they would be driven by unexplainable obsession to return home, worked hard to fill up the gap of the blank two years, and lived their life somehow or other. Perhaps.

『Wha, what irresponsibleness.....』

「.....They prioritized their own desire even if they have to sacrifice us. Then, doing the same back to them is also proper. No matter what kind of circumstance they have, no matter what kind of feeling they are harboring,

that's not our business. It's already good that they aren't erased from this world correct? Either way—there won't be next time.」

『u, Yue, you are seriously angry. Well, me too though.』

A voice that sounded like the speaker was smiling wryly came from the telepathy. It seemed that inside her heart Kaori was also feeling quiet angry with the attack this time. The feeling that she didn't want to turn the town where her family was living at into a sea of blood barely allowed the cultists to keep their life.

Yue shrugged her shoulders and sent her consciousness toward the lord.

「.....Endou. It will be troubling to keep being at the receiving side. Where and how we should strike at?」

Yue called to the lord with telepathy.

But, there was no reply.

‘Nn?’ Yue was dubious and sent telepathy once more.

Then, she could hear a rough sound that was like a noise, as though the lord's thought was in chaos.....

『.....I want to die.』

A dead voice came back. With it there was also a weeping voice.

It seemed the main body had dispelled the Limit Break state. The clone bodies of the lord that were flooding the city now had already disappeared, leaving only the single clone body beside Emily.

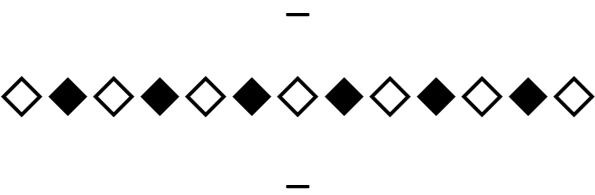
That clone at present was crumbling down on all four in front of Emily. He was holding his head while continuing to shake enduring his shame.

Emily-chan was desperately saying 「I, it's all right, Kousuke! You were cool.....really!」, she was desperately consoling him while she was really at loss for words.

And then, the main body in Britain inside the room where there was nobody else except the fainted Professor Littman, Kousuke silently removed the pose he was making and slowly took off his sunglasses with trembling hand, and then

walked to the corner of the room.

He sat down hugging his knees facing the wall, and locked himself inside the shell of his heart.



A few hours after they endured the attack.

Kousuke whose eyes were still empty came until in front of Britain’s security bureau. A large travelling bag was hanging on his shoulder. The content was Professor Littman who was tied up, stuffed inside a bit forcefully.

After that, Kousuke’s heart somehow recovered to a degree where he could have conversation. And then following what Yue said, they talked about making a strike toward the ringleader of the attack——that demon that was in the other world from here.

The conclusion was that it would be better to use the “mirror gate” in Vatican to embarked there as expected.

Although, the opponent was an existence that could send interference across world, furthermore it succeeded in retreating when the opponent was Yue. It was concerning how the world there would gnaw on flesh body just by being there, and on top there was also a concern that after crossing to the world there, the enemy might go here instead and attacked the family that they left behind in this world.

There were too many uncertain factors, and they couldn’t simply leave the people that they really should protect.

And so, Kousuke would infiltrate Vatican once more and carried out work to erase those uncertain factors as much as possible.

By the way, Kousuke went to security bureau with the objective to hand over Professor Littman, and also because he received emergency call from Bernard.

It was noisy in front of the security bureau. Several security bureau’s cars and



ambulances were parked there. There were also a lot of press and onlookers. There were barricade tapes laid out and there were a lot of broken glass fragments at the other side.

Looking closer, the building's windows were broken here and there. It looked like the explosion came from inside and the window's glass fragments fell outside.

Around the same time when the attack happened in Japan, the security bureau also received attack. According to Bernard, thanks to a powerful "helper", they somehow got through it.

And then, right after Yue's "Flame of Divine Punishment" exploded, the demons that were also welling up one after another here suddenly stopped appearing. The remaining cultists also only stood still.

「Perhaps, the wavering gap of worlds itself returned to normal, and they became unable to materialize here.」

Also, the thought of the demons that interfered to the mind also vanished suddenly. There was no doubt that the cultists were dazed because of that.

From the beginning, the cultists were only a gathering of ordinary people with amateur fighting ability. Without the demons, there was no way they could win against Bernard and others who were combat professional. The cultists were easily suppressed or shot to death and the incident was over.

「Even so, why did he call in emergency I wonder.」

Kousuke muttered that while entering inside the security bureau boldly from the front without anyone noticing him like usual. The noisy scene of the crime, the coming and going people, the barricade tape.....he ignored all of that.

He entered an elevator and pushed the button for his destination floor. The staffs who were also inside the elevator with him also pushed the button for their own floor.

「Eh, you, what is your business in this floor?」

「Ha? What are you saying.....eh, did I push it by mistake?」

A floor button other than their destinations was shining. The staffs were

tilting their head in confusion. They double clicked the button, cancelling it.

「No, I'll go down at that floor.」

「Uwah!? Who!? ——Wait, Aby-san!?!」

「A, amazing! Aby in the flesh, this nearby! I'm sorry, please sign this!」

Kousuke's eyes became like the eyes of a dead rotten fish. One of the staffs seemed like he had never met him directly until now. He took out a memo and pleaded for an autograph.

Kousuke wrote 「<sup>Abyssga~te</sup>あびすげ〜<sup>Lord</sup>ときょう in hiragana for the staff. The staff was really happy.

*Ting* The elevator rang out, Kousuke got out of the elevator while receiving salutes from the staffs.

Absolutely no one would notice him if he stayed quiet, so he weaved his way thorough the office that had become messed up, searching for Bernard, and called out to him.

「Bernard. I came. Is this place all right?」

「Uoh!? Aby! I beg you, stop sneaking on me! It's bad for my heart!」

‘I ain't sneaking here’, Kousuke thought. This was the usual thing, it was like this even though he was only walking normally.

Kousuke tossed the Professor Littman in traveling bag carelessly to vent his anger somewhat. He handed over the content to the security bureau staffs while asking.

「And, are you all okay?」

「More or less. there are a lot of injured, but somehow no one died. There are also some guys whose fate is unknown whether they will be able to work again though. ....Opponent where a gun is useless is just foul. If *those girls* weren't here, just thinking about it gives me chills.」

Bernard's face distorted with vexation thinking of his comrades that got done in. Although Kousuke was puzzled about “those girls” Bernard mentioned, but seeing Bernard's state, he spoke about trying to ask Shirasaki for healing

depending on the situation.

Bernard's mood seemed to be at ease somewhat hearing that. Kousuke also smiled a bit and entered the main topic.

「You told me that there is some kind of emergency business though, is it about the attack?」

「No, that's not it. There is a guest for Aby. Due to their identity, I am at a loss of how to deal with them..... For now, I have them waiting in the reception room. Honestly, looking back at the incident this time, I really want to question them right away but..... There is also the other party's position to think, well, there are various aspects that are over my position to deal with them.」

Guided by Bernard, Kousuke opened the door of the reception room that was deeper inside that floor.

Like that, what entered his sight was,

「I'm glad.....I can meet you again like this, messenger-sama. No, is it better to call you demon king's right hand-sama?」

The holy woman of Vatican ——Claudia Barenberg was there, her eyes partly closed while smiling happily.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I wanted to write more about the classmates' side but, the story seriously won't advance like that...and so, for now it end here. If there is another chance, I'm thinking to try featuring the classmates.

Also, in the「Gathering of the Returnees」chapter, Kentarou and Ayako went out with each other there, so I revised it that they hadn't done that there.

Thank you very much to those who pointed that out to me.

It will be seriously no good if I don't make the chronological timeline soon isn't it?

I will make it when Abyss Lord arc is finished. Consequently, there might be

revision too because of that but, please give your best regards for that.

Also, about the hero's little sister, I was surprised that she became overlapping with kouhai-chan, so I changed her hairstyle into ponytail.

Thank you very much to those who pointed that out to me.

※ Yue's line toward Kaori was reimported from "Nichijou" chapter 11. It was her line when her husband destroyed Fuhren lol You will be able to see it if you go to Niko Niko Douga, so if you like please go take a look there.

Mori-sensei, thank you very much for your lovely lines every time.

# Arifureta Chapter 313

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Saint Claudia

—

It's mostly exposition chapter.

I cannot consolidate the story well and became unable to endure, that jokes were also entered and it become more than 18,000 characters.....

Please be careful not to strain your eyes.

---

Claudia smiled happily from the bottom of her heart that they were able to be reunited. The smile that didn't contain the trace of anything hidden coupled with her gentle and kind looks was something so charming that might tightly grabbed the heart of ten thousand people.

Against such girl, Kousuke's eyes snapped open so wide.....

「Yo, you are perceiving me!?!」

「Eh?!」

Kousuke reflexively yelled.

At the same time, Bernard who was entering inside together was exposing his wariness while saying, 「To think she notice “Aby entering the room” .....as expected, she isn't just a normal person」.

Claudia-sama went 「Eh?!」 one more time.

It seemed their reaction was different from what she imagined, so she opened her mouth with slightly troubled look.

「E, err, I think it's only natural to notice if someone enter inside the room. Did I, say something strange?」

「Na, tural.....you say!?!」

「Aby.....it seems Vatican is a really dangerous place huh. Now I keenly feel it for real.」

Aby's legs staggered from the shocking words. Bernard supported him while trickling cold sweat. Even he who was a veteran security bureau staff who was also the leader of the force for field work couldn't hide his shuddering expression.

It seemed that his opinion of Vatican was improving to a strange direction.

Claudia said 「I, I don't understand.....」 while she was starting to get teary eyed somewhat. Actually she was having imagination of a reunion that was more, emotional, or more like cool and stylish.

For example, Kousuke would anticipate Claudia's entrance like it was only natural saying 「Good grief, aren't you late?」, or perhaps 「Hou. To think that you can find me. You are quite something」 while grinning fearlessly.....

Inside Claudia, her image of the human called Kousuke was that of a superhuman who was cool and stylish, with a composure that would never lose his calm while turning around in place for some reason.

She had been working hard thinking for many hours during her flight and car drive to this place for a stylish greeting in their reunion, and yet.....

The superhuman-san was absurdly shaken just from a greeting! He wasn't calm and composed at all! He wasn't cool! Also he didn't make any turn!

「Err, Claudia-sama? That's why I was telling you, aren't you glorifying your image of him too much?」

「It's fine to like a moving tale, but it's Claudia-sama's bad habit to get too heated up and excessively glorified a story that is already good in the first place.」

「Uu」

The voice of a young man who seemed to have a headache and the voice of a

girl that was mixed with sigh in it were resounding inside the room.

A youth with stylishly swept back blond hair——Wynn Keyman and, a girl with chestnut hair in braid——Anna Folk. It seemed the two of them came as Claudia's accompaniment. They were standing in attention behind Claudia.

Kousuke came back to his senses with a 'hah' at their existence and for the time being,

「I'm reaaal~~ly-, glad that I saved someone like you!! You are exactly the very picture of a saint!」

He said that, and with a step that no one inside that room could even perceive, he took Claudia's hand. Kousuke wrapped her hand with both his hands while his eyes became tearful from joy.

「Eh? Ah, that's..... Certainly, I'm performing my role as a saint but.....au, you are holding me so strongly like this again.....」

Saint-sama became red faced when Kousuke grasped her hand. Her gaze was swimming around restlessly in embarrassment and bashfulness. It seemed she was recalling the sensation of the powerful arm when they were escaping from hell with her being held tightly inside his arms.

The saint who had no immunity of coming into contact with male could only let Kousuke do as he pleased with how happy he was that his existence was recognized as though it was only natural.

Of course, normally against such impolite man that tried to touch her needlessly, she would gently dodged them or turned them back with strength but.....

For the time being, this time it was her two escorts who spontaneously moved.

「Tsu, can I ask you to get away from Claudia-sama-?」

「What's with that step just now!? As I thought, you are strange! Also Claudia-sama too, you are acting strange somehow! What's with that reaction that is like a maiden!?!」

Perhaps because they caught a glimpse of Kousuke's true strength, or perhaps

because they recalled the dangerous involvement of the last time, or perhaps because of their fighting experience that was seeping into their body, their hands went toward their weapon. Wynn's hand moved toward the handle of a small sword that jutted out from a cylinder case, while Anna's hand moved toward the tonfa that was peeking out from the slit of her skirt.

Bernard immediately reacted to the two who were like that. With a gun in each hand, he aimed each muzzle to Wynn and Anna respectively.

An atmosphere of explosive situation instantly visited the place.

But, as for the two people in question,

「Yo, you are wrong! Anna! This is, I was just a bit startled-, maiden or anything, that's a baseless thing to say! Geez」

「Bless you~, bless you~. In this world, there is still a person who will perceive me normally~. It's precious~, it's rare~. Saint-sama, bless you~」

One became even more like a maiden and fidgeted, & the other was entreated the saint repeatedly——in a sense, they were entering a world of only the two of them.

The eyes of Bernard who making a grim expression was slightly swimming around.

The eyes of Wynn and Anna who turned stiff with terrible nervousness were also normally swimming around.

The gaze of Bernard and Wynn & Anna crossed each other. 「Nn, nnn」 they made sound from their throat to each other and exchanged words 「Wha, what to do?」 with their gaze.

A beat. They let out a sigh together and lifted up all their hands to above.

And then, they turned their gaze to the fidgeting Claudia and the worshipping Kousuke, and they let out a deep sigh one more time together. Somehow, their reaction were really understandable.

「Aby. I know you are happy, so return to your sanity right away.」

「Claudia-sama. Let's make you a bit more immune after this various matters are settled. For now, please return to the usual Claudia-sama.」



「「Hah!?!」」

Claudia and Kousuke returned to their senses. They both pretended to clear their throat and then sat down on the sofa facing each other without keeping up appearance at all.

Seeing that, Wynn and Anna moved to stand behind Claudia, while Bernard stood behind Kousuke.

「The, then, let's restart from the beginning. My name is Claudia Barenberg. I'm serving as a saint in anti-demon organization "Omnibus" that is directly under the pope of Roma.」

Kousuke looked over his shoulder and exchanged gaze with Bernard. Bernard shook his head. It seemed he also didn't know at all about that organization name.

In security bureau, Bernard was the leader at present while Chief Magdanese was away. His position was really high. For him to not know about that name meant that it was an organization that even the security bureau wasn't aware of.....

「I am, Kousuke. Endou Kousuke. A Japanese person, I'm not a staff of the security bureau but.....」

「I am aware. ——You are one of the "returnees" aren't you?」

「Aa~, yep. As I thought, you have grasped that much huh. For you to come here.....did you trace the connection from the Berserk incident?」

「Yes, Kousuke-sama. We have also grasped about that incident to a certain degree, so we thought that perhaps we could rely on the security bureau. That pillar of light descending from the sky.....it also confused us, so we investigated about it quite thoroughly.」

Kousuke smiled wryly while nodding 「As expected」. Claudia nodded back with a smile, and then her expression smoothly changed into a serious look.

「Kousuke-sama. First, let me express my thanks. For saving Aziz, and for leading me back to this world, thank you very much. If there is anything I can do to repay you, then I will do anything that you wish from me.」

Claudia suddenly sent a strong gaze that shook Kousuke. Her feeling of deep gratitude was really conveyed.

「And then, I apologize from the bottom of my heart. I heard that my comrades attempted to capture you by force when we originally should be offering gratitude for you. I'm really, really sorry.」

Claudia looked back across her shoulder. Wynn and Anna went 「Uu」 and couldn't say anything.

Although the place at that time was in chaos, and everyone there were seething with unprecedented anger, but to attack Kousuke right after he rescued Claudia, indeed, it seemed that it caused them to feel guilty now that they were calm.

The two looked at Kousuke with terrible awkwardness and then they quickly lowered their head together.

「My apologies-. Even though you even tried to establish a dialogue, we repaid back kindness with evil because of our excessive wariness!」

「I'm sorry! Also, thank you very much for saving Aziz and Claudia-sama! If it's compensation, please be forgiving in exchange of the lives of I and Wynn-senpai!」

Kousuke was surprised by the sudden words of gratitude and apology. Claudia then said.

「The director too——the leader of our organization also said that he wished to make a formal apology. Unfortunately, the situation doesn't allow me and the director to be away from Vatican at the same time, so he is unable to come here. We are greatly aware that it is impolite but.....」

With a pained look, Claudia asked that if Kousuke would pardon the impoliteness of apologizing through phone, then the director was prepared to be called right away to express his apology. She looked so dispirited that her smile before this seemed like a lie.

To tell the truth, Kousuke was thinking if perhaps they were coming here as “pursuer”. He never imagined that they were here for apologize, that he was unconsciously taken aback.

Looking carefully, Wynn and Anna seemed terribly nervous. They were making cold sweat. Just now when Kousuke suddenly stepped forward and grabbed Claudia's hand, their hand immediately reached toward their weapon because they were really worried that Kousuke's rage had exploded and he was going to turn it toward Claudia.

'We are apologetic, but just because of that adding harm to Claudia-sama is the only thing that we cannot allow', it could be seen that they were at their wits' end with such feeling. At the same time, the resolve that they wouldn't loath to sacrifice themselves for that could also be seen.

It was unclear that they weren't making a show of their strength because that was simply their personality or because they had heard about Kousuke's strength. They were surely also keeping in mind that the returnees side had easily suppressed the attack just before this.

Perhaps rather than being Claudia's guard, the two of them came here as representatives to receive Kousuke's punishment. From the surprise that Claudia showed in respond to Anna's words, it was a resolve that they kept quiet even to Claudia herself.

Seeing them like that, Kousuke pulled himself together and scratched his cheek with a troubled expression. And then he asked softly.

「Wynn-san, Anna-san. ....How many, people died?」

「.....Mu?」

「Err?」

The words that Kousuke directed to Wynn and Anna. Both of them looked at each other's face while keeping their head bowed before raising their gaze in question.

「That explosion, and then the attack from the cultists. Surely there were a lot of people that couldn't be saved. Right after the explosion, Claudia-san screamed to confirm the safety of her comrades, and Wynn-san and Anna-san too, despite your heavy injury, Wynn-san immediately leaped out to help your comrades, and Anna-san also immediately rushed to call for help.」

Wynn and others were perplexed without understanding what Kousuke

wanted to say. Kousuke continued without minding that.

「Aziz-kun, even though he looked like he was just a step before death's door, the words that came out from his mouth were only 『Save Nee-san』. When I returned from hell, everyone in that place was harboring rage, not uneasiness or sense of danger. That director person too, he was maintaining calm appearance, but his clenched fist was shaking.」

That was why Kousuke was convinced.

「All of you, are surely comrades who are connected with strong bond. Isn't that right?」

The expression of Claudia, Wynn, and also Anna slightly changed into pained smile from Kousuke's words. Wynn quietly muttered 「.....Yeah」, while Anna also leaked out a small voice 「.....Yes」.

「I also have comrades. Important comrades who I entrusted my life to, who I won't hesitate to offer my life for. When I imagined those guys getting harmed, yeah, even I have no confidence that I'll be able to stay calm.」

That was why,

「There is no need for apology or anything——is what I want to say but, surely serious people like you all will be troubled by that, so I'll accept the apology. But, it's enough with that. This talk is over with this, I'll let the bygone be bygone! That's all! If you are feeling apologetic, then don't bring this up again in the future! Okay?」

「Ye, yeah. No, right, if that is what you wish.....understood. ....My gratitude.」

「O, okay. That's, thank you very much.」

Wynn and Anna were slightly bewildered, even so, a beat later tension left their shoulders and they smiled.

Like that, Bernard was making a triumphant look for some reason after hearing Kousuke's words while hitting Kousuke's shoulder *bam bam* from behind. Claudia was also smiling cheerfully with slightly reddening cheeks during that.

「Kousuke-sama. Thank you very much.」

「Right, well, more importantly, can you stop calling me Kousuke-sama? You can just call me Kousuke normally.」

「No, I cannot call Kousuke-sama so casually. Please call me “Claire”.」

Even though she was smiling, Claudia-san was making a request with a strong gaze that was strangely pressuring. That excessively powerful gaze caused Kousuke to reflexively nodded 「Ah, yes」. A mere Kousuke who wasn't being a lord was powerless in front of the saint's love.

He cleared his throat once. Kousuke corrected his sitting posture and opened his mouth with a serious expression.

「Then, Claudia——」

「.....」

「Aa~, err, Claire-san——」

「.....」

「Claire and others aren't coming here just for conveying your apology right?」

A smiling saint, powerful!

Saint's cheerful smile! was an almighty language tool! It didn't give the slightest attention to the conflicted expression of Wynn and Anna as though they didn't exist. The expression of the saint-sama looked really satisfied when Kousuke called her Claire.

「Yes, Kousuke-sama. it had already become a situation that cannot be kept secret at all. There is something that I should inform to Kousuke-sama, and then to everyone of the returnees——we came here in order to tell about a danger to the world.」

「Danger to the world, eh.」

Kousuke ruminated with a wry smile. It wasn't because he thought of it as a joke. They had just gotten attacked for real by demons from hell. There was no ground for doubt.

To say nothing of Claudia. Not just her title as saint, from what he had seen

through the situation at Vatican, he could see that her position was really high.

It was clear from what she had said just now, that “I and the director cannot go away from Vatican at the same time”.

A woman in her position was intentionally leaving her headquarters to come here. It was natural that she had an important reason for it.

「Before I talk, please allow me to confirm first. The attack of demons and cultists before this. The gap between worlds was certainly shaken even though incompletely. In Vatican, director and others were carrying the ceremony to correct the fluctuation but.....the world was corrected before they activated the technique. Was that caused by a measure that Kousuke-sama took?」

「No, it wasn't me who tracked back the guy who was sending in demons and sent him flying. It was someone else who is far more absurd than me. I wonder, does your side know that us returnees in Japan along with the people related with us were all attacked simultaneously?」

「Tsu.....I see.....as I thought, all of you have that much power.....」

Claudia asked while she was already half convinced, but hearing for real that the returnees launched a counterattack across worlds and drove the demons to retreat, Claudia and others with her gulped.

Claudia turned around with a determined expression. Wynn and Anna who received her gaze nodded with similar expression.

「Then, I will talk about everything by the order of the pope of Roma. Who are we. And then, about the unprecedented danger that is occurring right now.」

「I see. That's really helpful. Actually, the first wife of the demon king told me to bring back enemy's information because we are going to go raid their place. Actually, I was planning to infiltrate into Vatican again after this, so this saved me the trouble.」

「Eh?」

「Previously I tailed Aziz-kun and infiltrated inside using the secret passage from outside Vatican, but Aziz-kun was really sharp you see.」

「Eh?」

「The fully thrilling infiltration was really tiring. And this time that place is in high alert, so I was thinking that it feels like it will be a bit troublesome.」

「Eh?」

The facts spilled out without stopping with really light tone. Even though they were a secret organization, they got infiltrated with a level of recognition of just needing “some effort”, and then even while being aware that the situation now was a high alert state that was far more stricter, said infiltrator only thought of it as “troublesome”.

Claudia’s expression was slightly cramping, while Wynn was holding his head saying 「Azizzz, you were tailed.....no, perhaps it can’t be helped」, and Anna raised a dry laugh 「What happened with the door of attestation ceremony and the like.....」.

Kousuke tilted his head 「Eh?」 at their strange atmosphere. Bernard was murmuring 「I get it. I really get it you guys~, that feeling of yours. When the chief office was casually infiltrated, we the staffs here also felt the same」 while making a really gentle blank gaze.

Kousuke cleared his throat *cough*.

「Eerrrm anyway, if you are going to give explanation now, then I and Yue-san.....I mean the first wife of demon king who is leading us returnees right now, I will have to report to that person, so in order to avoid giving the explanation twice, is it fine for me to contact her so we can listen to the talk together?」

「If that’s the case, that’s convenient because our chief is also together with her. Just now, there was a communication that she had safely arrived in Nagumo family house, so I will be grateful if our chief is allowed to listen to it together.」

By the way, when the chief was contacting through video transmission using computer, there was Allen behind her who was looking strangely nervous while sending glances to something outside the screen but.....

By any chance, there was a female high school student there who as staring with a gaze of sadist with cheerful smile there.....perhaps.

When Claudia accepted, Kousuke immediately called Nagumo house. When the other side heard the circumstance, a call with computer was immediately connected.....

「.....Hello, it's me.」

Yue-sama, made her entrance with *teleport* once more. Of course, she was in adult version. And then, she sharply took the cool pose of a warrior who would give punishment in the name of the moon, furthermore she formed a finger gun and fired *bakyun*≡ with it.

Below her, there was also Chief Magdanese sitting down with a clear expression as though she had attained enlightenment. It seemed only the two of them came together here using teleport.

The other members could just hear the talk through video call, but it would be better for Yue and Chief Magdanese to listen directly. On the other side of the large screen inside the reception room, Kaori who was looking exasperated along with Shizuku and others could be seen. Most likely, the other classmates who evacuated to outside the screen due to the ruckus were also there.

Claudia and others were dumbfounded by the sudden appearance of the divinely beautiful girl, and her posing that was just too surreal.....

「Be, beautiful.....」

No, there was one person, a man who got done in by Yue-sama's *bakyun*≡. It was Wynn. He was pressing his chest and stepped back by one and then two steps.

It seemed he was shot.

When Anna beside him was sending him a shocked expression, Wynn returned to his senses with a 'hah' and started muttering 「I am Claudia-sama's knight! Claudia-sama's knight! Amen-」somewhat hysterically.

It seemed he was simply a dangerous person. Anna-chan's chilly gaze stabbed him. Her eyes were as though she was staring at filth.

「Yue-san, Yue-san. Please read the atmosphere, seriously.」

「! .....You are saying I can read the mood? Rude. Even though I'm just



mimicking Lord Abyssgate who burst into the train.」

「Guhah!?!」

Kousuke pressed his chest and crouched down. Certainly, he took a pose of punishing in the name of the moon. But, how did Yue know that?

The answer was of course, from the screening of the filming by cameraman Ayako just now.

「Nn-, cough-. How do you do, I am the security bureau's chief, Magdanese. This person here is the wife.....the first wife of Mr. Nagumo Hajime who is the leader of the returnees, Mrs. Yue. Can I listen to the story too?」

「Ah, yes.」

In order to rally the place that was starting to turn chaotic, Chief Magdanese really did her best. *GOGOGO*- Her pressure was such that it felt like such letters were floating behind her. Claudia-sama nodded up and down repeatedly with slightly teary eyes.

Like that, the atmosphere of the place that lapsed into chaos mostly because of Yue-sama's fault was turning back like before while Kousuke was telling everyone once more about the detail that he heard from Professor Littman. And then the explanation that was based on it finally started.

「I see, so all of you already know until that far..... Your recognition of hell and demon, and then the cultist isn't mistaken on the whole. We "Omnibus" is an organization that is opposing such hell, demon, and their cultists.」

According to her, there was a war between earth and another world in the past. Among the victorious side, in other words the people of earth, some of their descendant established an organization to take the role of watching over another world.

In each era the organization would match the time and changed the organization's name sometimes, however they would protect mankind behind the scene of history as anti demon organization without any pause in between.

「In other words, exorcist exist for real, is that what you mean?」

「Yes, Kousuke-sama. But, it's slightly different from the exorcist in the world

at general. Those who can join Omnibus and introduce themselves as “exorcist” are only people who possess the disposition to handle sacred vessel.」

「Sacred vessel?」

「For example “Mirror Gate” and “Key of Holy Cross” that Kousuke-sama is also aware of, and then.....」

Claudia’s gaze turned behind her. Toward the large cross that was put on the wall behind Wynn and Anna who were standing on the back. Its true shape couldn’t be seen due to the cloth and leather belt that were wrapped around it. But, it could be seen that it was something splendid with a total height of two meter which wouldn’t be strange for it to be placed on a church’s altar.

「That’s my “Holy Cross”. It’s a special weapon that is concealing a power to oppose demon. It was a weapon that was used at the past in the war between earth and another world. It’s a fragment of miracle that is containing the work of god.」

Yue was staring still at the talking Claudia. After that she turned her gaze to Wynn and Anna and nodded saying 「I see」.

「.....In other words, “magic power possessor” would be born sometimes from among the descendants of the residents of the other world. Those people are able to handle the left behind magic tools and artifacts and they are the real exorcist.」

By the way, the magic power of Claudia and others that Yue observed was really little compared to the returnee group. Compared to the returnee with rear guard vocation, the difference was by order of magnitude. It wasn’t something that should be compared with Yue and others.

Even so it was only Claudia who seemed to possess magic power that was several times larger than Wynn and Anna though.....

From the talk just now, most likely she exhibited atavism in her birth with the amount of magic power that she possessed. Even so the blood of the people from another world was thinning with the accumulation of generation, and the amount of magic power that she possessed also became relatively little.

Yue nodded in comprehension, but Claudia tilted her head in puzzlement

toward Yue's words of "magic power possessor" and "artifact".

For the time being, Yue urged with an unblinking stare for Claudia to continue her story, the story from the returnees would be for later. She wasn't glaring. She also wasn't in bad mood. However.....Claudia twitched while continuing her story. The serious Yue-sama was overwhelming.

「The existence of Omnibus is only known by the pope and by the generations of archbishop who is entrusted with Vatican's second library at the surface. It is completely kept secret from others.」

「If the supreme commander in battle against demon is the pope, then the commander in the field is the archbishop that is the "director", is it something like that? Though Claire said that you are a "saint" .....what does that mean?」

For some reason the other side of the video call became noisy. Voices of「She is calling him Kousuke-sama.....even Kousuke is calling her with pet name Claire? Ko, Kousuke, what is the meaning of this!?」「Wai-, Emily-chan, calm down!」 were resounding from there. Right after that「Nmuu! Mogaa!」 the voice became a groaning voice as though someone's mouth was blocked.

Claudia answered the question even while getting a bit curious about the other side of the screen.

「The, the title of Saint is referring to the "strongest" exorcist of that era. Usually the title will be "Holy Apostle", but in case a female become a Holy Apostle, the popular name of "Saint" become entrenched to call that person.」

「.....Strongest? Claire is?」

「Uu. Yes, that's, more or less.....」

Claudia nodded shyly at Kousuke's amazed expression. The young lady who looked calm, gentle, and kind was the strongest exorcist of this generation.....

Yue-sama's unblinking stare also was also stabbing her. It looked like she wanted to say「Haa? You are the strongest? Do you know about the phrase knowing your place?」. In reality she was only thinking「Hee~~」 in her mind though. Rather, Yue was convinced of that seeing the amount of her magic power compared to other people. It was really just Yue's default unblinking stare.

Perhaps being unable to watch Claudia who was getting increasingly smaller from embarrassment, Wynn and Bernard interrupted.

「It's true that Claudia-sama is the strongest among us. Certainly, it's difficult to imagine it from her appearance, in fact she is beyond hopeless in hand-to-hand fighting and the like. Not just that, she is also truly unreliable in her everyday life. But, it is only Claudia-sama who can handle that "Holy Cross". And then, someone who can handle "Holy Cross" is inevitably the strongest in battle against demon.」

「She was certainly amazing. When the bureau was attacked by demons, You see, Ms. Barenberg who came running offered a prayer. And then, a powerful light surged from that large cross, and when we noticed the demons were already gone, and the cultists were all collapsing. It was truly a clean sweep and felt overwhelming.」

Everyone went 'hoee~' and sent gaze of admiration toward Claudia. Claudia's cheeks reddened, but the casual evaluation from Wynn like「beyond hopeless in hand-to-hand combat」and the like caused her to avert her gaze toward the sky that was visible from the window. It seemed she had an idea of what Wynn was saying.

Kousuke nodded with a convinced face.

「I see. So you are the strongest as a rear guard. Certainly, you were amazing even when you were in a weaponless state. You did deploy a barrier that even the ghoul-like things couldn't cross at all in hell.」

「Tha, thank you very much, Kousuke-sama. It's my happiness if I can be even slightly useful. After all my title of Saint will cry if I was only being carried in your arms from beginning to end.」

Claudia smiled sweetly. Her cheeks were reddening perhaps because she was recalling the time of the flight when she was carried in princess carry, Her smiling appearance was really lovely.

『Mugah, nnmuu! Puhah, Kousuke! What is the meaning of this!? You embraced that person!? Is that why you are so intimate to even call her Clair——』

『Yes, Doctor Emily. Let's be quiet for a bit. Right now Kousuke-san is having an important talk with the fourth wife——cough, the honorable saint of Vatican after all.』

『Nmyu~~~~-mogagaa~~~』

He couldn't hear anything. He didn't feel a chill or anything. Inside the display, Kaori and others were sending lukewarm gaze to outside the screen, but he wasn't bothered about it.

Also, 「As I thought the bastard laid his hand on a new woman」 or 「Lord, drop dead」 voices of resentment were also coming, but Kousuke activated the new skill that he obtained just now, “Hearing sense that become like galge main character depending on the situation”.

Eh? What did you say?

「Sa, say, Kousuke-sama. That person.....besides, someone said about “fourth wife” .....」

「Ms. Barenberg, please continue. We still haven't heard about the ringleader.」

Chief Magdanese looked at Claudia with a sharp glint, as though to say ‘you think I'm going to let the talk get interrupted’.

‘For some reason, Chief Magdanese, and also the wives of code name “demon king” are glaring at me, why.....’, as expected Claudia became slightly teary while the strongest exorcist nodded repeatedly.

「The mastermind——the person who kidnapped me, and intervened with the gap of worlds to attack everyone. The person who wish to unify the two worlds and become ruler. The demon that cannot be talked even in bible or any kind of other books. We called him, that demon as——Unknown.」

「A demon that cannon be talked in book..... In other words, speaking in reverse he is existing as famous demon that is known by the world in general?」

If it was just those demons of “shadow”, they weren't really a threat. However, if the greater demon that was talked in legend existed, and he was also aiming for earth.....

Such concern of Kousuke was easily ascertained.

「Unfortunately, he exist. Although, about him being recorded in books is actually slightly different in reality..... In any case, there is nothing about him at all in the past record, and he was confirmed for the first time twelve years ago. He is called as “Unknown” as a great demon who possess king class strength even though he is unknown.」

The moment Claudia mentioned twelve years ago, her voice was tinged slightly with something dark. Kousuke’s expression became slightly puzzled to that.

But, before he could ask about it, Yue reacted to the words “king class”.

「.....By king class you mean?」

「There is historical record that is only inherited by us in Omnibus. According to it, it seemed there were seven kings who were once reigning over the countries and nobles in another world. It’s said that they can control even miracle that is effecting the foundations of the world, that is even further above the works of god.」

「.....Foundations of the world?」

Yue’s eyes narrowed slowly. Claudia interpreted it as shock and she continued with a meek expression.

「Yes. But, it’s not just causing fire or wind. It’s an even greater power. It’s said that the closer a demon is to the lineage of king, the stronger the power they can use but.....Unknown can also use similar kind of power.」

Such demons that possessed strength which had a line drawn from other demons seemed to be called as “king class”.

Kousuke recalled the Unknown at the back of his mind. A figure that was like a condensed shadow, and a power to control shadow itself. The impression his got from his clones that were directly battling it, rather than shadow, it felt more like a lump of force field.

In addition, the power to interfere with the gap of worlds.....

Cold sweat trickled just slightly. In his impression from fighting the Unknown,

although he was a troublesome opponent, but at the present stage he wasn't an unbeatable opponent, but Kousuke got a bad premonition.

「Could it be, when I fought him in hell, that guy wasn't serious?」

「No, I think he was serious at that time. It's unthinkable that he would intentionally let go of me when he want me as a mother body. But, if the question is whether he could display his full strength, then the answer is "No". At the very least, when Unknown was confirmed twelve years ago, he had the power to freely change his shape and summoned demonic beasts but, he didn't use those powers before.」

Kousuke's attention was caught by the words "twelve years ago" that came out once more. But, this time Claudia continued talking without any change in her expression and tone at all.

「At that time, Unknown was summoned and appeared in this world, but he was terrifyingly powerful and the strength of the exorcists couldn't match him. At the end he received strong interference from hell and he got dragged back. He raised a resenting voice to the demon kings while vanishing.」

It seemed even the ceremony of demon summoning could actually be done for real if it was correctly carried out by <sup>people</sup> <sup>with</sup> <sup>magic</sup> <sup>power</sup> qualification and the equal compensation was paid.

And then, it was Omnibus's opinion that the demon kings who were driven away to hell in the past already had no will to invade to earth. It seemed that was their conclusion because since the war of ancient time, demons with high ranking almost never did interference to this world except when they were summoned by mankind.

Of course, the demons outside the greater demons with well-known names in the human side kept doing interference constantly. And then because people who were trying to summon demon in reverse also kept appearing without end, the battle of exorcist also had no end.

Kousuke then got taken aback and said.

「Now that you mention it, I heard that guy said something about the fake kings had vanished~ or the like.」

「.....Yes. I don't know what kind of reason there is, but at present it seems there is no influence of the demon kings in hell. That must be the reason why the Unknown is moving. Perhaps he was also sealed, because he looks like he still cannot use his power fully.....」

「.....Nn. In that case, it means we might have to face famous demons too?」

「There is the possibility of that. Furthermore, the Unknown itself seems to rapidly grow in strength, perhaps because he is gaining strength from his drastically increasing believers.」

Claudia returned to her former quiet atmosphere and turned a straightforward gaze toward Kousuke, and then toward Yue.

「The next time Unknown shake the gap of worlds, I believe that it won't be something incomplete like this time. Next time hell will be completely connected to this world. Powerful demons that obtain flesh body will descend to this world endlessly. In front of the power of miracle that was once called as the works of gods, modern weapon will be useless to resist them. We too won't be able to win against the power of number. If the worlds are connected, that will mean——the destruction of the world, of the present society.」

Claudia stated that it was a danger of destruction of the present world. It was already not limited to just local invasion against the surrounding of the returnees or the like, but a world scale invasion, where the demons would be overflowing through sea as the intermediary.

If that happened, how much damage would result.....

「That's why, before the worlds can be connected, we have to enter hell from here and defeat the Unknown. However, with the previous attack, we lost many comrades and Omnibus's headquarter is weakened.」

In the first place the number of real exorcist was few. Even if they summoned the people who were dispatched throughout the world, that fact wouldn't change. They also had no time.

That was why, because they knew of someone like Kousuke, of someone that was like a hero,

「All of you returnees, please lend us your strength.」



Saying that, Claudia deeply bowed her head. Wynn and Anna also lowered their head.

Originally it must be impossible for them to borrow the strength of other organization or individual. But, before this Claudia spoke about the command of the pope. In other words, the case this time was so pressing, it was literally a danger to the world that her superior had to recognize it.

The presence of security bureau in this talk was allowed was undoubtedly because their connection with returnees was taken into consideration. They had no leeway to deal with needless inquiry, if that was what would happen then it was better to share the information from the start.

Across the screen, the classmates could be heard speaking 「Seriously, the scale suddenly got really huge huh」 「Just why is it fantasy even after returning to earth」 with half laughing voice.

Chief Magdanese didn't really talk. She only turned her gaze toward Yue as though to say that she was leaving the decision to her.

Kousuke also asked with his gaze 「What to do?」 to Yue. Yue replied to Claudia and others who were lowering their head without looking like she was thinking long about it.

「.....Nn. No problem. Or rather, the problem isn't about lending or not lending a hand.」

「Eh? What do you mean.....」

Claudia and others raised their face in confusion. Yue was staying expressionless, however, she spoke while emitting terrifying atmosphere that made everyone felt a chill.

「.....I don't care whether they are demon or dejected loser, but those guys picked a fight with me. That's why I'll take the fight. I'll kill them. Destroy them in the entirety. No mercy.」

‘Isn't that right~’, atmosphere that was like that was transmitted from Kousuke and the other side of the screen.

「.....Claudia.」

「Ye, yes!」

「.....I heard that you are targeted to be mother body. It's better to stay behind for your safety. Looking at your combat potential, there is also no need for cooperation. Simply open the Mirror Gate. After that, I will trample over hell.」

「Tsu.....that's.....」

It was an implied statement that they weren't counted as a war potential. Certainly, on top of repelling back the Unknown, she had also witnessed an absurd deed like space teleportation. And from looking at Kousuke's strength, this was someone who was said to be of higher ranked than him. Even if the exorcists participated in the fight, certainly, far from being of assistance, they might become hindrance instead.

It was a rational decision, but for some reason Claudia was making objection with frustrated expression.

「Ho, however, the hell is vast. According to the record, it's not just the ground surface, but there are also several layers of territory underground. I, if it is I, I'll be able to find the Unknown. I have connection with Unknown.」

「.....Nn, it's alright. I have already grasped that guy's soul. If I'm in the same world with him, I will be able to find him. After that I just need to move toward him with teleport.」

「Uu.....」

Claudia's gaze swam around. Because Wynn and Anna understood her feeling, they were directing a conflicted gaze toward her.

A question mark floated on Yue's head at Claudia's state and she asked.

「.....Nn? Is there any problem?」

「.....No. Just in case, we will also form a unit and embark to hell but, please defeat the enemy without minding about us. Please, I'm begging you-, take care of the world! Please, don't let the evil that the Unknown is spreading will befall the people even more than this!」

Her voice sounded as though she was shaking off, to suppress down

something. She was bowing her head deeply, so her expression couldn't be seen.

Yue stared at Claudia doubtfully because her condition was really strange. In the incident this time, if Yue and others defeated the enemy's ringleader, it would also be in the interest of the exorcist side and she thought they would welcome it but.....

Yue's gaze turned toward Wynn and Anna. Wynn and Anna looked at each other's face in respond to that questioning gaze. And then Anna silently shook her head, and Wynn nodded. He then answered as though to cover up something.

「We have also lost a lot of our comrades, so there are also a lot of us that wish to attack the enemy. If possible, it will be by our own hands. However, it's the fate of the world that is at risk here. If you say that it will be more certain to do it by only yourselves, we won't refuse. Allow us to give support as much as possible.」

From the start, they were people who were offering their life for their mission as exorcist——to protect mankind from demon. If they were someone who didn't loath to sacrifice even themselves in order to save someone else, then they would be no room for personal emotion too. Thus, they would choose the more certain path.

「.....Nn, I see. Then, I will make them pay back for the share of your comrades too.」

Although she still looked like she wasn't fully convinced yet, Yue said that and nodded. Even during that time, Kousuke was looking at Claudia all along and he was making an expression as though thinking of something.

「.....Are you going right away? If you teach me the coordinate, I'll teleport you all there.」

Claudia finally lifted up her face in respond to Yue's words. At that time, her atmosphere that felt like she was suppressing something was already gone.

「No, we plan to link up with the exorcists who are dispatched to Britain before returning back using personal plane. Besides, currently we are preparing

for when the gap of the worlds is connected once more.」

According to her, actually the obelisk that was at St. Peter Square was also a sacred vessel. It was something to be activated when it was necessary to deal with large scale demon summoning.

Even if the gap of worlds was connected somewhere in the world and a path was created, if the obelisk was activated, it seemed that the path that was connecting worlds would be forcefully connected to the square.

Also, the 140 saint statues surrounding the plaza also seemed to be sacred vessels. They could deploy a powerful barrier that wouldn't let the demon to get out from the square.

In other words, in the worst case that Unknown's extermination didn't make it in time, or there was unforeseen situation, the square could be used as temporary battlefield to buy time when the worlds were connected.

「Because some area got hit by explosion, it will take half more day for the preparation. We wish to at least finish this preparation so that even after breaking into hell, we will be able to react even if the Unknown take reckless action of going here with imperfect world connection or the like.」

「Yue-san, I will go with Claire and the others. Claire is being targeted as a mother body after all, it will be troubling if the worst case occurred.」

「.....Nn. Got it. Then contact us when the preparation is finished. Until then, we will harden our own defense.」

After saying that, Yue stood up and strongly grasped Chief Magdanese's hand. The chief stopped her in panic. It seemed she would remain here. As expected, it seemed it would be bad if the chief wasn't present after the headquarter was attacked.

『Eh.....Sharon-obaachan, you won't return here nano?』

「Fuguuh」

On the screen, the dejected figure of Myuu was.....

The demonic chief who was capable of hushing crying children. She groaned with a hard to describe expression that her subordinates had never seen

before. It was an expression as though she was enduring a severe stomachache.

「Fo, forgive me, Myuu. Obaachan, has a lot of work after this. A good child like Myuu, understand that right?」

『Myuu is a good child so Myuu understand. Obaachan, do your best in work nano.』

Myuu smiled bravely and waved her hand that was small like a maple leaf. Obaachan waved her hand back with a nice smile while her other hand was pressing her nose.

『Kousuke.....you will stay beside that person?』

「Fuguuh」

Across the screen, there was the dejected figure of Emily-chan.

The hero who didn't flinch even when facing man-eating fiend. He groaned with a hard to describe expression that could be seen relatively often. It was an expression as though he was enduring a severe stomachache.

「So, sorry, Emily. I'll leave a clone behind so.....」

『It's fine, I understand. Kousuke, be careful. I will also do what I can.』

Emily-chan who smiled bravely while glancing at Claudia. Kousuke pressed his hand on his nose toward while a nice smile——「This is why, this damn Abys is just...showing off like this」「I'll tell this to Rana-san」「Idiot, it's that person so she will only get happy」「God dammit」「Lord, drop dead」etc.——wasn't on his face. He quietly turned off the switch of the screen.

「.....Nn, then, Endou. The rest, take care.」

「Roger.」

Yue-sama vanished instantly.

The conference between Claudia, the returnees, and the security bureau where a framework of cooperation among them was built had finished, and an atmosphere of relieve flowed in.

「Ms. Barenberg. Putting aside the demons, if it's guarding against the attack of the cultists, we can also lend our field work's unit for that, how about it?」

Chief Magdanese suggested that to Claudia with the calculation to have a grasp on the flow of events in the real time, and also to build a friendly relationship with an organization that was continuing to lurk behind the scene of history.

Claudia's feeling that was about to relax down from the relief of receiving assistance snapped back into focus. Originally she wasn't in the position for this kind of external negotiation.

「That's truly welcome. The director told me to accept if there is an offer. After all a combat force that possess experience fighting against cultists and even demon is precious.」

Normally it would be a great problem to accept an armed force of another country, but it seemed they had a judgment that a combat group who knew about the situation would be beneficial in regard to the later development.

Most likely they also had the same calculation like Chief Magdanese, but in any case, the Vatican side was also thinking to accept it in this time of emergency.

Claudia stood up with a stiff expression and shook hand with Chief Magdanese. Omnibus would allow Bernard and others to enter the country through their own route behind the closed doors, so the talk about things like the preparation to accept them in Vatican side and the like was quickly settled.

「Well then, Kousuke-sama. Let's depart. This time there is no need to infiltrate secretly. We will welcome you right from the front, so please don't worry.」

Claudia showed a bit of playfulness while saying that with a smile.

‘Yo-heave-ho’ She shouldered the huge cross while muttering that. Claudia herself had height around 160 centimeter, so the cross was jutting out around 30 cm higher than her head.

She was shouldering that and headed to the door even while her body was slouching forward from the weight.

Wynn went ahead and opened the door.

「It looks heavy. Are you okay, Claire?」

「It's made from metal so it's certainly heavy, but I'm already used to it.」

‘Just this much is nothing! I am the strongest exorcist after all!’ With a lovely smile that wanted to say that, Claudia passed through the do——

GAN-

「AH!?!」

The tip of the cross hit above the door. The Holy Cross fell behind and Claudia was pulled by that and fell behind too. And then, the back of her head hit the cross. *Gochi*- Such painful sound resounded.

「Cla, Claudia-sama! Are you alright!?!」

「Aa, even though this hasn't happened recently! This is because you are showing off in a place that you aren't familiar with!」

‘Uh, uuu~’, Claudia got teary eyed while holding the back of her head. Wynn and Anna helped her standing up with a practiced motion.

Until just now, she was really like a saint, and even after the discussion her atmosphere was like a calm and graceful young lady but.....

Kousuke, Chief Magdanese, and also Bernard got open mouthed seeing the sudden failure of the saint-sama.

「Ju, just now it's that. Just a bit of failure. Ehehe.....」

Claudia made a smile to cover it up. She was rubbing the back of her head shamefully but, she was absolutely covering up her pain.

「Claudia-sama, as I thought I will carry it so.....」

「Wynn! I've told you every time! This is my sacred vessel. Then, me carrying it is only natural!」

‘Yo-heave-ho’, while muttering so, this time Claudia hugged the cross in front of her chest. She carefully paid attention to the above while slo~wly passing through the door this time.

Outside the reception room, even the staffs in that floor seemed able to imagine the scene of Claudia falling down with how desperate she looked trying

to bring out the cross. The gazes of the staffs that were in suspense were gathered on her.

Without being mindful of such gazes, Claudia came out of the reception room and sighed 'fuu' in relieve while fixing her hold of the Holy Cross——at that timing the cross slipped from her hand.

「——AA!?!」

The Holy Cross fell on Claudia's toes. She pulled her foot away in panic and she was going to crouch down while trembling tearfully in pain,

「——AA!?!」

As expected, the Holy Cross that lost its prop fell on Claudia. Saint-sama became pinned under the heavy lump of metal and wriggled around there.

Kousuke, Chief Magdanese, and Bernard who finished a conversation with their gaze in an instant, that they would treat the incident just now as never happened couldn't stop their mouth from gaping wide open from the failure that was already in a level that couldn't be ignored anymore.

「Aaah, Claudia-sama! Are you injured!?!」

「This is even more terrible than usual..... She must be really nervous in the conference.」

It appeared this saint, when she was feeling the tension there would be no problem, but the moment she relaxed, she became a clumsy girl.

Claudia who was helped onto her feet by Wynn and Anna turned bright red while also getting tearful eyes from the pain, even so she shouldered the cross again. And then she was desperately glossing over the failures while smiling sweetly. She gave parting words to Chief Magdanese and Bernard.

Everything wasn't glossed over at all, not at the slightest, but it was the adult Chief Magdanese who was there. She exchanged words of parting as though nothing had happened.

Like that, Claudia started walking gallantly toward the exit but.....the office that was messed up from the attack was a mountain of trap (?). She magnificently stumbled on a jutting out wiring,



「——AA!?!」

*Bitan*- She fell face down. The weight of the cross gave double the push.  
「Kue!?!」 Such strange groan even slipped out.

*Shi~n*, the office fell into silence.

Wynn covered his eyes with his hand while muttering 「Today she is really terrible at this.....」, while Anna was murmuring 「I guess the stare of that person called Yue was really severe? The way she relax with her gone is staggering」.

The nearby staffs helped Claudia on her feet in a hurry.

「Oi oi, are you okay? That was a really amazing way of falling there.」

「Are you injured? Or rather, this cross is heavy!」

While the staffs were letting out voices of shock and worry, Claudia whose face had become so bright red just a step shy of explosion, even so perhaps because of her pride as the Saint,

「Tha, thank you very much. I'm fine. Even though I look like this, I'm pretty tough. Even when I carelessly fell off from a running car, I was unharmed!」

‘That ain't something to say with a sweet smile’, everyone thought.

Although, the figure of Claudia who was covering up her failure with 「Ehehe」 and an embarrassed smiling face while lowering her head repeatedly to the staffs somehow gave a warm and fluffy feeling inside them. The staffs also naturally sported a warm smile from Claudia's smiling face.

Claudia gave her parting words once more to Chief Magdanese, and then without even shouldering or hugging the cross this time, she dragged it carefully while walking toward the exit.

Kousuke pointed his finger to Claudia while asking Wynn and Anna who were having a distant gaze.

「.....Strongest?」

「.....The strongest, without doubt. When she is in the middle of battle, or when concentrating there is no problem. But, when she is relaxed, for some

reason she become like that. Mostly she will self-destruct without being a bother to her surrounding, so we can only worry without being able to get angry and say anything to her.」

「I see.」

Kousuke understood Wynn's line before this about how her everyday life was dangerous. Rather, the everyday life might be more dangerous to her than the battle.

「A saint that shoulder the cross, embrace the cross, and be swung around by the cross.....somehow, it feels like there is significance in that huh.」

「Err, you don't need to force yourself to give it a conclusion with a nice note you know?」

Kousuke said those words while staring at Claudia's back. Anna made a dry smile while saying 「She is always like that」 in respond to his words.

「——AA!?!」

*BANG-, ROLL ROLL-, SPLAT!*

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The newest chapter of “Nichijou” was posted in Comic Gardo.

Myuu's darkness that was deliberately left untouched in the main story really hit the spot.....

Mori-sensei, what a hero lol Also, Shia's “moo” was lovely lol

# Arifureta Chapter 314

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Do-or-Die Battle (?)

—

「.....Are you alright, Claire?」

Kousuke's slightly convulsing voice resounded.

The location was the outskirts of a small runway inside Rome. They were descending from Omnibus's private plane at an airport that was also exclusive for Omnibus.

It was dusk. The sun that was illuminating this day was sinking toward the west.

The sky had beautiful madder red color. The wind of the evening was cool. And then, the saint who was pressing on her butt with teary eyes below the ramp looked really painful.

「He, hehe, just as you can see, I'm fine.」

「No, I'm asking because you don't look fine though.」

‘Ehehe’, that shy smile that emitted loveliness——wasn't there anymore. If he had to say what kind of smile it was, Claudia-san was exposing an expression like a person who got carried away easily saying 「Heheh, sorry boss」 to cover up one's own mistake.

She stood up while her hand was holding her butt, then she lifted up the Holy Cross and supported it with effort. She was dressed in a neat and clean appearance of a long-sleeved dress with white as the base color, but the outfit

was slightly dirty all over.

It wasn't like he was slipping up just now on the ramp and slid down on her butt. She also wasn't attacked by demons and cultists in the middle of going back from Britain and got involved into a fierce battle.

The cause was just one.

The numerous self-destructions that Claudia generated until they reached here.

After getting out of the security bureau, Kousuke and others first joined up with two exorcists who were dispatched to Britain, but even until then, well, Claudia self-destructed.

When she climbed up a stair, she would get dragged by the cross and stumbled with her shin getting hit hard, and when she went down a stair instead, her balance would crumble due to the Holy Cross's weight. She would misstep and slid down on her butt.

She would stumble at place where there was no obstacle and got pinned under the Holy Cross. She would look the other way and crashed onto wall or pillar and fell, and got pinned under the Holy Cross as expected. She even got completely caught inside the revolving door in the airport.

Inside the private plane, she would wear eye mask and took a nap, and when she woke up she would struggle 「I, it's pitch black! Did something happen!？」 while kicking around. And then she would fell off from her reclining chair.

Claudia who went through numerous self-destructions like that at first would gave scream or embarrassed laugh that looked cute, but from the middle, her voice was gradually turning into a voice without any composure like 「higih」 or 「hebuu」, and at this point even her embarrassed laugh 「he, heheh」 had became something really disappointing.

「No no, Kousuke-sama. Look, I'm not injured anywhere. I'm unharmed.」

「Right, it's really mysterious.」

‘This saint, could it be she is the same kind like Bernard?’ he tilted his head with such doubt. Just like he was holding doubt that Bernard might be loved by

the death god and the goddess of fortune at the same time, there was a possibility that she was also loved by the god of clumsy girl and a god who protected her from the self-destructions at the same time. She was a saint after all.

Claudia-sama made a banzai pose to appeal that she was unharmed. Naturally, because her hands let go, the Holy Cross-san lost its support and bared its fang toward its master. It tilted toward the head of Claudia who was smiling ‘heheh’——

「That’s why, are you doing that purposefully!?!」

「Ah!」

Just before it hit, Kousuke leaped forward and stopped the violence of the Holy Cross-san. He supported the Holy Cross with one hand where Claudia was sandwiched between him and the cross.

It was a posture where she was practically hugged on his chest. The sudden approach of the opposite sex, furthermore it was Kousuke who she was strangely conscious against caused her cheeks to be dyed red. While that was happening, Kousuke looked behind him and raised his voice.

「Or rather, you guys too, give her a bit more warning too!」

In respond to that voice, Wynn, Anna, and then the other two exorcists who were carrying down the luggage stopped their hand and turned their gaze to Kousuke simultaneously.

And then,

「Kousuke-dono. We too」

「Have a lot」

「Of work」

「If it’s Claudia-sama, it’s always like this so——」

「「「「It’s alright」」」」

What coordination. What strength of bond. The connecting speech as though it had been arranged beforehand was excellent.

Normally they would be acting a bit worried and gave follow-up for Claudia, but right now there was Kousuke who was doing that, so they left it to him.

「He, heheh」

Claudia was smiling with strangely dead eyes at her comrade's trust (?) on her. Kousuke's expression was cramping a bit at the exorcists who were doing their work briskly with serious face.

「Ah. Right, somehow sorry. Thank you for your hard work. Also, Claire, stop it with that smile yeah? Somehow, I cannot bear to look anymore. At least, add “e” at the beginning, make it ehehe, okay?」

「Ehehe?」

「Right, like that.」

「Ehehe.....」

He couldn't bear to look at either anyway.

Like that, Kousuke was supporting Claudia who was swung around by the Holy Cross so much she got injured that he was suspecting that perhaps the Holy Cross was hating her?, while the group got into a private car and departed toward Vatican.

The distance from the airport was close. The wall of Vatican came into view in just around ten minutes.

「Come to think of it, that place that was like a secret base, the second library got exploded and there was a hole opened but, are we heading there now? It still hasn't been repaired right?」

Kousuke suddenly recalled and asked.

Claudia was going to drink at that time, but she then tried to answer.

「Ah, about that. Actually——AA!?!」

*Bump* The car shook. The drink flew. The destination? Of course, the face of the saint.

Anna quickly said 「Here Claudia-sama. It's fine~」 while taking out a handkerchief to wipe Claudia's face. During that time Wynn was groaning

「Really, it's worse than usual.....h~mm」 while answering in Claudia's place.

「Just as Kousuke-dono said, the repair hasn't finished. Right now we are using the old headquarters. We are heading there right now.」

「Old headquarters?」

「Yeah, Omnibus's underground facility isn't just there. That place was a new facility that was created around ten years ago with various conveniences taken into consideration by the power of the current director.」

「Hee, certainly, there was a lot of passages there. I thought that the underground space is really vast but, so I'm actually right.」

While they were talking like that, ignoring Claudia who were frowning sadly at the orange juice color leaving spots on her white clothes, the car entered an underground parking lot of a building that was slightly at the outskirts of Vatican.

「Hm? We aren't going directly to inside Vatican?」

「Yeah. Our existence is generally kept secret even to the people inside the city. If we show ourselves too much, then people will have question like 'which department those guys who often show up here belong to?'. That's why, the coming and going of Omnibus members fundamentally use secret passage from outside the city.」

「I see.」

Actually, 'the home is constantly underground is harsh.....', that was the opinion of a director several generations ago, so Omnibus's office also existed inside Vatican palace and the hidden room of Vatican art museum. Of course, there was also a single building outside Vatican that was wholly used as Omnibus's facility.

While they were talking, the car parked on the space at the corner that seemed the most inconvenient spot.

Kousuke completely thought that they would walk from here, but right after that, a mechanical sound resounded. At the same time, the ground was sinking along with the car. Kousuke raised a surprised voice 「Oo!?!」.

Wynn and others smiled a bit happily at Kousuke's surprise.

「If you previously infiltrated by tailing Aziz, then you surely used the passage that is managed by Madame Marie, but that is exclusive for walking. This is an exclusive passage for car. We can go until inside Vatican riding the car.」(TN: Previously it was Madam Maya in chapter 302, but here it's Marie. I don't know if the author make a mistake or what)

「.....Even though it's a secret organization that exist since the ancient time, this is like a world of spy movie. The genre is mistaken.」

「Ahahah, Kousuke-san. You are watching movie too much. Even us are using computer and smartphone normally.」

Anna laughed teasingly. Kousuke smiled wryly thinking that it was true. Thinking back, the impetus that made him infiltrated Vatican also originated from the data that Aziz pulled out from a company's computer.

Before long, they entered an underground passage and the car advanced. They then reached a vast underground parking lot. They got out of the car, Claudia bumped her head on the roof part, and then they headed toward a metallic door deeper inside that had a cross carved on it.

When the door was unlocked by biometrics authentication and they entered inside, they came out into an underground space that was far older than the previous underground facility he saw before, but it boasted the same spaciousness.

At the same time, it seemed that the exorcists had contacted beforehand. There was that old man wearing cassock with absurd pressure there. His face that had a lot of wrinkles was frowning even more sternly, so it gave a dreadfulness that would make children cried 「Demon!？」 if they saw it.

For now, he wasn't carrying that book which was made from metal, so surely there wouldn't be any battle. He wished that there wouldn't be. The old man's atmosphere felt like he was going to attack him while saying 「You bastard, I'll kill you!」 anytime, but surely it was just his misunderstanding.

「Claire, also Wynn and others, good work. Looks like you all have concluded the talk safely.」

「Yes, director. Then, this person is——」



Claudia jogged toward the director happily and she was going to introduce Kousuke. But, the director stopped her with his hand and slowly walked forward. Just by doing that, he gave off a pressure that made one hallucinated as though the surface area of his face became three times bigger.

「I am Omnibus's director, Patrick Dime. Mr. Endou. I had acted rudely in the previous incident. My subordinates.....they are like my own children. Therefore, I lost my calm. Although, one of my children getting possessed by demon and my inability to keep my calm, all of them were incurred by my immaturity. I will accept any kind of punishment that you give.」

There was no lie in his eyes that were staring fixedly on Kousuke. At the very least, that was what he thought.

And so, he concluded that the director's eye glint that seemed as though to say 「You bastard, I'll strangle you to death!」 even while saying his apology was just his feeling. Kousuke shook his head with a somewhat twitching face.

「I'll just accept your apology. I have been asked by Anna-san and Wynn-san for forgiveness in exchange of their life. If I received an apology with such resolve, then I'll have no intention to put any blame to anyone anymore. I don't look like a narrow-minded man am I?」

The gaze of Director Dime snapped wide open. Kousuke twitched, but the brunt of that eye glint that seemed to say 「All you bastards, I'll obliterate you all together!」 was pointed to Wynn and Anna.

The two of them averted their gaze with all their strength. It seemed, Director Dime was angry at the two who were offering their life as they pleased. It looked like it was true that he was treasuring his subordinates like his own children.

Though it didn't look like that at all seeing at only his eyes.

「Punishment for sin. It's something natural. It's not narrow-mindedness. But, I offer my admiration and gratitude toward that disposition.」

Director Dime offered his hand. It seemed he was asking for a handshake of reconciliation. Naturally, Kousuke also responded. The terribly hard and rugged palm was more like a veteran warrior rather than a clergyman as expected.

Coupled with his eye glint that seemed to want to say 「I'll twist and crush your hand you bastard!」, Kousuke kept twitching.

Beside them, Claudia was smiling cheerfully looking really happy was the minimum salvation. She was splendidly softening the place's atmosphere.

As expected from the saint. In his mind the word “phony” was slightly attached with that title, but inside his heart he was sending applause saying 「You are a saint just as I thought!」.

But, the smiling face of such Claudia was changing the flow of event slightly.

Kousuke was going to let go of the handshake, but for some reason Director Dime wouldn't let go. The strength of the grip was like a vise.

‘Eh?’ Kousuke thought. Director Dime's words came toward such Kousuke.

「By the way, I wish to offer my gratitude for taking back Claire from the Unknown. If there is anything you want, then I wish to accommodate it as much as possible.」

「Ri, right, your welcome? But, I don't really wish any——」

*Clench*, strength entered Director Dime's hand. The glint of his eye seemed to say 「Shut your mouth. If not I'll annihilate you!」.

「However, in the end it's only as much as possible. It will be helpful if I can ask you to please refrain from asking something that cross the limit. Yes, for example like asking for Claire or something, you understand me?」

「Wai-, director!? What are you saying!?!」

‘Really, just what is this old man saying. Rather, the hand! Your hand is gripping too hard! My hand is making creaking sound! The pressure is too much!’

Kousuke read the mood and refrained from saying that no matter how much he wanted to.

But, seeing Claudia who was flustered and panicked with bright red face, Director Dime's eye glint was growing even sharper. It was already a sharpness that seemed to say 「Curse you world, I'll kill you!」!

「I, I won't wish for something like that!」

「Something, like that?」

Now he understood. Director Dime, right now he wasn't a director. He was just a stupid parent! He was just a stupid parent who was giving his everything to put a check on the opposite sex that his daughter the saint was harboring interest to for the first time!

At the corner of his sight, the dejected Claudia, Wynn and others who were holding their head, and then the members of Omnibus who were gathering around were sending their gaze to him. Kousuke let out cold sweat.

But, Kousuke was a man who could learn. He wouldn't do the same failure like the time with Emily for the second time. Being unable to speak out would result in scene of carnage (lol), the experience of bothering the airport staffs once was enough!

「I, I! Have a lover! I know that your daughter, is a really charming woman but! I have a lover so I absolutely won't lay my hand on her!」

「.....Oh. Is that so? Oh dear, I jumped to a wrong conclusion. Really, growing old is a fearful thing.」

The idiot parent Director Patrick Dime smoothly let go of his hand. His eye glint was also calming down to a mere 「You bastard, I'll send you to hospital!」.

「.....Lover.....lover.....lover?」

「Cla, Claudia-sama? Are you alright?」

Claudia was throwing his gaze to empty air 'hoe~' while she was there in body but not in spirit. Anna guessed various things while calling out to her.

The people of Omnibus also looked at each other's face while smiling wryly. They sighed in relieve and turned a complicated gaze toward Kousuke.....

In any case, it was really clear that Claudia was loved by everyone.

Most likely, after the attempt to capture Kousuke before this, Claudia was giving a fervent speech about Kousuke. And then, there was no doubt that she was also unprecedentedly angry at that time.

Their saint who had never got involved in romantic talk to the level of being a sheltered girl was holding interest to a man for the first time. She was talking about him while blushing. Including the fact that the man was one of the returnees, there was no doubt that they were paying attention to Kousuke in various meaning.

But, when the lid was opened, it was like this. The saint sunk instantly before the romance could begin.....

Of course, Claudia's feeling still wasn't something so clear that she would wish for such relationship, so in a sense, it was good that the existence of Kousuke's lover was exposed here but.....

「O lord, please grant punishment to this deeply sinful me! My heart is encroached by dark cloud, heavy thunder roared inside, it is raging violently like a hail of ice! Please, bestow a tribulation to me who has lost my pure heart! O lord-!」

「Cla, Claudia-sama! Please calm do~~wn! Ah, hey, what are you planning to do by activating the Holy Cross!? Ah, no, it's just going out of control? Anyway please calm do~~wn!」

The place became chaos.

Anna desperately tried to make Claudia who suddenly started confessing to god to return to her senses. The other people also rushed toward her in panic.

「.....Err, director. Perhaps it will be better to give a tour to Endou.....sama about this facility? The preparation for the Obelisk and also the saint barrier is also still continuing.」

「Hm. I guess so, Aziz. Mr. Endou, if you like, let me give you a tour inside Omnibus. If you don't need it, we have prepared a room so you can build up your readiness there. We have also prepared meal although it's nothing much. I will assign Aziz for your assistance, so if you need something you can tell Aziz.」

「Ye, yeah, thank you for that.」

He was thinking whether it would be fine to disregard that saint, but for some reason she was kneeling while praying passionately, so Kousuke quickly averted his gaze.

And then, Director Dime gave instructions one after another while sending away the gathering Omnibus members. Young man Aziz came in front of Kousuke during that.

「Endou.....sama. I am Aziz Stein. Thank you very much for that time. For saving me, and also Nee-san.....」

「Ah, Aziz-kun. You were seriously injured but, are you fine already?」

「.....I won't mind if you call me Aziz without honorific. My injury, yes, thanks to the medicine that Endou, sama applied, it is mostly healed.」

「That's great. Well, Wynn-san and others too, although they should be injured quite seriously too, they look like they are completely recovered, so I guess Omnibus also has something like healing type magic——aa~, you call it miracle here right? Yeah, look like you guys here also have something like that, so that might be a needless aid. Ah, also don't call me with “sama”. It's fine if you call me Kousuke you know? It looks like it's difficult to call me like that after all.」

「.....I'm sorry, then I'll call you Kousuke-san.」

Aziz seemed like he had expressionless face as his default state, but the look of his eyes relaxed slightly at Kousuke's words.

From a glance, he looked like he had difficult personality, but his atmosphere toward Kousuke was soft. As expected, him saving his life and taking back Claudia in respond to his wish must be leaving great impression inside Aziz.

By the way, just as Kousuke guessed, there was also exorcist at Omnibus's side who was handling sacred vessel of healing. It was that exorcist who healed Wynn and others. A male exorcist who was called by others as “elder sister”.

「.....So, what do you want to do, Kousuke-san? Do you want to have a tour or taking rest in your room?」

「Let's see. I think I want to see things like Obelisk or the saint barrier. Besides, there is also something I want to ask for a bit away from here.」

「? Understood.」

Aziz nodded and he led him forward. They were receiving gaze from

Omnibus's members while leaving the old underground headquarters.

It looked like that Aziz was someone taciturn in the first place. He didn't really talk along the way. But, it seemed he was curious about Kousuke and kept sending glances to him.

They rode an old elevator that connected to upper floor while Kousuke opened his mouth in the place of Aziz who was a poor talker.

「By the way, Omnibus's supreme commander is Rome's pope right? I will be too nervous to meet someone like him, but as I thought, perhaps I should at least give a greeting?」

「.....I think it's impossible for now. That person is our face at the surface. Certainly he is our supreme commander but, regarding the matter of this side of the world, he leaves everything to Director Dime.」

It seemed the pope of Rome was being pressed to deal with the bombing incident. For the person himself, he certainly wished to talk with the returnees no matter what, but from the view point of the people around him who didn't know about the circumstance, the returnees were just a Japanese group with unknown background.

If they were going to meet, it inevitably needed to be behind closed door. Also, the pope of Rome himself had no power of exorcist, so he was leaving everything in regard to demon to Director Dime.

The meeting would have to be after they overcame the danger this time and waited for a good time.....that was how it would be.

「.....Now that the plaza would be turned into battlefield, it will also be troubling if there other people who aren't Omnibus member. So, his holiness is working to not let people at the surface to get closer until the time the fate of the world is decided.」

「I see.」

It wasn't like there would not be anyone inside the Vatican, like staffs or clergymen. But at the very least no one would get closer to the plaza. And then, when the saint barrier by 140 statues was activated, no one would be able to notice what was going on inside the plaza. Sound and sight would be

intercepted, and an image of peaceful plaza would be projected to the outside world.

「Aziz will also be in the assault team?」

「.....Yes. There will be Claudia-sama, me, Wynn-san and Anna. Other than them, we will also send 80 percent of our whole force.」

「What about the director?」

「The director, he will act as fighting force along with several remaining exorcists against the demons in case they appear here. Though honestly speaking, I got the feeling that the director alone will be enough.....」

Young man Aziz was making a distant look for some reason.

When Kousuke asked, it seemed Patrick-san was previously the strongest exorcist who held the title of “Holy Apostle”. Because the previous director died, he was in his current position as replacement, but different from Claudia who was the strongest in the aspect of being a fortified gun battery, it seemed the director was the strongest solely in physical aspect. Even now when his age had gone past 70.

「Eh, wait a second. That person, didn't he carry a metal book that seems like a grimoire? I completely thought he would draw spell or something and then using that to cause miracle from the rear.」

「.....You must mean the “Book of Sacred Destruction”. Certainly, it's a sacred vessel of the highest class that can use five miracles of barrier, binding, attack, healing, and strengthening.」

「Ain't that right.」

「.....But, the director used it solely as blunt weapon.」

「Hm? Blunt weapon?」

According to Aziz, just like how a teacher would use book to hit a sleeping student awake, it seemed the director directly used that metal book to hit demon. Or else he would wrapped chain around it and used it as flail, or else he would hold it up as shield, sometimes he would throw it to shot down the enemy.

Like that, his nicknames when he was young were “Beating Priest”, “Desecrator of Book”, “That guy, he actually got no fail at all ain’t he?”, “Absolute Demon Killerman”, “Physical Miracle User”, and so on.

「.....He is a person who had created many legends. In the past, there were four demons who were members of the Solomon 72 Pillars appearing at the same time. He chased them away alone, and he also mounted the last one and then beat it up black and blue. It was still talked even now. It’s also written in our teaching material, that we absolutely mustn’t try to copy that.」

The exorcist comrades who came running to the scene of battle at that time saw Patrick-san continuing to beat up the demon using “Book of Sacred Destruction” expressionlessly and for a moment it seemed they thought he was the demon. ‘We have to save the assaulted victim!’ they thought.

「Seriously? If it’s like that, isn’t it better to send the director to attack hell instead.....」

「.....No, to kill Unknown, the “King Class” with certainty, it has to be Claudia-sama no matter what. There was no user of Holy Cross for decades. There is no sacred vessel that surpass it.」

‘Besides’, Aziz continued. According to him, putting aside when he was in this world, Director Dime was old, so he wouldn’t be able to endure the “Wind of Lamentation” in hell for long.

「Eh? There is countermeasure against it?」

「.....Yes. It’s by using holy water. If we consume it, we will be able to hold out for around one hour.」

「One hour.....」

‘Short’, Kousuke thought. It might not be a problem if they could immediately face the enemy right after entering hell, but although they understood the location, it would be a battle after investigating the vast hell. He couldn’t help but thought that it was a really severe limitation.

「.....In any case, not everyone will be able to reach Unknown. More than half will become sacrificial pawn in order to send Claudia-sama to reach the Unknown. I said one hour because it’s the possible survival time for a person in



case the holy water is divided equally.」

「——tsu」

From the beginning no one intended to have everyone returned alive from hell. Perhaps, even Claudia wasn't thinking about the path to return home after defeating the Unknown.

「Hey, Aziz. To be frank, I think it's pointless. When Yue-san get serious, there is no being who can win against her. What's more Shirasaki and others will also be with her, even I will join in. No matter how powerful a demon Unknown is, our victory is unwavering. This isn't being overconfident or being optimistic, it's a fact.」

‘That's why, stop with your plan of going to hell’, Kousuke spoke implicitly.

However, even after hearing the words that could be taken as humiliation to all the exorcists, Aziz gazed back straightforwardly at him without even looking angry at all.

「.....Even so, we are exorcist.」

That was why, we couldn't just watch. Even if there wasn't even a one in thousand chance, there might be a one in hundred million chance the worst could happen. That was why, even if it was pointless they would risk their life.

「.....Besides?」

「Besides?」

Seeing the exorcist who was younger than him showing a will of steel, Kousuke also returned a straightforward gaze in respond.

But, the continuation of the words that Aziz was going to say didn't come out. It seemed he recalled just barely that it was something he shouldn't say.

Aziz didn't open his mouth even after waiting for a while. While they were talking while walking, they came out into a room inside the Vatican Palace. From there, they passed through a passage inside a wall once more, and they unexpectedly came out to the rooftop of Vatican Palace.

They could take an unbroken view of St. Peter's Plaza from here. The traces of bombing here and there were dirtying the beautiful plaza. It was really sad. The

members of Omnibus were busily running around the plaza. There were also a lot of saint statues at the surrounding. They were praying to the statues, or placing some kind of tool around.

Depending on the situation, it would become the last fortress that protected earth. Every single one of them looked desperate.

Here, Bernard and others would also arrive in a few more hours.

Kousuke stared at the plaza for a while, and then he brought up the important subject to Aziz.

「About the continuation of “besides” that you said before, is it about Claire?」

「!」

It seemed he hit the bull’s eye. Aziz’s face seemed to ask how did he know.

「When Yue-san said to leave it to us, Claire, she made a face as though she was enduring something. Her expression immediately returned to normal but.....Wynn-san said that Claire’s clumsiness is worse than usual. I was wondering that perhaps, it wasn’t just her being freed from her tension after the discussion ended, that perhaps her focus was on other things and she was distracted.」

「That’s.....」

「I’m only guessing but, Claire, does she want to defeat Unknown by her own hand?」

「tsu.....Kousuke-san, you, how far you.....」

「I don’t know anything about Claire’s circumstance. I’m only wondering that she is being targeted by Unknown to become a mother body, could it be related somehow to “twelve years ago” when that guy was confirmed for the first time?」

Kousuke’s gaze that was directed to the plaza glanced at Aziz. Aziz reflexively averted his gaze quickly.

「.....」

Aziz fell silent. He could be seen hesitating. He wanted to talk. But, it wasn’t

something that he should say. Kousuke could clearly understand that Aziz was thinking like that.

Kousuke shrugged and spoke with a wry smile.

「My bad, I don't think it will trouble you that much. I only thought of asking about what you know of the incident twelve years ago while you are giving me a tour.....it seems, it's not a story that can be talked that easily huh.」

「No.....」

Silence filled the place for a while. There was only the hustling and bustling of people reaching their ears.

Before long, Kousuke was going to suggest for them to return back. But before he could, Aziz opened his mouth.

「.....I, I don't want Nee-san to die.」

「.....Yes.」

「As an exorcist, it's out of the question to be holding one's life dear before a battle against demon. But, even so, I want Nee-san to live. She is the person who saved me from that cold place. Kindness, warmth, those kind of things, it was Nee-san who gave them all to me.」

「.....」

Aziz Stein, He was born between parents who worshipped demon. He was raised as sacrifice for the sake of summoning a greater demon.

Six years ago. Before he was safeguarded at eight years old, he didn't even have his own will. He wasn't allowed to. That was only natural. There was no need at all to grant humanity to a child who would be sacrificed someday.

General education and the minimum skill to interact with other people were crammed into him so they wouldn't be suspected by the surrounding. Even so in the end that was just an acting that he was made to learn. It was like programming a robot to take action A if action B was taken against him.

Far from acting like a child, he didn't even have human-like emotion. Aziz was like a puppet. It was Director Dime who adopted him because he had the quality to become exorcist. And then, it was Claudia who taught him humanity

from zero.

That was why, it was only Aziz who wasn't Claudia's subordinate or comrade, but a little brother.

「The truth is, if the returnees will end everything, I don't want Nee-san to go to hell. If I have power, I want to defeat Unknown.」

But,

「But, that's not Nee-san's wish..... I don't want to let Nee-san go to her death but, I also want to grant her wish just as much.」

「.....Wish, huh.」

Aziz turned his gaze toward Kousuke glaringly. A drop of tear was gathering at the corner of his eye.

「I thought it was a miracle. It was already hopeless, I understood that I'll be dead, reality is always cruel, that was why, I thought that it was over already. And yet, you appeared. Like a miracle, you smashed even the cold reality. For me you, it's you who are exactly, the messenger of god.」

Aziz turned his body along to fully face him. Kousuke also turned fully toward him.

「Can you, save Nee-san for me?」

Aziz thought that it was a wish that was only convenient for him. His face was thinking, 'no way miracle can happen that many times in human's life'.

Even so, he was cursing his own weakness that couldn't help but cling on other while helplessly trying to grasp the string of salvation that was hanging before his eyes.....

'Aa, surely this is how those cultists think', Aziz thought. He who was born as their child and understood their feeling was disqualified as an exorcist, and as a servant of god. Surely he wouldn't be welcomed into the heaven.

The wind blew gently and caressed Aziz's front hair. His look that peeked out made it even clearer how young he was when seen from nearby. It could be seen from his desperate expression how much he didn't want to let go of the family that he finally obtained.

For a little while, Kousuke stared fixedly at Aziz who was waiting for answer. Before long he scratched his head. With a small voice he was muttering 「This is bad, really bad, me. Depending on the case, it will be a bit of deathly situation even before facing the demons.....」.

But, a beat later, he roughly stroked Aziz's head that was tilted in confusion. And then, he smiled wryly at the surprised Aziz while,

「For now, I'll go to where Claire is.」

Saying that, he turned on his heel. 「Ah.....」 Aziz's voice slipped out. Kousuke turned to look across his shoulder while adding more words.

「Well, it will work out somehow.」

Aziz was dumbfounded. And then, the next moment his face turned like he would burst out crying and he deeply bowed his head.

He kept doing so until that back which looked extremely big vanished from view.

—  
—  
—

Inside the church. There was someone kneeling in front of the altar offering prayer. It was Claudia.

Her bright atmosphere when she arrived at Omnibus's underground facility didn't remain at the slightest. She was simply maintaining the silence. But, seeing how the two hands that were clasped together in front of her chest were turning white, it was clear how hard she was tightly clenching her hands. It shed light how her mind wasn't calm by any mean.

Suddenly, Claudia lifted her face. And then she turned around.

「Oo, you notice me just as I thought. Even though I was hiding myself a bit.」

「Kousuke-sama.」

Claudia smiled a bright and gentle smile. Kousuke too also smiled happily that he was being noticed.

「How did you notice?」

「Why do you think that I won't notice?」

Both of them tilted their head in confusion looking like they were wondering from the bottom of their heart. A beat later, they laughed together at the funny situation.

「What are you praying for?」

「For everyone's safety, and for the people's peace.」

「Hm~m, is that so?」

Kousuke's reply felt like it was implying something. Claudia's eyes twitched for an instant.

「This is a dangerous time for the world. Isn't such prayer only natural?」

「No, I completely thought that you are praying to the god of clumsy girl for betterment.....」

「What is god clumsy girl!? There is no such god! Or rather, it make it sounds like my god is a clumsy girl!」

As expected, it seemed she couldn't overlook making joke of god. She pointed straight with her index finger looking like a big sister scolding 「Bad!」 to a naughty kid. She was glaring at Kousuke. But, as expected her appearance and atmosphere were gentle and soft, so it was lacking in pressure.

That kind of aspect was really like the image of saint in general. Kousuke was thinking things like whether Claire's vocation was something like childcare worker or the like.

「My bad. I guess it was a joke that isn't suitable for a clergy. But well, it's also a fact that it didn't look like that your prayer was wholeheartedly for the peace of the world.」

「Eh?」

Claudia spontaneously held her breath. Kousuke stood at her side and stared at the large cross that was hung up in the church.

「Why are you going to hell?」

It was a question that could be considered as philosophical question, but Claudia guessed the meaning accurately.

「Of course, it's because that is the mission of us exorcists. ....From the view point of Kousuke-sama and others, perhaps you think that we are unreliable or that it will be meaningless but.....」

‘That’s not true’, he couldn’t say that.

In fact, Kousuke thought that it was meaningless. Inside Kousuke, Hajime, Yue, and others were the world’s strongest without any room for argument. If something brought them harm then they would obliterate it, whether it was demon or god. They were transcendental people who could possibly do that.

Although, for the exorcists who didn’t have that deep of connection with the returnees, it was natural that they couldn’t have that much trust. Thus, he had no intention to reject their ardor to also ride into hell as insurance.

They also had their own pride. They were literally risking their life for the mission of protecting mankind from demon. Even if it would end up meaningless, there wasn’t the slightest reason for them to not take action.

Just like how Omnibus had no right to stop the returnees, the returnees also had no right to stop Omnibus.

「Mission is it? You all have been fighting all this time for that. You cannot just concede the fate of the world to some group that you don’t really know although you have confirmed their strength and achievement to a certain degree. I understand that.」

「Kousuke-sama.....」

「But, for Claudia, that’s not all right?」

「Tsu.....that’s.....」

Kousuke moved his gaze from the cross toward Claudia.

「Did something happen twelve years ago?」

「.....」

Claudia held her tongue. This time it was her who turned her gaze toward the

cross. But it was an action that should be called “averting one’s gaze”.

「.....An incident happened when Unknown’s existence was confirmed for the first time. I mentioned that.」

「Yep. And, Claudia is related to that incident, that’s why, you actually don’t want us to subjugate the Unknown. Isn’t that right?」

「The, there is no way I’m thinking like that-」

Claudia’s voice turned panicky. That was the greatest proof that he hit the bull’s eye.

Surely even she herself also thought so. Claudia gasped and closed her mouth, however she sighed in resignation knowing that she couldn’t cover it up.

「Kousuke-sama is actually a terrible person aren’t you? Doing something like trying to forcefully expose a maiden’s secret like this.」

Even though she was doing her best to suppress the emotion that wanted to overflow out. Even though she wanted to be a saint, a model exorcist and desperately formed her determination.

‘Isn’t it fine for me to be an exorcist that pushed forward for the mission?’, Claudia glared at Kousuke reproachfully with such gaze.

Kousuke’s wry smile deepened while he opened his mouth.

「Frankly speaking, for me, the incident this time has stopped being a serious problem by the time Yue-san and others came out. I can see that Claire and others are going to ride into hell with the resolve to die but, well, you all won’t die. I won’t let that happen after all.」

「uu.....」

Claudia glared while her cheeks were reddening slightly.

Kousuke didn’t really let that bother him and he continued.

「The exorcist called Leda. I heard his last scream.」

「Leda.....we recovered his body. As I thought, it was Kousuke-sama.」

「Yes. That guy, he was crying. He said, please save me.」



「.....」

Claudia's gentle look warped into anguish. The traitor exorcist——Leda Rocca. She was acquainted with him for a long time. To the degree that she thought of him as big brother.

With what kind of feeling he betrayed them? Did he give his heart to the demon? Hearing Leda's last words, Claudia guessed it. Not a few number of exorcist, especially exorcist with abundant experience, would one day become suddenly seized by a feeling.

Her chest was flooded with a feeling of shame from her inability to sense his completely exhausted heart.

「Also, I was also told, save her, by someone.」

「.....It's Aziz isn't it?」

Kousuke shrugged. Claudia was making a conflicted expression that was in hesitation, wondering whether she should be happy, or should she be angry at her step-brother who was making a mistaken wish as exorcist.

Kousuke turned his body to fully face Claudia, and then peered into her jade colored eyes so that she wouldn't dodge the matter.

「If I didn't notice, then that would be fine too. But, if I have noticed, then it's a bit difficult to act clueless. If it was some time ago, then I might avert my eyes but, it seems, I am a hero for the people who are idolizing me.」

Claudia puffed up her cheeks, thinking that he really was a terrible person. After all when he said such thing while staring at her, the first on the list of those “people who idolized him” must be another woman, yes, surely it was that cute girl with blonde hair.

She puffed up her cheeks like balloon, however, she didn't avert her gaze at all. A feeling of embarrassment was welling up inside her, thinking that her face that was reflected on the eyes of Kousuke who was staring on her, was able to make this kind of face.

Without minding something like Claudia's state of mind, Kousuke asked the thing that he wanted to know the most with a powerful voice.

「We will finish everything, with that——」

——‘Will Claudia Barenberg be saved?’

She would be saved. Obviously she would be saved. It didn’t matter who would be the one to defeat that greater demon who was attempting to rule this world. The peace of her important people. If the powerful enemy of human race could be destroyed, she would happily bow her head, offer her life, and took every possible method that was more certain.

That was only natural. Whether as an exorcist, and also as a human.

Something like personal feeling.....

Something like personal grudge.....

There wasn’t even any need to weigh the two choices.....

And yet, when she noticed,

「——The truth is-, I want to defeat him-」

She yelled so.

「Having it ended in some place I don’t know, by people who I don’t know, such thing-」

The gaze that didn’t allow her to avert her eyes dragged out the heart that she was desperately pushing down.

「Just how much do you think I have worked hard!? I vomited blood-, I even threw away normal life-. I risked my life-. Everything is for defeating that guy-, Unknown-. I gave my everything!!」

Yes, everything,

「In order to take revenge for my father and mother!!」

From frustration, from sadness, tears were overflowing in large drops from Claudia’s eyes.

It was only one time, for her to cry like this, expressing her emotion. That day, the day she lost everything, in front of Director Dime who became her second father, the day she declared to become exorcist.

Since that day she swore the oath to defeat Unknown without fail someday until today, she had never shouted and cried like this.

But, the dam of her heart once broken couldn't be fixed that easily.....

Claudia grabbed Kousuke's clothes as though to vent her anger and strongly pressed her forehead on his chest.

Kousuke softly patted her back, *pon pon* in consideration.

Like that, what she spoke mumblingly along with words that were spilling out from her mouth, it was certainly a “common story” for those who fought demon. It was something that was helplessly tragic.

Twelve years ago.

When Claudia was nine years old. It was her father's birthday.

The impetus was from a long time friend of her father.

Her father himself wouldn't hesitate to call that person his best friend. That man would be invited several times a month to their house for meal. Claudia was also looking up to him as a kind uncle who she often played with.

She would even rely on that “uncle who was father's best friend” and consulted of things that she couldn't say to her parents from embarrassment. For example, yes, like what present would make her father the happiest in his birthday.

Uncle smiled brightly and told her. The dread that ran on her back for an instant that time was something that Claudia should be more concerned about but.....it was too unfair to ask that from a nine year old girl.

Uncle lowered his voice, as though he would speak a secret, as though he was going to reveal something confidential.

——‘How about I teach you a method to have angel come to your house?’

Claudia didn't doubt his words. The reason was because Barenberg family was devoted Catholic for generations. And then, uncle was also a priest.

‘Uncle is amazing! To think you know a method to meet angel!’

Being able to invite angel in father's birthday. Surely father would be happy!

Of course, this was a tragic story.

Therefore, the summoning succeeded. And then, what appeared was,

「So it was Unknown.」

「.....Yes.」

Claudia's magic power that was tremendous for an earthling, and the correct summoning method. And then, using the medium of Claudia herself who was the best sacrifice, Unknown that was summoned by *uncle* killed Claudia's father who was the target.

「I only knew this later but, that man, it looked like he was harboring feeling toward my mother.」

With the man's position as a priest, they wouldn't be able to marry, therefore he had also never confessed his feeling. Before long Claudia's mother married with her father, and Claudia was born.

There wasn't anything like a big impetus that made him throw away his faith. After continuing to watch the happiness that might be obtained by him, he was unable to distance himself even though he understood that he should, and before long his dissatisfaction became hatred to god, and it accumulated.....

Yes, he then succumbed to temptation.

The man who was going mad bit by bit in the end sold his soul to demon.

What was unexpected was Claudia's disposition that was too excellent as medium, no, it could even be said as the best.

「I don't know if it was an accident, or inevitability. It was Unknown who was summoned. That guy obeyed the contract and killed father, and just before he took me as sacrifice, he noticed my value.」

「As a mother body?」

「Yes. In the first place, that man's summoning ceremony didn't have that much power to be able to restrain Unknown. Unknown killed that man, and then he also killed mother in front of me just to make me despair. In front of me, mama and papa's necks were-」

Her hand clenched hard on Kousuke's chest. Even though she was looking down, he knew. Surely, her expression was distorted into hatred. It wasn't a saint there, but the woman called Claudia Barenberg was laid bare there.

The story after that was exactly like what he heard in the security bureau.

Actually, from slightly before that, Omnibus that grasped the information that there was a person who was deeply investigating about demon even while being a priest was investigating that man. Therefore, after Unknown was summoned, exorcists came running relatively quickly.

But, with his power that was already mighty from the beginning, Unknown's power in the state of half materialized from obtaining Claudia's magic power was tremendous. The exorcists were helpless against him, however, just before they were annihilated, Unknown was pulled back due to intervention from hell.

He was dragged away while screaming that when the time came, he would come for Claudia to use her as mother body.

「Since that day twelve years ago, I have trained until now for the sake of this day. I understand-. I really understand-. It's the best choice to leave this to Kousuke-sama and others! But, however, then what about my twelve years!? This pitch black feeling of mine, how should I clear it up!？」

Above all else,

「How should I apologize to mama and papa!？」

Yes, that was exactly the foundation of Claudia.

She had desire of revenge. Her body was also burning with hatred.

However, her prime feeling was that.

Something that was called out by her shallow self killed her father and mother. Creating a tragedy that couldn't be taken back.

Even though she couldn't even apologize anymore. Even though the people who she should repent toward weren't in this world anymore.

If she couldn't even end this matter with her own hand, then how should she apologize to her father and mother.

Even if they wouldn't forgive her, even if Claudia herself wouldn't be able to forgive herself for her whole life, killing the enemy was the only remaining atonement for her.

Claudia's yell that was as though she was vomiting blood echoed inside the church.

That voice resounded excessively clearly. When it completely vanished, even when silence returned to the church, there wasn't any words from the two for a while.

Before long, Claudia slowly separated her body from Kousuke.

「.....This is how I am. It's ugly right? I desperately persuaded myself that it's my mission as an exorcist, and I was finally able to keep up my respectability. Even so, I vented my feeling like this to you, I'm only a human of this level.」

Dark eyes, and clumsy stiff smile.

'I have nothing more to say', 'please leave me alone', or perhaps she was unable to endure Kousuke's straightforward gaze, she averted her gaze as though to say those. Claudia kneeled in front of the cross in order to deceive her heart once more.

But, before that,

「If you use the Holy Cross, will you be able to kill that guy for sure?」

「.....Eh?」

It wasn't scorning words or even consoling words. It was just confirming words, which caused Claudia to become befuddled spontaneously.

Kousuke lightly ignored such bewildered state of Claudia and asked more.

「So? Will you be able to defeat him with certainty? Or else is it just a gamble with low odd?」

「Eh, ah, err, I, I think I can defeat him.」

「You think?」

Kousuke repeated with a sharp gaze and tone that sounded criticizing. Claudia corrected herself in panic.

「I, I can defeat him. The Holy Cross, it's different from the other sacred vessel. The opponent's strength is irrelevant, it will display tremendous effect simply because the opponent is demon. There are also several records that mentioned how it destroyed King Class demon in the past.」

「I see. Can you use it perfectly?」

Kousuke's question that was too serious and pressuring caused Claudia to only be able to nod up and down repeatedly in high speed.

Seeing that, Kousuke nodded 「Yosh」. After that, for some reason, with a stiff expression as though he was going to head toward a certain death, while he was trickling out cold sweat as though he was facing a death god—he pressed the buttons of his smartphone *pi-po-pa*.

*Turururu* Kousuke was listening to the calling sound with an expression like a prisoner who was listening to the countdown of the execution.

And then,

『.....Nn. Endou. Finished preparing?』

「Not yet, Yue-san. There is a chance in strategy, so I'm contacting you.」 (TN: Endou used extremely polite language here.)

From the other side of the phone, voice of 「Nn?」 resounded continued with 「Heh?」 from right beside him.

『.....What do you mean?』

「It's a switch of the assault team and the reserve team. The main force will be the exorcist force lead by the saint and me. Yue-san and others, please remain as the reserve force.」

『.....』

‘The silence, it's terrifying!’ As though to say that, Kousuke's hand was trembling in contrast with his strong tone.

『.....I said, I will exterminated that lot. They picked a fight, I accepted. Any complaint?』

「I, I have. It will be troubling if Yue-san exterminates them. Claire has

accepted the fight first. Claire will be the one to settle the bill.」

In the middle of the conversation, Yue must felt doubtful at Kousuke's incomprehensible request and put the call to speaker mode. From the other side of the phone, the agitated commotion of the classmates were conveyed. 「He, he is, talking back to Yue-sama!? Kousuke-, do you want to die!?」 「Endou-kun-, you mustn't be hasty! Come back to your senses!」 「Lord, will die」 「What a novel way of suicide」, and so on could be heard.

Kousuke was trembling fiercely, but seeing at his side Claudia was holding her breath while covering her mouth with her hands, he firmly held his position.

「I understand that Yue-san is angry, I also understand that leaving this to Yue-san will be the quickest and surest way to end this matter. But, it's no good like that. There won't be salvation. I'm begging you, Yue-san. First, please let us do it.」

『.....Even though it's concerning the fate of the world?』

「Ko, Kousuke-sama!? This is concerning the fate of the world you know!?」

Yue talked indifferently while Claudia talked nervously.

Kousuke looked at Claudia, however, his focus turned toward the scaa~ry vampire princess at the other side of the phone and he snorted 「Hah」.

「So what if it's the fate of the world. I'm the right-hand man of the man who murdered the hell out of a god for the sake of a single woman y'know? What's the point weighing the world and a woman at this point huh. Don't say anything worthless like that if you are the first wife of the demon king.」

Screams resounded from the other side of the phone. It was the voices of the classmates. 「Kousuke! Kowtow right away! Life is the most important thing!」 or 「Yue-san! That guy, his head is a bit like that! Please forgive him!」 and so on could be heard.

Kousuke, his tone was strong, however, with a face that was the color of ash, he raised his voice in a desperation that was already abandoning everything.

「In the first place, this is an extension of the job that Nagumo entrusted to me. That's why, I'll take care of it my way. Yue-san and others should butt out



from this.」

‘I said it! I really said it! I’m sorry please forgive me!’ The abyss lord of his heart was kowtowing.

Time that was equal to eternity was flowing. The other side of the phone was also dead silent. Air of tension where even the sound of gulping might be audible was hanging within the silence.

『.....Endou, turn on the speaker.』

Kousuke who swiftly obeyed Yue’s instruction. It felt like his trembling hand would cut the phone call by itself, but he desperately controlled himself. If he cut the call right now, Kousuke’s nether region would also get cut. It wouldn’t be smash, but a slash coming for that spot. Seriously spare him from that.

『.....Claudia Barenberg.』

「Ye, yes!」

Yue must had heard the voice of Claudia before this. It was Claudia who Yue was speaking to.

Claudia replied with a nervous state. Her back was stiffly straight.

After a bit of silence, Yue silently asked.

『.....Speak the important thing, with your own words. What do you want to do?』

「Tsu.....that’s.....」

It seemed Yue had guessed various things from Kousuke’s words and the discussion in security bureau. She directly asked Claudia of her feeling.

Claudia was at a loss for words. Her mission as exorcist resounded in her heart. She could hear the voice of god scolding her ugly heart. That voice insisted ‘throw away personal feeling’.

A voice reached such Claudia.

「What’s so bad about revenge?」

「Kousuke-sama?」

「Is it that bad to have ugly heart huh. We're human. Even that, is a "heart" that everyone naturally have right?」

「A heart, that human, have.....」

Kousuke walked toward Claudia and he began to speak while forgetting that the speaker mode was already on.

「Even exorcists are human. Leda wanted to be saved. Even Aziz was asking for salvation. Wynn-san and Anna-san, other people of Omnibus, even the director are surely like that too. Selfless devotion—yeah, those are wonderful words. I respect that. But, if people you want to save cannot be saved because of that, then it can eat shit.」

Claudia's eyes snapped wide open. Kousuke grabbed Claudia's shoulder and turned a blazing gaze toward her.

「I am strong you know? I'll crush any obstacle whatever it is, I'll open the door that Claire wished for. That's why, don't line up tedious apology and just say it. What do you have to do so that Claire, Claire and everyone else can be saved?」

「.....」

A face that was going to cry was reflected on Kousuke's eyes. However, compared to the stiff smile that looked despairing before this, it was a far better face. Kousuke's lips split open into a wide fearless grin.

Claudia scrubbed her eyes hard. While thinking of things like 'Aa, this person, he is certainly suitable to be a demon king's right-hand man. It's unthinkable that he is god's messenger. After all he is giving this kind of sweet temptation like a demon'.

And then, with a voice that was filled with spirit, she yelled toward Yue who was waiting for an answer at the other side of the phone while her gaze was still fixed on Kousuke.

「I will be the one to defeat that guy! Since that day twelve years ago, that guy is my prey! Please don't get involved!」

The noisy other side of the phone fell silent *shi~n* once more.

A beat later, Yue opened her mouth.

『.....I see. It can't be helped if there is a prior reservation.』

「Tsu.....is it, really fine?」

『.....Nn.』

The voice didn't contain anger or even displeasure. Rather, Yue continued her words with a voice that even emitted warmth.

『.....However, if you show too much unsightliness, I'll take care of it right away.』

「That's, yes. But of course.」

『.....Nn. Even if you fail.....I won't hand over this world. So don't worry, do your best.』

「Aa.....」

Understanding that it was Yue's encouragement in her own way, Claudia was at a loss for words. 'You can follow your own feeling and realize it without feeling troubled.....', because she understood that Yue was meaning like that.

However, before she could actually convey her gratitude, Yue's voice returned to being cold and called Kousuke.

「Yes, Yue-san.」

『.....Endou. You are getting conceited huh. Remember this when you go back.』

「EE!? Wai-, Yue-san!? Just now, how should I say it, it was like the flow of the atmosphere or-」

『.....Emirin's eyes are also pitch black. My lightning dragon is growling. And then, everyone here is grinning.』

「!!?」

From the other side of the phone,

『Kousuke!? That person is really that fine!? Because she has big breast!?』

『Emily, calm down. Kousuke-san. As someone who will become a father-in-

law, I want to have a little bit of talk with you later, it's fine right?』

『Kousuke. Right now, Onii-chan is feeling unprecedented respect and desire to kill.』

『Ko, Kou-nii, spare me alreadyyy. Speaking out such embarrassing line in front of this many people.....just what kind of face I should make as your little sister~?』

『.....Dear, what should we do? That Kousuke, making a new wife again.....』

『That's, right. Shuu-san, next time, how about having meal together with Hajime-kun with only us men? Regarding Kousuke's future, I want to ask for consultation about various things though.』

『Ha-ha-ha, of course it's okay. I'll give you a lecture about the way to spend a fun life with a lot of daughter-in-law!』

Such voices from family came. And then the usual voices from the male classmates that were like 'Abyss lord should die no mercy, but I respect you a bit. Please introduce to us cute exorcist girl' also came through.

「Ko, Kousuke-sama? Are you all right?」

「Kousuke.....isn't fine, desu.」(TN: Perhaps a reference to Haruna of Kantai Collection)

With a roundabout talk that felt familiar from somewhere, his complexion was busily changing from blue to red, from white to yellow, and then back to red again, while his eyes was changing into the dead eyes of rotten fish. Claudia-san, she was a bit creeped out, thinking 「Hu, human, can change complexion color like this?」.

Japan

Kousuke was muttering 'I don't want to return to home.....' with a small voice. Yue-sama sent her words toward such Kousuke. Her voice was fearless, while sounding a bit amused.

『.....Endou. You are recognized by many as someone who Hajime trust. And then, you are someone who will become Shia's relative. Mere big talk won't be tolerated.』

「.....I will surely take responsibility for the words that I spat out.」

『.....Nn. Endou, I'll say it in Hajime's place.』

「Yes.」

『.....I'll leave the rest to you.』

「Roger. I'll take care of the rest. ....Thank you very much, Yue-san.」

At the end Yue replied 「Nn」 and cut the call.

Kousuke sighed in relieve. Claudia approached him timidly, and then she looked up with an expression of reflection. Naturally, her eyes that were gazing up at him were glistening with passion and tears of gratitude.

It was an expression that would surely make anyone staggered in one hit if they were a man.

Claudia was opening her mouth to say something, but it seemed she couldn't find the words, that her mouth closed and opened several times. The feeling welling up inside was too strong that any kind of words of gratitude felt clichéd, and no words that felt worthy would come out.

Seeing Claudia in such state, Kousuke smiled wryly and shrugged.

「Let's do something like that when everything is over. What, there is no need to get worked up. Claire can just beat up that bastard to your heart's content. I'll cut open the path. The strongest wife~s are guaranteeing the world's safety. See, there is no problem right?」

「Yehs.....yes-. Kousuke-sama-」

Overcome by emotion, Claudia buried her face on Kousuke's chest once more. Kousuke smiled wryly while patting her back.

But, at that time,

「Mu? What are you guys doing? What? Right now isn't good? Don't talk foolishly. Claire is inside right? Aah, make way! It'll be time for strategy mee——」

The one who entered inside the church was Director Dime who was looking irritated. And then, there were also Wynn, Anna, and several other members of Omnibus who were clinging on his legs desperately trying to stop him.

The gaze of Director Dime was turned to inside the church. He perfectly caught sight of Claire-chan and Kousuke-kun hugging each other.

The time, stopped.

Anna yelled 「Run awaaaay! Kousuke-san-, run awayyyy~~!!」.

Right after that,

「——O lord, please grant your divine protection to your pious believer. Bring down the iron hammer of god to the sinner!」

A metallic book that was taken out from who knew where flew out like a cannon shell. Chain was wrapped around it like a seal. It was a huge book that became like a flail!

「Nowaa!?!」

Kousuke immediately dodged by getting down in the form of pushing down Claudia. *GOU-* The “Book of Sacred Destruction” passed above his head along with a sound that caused chill to run through his back, then with a terrible sound of destruction the altar was destroyed.

「Ko, Kousuke-sama.....I, I'll be troubled, if it's too sudden. As expected, doing it in front of god is.....」

「Eh?」

Claudia-san seemed unable to see anything else other than Kousuke. Her cheeks flashed red and then she shyly averted her gaze without showing resistance.

*Clink clink clink* The sound of chain was ringing. The “Book of Sacred Destruction” meandered in the air like a living thing and returned to Director Dime. And then, seeing Claudia's state, the cardinal and the director of anti demon organization who had just destroyed an altar like a demon once more readied his book in a way that was absolutely wrong to use a book.

「Kousuke-sama.....you must not.....even though you have a lover already..... au」

「You bastard, I'll kill you!」

A saint below. A demon at the entrance.

「.....When everything is over, I'll be alone for a bit, let's do that.」

Sorrow wafted of from Kousuke whose eyes had genuinely turned dead.

Whether it was in foreign land or his homeland, it seemed there was nothing but suffering waiting for him.

—

—

—

Vatican city, outside the rampart.

There countless silhouettes were starting to gather. Several hundred people were immediately growing to become several thousand people. Their eyes were similarly—red.

The moon tonight was oddly full moon where evil was heightened.

It too was starting to be dyed red.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

※ New book information

At 25, Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou volume 8, comic version volume 3, and spinoff “Nichijou” volume 1 will be on sale. The fast place might already have them lined up at the shopfront.



Volume 8 is the arc of conquering great labyrinth of the sea of trees. Like always, other than revision and alteration, there will be extra story too. Especially the last boss battle is almost totally rewritten. It might be interesting to compare with the Web version of which is better.

The left image is the special version that has Drama CD attached. In the chronological order, it happens after conquering Melusine, when they were staying in Ankaji. The barrier of Ankaji can also be used as replacement lie detector. Like Hajime's lie, or the oasis is a haunted area, or the darkness of the heart overflowing, it's a story with that kind of after story mood.

Kaori participate for the first time! There will also be the dialogue between Yue and Kaori. Please enjoy it by all means with voice.





## 《Animate-sama》

- Arifureta fairy tale *Snow White*

The fairy tale series that is already turned into a series. This time it's Snow White. But, the main character will be that person of the dragon country...

「Mirror, o mirror, mirror-san. The one who art the most beautiful in the world art, m, me correct?」 「——Chih」 It will be a story like that.

## 《Chain store-sama》

- Prohibited matter of sublimation magic

What sublimation magic can evolve isn't just magic. Surely feeling can also be evolved.

Then, if a feeling that is already at max value is evolved...a story like that.

## 《Tora no Ana-sama》

- Beloved daughter's deficiency disease

While staying in Fea Bergen, the one who showed up suddenly is a rabbit eared little girl. From interacting with the midget girl, the figure of beloved daughter surfaced at the back of Hajime-papa's mind.... Hajime who is unusually a bit gentle is priceless, by Yue-sama.

## 《Gamers-sama & Shosen-sama》

- I'm working as an elder at a black country but, perhaps I'm no good already

Live strongly, Alfrerick! Even if the other elders are like that mostly because of the fault of Hajime and co!

## 《Melon Books-sama》

- Showing the place you wish for!

How far the power of the compass will reach? What about stalker? My

future? Shia's innocence? Of course they can be found. The compass can find anything.

《Special perk of buying simultaneously – Tora no Ana-sama》

- Arifureta Magic Academy *School Entrance Ceremony*

This is also magic academy that is turned into series. Myuu finally enrolled. In such event, there is no way the academy's Calamity Four will be quiet..... student council president Shizuku besiege while holding her stomach!

《Special perk of buying simultaneously – Gamers-sama》

- April Fool

Yue-sama who heard about the custom of April Fool from Hajime. Of course, her target was Kaori. But, that lie unexpectedly drag in Fea Bergen too into a great commotion!

That's all. Is there any SS that attract your interest?

Whichever it is, I will be happy if you can enjoy it.

Also, Overlap's 5 year anniversary campaign will also happen at the same time, it seem you will also be able to receive special pamphlet here. While presumptuous, Shirakome was also asked to write several SS.

The detail will be published at Overlap-sama's homepage, so please go check it by all means.

I'm sorry for turning it so long.

Please give your support to Arifureta from here on too.

# Arifureta Chapter 315

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Reinforcement, And Then Storming

—

Director Dime was strong.

Indeed, it certainly was really convincing that this person was even called as “Desecrator of Book” or “Beating Priest”.

The metal book with size of 40 x 30 centimeter wrapped in chain must have weighed for more than ten kilogram. It came flying and swung around with a speed of cannonball, turning into a local and manmade storm, if it was lifted up it would become shield of iron wall toward every attack, blocking anything whether it was sword, knife, or kunai.

Sometimes, the director even rode above the book and moved by sliding around on it.

And then, with incomprehensible physical strength, the director would lightly gripped that book which possessed weight like a war hammer with one hand, and when he swung it around along with spirited voice 「Munh」, the surrounding would be pulverized like a joke.

The art of book fighting which left no opening in close range.....

For the time being, Kousuke thought.

‘Read it! That’s a book right!? Read it! It’s a sacred vessel that conceals amazing power right!?’ He thought.

「Woow, Kousuke-san, you're really amazing. The director's attack doesn't hit you even once, as expected from the strangely moving person!」

「Clone technique is it? It's amazing. It's truly what you will call the secret technique of the orient. This is the first time I see the director getting subdued.」

Anna and Wynn sent him exaggerated praise.

The place was a church of Omnibus. It was late at night where it would take around one more hour until the obelisk and saint barrier were prepared. After somehow neutralizing the director who was rampaging so that his beloved daughter wouldn't be taken away, Kousuke and Claudia, along with several other exorcists who were in that place were currently preparing before their storming into hell.

Kousuke spoke with strangely distant gaze.

「To think.....I couldn't subdue him without making clone.....I'm simply shocked.」

Kousuke had quite the confidence in his own strength. At the very least, he thought that in a one-on-one fight against earthling, he wouldn't even need to become abyss lord, to say nothing of making clone to help, but.....

Director Dime couldn't be neutralized without the help of two other clones.

‘The world is really wide huh~, perhaps I was a bit too overconfident huh~’, he leaked out a dry smile.

「Kousuke-sama, the director was rude. I will tell him that it was just a misunderstanding, that's why」

Claudia was knitting her eyebrows apologetically. But, perhaps something was on her mind about the content of the misunderstanding. Within her gaze that was stealing glances toward Kousuke, melting heat could be felt.

「Even so Claudia-sama. The director, it felt like he was recognizing Kousuke a bit after getting subdued like that you know?」

「Yeah, I heard him muttering. 『So you want Claire that much.....fuh, I too has become old』 something like that.」

The one who called Kousuke without honorific was the bowgun user, Lee Mohr. Twenty years old, a half with mixed parentage of Britain and China. His age was close with Kousuke, and Kousuke told him to just talk casually, so he did just that.

And then, the one who heard the muttering of the director that caused Claudia to look down with red face while fidgeting, was Bruce Roer. He was a user of antique rifle, the younger brother of the bald Roer brothers.

By the way, both brothers had no eyebrows. Their body was also like pro wrestler, and they had sanpaku eyes. When they were wearing exorcist's black uniform, their appearance was completely like mafia.

「No no, I already said that I have a lover.」

「How complicated.....I want Claudia-sama to become happy but, there is also this feeling that want her to keep being our Claudia-sama. Or rather, the majority is glaring at Endou.」

Bruce's big brother, the battle axe user Bacchus Roer patted his smooth head with one hand while looking around. There, the staffs other than Omnibus's exorcists could be seen glancing warily at Kousuke.

But, inside those gazes wasn't wariness toward outsider, but something that was the same like resentment of fans who got their idol taken away, saying 「That bastard, laying his hand on our Claudia-sama.....」.

「Geez-, everyone, you all have been saying nonsense since some time ago. I am not harboring that kind of feeling toward Kousuke-sama! Good grief, you all are too relaxed before the important battle!」

Everyone of Omnibus received scolding from the saint-sama.

However, the scolding from her whose face was bright red, her gaze kept glancing repeatedly at the man beside him, and her whole body fidgeting, the persuasiveness was nonexistence with zero impact. Rather, everyone of Omnibus only got even more fanned up.

「Oo, a, amazing pressuring gazes here.....somehow it feels fresh to be paid so much attention like this.」

Kousuke writhed for some reason. ‘Omnibus, might be a magnificent place.....’, his expression loosened thinking so.

「Be, besides.....for me to harbor that kind of feeling toward a person who has lover.....」

Claudia who entered the soliloquizing time. 「Aa, lord. Please forgive this wicked me-」 She began to pray too.

The gazes of the exorcists who were dining together became warm. The gazes of the staffs of Omnibus became even more severe.

‘As expected this looks a bit bad’, Kousuke who came back to his senses coughed.

「Ee~, aa~, so about the hell, Claire know where the Unknown is located right?」

「Eh? Ah, yes. Somehow I can, it’s a feeling like I’m being called. The cause is unclear whether I’m really being called, or if it was because in the past he was summoned with me as the medium, but I understand where he is.」

「Okay. Well, the other side is also looking for Claire, so it might not be necessary to go looking for him though. And, Claire’s Holy Cross will become the trump card but, is there any special exorcist strategy or something?」

In respond to Kousuke’s question, Anna took out a small cross necklace from her bosom and answered.

「We will use this consecrated cross. This is the most basic sacred vessel, at the same time it’s also something that is like our identification that prove our status as exorcist but.....」

For the sake of all human

Saying that, she muttered 「Omnibus」. Right away, the cross that contained faint radiance showed letters of light that read “Anna Folk”.

Kousuke nodded in understanding seeing it like a status plate but without the display of the owner’s status. Anna continued her explanation.

「Actually, it has one more effect. When it’s activated like this, we can hide our figure and presence only limited to demon.」

「It's a function so when exorcist is outnumbered, they can temporarily hide from demon and call for reinforcement.」

Wynn also added on the explanation. He took out the same cross necklace like Anna.

According to their further explanation, there would be no effect if the demon had already focused strongly on them. If it was low level demon, their focus was already weak from the start so this power would be effective, but against middle level and above, this power would be mostly meaningless once they got found out.

Kousuke nodded 「I see」.

「I see. Using that we will ignore the swarm of low level demon and fight the Unknown directly.」

「Although, just like we explained, the hell is their stronghold so it's dubious how effective this will be. Even if we are able to arrive until Unknown unharmed, the other demons would notice when we enter battle.」

Wynn groaned with a conflicted expression. Lee shrugged while continuing.

「Well, it doesn't change what we have to do. It's really simple. We'll protect Claudia-sama until she destroy the Unknown. Even if we have to pay with our life. That's all.」

Words that showed no hesitation to use even one's own life as shield. It could be clearly seen from his eyes that there was no falsehood in those words. The other exorcists also nodded naturally.

The determination in that attitude wasn't "for the sake of Claudia-sama". It was simply a display of their pride as exorcist. They weren't going along with Claudia's revenge. They would head to hell because it was their mission.

Certainly that must be their true feeling. But, their friendship toward Claudia couldn't be hidden. Surely, even if it wasn't for Claudia, but for Wynn or Anna for example, they would still take the same action.

That was why, Kousuke couldn't say it, he wouldn't say it. Telling them to stay put here while he alone would guard Claudia.



「I get the gist of the strategy now. Well, when it's time for you to exchange your life, call me before that. I have confidence if it's in number after all. Okay, next, the problem is the “wind of lamentation” though, if I remember it right, the time limit will be harsh if the item to endure it is used for everyone right?」

Clauda and others nodded. With Kousuke's participation, for the time being the team lineup was optimized so it was formed by the elites among elites, so the share of holy water for each one of them was increased.

They weren't thinking to hold back the demon by leaving behind their member as sacrifice, so those who weren't strong enough to fight in hell were reassigned to Omnibus's headquarters—to protect Vatican and the pope.

「About that, I think I can prepare medicine to lengthen the time limit.」

「Is that true!? Ah, could it be, what healed me and Aziz, that.....」

「Yes, we simply called it recovery medicine though. We returnees have it in our possession. Well, it's magic medicine. In the first place it doesn't neutralize the Wind of Lamentation like the holy water, it's more healing the body part that get eroded, so I think there will be pain.」

Wynn shook his head and responded 「Mere pain isn't a problem」.

「That helps. Most likely, the greater demon with their personality won't use any underhanded method, but the possibility that the enemy will aim to make us “run out of time” isn't zero after all.」

Kousuke saw that they didn't seem to have any particular problem with using unknown medicine whether from religious aspect too, so he immediately said 「Then, I'll ask for a lot of recovery medicine」, and he was going to contact Nagumo house.

But, at that timing,

「There is no need for that, Kousuke.」

A lovely voice that was like ringing bell resounded. However that voice was mixed with tiredness.

Kousuke gasped. When he turned his gaze, a beautiful girl wearing lab coat with her blonde hair tied in side tail was there, a cooler box hanging from her

shoulder.

「Emily!」

Emily's expression broke out into a smile *funya-* at Kousuke's call. There was the radiance of "gate" behind her.

After the phone call which should be called as a decisive battle for Kousuke before this, just in case Yue sent the artifact for space teleportation, "Gate Hole" to be placed near Kousuke. It seemed Emily had just come out from that "gate".

「Kousuke-san. Your Vanessa is also here you know?」

'Here here-, look at me! I'm here!', there was also Vanessa spreading her hands like a stage actress to make an appeal of her existence. Hallucination of wagging dog ears and dog tail could be seen on her.

「What's the matter Emily? Did something happen? What about Yue-san?」

「Complete disregard! But, even with such cold Kousuke-san, the third wife, this Vanessa is——」

「Everything is alright. There is no attack or anything, in the first place no matter what come, nothing can make that fortress fall. I asked for the gate to be opened because there is something to be delivered. As for Yue-oneesan..... right now the play-off of fighting game No. 1 is being held in the house, Yue-oneesan is in the middle of semifinal against Myuu-chan. Myuu-chan.....her combo is really nasty. Yue-oneesan got tearful.....」

「Wai-, what are they doing playing around in this kind of time!? Everyone in the class participate!? They are getting heated up!? Rather, Yue-san is made to cry!?!」

「Fu, fufu-. The two of them are treating me like air.....I see, so this is the abandonment play that Tio-san mentioned——」

uncle

「By the way, it seems the final will be Myuu-chan VS Shuu-ojisama. Shuu-ojisama.....it was terrific. As expected from the father of his majesty the demon king.」

「The parents are participating too!? That's too relaxed right!?!」

Ignoring the SOUSAKAN who was wirthing while making strange pose, the members of Omnibus were in confusion at the exchange between Kousuke and the beautiful girl in lab coat who suddenly appeared.

Emily who seemed to notice the situation at the surrounding blushed slightly while straightening her posture. And then, she bowed her head to the people around and put the cooler box on the table.

「Emily, this is?」

「I told you right, Kousuke. That I'll also do what I can.」

Emily opened the cooler box. Inside, several test tubes were fixed in place. Grey colored liquid was stored inside the test tubes.

「I studied the content of the relic that demon king-sama gave me and reproduced the cure-all that was used in the ancient era. It's still in testing stage, but it should be useful enough to be used for this time.」

「Eh, it's that biological weapon excavated from the ruin?」

Emily nodded once. Below her eyes, really pronounced dark circles could be seen.

Actually, after the previous phone call, Emily begged Kaori to prepare “the space where time became slow” and researched the ancient biological weapon she received from Hajime and Shia inside it.

Emily's research inside the slowed space actually almost reached a month even with her coming out every time there was a call from Kousuke.

Although there was cooperation from Yue and others to magically solve problem like teleporting the research tool or breaking technological obstacle, normally it would be impossible to develop unknown substance into usable stage in less than a month.

Emily's genius talent in pharmacy, her experience until now, and then, her intense will that wished to be useful for Kousuke no matter what overturned the impossibility.

「It was shocking. I'll omit the detailed explanation, but this thing, if I have to put it into words it's something like a pluripotent cell. If it's used as it is, it will

erode cells of living thing and destroy them completely, but if the cell is adjusted well, it will instead replace cells that has abnormality. It will constantly maintain the healthy state. —I named it Pandora's Hope.」

In other words,

「If you drink one tube, even in an environment that eat at your body no matter how much, Pandora's Hope will maintain your body in healthy state. I haven't test it in hell's environment so I cannot say with certainty but, if there is no hole in my theory, it should maintain its effect for three days.」

「Seriously.....」

Kousuke took one tube and stared fixedly at it.

Emily threw him upward glances. It was completely obvious to him that she was thinking 「Am I helpful?」. At the same time, he also understood from the fatigue surfacing in her eyes just how desperate she was to finish this in time.

Kousuke wordlessly embraced Emily tightly. Emily raised her voice 「Fuwah!？」 and went bright red instantly.

「Thanks, Emily. This is really helpful. With this I can fight without worrying about anything.」

「Ah, uh.....I'm glad.....be careful okay, Kousuke.」

Emily was a bit embarrassed, however, she hugged Kousuke back strongly. Beside them, the like of SOUSAKAN who was staring still with a wanting expression while putting her index finger in her mouth was ignored.

The two separated for a bit and stared at each other in close distance.....

The exorcists were somehow swallowed by the sweet atmosphere and held their breath.

Claudia who was staring at the two enviously.

And then, Vanessa who was creeping up behind such Claudia without anyone noticing.

With a slippery movement, she brought her mouth toward Claudia's ear.

「Nice to meet you, fourth. I am Vanessa. The third. Pleased to make your

acquaintance.」

「Hyuwah!?!」

Greeting while blowing breath into the ear. Claudia leaped up. She pressed on her ear and retreated from that spot in a flash——or she tried, but she tripped on the chair and stumbled. Her skirt fluttered. A sexy garter belt was,

「Kousukeeee-, don't look!」

「Higiih!?! My eyes-, my eyeees!?!」

Emily-chan's hidden technique was executed in godspeed. Kousuke pressed on his eyes while his back arched behind into a bridge shape. It was a bridge of sorrow from the sudden eye crushing.

Putting aside Kousuke who was building a comical and splendid arc, Vanessa helped Claudia to stand up.

「Ni, nice to meet you. I'm Claudia Barenberg, Err, the fourth?」

Wynn and others had splendidly threw their gaze to every other direction, perhaps because of the demonic look Anna sent to them, or perhaps because of their gentleman personality. During that time, Claudia stood up with difficulty while asking in bewilderment.

Vanessa-san answered with a serious expression.

「Yes. You are Kousuke-san's fourth wife right? I am the third. And so, I am the senior wife. Don't forget to show the proper respect.」

「He? Eh? Ee? Fourth wife?」

Claudia's expression turned like a person who had just heart a mysterious language. Wynn and co along with the members of Omnibus who were watching from the distance also showed the same expression.

No good Vanessa

There was nobody to stop Danessa-san who was putting on a patronizing air as senior. Kousuke was in the middle of doing bridge of sadness. Emily was apologizing to such Kousuke while nursing him.

Claudia turned her gaze to that Emily while saying.

「She is, Kousuke-sama's lover isn't she?」

「? Certainly she is his lover, but in the future they will wed so it's fine to call her his wife. Doctor Emily is the second wife. She is your great senior, so be really respectful.」

「.....Second?」

Claudia's expression was rapidly stiffening. She turned her gaze toward Kousuke who was muttering 「I, can see the light.....」. The members of Omnibus also did the same. Especially the gazes of female faction with Anna in the lead were becoming bad.

「Oh, you don't know? From the beginning Kousuke-san has a fiancée called Rana Hauria.」

「Fiancee!?!」

「She is a bunny girl.」

「Bunny girl!!」

「And then, the first wife Rana-san said, 'The right-hand man of the demon king cannot just have one or two wives!', we are looking for the seven wives who are somewhere in the world!」

「Seven wives!?!」

「Yes! And then, Kousuke-san has found one! In this territory of Vatican! The fourth wife! Right to the point, it's you! Claudia Barenberg!」

「What in the world!」

The shocking fact that was fired like a storm of gatling gun's strafing. Claudia-sama's tension was growing strange! And then, the gaze of the female faction toward Kousuke had completely become one that was usually turned toward a sworn enemy! One of them was dashing away, surely she was going to call the director cardinal with idiot parent, blasphemous, and physically violent attribute!

Claudia's eyes were turning round and round while she turned toward Kousuke whose eyes finally recovered and stood up. She then raised her voice.

「Kousuke-sama! Are you, looking at me with such view!?!」

「I'm not!」

「You are not!?!」

Claudia-sama staggered unsteadily. Anna pulled out her tonfa. Her gaze was like a killer. Among the female exorcists, there were also those whose hand reached for knife or spear.....

Sensing the atmosphere that was a little dangerous, Emily-chan stood up for her beloved Kousuke.

「Wait a second! Barenberg-san! The one who is fussing about seven wives are only Vanessa and Rana-san! Especially Rana-san, or rather the people of Hauria-clan, all of them are a bit touched in the head! That's why don't take it seriously! Kousuke isn't that kind of frivolous person!」

The desperate Emily-chan, her true feeling unconsciously came out.....

Hauria clan that was touched in the head, the battle of Emily who was trying to rehabilitate them would be a long one.

「I, is that so? But, in that case you too, have nothing going on between you and Kousuke-sama? You aren't his lover, and especially not his wife——」

「Who are you calling unrelated person! I'm his lover! And I'll become his wife!」

「Then, there is nothing going on with this person called Rana——」

「No, Claire. Rana is my wife I'm telling you.」

Finally Kousuke spoke. And then, Emily who became tearful because he didn't respond right away when it was her saying it. Kousuke was flustered 「Tha, that's not it」 while consoling Emily. Emily too immediately smiled happily at his attention.

Action sometime was even more eloquent than words.

Anna's voice echoed excessively loudly.

「Guilty? Or, not guilty?」

The answer, came from all the female exorcists, and the males who idolized Claudia.

「「「「「Guilty! Go to hell-!!」」」」」 (TN: The go to hell is written in English at the

raw.)

It was nice timing that their destination after this would be hell. However, perhaps it would be Kousuke alone who wouldn't go home.

Director Dime's face popped out from behind a pillar as though to say 「Someone calling?」. His eyes looked like they were saying 「Even if it cost my life, I'll KILL you bastard!」.

Cold sweat trickled out from Kousuke like a waterfall. Anna and others were sidling up closer with fiendish expression that said 「Toying with our Claudia-sama like this.....」, fighting aura (?) blew out from the director, Wynn and others averted their eyes from reality 「The dessert is delicious」, and Vanessa attempted to sneak into the gate quickly.....

「Director! A radio contact just came! I think it's from the security bureau's force! It seems they are under attack!」

「What?」

A youth came rushing. His voice that was dripping with anxiety caused everyone to gasp and return to their senses.

He was holding an old type radio while running toward Kousuke and others.

Why did the communication from Bernard and others came from something like that? Certainly, they were really late from the arrival schedule but.....

*Zaa zaa*, within such noise, the sound of gunshots and the angry yell of Bernard and others could be heard.

『——This is Saber 1-. Caster! Can you hear!? ——Answer——someo——』

Saber was the codename that represented Bernard's squad, Caster was the codename that represented Omnibus. The codenames were created just in case now that they were working together with Vatican's secret organization. The thinker of the codename could be easily guessed.

「Bernard! We can hear you! What happened!?!」

Kousuke raised his voice, but it seemed the voice from this side didn't reach the other side. The situation that seemed to be the cause was ascertained by the intermittent communication from Bernard.



『——We are under attack——cultists  
everywhere——armed——communication jamming is——』

「The armed cultist group jammed the communication and attacking?」

「Most likely, they found old radio in a house or shop somewhere and send their voice like this.」

In battle against demon, many times it would cause abnormality in electronic equipment. Because of that they were using old radio equipment even now which bore fruit at this situation. Bernard's group seemed to succeed in sending their voice using some kind of method, but perhaps because of the other side's communication method, the voice from this side couldn't reach.

『The airport's——we cannot move. The number is too many!』

「Bernard!」

Bernard who was a calm and collected veteran captain of a special force was sounding uneasy. The communication that became a bit clearer also conveyed Bernard's resolve.

『It will be great if this voice reach someone but..... We will reduce the enemy number as much as possible here. It's pathetic when we are coming here as reinforcement but, we cannot arrive there. But, there is no need to send help. We will defend this place to the last and reduce the number of armed group heading there as much as we can.』

「You stupid idiot-. What are you doing making resolve as you please like that!」

The angry voices of Bernard's subordinates resounded from the other side.

『Kuh, Aby! I'll leave the rest to you! If I survive then I'll treat you to a cold bee——』

The communication cut off with a loud explosion. *Zaa zaa*, a somewhat sad sound resounded.

「Bernard, why did you say that line in that timing.....」

Bernard who kept raising death flag until the end caused Kousuke's expression to convulse. A feeling that Bernard might unexpectedly be alright

was welling up slightly.

There, Aziz rushed out from the elevator.

「Director! The moon is dyed! It's the red moon! Outside the rampart, there is what seems to be the cultist group! The number is beyond counting!」

Right after that the sound of explosion thundered until the underground. It was obviously the sound of explosive or even rocket.

「Kuh, I'm going to where Bernard and others are——」

Kousuke was about to say that he was going.

But, a voice interrupted him,

「You idiot, Kousuke, you have your own role right?」

「Leave that to us.」

Kousuke gasped and turned around. There, he found the figure of his two best friends. Yes, it was Kentarou and Juugo. Furthermore, from the gate Ayako, Mao, and then Yuuka, Nana, Taeko and so forth were coming out one after another.

Kentarou and Juugo talked to Kousuke whose eyes turned round.

「Oi oi, what's with that look. Don't tell me, you think we are going to ball up at the corner of the room until everything is over?」

「Just because you spoke scathingly to Yue-san, that doesn't mean you gotta do everything alone right? If you ask, we'll lend a hand yeah.」

Among the returnees, not a single one would be shivering in fear at safe place. No matter who their opponent was.

In the first place, after Kousuke stormed into hell, they intended to come out to take care of the “Mirror Gate” that was the entrance, and also this battlefield at Vatican.

「.....Hics-. Cultists, kill」

「Yue.....don't vent your anger to other just because you got thoroughly beaten up by Myuu. Come on, cheer up?」

「.....Hics. Kaori, go to hell.」

「Why!? Right now I'm cheering you up you know!？」

Yue who seemed to be thoroughly trounced by Myuu's combo without being able to do anything in fighting game arrived while looked like she was going to cry in earnest.

Kaori also came together. Tio and Shizuku seemed to stay behind in Nagumo house, but even Myuu came.

Myuu in her own way was normally crying 「Hics, sniff, I hate someone like <sup>grandpa</sup> Shuu-ojiichan nano.....」. It appeared she was viciously trounced by the backbone of Nagumo family who seemed like a demon king without even a shred of maturity.

While the members of Omnibus were dumbfounded by the excessive battle force that continuously came, Kousuke looked at his comrades and grinned with 'fuh'.

And then, his gaze turned toward Claudia.

Claudia was taken by surprise, but a beat later her expression turned resolved and she nodded briskly.

「Director, we are going.」

「.....Got it. The obelisk will be usable in thirty more minutes. Don't worry about this place——go and accomplish your longstanding desire.」

「Yes-」

Claudia gave a hug toward Director Dime who was like her father with all the affection that she had. With that, his gaze became relaxed and warm as though that brutal eye expression was just a lie while he returned the hug.

Claudia who let go of the hug ran her gaze at the exorcists of the storming team. Wynn and others also had finished their preparation and nodded back strongly.

「Kentarou, Juugo. Take care of Bernard.」

「Ou, leave it to us.」

「Don't mess up okay, Kousuke.」

Kousuke and others touched their fist together and made a fearless smile to each other.

「Kousuke. Be careful. Come back as quick as possible. I'll bake apple pie when you return.」

「I'm looking forward to that.」

He also smiled to each other with Emily. Kousuke turned on his heel.

「Let's go.」

Claudia and others nodded at Kousuke's command, and then they rushed to the inner room where "Mirror Gate" was located.

「Look, Yue. Don't cry, we too are going up too you know?」

「.....I'm not crying. Kaori you idiot.」

「Yes yes, I get it. Look, teleport everyone to their position. Ah, are you the leader here? Can we talk a bit for planning.....」

The depressed Yue. However, she properly did her work. She held the hand of Myuu who was similarly depressed and rushed out from home while teleporting the classmates to the ground above. Furthermore, Juugo and others of Nagayama party were teleported to Omnibus's private airport to as Bernard's rescue team.

Like that, when they got out to above the ground, the area was teeming with squirming swarms. It seemed the front gate was destroyed and wreckage was scattered everywhere. The cultists were entering inside one after another. Looking closer, even the north side where Vatican's art museum was located also had black smoke rising from there. It was clear that place was also attacked.

Gunshots and yells resounded everywhere. There were even several drones flying at the night sky of red moon, carrying explosive in their load.

The armed group of cultists were surging in with number that made it seem like they were the dead from hell. In the middle of that, the people of Omnibus were holding a desperate defensive battle.

「Everyo~~ne! We aa~bsolutely must not let them go to the “Gate Mirror”! Let’s do our best until Endou-kun and others finished everything~~~!! How – e – ver! Treasure your life! Please run away when it’s dangerou~s!」

「「「「「Yee~~~s」」」」」

It was looseness like in the middle of doing school trip. The students energetically replied to Aiko’s encouraging yell with rea~lly lax reply.

But, what happened at the next moment was the sight of the cultists who were flooding in like avalanche getting blown away and vanished outside the rampart like a joke.

「For now, here is the barrier~! This place is the holy ground, god’s enemy won’t pass——”Holy Severance”!!」

A dome of light spread out with Suzu as the starting point. The whole St. Peter’s Plaza was enveloped by a shining barrier.

「It’s fine to shot those down right?」

At the same time with a short yell ‘shih’, throwing knives rushed through the night sky. All of them were clad in electricity, shooting down all the drones flying in the sky. And then, the knives returned like a boomerang to the thrower——Yuuka.

「Then, that place looks bad so I’ll go there.」

Under the red moon, a werewolf howled. The next moment, that figure vanished with its swift feet.

Other than that, colorful magic of various elements danced wildly, and terrific martial arts exploded into action.

And then,

「.....Condemnation.」

「That’s why, stop with venting your frustration here.」

In the sky, golden light and silver light floated back to back.

One was a bewitching peerless beauty served by a golden dragon.

The other one was a divinely beautiful war maiden spreading her silver wings.

When the lightning dragon roared, the many rockets flying in the sky were sucked in without exception and annihilated. The cultists who were touched by the surging golden light collapsed with white smoke rising without a single exception.

On the other hand, the people of Omnibus who collapsed with the injury from the first surprise attack were illuminated by the silver light pouring from the sky. Whether they were injured or dead, it didn't matter, they were healed and stood up.

At this time when the fate of the world was at stake, this kind of miraculous sight..... Everyone of Omnibus thought. Even Director Dime thought.

「It's, god's miracle.....」

Regretfully, they were demon king's underlings.

While the moon was increasingly getting filled with mysterious red radiance, the curtain of battle was finally opened.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Tomorrow 【Overlap Great Thanksgiving 2018】 will be opened.

There will be various things published at Overlap-sama's homepage, seems like there will be many events and goods too. The illustration of waitress Yue is lovely!

Then update information.

In Comic Gardo, the following was updated.

- Nichijou chapter 16 I was blown with the collaboration at the end lol
- Gaiden Zero chapter 3 The gap of the little girl Miledy and the current Miledy. When looking at the picture it's terrific...
- Main comic chapter 21 The thrilling Raisen. Miledyyy...after reading Zero chapter 3, I cannot say anything anymore.

The latest chapter can be read for free, so please go take a look if you have

time!

(You can read it by going to Gardo Comic from Overlap-sama's homepage)

※I revised the time limit of staying in hell by using holy water at the previous chapter.

# Arifureta Chapter 316

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Unknown First

—

It became too long, so I divided it into first and second part.

After this, I'll upload the second part too at 19 o'clock.

---

Amidst the shaking that was transmitted from the ground above, the members of Omnibus underground were running around while yelling in order to accomplish their own duty. While that was going on, Kousuke and others were rushing toward the sealing room where the "Mirror Gate" was located.

「To think that many cultists will launching surprise attack.....」

After the previous attack, they had followed the whereabouts of the cultists who succeeded in escaping, they also confirmed whether the cultists were gathering in Rome or not.

Although, because of the considerable numbers of the dead and wounded among the members in the headquarters, the number of their personnel was drastically reduced, so it couldn't be said that the investigation and security they carried out were enough.

Even so, to think that cultists in the scale of thousands were gathering near.....

「Is his holiness safe.....」

Wynn muttered with a worried expression. The pope of Rome currently was evacuating to outside Vatican. At the surface it was to deal with the previous



terrorist incident, while also to arrange an environment where Omnibus could fight satisfactorily.

Just in case, several exorcists disguised themselves as normal staff while guarding the pope. Even the normal guards who didn't know about the existence of demon were a gathering of elite among elite in anti-personnel combat. But, the number of the enemy was also abnormal. It was understandable for them to feel uneasy.

「They will be fine. If it goes bad, Yue-san will send someone. Now that she has gone this far, she wouldn't allow even a single thing that will make the demon side happy.」

It was a fact that Yue had snapped because her family was harmed. And then, Yue was the first wife of the demon king, both of them were similar people, like husband, like wife.

「After all, she is the wife of the guy who protect the whole mankind of another world just because of a reason to not let the enemy feel even the slightest happiness.」

Yes, in the past Hajime protected the people of Tortus because of such trivial reason of because Ehito was wishing for mankind's extermination. He gathered warriors and super strengthened them, and in the end he even did absurd thing like making the whole battle force to experience Limit Break.

If someone became their enemy, all of their wishes would be crushed underfoot just as many wishes they had. That was how Hajime was, and Yue was also the same.

「I see, that's certainly what you will imagine from demon king and his wife.」

「In a decisive battle against a powerful demon of demon king class, we are challenging that battle together with the comrade of demon king.....you will never know what is going to happen in life.」

Claudia chuckled. Then Wynn smiled wryly while Anna and the others let out a dry laugh that was filled with complicated feeling.

「Claudia-sama! This way! I'm bringing the equipment!」

A youth wearing habit showed his face just a bit distance away from the sealing room and called to Claudia.

When they entered the room, there was a woman with the air of a lady that Kousuke remembered seeing before.

「Maya! Why are you here!?!」

「Calm down Claire. As expected, even I wouldn't be able to protect that room to the death when being surrounded by so many cultists. I completely sealed the path and then participate in the defensive battle here. More importantly, here, quickly put your equipment in order.」

It seemed that general store was also attacked.

And then, just as the lady said, she seemed to be joining the fight too. She was clad in black tight coat, her hair was bundled up, and an ancient looking bow was hanging on her shoulder. It seemed that she was actually an exorcist too.

The lady who was smiling prettily even in this situation where angry yells were flying about everywhere, she looked really calm and reliable.

Putting aside Claudia and others who were putting their equipment in order hurriedly, Maya's gaze moved to Kousuke.

「Nice to meet you, Mr. Kousuke. This isn't your first time meeting me, but it's *my* first time meeting you, so allow me to give you my greeting.」

「Ahaha.....nice to meet you too.」

‘Her eyes ain't laughing.....’, Kousuke was letting out cold sweat. It seemed the matter of him infiltrating the secret passage that she was protecting was something that offended her slightly.

Was what he thought, but.....

Maya-san smoothly closed on Kousuke and whispered into his ear.

「I has grasped your presence somehow. I won't overlook it anymore. ——If you make my child cry, I'll shoot you.」

She smoothly parted away from him and grinned cheerfully. 「Please take care

of Claire], this time she spoke in a volume that everyone could hear too.

‘Geez-, what are you saying!’ said Claudia with blushing cheeks. Maya-san elegantly laughed ‘hohoho-’ in respond.

Kousuke was drenched in cold sweat. The instant she distanced herself from him, her eyes that he could see from close range were something fierce that seemed to say 「I’ll, kill you!」.

It was a complete déjà vu.

When Claudia and others finally finished preparing, Maya, with an aura that was filled with affection that didn’t give the slightest hint of the previous pressure that rivaled a certain director embraced the storming party members one by one.

And then, she embraced Claudia last and,

「Accomplish your long-cherished desire and come back alive. When everything is over, I’ll bake Claire’s favorite lemon cake, so let’s eat it with everyone then.」

「Yes, Maya. I’m going.」

Claudia too hugged Maya back tightly. And then, she ran her gaze toward Wynn and others, confirmed that everyone had finished preparing, and then they rushed into the sealing room for sure this time.

While running, Kousuke asked for a bit.

「What kind of person Maya-san is?」

「? Maya is just as you see, she is an exorcist of Omnibus you know? Although, she already retired and now is managing the secret passage.」

‘Perhaps, that’s not what Kousuke-dono want to ask’, the sharp Wynn-san gave an additional explanation.

According to him, it seemed that gentle lady Maya-san was a former partner of Director Dime. While Director Dime would instantly attack demon to exorcism them (physically) with no question asked the moment he saw them, she would support him with sniping using bow.

But, it seemed that essentially Maya wasn't any different from Dime. When anyone noticed, she would already charge ahead with her bow and arrow. She would use her bow to strike, stabbed using the arrow in the place of stiletto, then while pulling out the stabbed arrow she would nock it on the bow and fired it through the enemy from super close range, the stabbed arrow was pulled out and then fired again.....like that she was a person who was carrying out super close quarter combat using bow art.

As the result, the nicknames she obtained were "Absolute Demon Killer Woman", "The Desecrator of Bow", "Or rather, won't it be better if you just normally use sword or blunt weapon to fight?", "The Ultimate Weapon Against the Beating Priest", "The Most Terrifying Holy Mother", *etc.*

By the way, although she was single she was idolized by the people of Omnibus like a mother. In the past she was the number one person who was even more terrifying than demon who absolutely mustn't be made angry. And then, the reason why she was staying unmarried could be easily guessed when seeing her sometimes having meal or drinking together with Director Dime.

「So I got two dangerous people setting their sight on me.....」

Kousuke's eyes looked dead. Even though they were going to storm into hell after this.

When they entered the sealing room, there were several people inside the room clad in tight black coat that was the combat uniform of exorcist, and several people wearing habit. From among them, a youth wearing habit called out.

「Claudia-sama, we have finished the preparation of the barrier. ....Everyone, we will be waiting for your return. May the protection of god be with you all.」

「Thank you very much. I'll leave this place to you all.」

The exorcists here would protect this area of "Mirror Gate" to the death. Claudia sent them a strong gaze while nodding.

That exorcist also turned his gaze to Kousuke and deeply bowed his head while saying.

「Mister. Please, take care of our comrades. You might not need it but, may

the protection of god be with you too.」

「Yeah, thank you. It's okay, everyone will return. It seems Madame Maya will bake a lemon cake for the celebration of our return, so we've got to go back no matter what right?」

「Oo, Maya-sama's lemon cake is a masterpiece after all. If that's the case then you all have to get back by all possible means.」

The exorcists relaxed their tense expression hearing Kousuke's frivolous talk.

The expression of Claudia that was slightly stiff also softened.

「Yosh. Then first let's fired up ourselves.」

From his breast pocket, Kousuke took out the test tube that was filled with grey liquid——the cure-all Pandora's Hope. Following him, Claudia and others also took out theirs.

Kousuke lifted his tube as though to have a toast. Claudia and others followed suit.

「The enemy is a king class great demon Unknown. What is at stake is the fate of the world. Along the way countless demons, and depending on the situation even “Named” Legendary Demon will come out. But, those kind of things ain't matter.」

Kousuke grinned fearlessly. His wide smirk was exactly like a demon.

「This is a revenge match. We are going to beat up the shitty bastard who is thoroughly looking down on us. This is a battle in order to let those damned bastards of hell just what will happen if they anger us!」

Wynn and others also wore a wicked smile that was unsuitable for exorcist.

That's right. Right now they were keeping their mission at heart even now. However, the regret of their fallen comrades. What was so bad in dispelling that! They were the protector of mankind. But, at the same time they were the nemesis of the demons!

The exorcists were getting heated up. Claudia silently closed her eyes, and then, when she opened her eyes, an unprecedentedly strong flame was residing inside there.

「Iron hammer to the demons! Victory for our fallen comrades!」

「「「「Iron hammer to the demons! Victory for our fallen comrades!」」」」」

Roaring voices thundered so loud it felt like the underground space was shaking.

And then, they drained up the secret medicine with one gulp at the same time, and following the momentum they threw the vials on the ground. The sound of breaking glass magnified the fighting spirit inside them even more.

「We are going?」

A light tone that didn't have the slightest tension in it.

「Let's go.」

Similarly, Claudia who responded with a light tone.

Wynn and others nodded, and then,

「——Informing the evil. Be afraid, tremble. The gate of death is opened, thy malice will be crushed by the will of steel.」

The “Key of Holy Cross” that Claudia lifted up shined radiantly. The cool and clear light illuminated the “Mirror Gate” directly. The seal of mercury was starting to flow.

「O lord, please guide us. We are those who believe in righteousness and love. We are the people who will defeat malice and hostility without valuing our life if it's for the holy war! O lord, please guide your warrior to the battlefield! ——“Open Gate”」

A pure light surged. The mercury was completely absorbed into the relief of “Mirror Gate”. The mirror surface became thin membrane of light. At the other side, there was that red world filled with blowing bloody wind.

「Being advance guard is my duty. Leave the vanguard to me!」

「Yes-」

Claudia replied powerfully, while Wynn and others vigorously yelled「Ou-」. With them behind, Kousuke stepped into hell once more.

—  
—

The air changed. Crunching sound came from the completely dry ground he stepped on.

Instantly,

「——!？」

Kousuke's body stiffened. He didn't receive external binding by any means.

(My muscles, stiffened!?)

If he had to speak frankly about his current situation, it seemed he was “paralyzed”. What was bad was that the stiffening was also rapidly penetrating inside him.

「Tsu, Kousuke-sama!？」

He couldn't even let out any words. But, he could react.

Kousuke suddenly received surprise attack, but his mind was calm. He felt a slight power, or rather a gaze, and in that moment he materialized a clone. And then, the clone threw a kunai toward the other side of the bloody wind.

——GII!?

The stiffening was dispelled along with that faint scream. But, it seemed the opponent didn't plan to let him took a breather.

「Chih!!」

Kousuke clicked his tongue, because a presence of death was approaching from behind. From Kousuke's shadow, a silhouette that looked as though it was made from shadow itself swelled up and lunged with a sharp arm thrust.

At the same time, the nearby rock blew up as though there was eruption. No, more accurately the rock was *rising up*. It was a giant that was nearly three meter, with a face like a demon and wings like a bat.

An arm thrust from close range behind him. From above was the giant jaw approaching as though to crush Kousuke along with the shadow.

Using Kuuton “Ban’ei no Kagerou” that he activated just in the nick of time, Kousuke and the clone switched position along with the space.

The stomach of the clone was pierced, and then the clone’s upper body got devoured by the giant’s jaw.

Furthermore, Kousuke who had switched position was assaulted by more than ten dogs leaping through the bloody wind. They had terrifying figure like zombie dogs where part of their body had been bitten off, in addition small fire would blow out from their mouth each time they were breathing.

All of them were aiming at Kousuke’s limbs and neck.

(Ho, how murderous this is oi!)

The moment he stepped into hell, there was concentrated attack as though to say that they absolutely would kill only Kousuke.

「——Pray along with the sunrise! O pebble of iron and sulfur. Lit the sacred fire!」

「——Thy, repent! The god has drawn the bow, firing the fire arrow to destroy evil!」

Just before Kousuke was going to react against the zombie dog look alike, such scripture resounded. At the same time, countless blazing bullets and arrows rushed at the zombie dogs. More than ten targets were pierced through without a single miss.

「Nice assist!」

In respond to Kousuke’s words, the user of ancient rifle Bruce and the user of bowgun Lee gave a thumb up.

And then, Kousuke snapped his finger once. The clone that got stabbed and bitten exploded. With that, the shadow was blown away, while the rock giant got its upper body pulverized in return and it crumbled down.

「Kousuke-sama! Are you safe!?!」

Cladua and others dashed toward him in panic.

「Yeah, somehow. But, just now they were definitely targeting me huh?」



「Yes, looks like it. Most likely, due to the previous fight against Kousuke-sama, and how Yue-sama counterattacked, Unknown is being vigilant against Kousuke-sama and others.」

「Seems so. Unlike the previous ghoul-like things from before, these guys seems like they also have special power. When I suddenly got paralyzed, I was in a bit of panic there.」

「That.....must be One-Eyed Demon of Curse **Gazer** Lesser Rock Demon . The others are Creeping Gargoyle, Shadow Shadow Stalker, and the last were Hell's Guard Dogs Hell Hounds.」

「They were named demon?」

「No, it's more like their race's name. They belong to middle class, so they are far more troublesome than the ghoul-like things Kousuke-sama Unaware Dead mentioned——the Mindless, or other demons that are simply called “Low Class” though.」

Although, it was a silver lining that the great demon that would come out in books didn't come out right from the start.

If they wanted to kill returnee class by all means, than the most effective method would be by surprise attack from greater demon using unknown sure-kill attack, but for some reason the enemy only used surprise attack by placing multiple middle class demons. He felt doubtful about that.

Or perhaps, it wasn't that he didn't send greater demon, but he couldn't send them.....

Kousuke shook his head. It was pointless even if he thought about that here.

「Everyone, how is the effect of the Wind of Lamentation?」

「I feel no problem. There is no pain or discomfort.」

「We also seem to be fine. This is a magnificent medicine. That girl still looked really young but.....this is really something.」

Wynn made out a voice of admiration toward the effect of Pandora's Hope that completely neutralized the effect of the “Wind of Lamentation” and Emily who created it. Anna and others also nodded with a wry smile at the effect that

surpassed the holy water that needed a lot of time and effort to create.

Kousuke smiled proudly for a bit while asking Claudia.

「And, Claudia. Where is that guy?」

「.....He isn't nearby. Or rather.....I'm being called. He isn't below, but on the surface ground.....in that ruined city.....he is waiting for us there.」

‘Chih’, Kousuke clicked his tongue. It was because he guessed Unknown's motive.

Most likely, the other side was also predicting the intention of Kousuke and co. Pandora's Hope must be unexpected for Unknown, thanks to that they didn't have to worry about getting exhausted or running out of holy water because of the “Wind of Lamentation”, but there was no doubt that he was planning to make them exhausted before reaching him.

Even though he was a greater demon but his thought was petty.....was what Kousuke thought, even so, there was no doubt that the Unknown was doing this because the strength of Kousuke or Yue and others was a threat for him.

「But, in that case, it's becoming even more puzzling. Even though he is scheming to lead the force of hell to invade our world without being careless or overconfident, why isn't he sending named demon our way then.....」

「Certainly, that is puzzling——, Kousuke-sama!」

Claudia gasped and took her stance. The Holy Cross that was swinging her around so much before this was kept in her hold firmly and she swiftly took the fighting stance. Wynn and others also readied themselves with a grim expression a beat later.

「Aa, they are coming seriously huh.」

Kousuke's presence detection caught a reaction. A battle force with innumerable number.

As though to say that going through the sky with pseudo flight like before wouldn't be allowed anymore, countless shadows were flitting around in the sky that was filled with bloody wind.

Malice and killing intent pierced their skin pricklingly. A great variety of

demons with their red eyes shining glaringly were clearly in fervor to devour the prey that was invading their territory.

Cold sweat was trickling from the forehead of Wynn and others. They were resolved, but the enemy force that they sensed was so many.

Against the number that ought to be expressed like as many as the number of star, their side had Kousuke, Claudia, Wynn, Anna, Aziz, Lee, Bruce, Bacchus, and then three other exorcists, a total of eleven people.

Originally they were aiming to act stealthily before attacking, but Unknown's vigilance that surpassed their imagination made that impossible. Although it couldn't be helped, this made them wanted to spontaneously curse 「If you are demon then act haughtily like a demon」.

But, this person came out in front of such Wynn and others.

「Fuh. This is really a passionate welcoming party. If the other side is sending such intense love call, then we have to respond in kind.」

Yes, the sunglass is put o~n! The nimble turning on spot is also being do~ne!

「The turn came out! It's Kousuke-sama of that time!」

「Cla, Claudia-sama?」

「You know what's this is about, Claudia-sama!?!」

Why was he suddenly turning on the spot? Why was he suddenly pushing up the sunglass with one hand and bending his upper body backward while his right hand was thrusting to point ahead!?

Claudia-sama answered Anna's doubtful question!

「I too don't know why Kousuke-sama is turning on the spot! But, the turn that in a glance look meaningless should have some kind of meaning!」

There was no meaning.

「The reason is, the atmosphere of Kousuke-sama who is turning around has changed and he become really strong!」

「What did you sayy——!?!」

Anna-chan who easily got into the mood. Wynn and others thought, 'Then,

that showy pose also has meaning!?’.

Of course, there was no meaning.

A Hell Hound leaped out from the bloody wind. Kousuke struck it down with an axe kick and without pause he crushed it under his foot and then making one more turn above that corpse!

For some reason cheers ‘Ooh’ were raised. Kousuke’s—no, the lord’s tension was at the peak thanks to the audience!

That was why he said it!

「Now, it’s the start of the party. We are going to enjoy this step of death. Show your welcome with an exclamation that is like thousands of thunder! For this Abyss Lord! For this Kousuke E Abyssgate!」

For an instant the gargoyle that was rising up from the ground looked like it was drawing back.

—

—

—

Against the terrific number of middle class demons, the lords were advancing little by little while forming a circle formation to protect Claudia at the center.

Basically the lord and three clones were protecting the four sides while cutting open the path. Wynn and others were in formation to bring down the enemies that slipped through the lord’s attack.

Claudia was preserving all her strength in order to pour it all for exterminating Unknown.

The number of the enemy was as many as the stars. Therefore, it felt like they were going to be overwhelmed but,

「——O lord, sever the evil of the wicked, hold the righteous firmly in place! The shield of god protect the believers! The god protect those who believe!」

One of the exorcists of the storming team, a middle-aged man wearing glasses, from a glance he looked like a salary man that could be found

anywhere— —Sharif Yeast was holding a huge shield that didn't match his medium build.

The tower shield suddenly shined brilliantly and a light dome that surrounded the circle formation was formed. If a returnee saw it, they would think that it looked like the lower version of “Divine Severance”, the “Holy Light” defense magic.

That all directional defense absolutely wouldn't let enemy's attack to pass through the last line.

And then, it seemed it was only effective against demon. The battle axe user Bacchus and Anna's tonfa, and Aziz's large knife exterminated the demons that were stopped in place. Lee and Bruce attacked from mid range, and then,

「——Conceive the light of dawn and illuminate the world of evil. O lord, the dark clouds are cleared by your radiance, scatter the blazing ash.」

The demons were destroyed by the user of strange sacred vessel that was in the shape of lantern. A woman exorcist in her thirty with intelligent eyes——Ciara Batti's lantern absolutely wouldn't have its fire went out. And then, once she chanted the scripture, that light would fiercely blaze up and emitted the light that destroyed the demons.

Furthermore, one of the reasons the attack of the middle class demons that was like a tsunami could be defended was because there was the *musical performance* of the last exorcist.

Yes, he or perhaps she——TJ's sacred vessel was a transverse flute. He who was called big sis.....but, when he played the melody of hymn, the demons would instantly lose luster, and for the low class they would suffer and became unable to move.

Furthermore, if Wynn and others who specialized in close quarter got injured, the melody would immediately change and healed their wound.

「Close, middle, long range. Defense and recovery and debuff. There is really no opening. It's the ideal formation, on top of that the proficiency is first-rate. Splendid.」

Indeed, so this was the elite force among the elite of the exorcists from the

anti demon organization Omnibus that had existed for thousands of years. It was a strength that truly convinced him without leaving any ground for doubt.

「If Kousuke-dono isn't here-, we would have gotten overrun since a long time ago!」

「Exactly! Kousuke-san, you are too strong!」

Wynn and Anna was yelling while continuing to slaughter the enemy with a desperate look that didn't show the slightest composure.

Toward such them,

「Right now, call me Abyssgate.」

When in hell, he wanted to be called as abyss. He wouldn't yield on this. But, if it's lord than it's okay you know?

「I don't understand!」

「What kind of fixation that is!?!」

「Kousuke-san, why are you suddenly getting strange.....」

「Because Kousuke-sama is Kousuke-sama?」

All the exorcists had extremely normal sense, Only Lee and Bruce were making a conflicted expression perhaps because they understood that the lord's state was "that". It seemed the two had black history of their own.

Like that, due to the lord that was dealing with sixty percent of the flooding enemy while further cutting open the path, they finally could see the ruined city.

In the battle until now, Wynn and others seemed to have accumulated considerable fatigue. Perhaps it should be said that half of Unknown's expectation was granted.

Although, the lord who sometimes would be showered with concentrated fire was still going strong. In this point, it could be considered that Unknown's tactic had mostly failed.

Unlike before, this time he came here prepared, that was why even though the enemies were somewhat bothersome, the current lord was unstoppable.

「We, we cut through.....」

Wynn calmed down his quickening breathing and wiped the sweat trickling on his chin while saying so.

Just as he said, ahead of the bloody wind that they had struggled through, no demon was attacking like before.

Aziz and Anna and the others were also breathing roughly, even so their expression looked slightly relieved.

The lord called out to Claudia.

「Claire.」

「Yes, Kousuke-sama. The Unknown is——」

「Please call me Abyssga——」

「Kousuke-sama. Unknown is here, at the center of the city. He is calling me.」

「Right.」

It seemed this kind of thing wouldn't get through the saint-sama who was in serious mode. Abyss lord faltered slightly. He cleared his throat *cough*.

He pulled himself together and stepped inside the ruined city.

「This place is.....the past's.....」

Aziz was muttering while staring at the cluster of ruined buildings with a really conflicted expression. Other than Claudia and the lord, there was no one else who had stepped until this far inside hell.

The ruined state that looked really tragic made everyone imagined the war in the faraway past and the end that the residence of hell arrived at. They gulped.

「Soon.....it will be soon.....」

Claudia's face also tensed in proportion.

They formed their formation and advanced through the street that was filled with debris scattered everywhere. There was no sign of demon. There were only the sound of rumble in the ground and thunder piercing their ears.

The closer they got to the center, the higher their tension became. The dry

wind was taking away the moisture from their lips that were already dry in the first place.

Like that, they finally could see a large intersection that was surrounded by half-destroyed building ahead. It was a large open space that was several times larger than even the pedestrian scramble in a metropolitan.

「.....Over there is the center of the city.」

Claudia said while holding her breath. The calling voice that she was hearing couldn't be heard right now. But, without a doubt that intersection felt like the center of the city.

「Chih. If he is putting on air as ruler, he should wait brazenly there instead following the custom of demon king.」

The lord who completely thought that the enemy would be waiting brazenly like the demon king that would appear in RPG sensed the existence of trap when he couldn't see the figure of Unknown. He spontaneously cursed.

If it was their demon king, he would properly sat cockily on a throne and at least welcomed with 「Fuhahahahah, you have done well coming here mongrels!」. That was the beauty of style. In fact the demon king had really done it at Halloween. He was absurdly getting into it.

「Even though we know it's a trap, we can only step inside it.」

「Yeah, that's right.」

Urged by the determined expression of Claudia, they stepped into the intersection with the lord at the front.

Instantly, several things happened simultaneously.

——*iAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH*

An intense scream of a woman. It wasn't something that came from among themselves. It was a yelling voice that was more repulsive, stirring up the mind while being filled to the brim with resentment.

Everyone including the lord spontaneously stiffened.

At the same time, shadow was squirming under the feet of all the lord's



clones. It was as though a ripple was traveling through water surface.

「——!？」

Right after that, the lord was sent flying up. A shark appeared from below the feet. Five meter shark clad in muddy aura with eyes of flame.

It opened its mouth like a bear trap and leaped out from below to swallow the lord. In response, the lord dodged using the gravity magic he had prepared just in case by falling through the air.

But, the shark pursued by swimming in the air with great speed. The lord held back the approaching jaw with his arms and legs, however, he was getting washed away by a power that was like cannon ball.

「Kousuke-sa——!？」

The ground below Claudia who was looking up to the sky quietly vanished. No, more accurately speaking a black circle hole was created. Obeying gravity, Claudia lost her balance from the weightlessness. Her expression was cramped.

「Claudia-sama!」

Anna immediately stretched out a chain of light to catch Claudia. But, a great number of black tentacles flew out like an eruption and blocked the chain of light, furthermore Claudia's feet were caught and she was dragged in.

In addition, the surrounding was suddenly covered by bloody wind. It was as though thick mist was suddenly generated, their field of vision was covered by storm of red, and perhaps as expected, countless demons attacked.

And then, the black hole where Claudia was dragged into began to close rapidly.

「Sharif!」

「——O lord! You established the fortress in preparation of the foe! No matter how many, they have no hope to invade the sanctuary!」

With Wynn's command, the tower shield was stabbed into the black hole and Sharif chanted. The shield shined and the closing hole was forcefully prevented from closing.

But, although the closing was resisted for a moment, the hole was gradually tightening as though it was swallowing the light of the sacred vessel.

「Guh. It's, impossible..... Aziz-! Ciara! Lend me strength!」

「——The lord had spoken. Thrust thy iron and crush the enemy, with the three swords forged in the hearth of the palace.」

「——Clear the dark clouds with the halo. Look, o believers, the sacred palace towering at the summit.」

Aziz took out two short swords from his pocket and threw it around the black hole. He then stabbed the knife he was holding to the ground below him. After that he chanted the scripture and the three short swords were tinged with light. It strengthened the light as though in concert with Sharif's tower shield.

There, the light of the lantern Ciara was holding poured down and magnified the light even more.

After doing that much, the black hole's shrinking was finally stopped completely.

「Kuuu——gather, gather, to this melody! O disciples on earth. Let's depart together! To the promised land!」

TJ played the tune of his flute fully in order to resist the shriek that propagated the gnawing to the mind.

Aziz, Sharif, and Ciara continued to offer prayer so that the black hole wouldn't close. In addition of TJ who continued to resist the scream, four people left the battle.

In order to protect them, Wynn and others formed a circle formation, but the swarm of low class demons surged like a tsunami. In this situation where they lost the shielder, rear guard, and also the support, Wynn and others were sweating coldly.

Raining Blade of Darkness

「——Zenha Zekkou!」(TN: Thousand Blades Abstain Light)

From the sky, kunais were raining down like a heavy rain. The lord's attack that was launched together with his three clones dispersed the low class one after another.

The lord landed on the ground and raised his voice.

「Where is Claire!?!」

The demon shark just now. Not just swimming in the air, it could also leap from space to space, on top of that it could also bite space into shreds. It was an outrageous demon. It obviously surpassed middle class level. It was a high level demon that it wouldn't be strange if it was a Named.

Because of that, the lord was unable to prevent Claudia from getting dragged in and his voice became unusually uneasy.

Wynn lopped off the head of the low class demon before him while answering.

「That hole! Most likely it connected to the lower strata! Unknown is over there! Go, Kousuke-dono! Take care of Claudia-sama!」

「What about you guys!?!」

「We will protect the return path here to the death!」

Exorcists who wouldn't hesitate to sacrifice their life would risk their life here in order to return home. The lord's eyes snapped wide open. Wynn grinned fearlessly toward that and spoke.

「There is no guarantee you will be able to return to the surface if you fall to the lower strata. Then, there is no way we can lose this hole. Everyone will return alive. Isn't that right? Then, leave this place to us!」

「We also has received absurd recovery medicines! We can at least protect the path back!」

「In the first place, the fight against Unknown is the responsibility of Nee-san and Kousuke-san. We won't be hindrance at the fight of you two. That's the strategy.」

Anna and Aziz spoke with similar fearless grin. Sharif and others also nodded with strong gaze.

「Fuh, very well. If you all are resolved to return alive, then it's inevitable. I'll leave this place to you!」

There was no time so the turn was sealed! The lord only pushed up his sunglasses and leaped into the black hole that connected to hell's lower strata.

In front of the flood of innumerable demons, Wynn and others gulped the recovery medicine that was given to them. And then just like when they departed to here, they simultaneously threw the empty vials to the ground spiritedly.

Their fighting spirit seethed so much that the lower class demons spontaneously stopped moving.

「My bad, demons. Right now, we will beaten into all of you one more time, the meaning of one who cleanse demon exorcist .」

Provocative words. Surely the demons didn't understand the meaning of the words but.....in respond to the extremely fierce dominating aura, the demons shrieked as though to rouse themselves and attacked.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

After this, I will upload at 19 o'clock too.

# Arifureta Chapter 317

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Unknown Second

—

「Unknown First」 was uploaded at the previous chapter.

The update today is two chapters.

Those who haven't read it, please go to the previous chapter.

---

Claudia fell into the black hole while being dragged by tentacles, however she was calm.

「——Respond, Holy Cross.」

Just those. With just those words that couldn't be even called as a scripture, the Holy Cross deployed a radiance in spherical shape around its user.

The tentacles were instantly dissolved and dispersed.

Claudia tasted a strange sensation for a few seconds where there was nothing like sense of weightlessness even though she was definitely falling. The darkness where she couldn't even see an inch ahead opened up all at once right after that.

What flew into her sight were skyscrapers with flowing river of magma.

It was an amazing sight of a bunch of buildings that should be called as a metropolitan and flowing river of magma at all the parts where originally the streets should existed.

She couldn't see the horizon, however, seeing that she could see the bedrock

ceiling until the faraway distance, she understood that this was an underground city with vastness that beggared imagination.

Claudia seemed to be falling from a hole that was opened in that ceiling.

With the speed of freefalling, she would crash into any of the skyscrapers in a few second. Even if she was lucky and could avoid that, in a few second more she would enter the worst dive into the street of magma.

But, as expected Claudia didn't look anxious. Right now she was Claudia in exorcist mode. In the middle of work, even the god of clumsy girl was docile.

「——The wings of the summit right here. Please grant me a temporary sky.」

The Holy Cross shined. At the same time, shining wings appeared on Claudia's back. They flapped loudly and feathers of light fluttered. Those wings that were enveloped in silver light closely resembled the apostle wings that Kaori possessed.

The figure of Claudia enveloped in spherical light while dancing in the sky by flapping silver wings was divinely beautiful in this hell. That sight was truly worthy to be coming from someone who was called a saint, not a single one from thousands of people would be able to deny that.

Claudia traveled glidingly in the sky like that and landed on one of the skyscrapers. The wings softly scattered silver feathers and then vanished.

「Kousuke-sama.....everyone.....」

Her gaze naturally moved above. She had become completely alone. She would be lying if she said she wasn't feeling forlorn. And as expected, she would be lying if she said that she wasn't worried about her comrades.

But, the words of a hero that surfaced in her heart immediately cleared away that anxiety.

‘Everyone won't die. I too won't die. I'll bring down Unknown. I'll accomplish my longstanding desire, save the world, and return home alive with everyone to eat lemon cake.’

‘Fuh’, Claudia's lips formed a smile.

In that moment, intense impact and ripple spread on Claudia's barrier

surface.

「Tsu——Unknown!!」

Her sworn enemy was on the rooftop of the adjacent building. The body of deep shadow was around three meter tall. Eyes and mouth of flame, blazing blood vessels that were like magma were running through his whole body. He had materialized even more. His twisted horn wasn't there previously. The fierce pressure that she didn't feel even twelve years ago looked like it was distorting the surrounding space.

Ordinary people, no, even the average exorcist would lose consciousness or stiffen and became unable to move just from facing him. He truly boasted a majesty that should be called as “King Class”.

『Claudia. My mother body. You don't know just how much I have been waiting for this time.』

Even his words had become far smoother. As expected, it seemed that his power had increased considerably perhaps thanks to his worshippers.

Unknown slowly made his body floated and landed on the same building with Claudia.

The group of huge high-rise buildings that couldn't be found that easily even in earth had rooftop width that was also in different level. The space was around as large as a baseball field.

Thus, there was still quite some distance between them. Although, with Unknown getting that closer, the pressure became so strong it even induced nausea.

Claudia scolded her legs that almost backed away.

Her gaze was sharp and her overflowing dominating aura would make anyone wondered that there must be some mistake of her being a clumsy self-destructing saint. Truly, she was certainly worthy to be called as the “strongest exorcist”.

「I've also waited for this time. This time for me to take revenge for father and mother. This time where I'll destroy you!」

『Kakah. What a pleasant hatred. It's astonishing to hear that coming from a servant of god.』

Unknown spoke in ridicule, to corner his opponent.

『In the first place, wasn't it you who summoned me? The death of your mother and father was——』

「Yes, it was my fault.」

But, it didn't work anymore against Claudia.

Because,

「It seems that it's fine to hate. It seems that it's also fine to fight for personal enmity.」

Because that was human heart. Because there was no doubt, that it was an important heart.

But, that wasn't all. There was certainly things that she had accumulated until now.

「I will destroy you with following my personal enmity and my mission.」

The sense of mission that she held together with her comrades was also Claudia's strength.

Thinking of him that made her notice that, Claudia recalled his fearless smile and tried to imitate it. As though to fire herself up and push back Unknown's pressure.

「You want me right? Then, stop with the trifling talk and come at me.」

With the Holy Cross in one hand, her other hand gestured invitingly,

Strongest Exorcist

「I am, the “ Saint ” Claudia Barenberg. If you think that you can make me fall, you can try.」

A war declaration. Killing intent and sense of mission throughout these twelve years were filling it.

『Kakah, very well. I'll make you fall and become pregnant with me. If it's me with the reborn flesh, I'll surely be able to trample even those irritating



technique users!』

Unknown lifted his hand. Right away, a pressure attacked Claudia. It wasn't a mental pressure. It was more physical, yes, it was super gravity.

「Tsu——o lord-, please protect thy child! So that all evil will be thwarted by the solid fortress!」

She kneeled while supporting the Holy Cross. Claudia's prayer resounded. The Holy Cross's barrier increased in radiance and protected the user from the super gravity.

『Let's see how far you will be able to endure.』

Unknown increased the pressure further while mixing a scorning laugh.

*Blam-*, the rooftop around Claudia sunk. But, even while groaning Claudia was still going strong. Her strong gaze pierced Unknown and the radiance of the Holy Cross was getting increasingly stronger.

But, it was the building that became unable to endure that intense pressure.

Cracks were spreading in radiating shape around Claudia.

「——Wings of summit!」

A moment before the rooftop caved in, she deployed the silver wings and glided. The high-rise building was crumbling below with a rumble and thunderous sound. During that time Claudia was trying to move to the adjacent building.

But,

『That light is an eyesore.』

「——!？」

Unknown's figure was right in front of her. His arm was drawn back and then it attacked Claudia like a cannon that was fired from close range.

Terrific impact instantly almost made her lost consciousness, however, the light of Holy Cross, the strongest sacred vessel wasn't pierced and protected the user fully.

Although, the place was midair. Claudia was blown away along with her

barrier like a pinball and pierced through the adjacent building. Without stopping she crashed into the upper floor of even farther building.

「Uh, kuh」

Even though she was groaning, Claudia had endured an attack that normally would turn the victim into a lump of flesh. Her consciousness almost left her once more, but she absolutely wouldn't let go of the Holy Cross's protection.

Then, at that timing, a powerful torrent of power outside the building was.....

「Tsu——o lord, sever the evil of the wicked and support the righteous to stand firm! What protect me is the shield of god! God saves those with earnest heart!」

The moment she strengthened the barrier further, the space screamed. Her field of vision flabbily distorted as though her sight was blurred, but the next instant the very space itself shook.

The high-rise building that received an impact that should be called a space blasting instantly turned the spot above the floor where Claudia was located into dust.

Even the floor itself was filled with cracks like spider web and it would collapse anytime.

At the center of the floor that now had good visibility, Claudia was clinging on the Holy Cross with a pale expression. Even while the barrier had countless cracks in it, it somehow endured.

But, she had used a lot of power for strengthening the barrier just now. Claudia tried to take out a test tube from her pocket with trembling hand——

『Is that a kind of holy water? I won't let you.』

Unknown tackled. Claudia who was blown away once more yelled 「aAAAAAH」 while pouring strength into the Holy Cross.

Claudia was blown away as though being pushed while piercing through several high-rise buildings. Before long, she crashed onto an open space near the surface ground.

「Ua, hh, kuh」

She groaned. From outside the barrier, Unknown was looking down with enjoyment at Claudia who was enduring the pain.

Claudia who tried to retreat was stopped by foot trampling on the barrier's top.

『Kakakah. What's the matter, Claudia. Is your high spirit only appeared at the beginning? You won't be able to defeat me by simply defending you know?』

Unknown trampled the barrier while cornering Claudia with words. Claudia glared back wordlessly.

Even now when she was forced into defense one-sidedly and getting shown the difference in strength while being completely isolated, Claudia kept sending a rebellious gaze. Unknown narrowed his eyes and right after that he grinned repulsively and spread out his hands.

Then,

『Claire.....please, save father.』

『It's painful, Claire. Why are you tormenting your mother?』

Besides Unknown, the father and mother of Claudia appeared. They were broiled in black and flamed writhed in pain.

It was Claudia's fault that they were suffering. It was only Claudia who could liberate them from this suffering.

That's why, don't be disobedient even more than this.....

I beg you, be a good kid.....

You are, really a bad kid.....

「Fufuh」

A chuckle leaked out.

Yes, it was Claudia's laugh.

Unknown narrowed his eyes in puzzlement.

『Are you going crazy?』

「No way. I'm just amused, at how cornered you are.」

『You are saying, I'm cornered?』

Unknown was getting even more puzzled. Claudia fearlessly laughed even with her pale face.

「In reality that's how it is right? You cannot break through my barrier, but considering the possibility that I might die, you also cannot attack seriously. That's why, you are even doing this kind of play to break my mind.」

『Just when I'm wondering what are you going to say. The delight of trampling over your heart is——』

「Even though that person is coming?」

Unknown closed his mouth. Claudia's smile was getting increasingly wider.

「You are fearing that person.」

『What are you.....』

「You aimed at him first when we stepped inside hell. Even when you were dragging me here, you sent an intense attack only to that person. Above all else, you yourself said that you have to be reborn. You are aware that you won't be able to win against the technique users——the returnees right?」

*Creak-*, the barrier made a sound. It was creaking from Unknown's stepping foot. It expressed the condition of Unknown's heart more eloquently than anything.

「Even though you were dragging me away here without being able to finish off that person, my defense is harder than you imagined. That's why, you even did this kind of provocation wanting me to go out into offense.」

Even if it was Claudia, the strongest exorcist, it would be difficult to activate defense and offense simultaneously at the same level. She was able to endure Unknown's attack right now exactly because she was persisting in defense.

The moment she shifted into offense, Unknown would definitely take advantage of the opening in the defense that would slightly loosen at that time.

「That person said it.」

Claudia showed a bright grin that was terribly irritating for the enemy no

matter what and she spoke.

「A demon king will be lying in wait brazenly. You who are running away, hiding, and making petty provocation have declared it yourself through that.」

That was to say,

「That you have no caliber as demon king.」

『.....You don't need any limbs to conceive me.』

Unknown became serious. Intense rage and hatred surged. His feeling that wanted to make Claudia into his mother body unharmed had vanished. As though to say it would be fine as long as she survived while conceiving him until he was reborn, he was going to unleash an attack without holding back.

「I'm grateful that you are going along with my conversation.」

『What?』

「I'm saying, that I have bought enough time.」

Furthermore, Claudia who was forming a wide smile with loveliness that was unthinkable for someone who was in hell called out with her happiness in full display.

「Right? Kousuke-sama!」

「Exactly.」

『Guo!?!』

The one who answered to that call was of course, that person, the abyss lord. The invisibility that was working in full made even Unknown to not notice his approach. A flying kick of gravity & blaze from directly horizontal—  
Fall into the deep darkness  
Jutsui Engeki Kyaku exploded. (TN: Gravity Crash Blazing Kick)

The technique that was created by ad-lib blew away Unknown that was hit by it once more. His body pulverized the pillar of a high-rise building and vanished to the other side.

「I'm sorry Claire, for leaving you alone like this.」

「No, Kousuke-sama. I believed in you. Besides, I am someone who introduced

myself as the strongest exorcist. It will be out of the question for me to be unable to struggle through just this much by myself.」

「Fuh, I see. By the way, right now call me Abyssga——」

「Kousuke-sama! Please be careful! Unknown is even more powerful than before!」

「Ri, iight.....」

Ri, iiight~~~

‘Why won’t you call me Abyssgate? Right now, it’s okay even if you call me Aby you know?’ the lord thought, but he closed his mouth seeing the towering building at the other side of the street of magma collapsed with a thunderous sound and a spire of darkness color pierced the sky.

The lord that felt a sever killing intent directed to him carried Claudia in his arms and attempted to escape to the sky.

Right after he flew up with his pseudo flight, the place where they were at just a moment ago was hit with a shower of countless tentacles like a rain. The foothold was destroyed and sunk into magma.

The lord who flew without paying attention to that landed on the highest skyscraper.

Even though this highest high-rise building that had huge clock attached in it was devastated, it possessed a majesty that gave the impression that perhaps it was the symbol of this city when this underground city was still in good state. The stopped hands of the clock might be engraving the time when this city was destroyed.....

The lord let Claudia down, at the same time Unknown also landed on the rooftop of the clock building.

『So you are going to get in my way no matter what, human?』

「I’m going to get in your way no matter what, demon.」

The hero in black walked forward while covering the holy woman behind him.

The saint believed in him and kneeled. She put up the Holy Cross in front of

her and held it tightly with both hands while closing her eyes.

『I'll trample you bastard and your comrades too.』

「Looks like you have no sense of joke.」

*Shan-* with a clear sound two short swords were drawn out.

Of course, they were then held in the awesome cross stance!

「Let's make it simple. Claire will destroy you. If before that you can kill me, it will be your win. If you cannot.....you understand right?」

『That's simple, and on top of that it's easy.』

‘That's not the case’, the lord laughed.

「No need to hold back. Dance with desperation to resist against death, demon. If not, my abyss will easily swallow you.」

——Activated Last Zell v.4

Limit Break!!! The torrent of jet black pierced the sky!

『A mere human, know your place!』

Unknown vanished. He rapidly approached with a speed that made it seemed so. He went toward the center of the torrent and thrust forward his powerful arm that was enlarged like a log.

The sound of destruction was the proof that the speed surpassed the speed of sound. The torrent of jet black was sent flying.

At the same time, blades flew toward Unknown.

Neck, arms, torso, legs. Four lords swung short sword that was enveloped in flame.

『Impertinent!!』

Unknown thrust out blades of shadow from all over his body like a mountain of swords. The four lords were stabbed, however, they grinned and right after that, they split into eight lords and unleashed a storm of slash.

Unknown who got a part of his shadow cut down greatly rotated his body. His body that was covered with swords and his whip-like tail became a brutal attack

to all directions.

The eight lords were shredded to pieces in an instant but,

「I'll have you stop getting wild near Claire.」

The dark flame of the whirling abyss

Abyss-style Katon – Futon mixed formation Gouka Beni Senpū—four layers of blazing whirlwinds were activated from the lords at the four directions.

The immense red spire scorched the air.

Furthermore, nine lords that were lined up in a single vertical line charged in a straight line toward the flame pillar.

『Mere flame-』

It wasn't effective. At the same time when Unknown's voice resounded, the pillar of flame was burst open.

Because the lord had predicted that, the column rush—Abyss-style Jeo Stream Attack!

Unknown's tentacles pierced the lord at the lead, then the shockwave that resulted from a mere swing of the arm blew away the second and third lord. A super gravity that was suddenly generated crushed the fourth and fifth lord but.....

The attacks couldn't reach until the sixth. Unknown attempted to intercept with his own fist, but that fist itself was met with a kick that was enveloped in flame from the sixth, and the other arm was also deflected by the seventh.

Like that, the eighth's kick exploded on the torso that became defenseless.

『Nuguh』

「Fly away」

As an insurance, two short swords were launched into a fierce thrust that gouged even the eighth. The two swords that were enveloped in flame and ice even unleashed further impact and sent Unknown flying literally.

He flew like a pinball, bounced on the rooftop of the adjacent building, and then he crashed into the upper floor of even further adjacent building.



「Claire, can you do it?」

「Yes, Kousuke-sama. From here on, I will entrust my everything to you.」

Claire who opened her closed eyes said that and smiled. And then, she closed her eyes once more.

She was able to recover before the current fight. She had also finished her mental preparation.

Therefore she could chant, the prayer to god, the scripture with the strongest relation to the deed of demon extermination. Once it was used, she would use up all her strength and became unable to move properly. It was the strongest exorcist's words of power that should also be called a double-edged sword.

——O lord, please listen to the prayer of thy child. Please stop this lamentation in my heart.

The Holy Cross was enveloped in faint light. It was a pure white, fleeting radiance that looked like it would vanish anytime.

『Don't get carried away, human!』

Super gravity attacked the whole clock building. The high-rise building that was two building away from here was blown away and Unknown flew out.

「That's my line, demon.」

Gravity magic “Black Vortex” ——maximum activation!

The four lords that were positioned at the four directions of the rooftop formed gravity field at their respective position. The pressure that was coming down on the clock building was neutralized by the barrier of gravity field.

Shadow flew out from Unknown. Aura that was painting out the surrounding black was spreading, even dark clouds were starting to filling up the ceiling.

From the aura of black shadow, great number of demons, monsters oozed out.

Not to mention Gargoyle, Gazer, and Hell Hound, even that shark that could cross through space, a one horned horse enveloped in purple lightning, a crow with woman head attached, a lump of dark red flame.....

The number easily reached the thousand.

Unknown spread his hands widely to the demons who filled the space to the brim and spoke.

『This is the power of king.』

Then,

「This is the power of the abyss.」

In return, the lord opposed with a thousand lords.

The two armies used the skyscrapers as replacement for stepping stones or clashed in the air.

——God is the righteous judge. Thy, repent. The god sharpen that sword, draw that bow, and prepare the weapon to bring death, turning arrow into fire arrow

Unknown glanced at Claudia who was continuing to pray and raised a yell while gritting his teeth.

『You bastard, just how much power you have!? That's a power that surpassed the category that is allowed for human!』

A human who was unbelievably opposing an army of demon with troops of equal force.

Unknown joined the battle personally in order to clear away the reality that wouldn't go as he expected.

「Have you forgotten? It will always be human who destroy existences like you.」

A black hole materialized in the air. At the same time, Unknown's figure vanished. It wasn't anything like high speed movement. He crossed over space through the black hole and materialized behind the lord.

The powerful arm struck mercilessly, however, the lord too dodged by vanishing.

Abyss is always unevenly distributed

Abyss-style Kuuton technique Ban'ei no Kagerou——a technique that used clone, disposable pebble for teleportation, kunai, and so on to switch spatial

position.

The materialization location was of course behind Unknown. The short swords flew and shaved away the shadow!

『You bastard, just as I thought you are possessing the power of the royalty.』

Unknown muttered while his eyes of flame blazed up. Instantly, a streak of lightning fell on the lord.

「Guuh, so you can control even the weather!」

The rain of lightning poured down in godspeed was blocked by randomly dodging while using clones as shield.

——O lord, please descend. My god, please grant me salvation. With that, I will destroy thy enemy and crush the wicked heart

Lightning was also falling to Claudia, but that too was shielded by the clones who used themselves to build an impregnable wall. Not even a single attack passed through.

Claudia too didn't bother at all with the situation outside herself. She only closed her eyes and offered her prayer wholeheartedly.

Unnoticed, the Holy Cross's radiance was getting so bright it couldn't be ignored. The brilliant light was like a sun in the form of cross.

Unknown created a black hole in front of himself. His narrowed eyes was looking through the lord toward Claudia behind him.

『I'll face you at my leisure for later.』

Unknown vanished into the black hole as though he was absorbed in. His destination was obvious. Right behind Claudia.....

steps of death

「Don't speak such cold thing. This is a dance between me and you right?」

Similary, right behind Claudia——the lord who teleported between her and Unknown thrust the short sword that he held in reverse grip toward Unknown's stomach while grinning fearlessly. And then, he activated teleportation once more.

It was a teleportation to a different place that also dragged Unknown

together.

『You bastard-. All troops, aim for the woman! Don't bother with the man's shadows!』

Unknown gave the order to aim at Claudia and disregarded the lord's clones that would increase with more number than the defeated clones.

The demons also appeared without end. Several hundred demons ignored the clones and advanced toward Claudia.

「I thought you will come like that!」

Multiple clones gathered to where Claudia was.

Like that, they lifted up their hands to the sky as though making a group prayer, and unleashed the trump card that he had prepared since this battle started and was desperately keeping in standby state until now.

「『『『『『——Black Heaven Destitution!!!』』』』』」

One of the gravity magic's hidden technique that swallowed the whole area and obliterated everything without a single exception.

A star of calamity appeared near the ceiling, whirled blackly, and released jet black sparks. It was swallowing all the demons that were rapidly approaching Claudia.

The demons screamed while desperately struggling in the air, but there was no way they could escape from the pseudo black hole by doing something like that.

The clones were desperately protecting the clock building by deploying gravity field barrier, but even the surrounding high-rise buildings got their upper floors torn off and swallowed.

『Impossible.....』

For a moment Unknown was dumbfounded. The technique that the human who he was facing right now showed was without a doubt something that could only be handled by the royalty, furthermore it was only by the few minority of them. Even he himself hadn't reached that level!

『.....No way I'll accept this. There is no way this is acceptable-』

Unknown became indignant and caused severe quake in the space itself.

「Kahah!?!」

The lord was sent flying while vomiting blood along with several hundred clones at the same time.

The use of Black Heaven Destitution was a double-edged sword. Because it was a trump card among trump card, it would use up the entire magic power and vitality of the user. It was to the degree that the lord became unable to instantly react against the wide range attack of space blasting.

Ignoring the lord who was sent flying while vomiting blood, Unknown rapidly approached Claudia once more. There was no clone on his way. He didn't teleport but rushed straight physically to kidnap her right away.

「I, told you, I WON'T LET YOUUUUUUUU-」

The lord unusually raised a war cry with his emotion bared open. Using pseudo flight that gave a speed of freefalling, in addition of the acceleration using gravity magic, he cut into the Unknown's path.

『You're in the way-, human!』

「The one in the way, is you asshole-, demooon!!」

The lord took a stance of crossguard with his short swords while blocking the Unknown's rush.

He was being pushed back to where Claudia was, but at that time he had already recovered several clones. They attacked Unknown from all directions and somehow stopped the momentum of his charge.

——Even if evil has no end, even if the battle will last for eternity, my faithful heart too will continue for eternity without end. Therefore, o enemy of god. O existence of vice and scorn. Look, our light too, is eternal.

At the same time when the Black Heaven Destitution vanished, light gathered to there. The pure white light erupting from the Holy Cross was taking shape bit by bit. Yes, the shape of a huge cross of light that pierced the sky.

The demons who were nearby were dispersed without being able to even do anything to resist. Just like how shadow that was touched by the light would silently vanish.

The Unknown that was locked in a contest of strength against the lord opened his eyes wide seeing the cross of heaven.

He instantly understood. That was something that was enough to destroy him, no, all demons. The terrifying act of god. It drew a line from a simple miracle, so to speak it was the very concept of “destroying demon”.

Unknown raised a shriek.

『KILL THAT WOMAAAAANNNN!!』

「I WON'T LET YOU, TOUCH EVEN A SINGLE FINGER OF HEEEEERRR!!」

In respond the lord was also commanding with a scream to all his clones.

Unknown directed eyes that were blazing with hatred toward the lord. Right away, Unknown's last ability was activated.

「-, this guy!?!」

Unknown changed shape. Lion's head, feet and claws that were like dragon, snake tail and hawk wings——yes, it was that monster that once made Kousuke to swallow bitterness——a chimera.

An instant of unrest. But, he barely dodged the approaching claws and fangs due to a clone that took them in his place.

The snake tail attacked, but he severed it with his short sword.

Without pause the lord stepped in and let out a slash with the short sword in one hand——

『You still have some way to go huh, Kousuke.』

「Wha-——guah!?!」

The lord got diagonally slashed instead.

The discomposure disordered his swordsmanship and right after the sword was deflected, he got hit by a counter.

The cause of the discomposure was one. The thing that was a chimera just now had become the man who was like an older brother that the lord, Kousuke, still idolized unwaveringly until now.

Yes,

「Captain, Meld.....」

Unknown's last ability was to read the weak memory of the opponent and reproduced that person. Just like how he showed Claudia her dead parents. However, this time it wasn't an illusion, he was transforming himself.

『Kousuke. Don't get in my way!』

「Don't look down on me-」

A great sword that was held above the head was parried with the two short swords even while being discomposed.

The lord rotated while unleashing a high spinning kick to mow the opponent's face but,

『Kousuke-, stop-. What are you doing!?!』

「——」

Instantly, the face that he was going to kick through right now changed into Emily's face.

Perhaps his discomposure showed in his face, because for a moment, Emily's lips distorted.

「Shih-」

『Nuu!?!』

But, the lord kicked through Emily's face without stopping. Even while feeling discomposure, the lord didn't lessen the kick's strength at the slightest. Unknown let out a shocked voice.

「What's the matter? Come at me. You can do whatever you can.」

It was obvious for anyone who looked. The lord had quietly snapped. He gestured with his fingertip provocatively.

——Arrive at the sacred palace, the gate of consecration opened. Now, let's gather

The light that the cross of heaven emitted was starting to burn Unknown's flesh by bits and pieces as though in concert with the lord's fury. The end for the prayer, and for Unknown was nearing.

「There is no time you know, demon? You naked king who is abandoned even by your fellow demons and cannot even injure a single human without relying on a cheap trick.」

『.....-, I am king. I am the true king-. They aren't responding to my call is simply because they are ascertaining! The caliber of king, exist only in m——』

From his words, as expected Unknown couldn't gather the named demons. He didn't know the true reason, but from Unknown's attitude that laughed scornfully saying 「So what if I can't」 in respond to that, as expected he wasn't worthy to be called a demon king.

The lord snorted 'hah' and raised his middle finger.

「Keep barking alone like that for your whole life, you loser dog.」

Unknown charged in a state where his rage couldn't be expressed in language anymore.

The lord met him from the front.

The ever-changing attacks of powerful arms, tentacles, and tail were all taken down by clones that were half deployed as though overlapping with the main body as though there were double or triple layers of blur.

When super gravity poured down, it was opposed by similar anti gravity. His eyes didn't overlook the sign of space blasting and he prevented it through disturbing the space by activating his own teleportation incompletely.

Demons came attacking. But, the multiplication speed of the clones finally surpassed the demon summoning speed. A single demon would be swarmed by dozens of clones. The number was crushed by even greater number.

Unknown was repeatedly attacking with super speed while transforming into people close to the lord one after another, but unnoticed the balanced battle



was.....

『You, bastard-. You're still, getting faster-』

Abyssgate

「That is mine Limit Break. This is——Abyss Lord.」

The special Limit Break that increased the specs the more time passed——Abyss Lord. Using Last Zell, the lord reached the deepest depth in one go and from there he continued to drink magic power recovery medicine when there was opening.

By doing that, although there was limit for the flesh body, the Limit Break state was unbroken and the spec was increasing even further from the deepest depth. So to speak, it was a path that was leading to the last derivation technique of Limit Break, “Supreme Break”.

Specs that were completely superior. The lord was already becoming a streak of shadow in a different sense from Unknown and danced madly. Far from dodging, even ignoring the lord and aiming at Claudia had become impossible for Unknown.

——What is here is the sacred cross. The embodiment of god's wish. The absolute concept that bring about the ultimate will in heaven.

And then, the cross that was shining in the sky——its form was completely established. It was truly the Holy Cross of Claudia itself.

The underground city was filled with light until the far end of the ground!

『Stop-, CLAUDIAaAAA-! YOU'RE, MY——』

「It's checkmate. This is far easier than inflicting a single scratch on the demon king.」

There was no more dignity or anything. Unknown was frantically trying to stop Claudia with a deathly desperation.

But, such Unknown was once more sent flying really easily by the lord.

「Now, it's the closing of curtain. End the nightmare throughout these twelve years! Claudia Barenberg!」

‘Yes, Kousuke-sama.’

Even though there was no voice, such soft words that were filled with determination certainly reached the lord.

And then,

「I command under the name of Saint, Claudia Barenberg.」

Claudia's eyes opened slowly. The jade eyes shined silver, and she herself was illuminated from behind by a silver halo along with the Holy Cross.

「O residents of hell, o people whose soul are invaded by desire of strife and rule——perish.」

The words of the saint were told solemnly, however, myriad of feelings were filling it.

A scream surged out. A scream of death agony.

All the demons in this underground space were illuminated by shining Holy Cross at the sky and vanished.

『.....It, doesn't come true again』

There was already no place where the light didn't reach.

Far from that, Unknown who was smoking white from his whole body noticed that he couldn't even activate his own abilities and silently stared at his crumbling hands.

Unknown's gaze turned toward Claudia who was looking straight at him. When he noticed, the man who was his greatest obstacle was drawing closer to her.

Seeing the strength of the two's gaze, the determination residing inside those pupils that was shining in this hell, Unknown returned an envious gaze to that for an instant.

But, before Claudia and the lord noticed that, those eyes immediately burned with the flame of hatred and,

『Hell is created from nine stratum. In the lower stratum, existences that are far beyond your imagination can be found anywhere.』

He talked further while half his body was crumbling away.

『I don't know what those guys' plan are for you all, but at the very least, I have left behind a command to the dead at the stratum right below here. Even if I perish, every single one of them will trample your world until they are all exterminated to the last. The door to your world are opening in the lower stratum.』

The expression of the lord and Claudia stiffened. Because both of them exerted their maximum strength in this battle, they were mostly spent right now. In addition, if the path was opened, right in this instant Vatican would be flooded with demons.

Unknown sent a mocking smile to the two of them, and then, hatefully, resentfully, Unknown was showing an expression that was filled with such complicated emotions before at the end, with a calm tone as though he had let go of the burden on his shoulders,

『These damn humans』

Saying that, he vanished.

That was the true end of the unknown greater demon who had been scheming to invade and rule over the other world since faraway past.

「Uu-」

It was Claudia's groan. The Holy Cross of heaven melted into empty air and vanished.

「-, Claire.....are you alright?」

While vomiting a bit of blood and desperately maintaining his sanity that was almost lost due to his mini self inside his heart that was wearing a chuuni T-shirt, Kousuke scolded himself that now wasn't the time for that and supported Claudia. 'It huuurts, my heart huuurtts. But, work hard for a bit more okaay, meee!'

Claudia who didn't have any way of knowing the inside of Kousuke's heart that was like that was silently shedding tears.

「Kousuke-sama.....am I, does Claire.....succeed in getting revenge for mama and papa?」

The Holy Cross fell with a clang. Claudia who was already using up all her strength and feeling was only crouching while leaking out a sob with a feeling that couldn't be expressed in words.

The divine light vanished completely and only the redness of magma illuminated the underground city. Amidst that, Kousuke embraced Claudia's head.

「From the start, Claudia's mama and papa doesn't want Claudia to take revenge or anything. That's what I thought. They should want you to live happily.」

The family that Claudia kept thinking about even after twelve years had passed. The parents who poured their love by that much into their daughter must be wishing for their daughter's happiness.

「But, even so, Claire made your wish came true through the path that you decided by yourself and you traveled desperately. Even though it's a path that is different from what your parents want, if they two of them are here, they will absolutely say this while thinking about Claire, not for their own sake.」

——You have worked really hard.

She had done her best for twelve years even while vomiting blood. There was no way they wouldn't feel proud of such daughter.

When Claudia heard Kousuke's words, she buried her face into his chest and sobbed quietly once more.

The two of them were snuggling close to each other like that in the middle of hell just for a few moment.

「Let's go home Claire. Right now it's still the time to run for that sake.」

「Yes, yes-, Kousuke-sama!」

Even though she had used up all her strength and her expression was pale, Claudia who understood Kousuke's feeling showed a smile that looked the loveliest until now. It was a beauty that was worthy for the name of saint.

But, at that time, a terrific impact assaulted the underground city. It was an impact that was like a tremendous earthquake. Just from that, several high-rise

buildings that were in the verge of crumbling collapsed and vanished into the sea of magma.

「Chih. It's the dead of the lower stratum huh. That damn Unknown, he is irritating until the very end.」

The physical weariness that came as the after effect of Limit Break wasn't something trivial. It was even truer because this time after entering Limit Break state of depth V, Kousuke forcefully lengthened the effect until his specs were increased to the degree that he entered the state of Supreme Break.

Kousuke became able to move somehow by using the recovery medicine of the highest grade and then he carried Claudia on his back.

「Claire, how much you can still fight?」

「Thanks to the secret medicine I received.....if there are five more minutes, I will be able to somehow to deploy the minimum barrier and offense.」

Five minutes. It sounded short but long. Kousuke himself too would only be able to use elementary level magic for a while. In hand-to-hand combat too he would only be able to do a movement that was forty percent of his normal state.

But, even so,

「We are going home.」

「Yes, Kousuke-sama!」

Claudia hugged Kousuke's neck tightly as though to bury her face onto it.

The impact that was piercing up from the lower stratum was getting stronger second by second. Other than flooding into earth, the demons of the third stratum must be trying to climb up to this upper stratum that was this underground city, or perhaps they were even trying to climb until the surface. It was possible that their objective might be to chase after Kousuke and Claudia.

They already didn't have even a minute of time extension.

If there was something that could be called as a small mercy, the hole on the ceiling that they used to come here was still existing. For some reason the hole wasn't black, it was becoming a hole of light, but there was no doubt that Wynn

and others were maintain the hole.

Kousuke squeezed out his remaining little magic power that the recovery couldn't catch up with and flew right away to the ceiling.

He passed through the shining hole and flew toward the visible exit of light.

「You are back!」

「Claudia-sama! Kousuke-san.」

「I'm glad.....」

They tumbled on the ground when landing. When Kousuke and Claudia raised their face, Wynn and others were there. Although they had become wounded all over, not a single member was lacking from among them.

「Everyone, I'm glad all of you are safe.....」

Claudia became teary eyed once more, but she quickly pulled herself together.

「Unknown was defeated. But, at the end he made the demons at third stratum to rampage. Surely they are already appearing in our world too. We have to escape from here as fast as possible. If not we will be swallowed by a large swarm of high class demons!」

Wynn and others gulped. But, their discomposure lasted only for a moment. They immediately reformed their formation to surround Kousuke and Claudia on his back.

「Time until recovery?」

「I want two more minutes until I can make clone again.」

Even if they would be able to escape safely, the compensation of forcing himself would be him being unable to move properly for a week. Kousuke thought that while giving an answer. Though of course, if he could get regeneration magic applied to him, he would become better to a certain degree.

「Got it. Leave the two minutes to us.」

With Wynn at the lead, the ragged exorcists started running with Kousuke and

Claudia at the center.

They were cutting open the path with great desperation.

Like that, they somehow succeeded in going until they could see the outer circumference of the ruined city. But, there was despair there. At the other side of the street where they were rushing through to escape from the ruined city, at the wasteland outside, low class demons were gathering in fan shape.

The number of the low class demons should be expressed as blanketing the ground. If it was seen from above, the sky was also flooded with the winged low class demons.

It seemed they were lying in ambush.

There, even more despair was catching up with them.

*DON-* An impact came once more. The seismic intensity that far surpassed even 7 or 8 Richter assaulted them. Kousuke and others who were in a state of extreme exhaustion couldn't help but collapsed or stopped moving.

「What's that just now!? Don't tell me, they are coming out already from the third stratum into the underground city!？」

「-, wait, what's this pressure!? This is far more than Unknown isn't it!?」

Kousuke and others exposed a lethal opening, however, for some reason the low class demons didn't attack.

Far from that, they were looking around as though being scared of something. It even looked like they were in confusion.

*DON-*

*DON-*

*DON-*

Impacts came intermittently like the pulsation of a mighty existence. At the same time, there was a swelling up presence which applied pressure that caused even Kousuke to shrink back.

The wind of lamentation, the physical exhaustion from Limit Break, and then  
Abyss Lord's aftereffect  
the mental exhaustion that he was enduring by desperately averting his gaze

from it, they were dulling Kousuke's senses and he couldn't grasp the detail of the enemy that was approaching from the underground.

But, if that enemy appeared right now, they absolutely wouldn't be able to win.....

Should he resolved the breaking down of his flesh and bought time by using Limit Break – Depth V mode once more.....

But, if he did that, the possibility of Kousuke himself going home would be despairingly low.

At the back of his mind flashed the image of Rana, Emily, the people close to him, comrades, and then family.....

(Eei, don't hesitate, me! In any case, no one will be able to go home if I don't fight! Fight here with the resolve of making this place my grave!)

He silently put down Claudia.

The determined expression of Kousuke caused Claudia to grasp his sleeve spontaneously. She guessed what he was planning to do.

Wynn and others also guessed the same.

That was why, before Kousuke could say 「Leave this place to me and go ahead. No worry, I'll catch up soon」,

「We cannot let Kousuke-dono to steal the spotlight even more than this.」

「Please don't underestimate exorcist.」

「This time, I'll protect Kousuke-san.」

After Wynn, Anna, and Aziz said that, the other members also grinned fearlessly and readied their sacred vessel. Claudia smiled gently and embraced Kousuke's arm.

「Let's be together, till the end.」

Kousuke showed a slight hesitation but.....a beat. He shrugged his shoulders in exasperation and nodded with an expression of resolve.

And then,



「Don't give up till the end! We will absolutely return alive! ——Here it comes-」

At that instant, the ground was pulverized——

—  
—  
—

「SHAORAAAAAAAAAAAAA-, DESUUU!!」

—  
—  
—

A rabbit flew up. Along with a giant that looked like a minotaur getting socked in the face.

—

「「「「「Eh?」」」」」

—

It went without saying that the eyes of Kousuke and others, without a single exception shrunk into a dot.

—

\_\_\_\_\_

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Abyss Lord arc chapter 2, it will be the epilogue at the next week's update.

After that, I'm thinking of taking holiday for around a month again.

The reason is because I want to focus at the writing of the publication.

If possible I plan to resume updating at 12 June, or 19 June at the latest.

Forgive me but, my best regards.

—

PS

In Overlap big thanks festival the other day, Yue-sama received the glorious first position in the heroine popularity poll.

This too is thanks to everyone who is giving your support everyday.

Really thank you very much!

Also, the second position is Shia, while 5<sup>th</sup> is Kaori, and 6<sup>th</sup> is Tio. Really, really thank you very much!

I also received a lot of support and words that they are always looking forward to Arifureta in the autograph session. Shirakome was nervous and desperate so that my hand wouldn't shake, but at the end even that became gone and I got a lot motivated. Thank you very much!

—

PS 2

The key visual of the anime is published at Overlap-sama's homepage!

The gentle and fluffy Yue-sama is really lovely, so if you don't mind, please go take a look no matter what!

# Arifureta Chapter 318

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Epilogue First

—

AN: It became too long so I divided it.

After this, the 「Epilogue Second」 will also get uploaded at 19 o'clock.

---

「SHAORAAAAAAAAAH, DESUU!!」

An unnatural 「DESUU!!」 resounded. Rabbit ears were flapping in the wind. The swung war hammer grandly whipped the “Wind of Lamentation”, and then, ——BUMOOOOOOOOH!?

The giant that looked like a minotaur raised a scream that even sounded like a tearful cry. It danced in the sky while drawing a beautiful parabola arc.

By the way, a part of minotaur-san's head was caving in.

Even though they had resolved to fight to the death, even though they had affirmed their bond with each other in a great mood, the serious atmosphere was suddenly blown away along with the ground. Even the low class demons were looking up to the sky open mouthed.

「Aa~, what? The air has changed here.....」

A male voice suddenly resounded. It wasn't the voice of Kousuke or even Wynn and others. The voice came from the large hole in the ground that most likely was physically connecting to the lower stratum.

Kousuke was turning his gaze toward that hole with creaking movement like a

machine that hadn't been oiled. There, a face of a familiar man suddenly popped out.

It was the demon king-sama.

「NAGUMOOO!? WHY!? WHY NAGUMO!?」

Even now it felt like Kousuke was going to yell 'AEEEEEEEE-'. Hajime who agilely jumped out from the hole landed on the edge. Then he tilted his head while going 'Eh?' and said.

「What a coincidence to meet you in this kind of hellish place, Endou. Did you get a new haircut?」

「I didn't! What's that, is that getting popular between you spouses!? Wait, that ain't it!」

Kousuke-san stamped his feet in frustration. He was in great panic toward the development that was just too unexpected and abrupt.

Though, even while he was saying that,

「Fly away until the other side of the mountain! Desuu!!」

——BUMOOOOOOOOOH~~~~

The five meter mino-san got hit by Shia's full swing and pierced through dozens of buildings of the ruined city while flying toward the mountain beyond.

Shia was emitting faint bluish white ripples in the air while descending with light step from the sky. *Step* She landed beside Hajime then with an expression that said 「Oh?」,

「Kousuke-san, it has been two days hasn't it? Did you get a new haircut?」

「Okay. That gag is popular in Nagumo family huh? I get it. That's why, enough with that and explain the situation pleaseee! Why are you two in this kind of place!? Why did you make your entrance by smashing through the ground!? Explain clearly and concisely please!」

‘Oh geez, getting max tensioned like that so suddenly, that's a bit hard to keep up with you know?’

With a face that seemed to say that, Hajime-san and Shia-san talked in

whisper to each other. Pulsing vein emerged on Kousuke's forehead. Claudia and others were still dumbfounded. Also, the low class demons too were looking at each other's face.

Hajime who was showing a nonchalant attitude answered.

「When I went to a forest date with Shia~, we encountered a witch~.

She attacked so burned her along with the forest, but then we got sent into a strange place.

Seeing that we had gotten there anyway we went into an adventure date, but then Endou was there somehow.

That's all.]

「That's all my ass!」

‘I don't get it at all! It feels like my head will go crazy!’ Kousuke-kun grabbed his head.

But, at that time, the thousands and tens of thousands of low class demons surrounding the area started moving. Kousuke gasped and opened his eyes wide while taking battle stance. Claudia and others also prepared to fight despite their confusion.

But, before the hostilities began again,

「Oo, first people of another world, discovered. Somehow there are a lot of them but, well, no matter. ——Cough-. Hello, I'm, called Nagumo Hajime. We are, in the middle of a trip but, oh maaan, this is really troubling you know? We got attacked by monsters at underground you see, before we finally managed to climb up to the surface. Is it okay to talk for a bit?」

Hajime-san who talked politely with the best bright smile he got.

From the appearance of the low class demons, no matter how anyone looked at them they weren't proper living being, and their great number was nothing but menacing. And then, the talking partner was low class demons who weren't hiding their malice and killing intent at all but.....

Hajime-san seemed to not know that the other party was demons. It seemed he was doing his best to first try talking peacefully, as befitting of a model self-

proclaimed virtuous Japanese person which he regularly claimed to be.

‘Endou and others too, seem like they are getting into quarrel with the local people for some reason, can’t be helped, now that it’s like this I gotta mediate between them using my amazing communication skill’, such thinking also crossed his mind for a bit.

Shia was making tsukkomi 「Noo, no matter how you look at it, they are the same like the monster at lower level you know, Hajime-san」, but it seemed Hajime who had mellowed (?) wouldn’t just give up that easily.

No matter what kind of opponent it was, no matter what the situation was, he wouldn’t throw away the possibility of dialogue! As a Japanese person!

「Wai-, idiot! Those guys are——」

Kousuke tried to call out to stop him but, before he could, Hajime’s left hand that was held forward asking for a handshake was eaten.

Claudia and others voiced 「Ah」, Shia was staring with exasperated eyes that said 「I told you」, while Kousuke’s expression was cramped.

On the other hand, the low class demon that was biting too had “?” mark floating on its head when the sound of *clang-creak creak* and hard texture was impossibly coming from the left hand of the human prey it was chewing.

And then it slo~wly raised its head and tilted its neck as though to say 「This arm, isn’t it strange?」.

Hajime-san who was making a bright and wide smile saw the artificial skin for coating use got atrociously torn apart. His eye twitched. However he did his best to deepen his smile.

「The, the greeting in this place, is a bit extreme isn’t it? Normally the arm will get bitten off like this but, it’s that perhaps? Is it a play-biting that everyone here do? If that’s the case——」

——GIIIIIIIIH!! KILL! KILL! HUMAN! I’LL DEVOUR YOU!

Hajime-san’s compromise was trampled.

The low class demon yelled while biting once again, but the next moment, its head was gripped and it was lifted until it was dangling down from a hand.

And then, when it was lifted until it was eye-level with Hajime, Hajime who was smiling brightly from very close distance was,

「This is, what you call a legitimate self-defense.」

*Pachun!* The head was crushed in the hand's grip. It seemed Hajime realized their special nature, he used the artificial hand that was thoroughly enveloped by magic power and closed his fist as though crushing an apple. Normally, that would be a case of excessive self-defense.

In any case, it seemed that became the signal for the resume of hostility. The low class demons who were fanning out outside the ruined city and the low class demons infesting the sky too were tightening the encirclement.

And so.

At the right hand was the electromagnetic acceleration gatling cannon——Metzelei Disaster, equipped.

At the left hand was the missile & rocket launcher——Agni Orkan, equipped.

Let's, Curbstomp♪

Kousuke yelled 「GET DOOOOOWWWNNN-」 while pushing down Claudia. Wynn and others also felt an extreme chill and got down. Shia too flattened her rabbit ears and crouched down.

Right after that, there were the surging peculiar sound of *DURURURURURURU-* and countless anticlimax sounds of *hyuu~*.

Crimson flash that was mowing down horizontally. The low class demons that were sent flying until the far beyond simultaneously.

Several hundred missiles rushing through the sky. They were homing to the target and crimson fireworks bloomed profusely in the sky.

Even the low class demons lurking behind buildings were blasted, pulverized, and exterminated together with the buildings!

The time was around thirty seconds.

The extensive street behind became a mountain of rubbles, the area at the front became an empty lot with nothing existing there.

Seeing that, Claudia and others were,

「Kousuke-sama. Please, punch me! This isn't the time to lose sanity!」

「Eh, no, wai-, Claire?」

「Kuh, TJ! Melody of curse removal please! The enemy might be attacking us with hallucination!」

「Rogeeer~」

TJ-san responded right away with big sis voice toward Wynn's grim voice. The song of purification was flowing in the battlefield.

「Eh, what, orchestra band? Endou, you have unusual friend huh.」

「But Hajime-san, everyone look tattered somehow you know? Is it that kind of fashion? Special makeup? Are they the type of people living in the future?」

Hajime and Shia were looking at Claudia's group with wondering gaze.

「No, that ain't it! This people are exorcists! She is a saint! We were in a deathly battle just now where things like the fate of the world or Claudia being turned into mother body were at stake! Sorry for having so much difficulty against small fry! Or rather, you requested me to investigate Vatican right!? Look, that boy there! Aziz-kun! He is Vatican's exorcist you were telling me to chase!」

「Exor, cist.....you say? They existed!?!」

Hajime-san stared intently at young man Aziz. Aziz-kun, screamed 「hiih」 knowing that he caught the eye of demon king-sama, what's more he was being stared at even now.

「I didn't dare, to believe but.....oi, Endou. Could it be, this place is hell, and just now those things were demons!?!」

「That's right! This place is hell, and what you blew up just now were demons! They were low class though!」

「They are the real deal!?!」

「They are the real deal!」

Hajime covered his eyes with one hand and looked up as though to say 'oh



damn’.

Demon, what a word that tickled the chuuni heart. If only he knew, he would ask various question, and forcefully made them hand over souvenirs, and yet the two of them had blew away a great number of demons at the lower stratum, even the demons who spoke with human speech!

‘They are somehow strong huh. Eh, isn’t this look like age of god magic? Woah, we are gonna die if we let our guard down! The air is also harmful, this is like hell ain’t it! Interesting! Shia, it’s adventure date!’ He thought, but.....

To think , that his thought was completely correct!

Hajime was plainly shocked. He was muttering 「I thought that several of their name seemed familiar.....notice that, me」 while also murmuring 「It must be that right, they are demon, they must be indestructible existence right? They will revive properly right?」.

He sent a pleading gaze toward Claudia and others.

Claudia and others quietly averted their gaze.

But, right after that, Hajime’s screwing around air vanished and his eyes narrowed. Shia too narrowed her eyes and looked at the hole in the ground. Some kind of powerful presence was approaching. From the lower stratum.

「As expected they don’t feel like letting us get away.」

「It was a lovely adventure date that made the blood seethe and the flesh dance but, those guys——eerr, the demons.....because of them, we couldn’t even sightsee satisfactorily~」

It seemed they had an idea about the presence.

Looking closer, both Shia and Hajime didn’t seem to have serious injury, but their appearance was quite ragged. It could be imagined that they had been through a very fierce battle. At the same time, Kousuke couldn’t help but shuddering at the so called “those guys” who were making these two to look tattered like this.

“Those guys” went without saying, they must be the greater demons of the lower stratum.

The speech and gesture of Hajime and Shia looked composed, but the two obviously had sharp gaze without the slightest carelessness.

「Nagumo, what do you mean? Why are they chasing——」

「Wait for a bit.」

Hajime lifted his hand and stopped Kousuke's words. Even though his expression was serious, was it just Kousuke's feeling that it also looked slightly like messing around?

Hajime walked toward the big hole with a steady pace. And then, his treasure warehouse shined and he took out some kind of big sphere while going 「Heave-ho」. It was a metallic ball that was around the same size like a large ball used in school sports day.

Hajime carelessly tossed it into the big hole.

Hajime-san walked back with a steady pace.

Right after that, terrific shockwave and tremor occurred. And then, a pillar of light that burned the eye was piercing up to the sky.

「Nagumo-kun, Nagumo-kun. Just now, what did you do?」

「I only dropped a solar bomb. The pursuing bunches, it seems that other than magic power they are also weak against sunlight.」

「Solar bomb you say, you-」

It was the evolved version of solar bomb “Roze Helios” which used treasure warehouse in them that once blew away even apostles of god.

Seeing the shaken Kousuke, Hajime seemed to misunderstand something and snapped up a thumb up while puffing up his chest and spoke reassuringly.

「No worries. Everything within sight underground there was all blown away yeah♪」

「I'm not worrying about the power of the bomb! No, in a sense I'm also worried about the power though!」

It seemed they wouldn't be able to see that underground city that was filled with history anymore.

It seemed that most of the vanguard of the pursuer was blown away, so the approaching presence was slightly receding. Hajime who was convinced of that continued their talk as though nothing happened. Kousuke already stopped making anymore tsukkomi.

「So, regarding the question just now.....there were monsters——well, demons at the place we were sent to. Then, I explained to them cordially and thoroughly that we only wanted to sightsee but, we were attacked with no question asked.」

Hajime and Shia went into a mystique searching date in the forest of Britain. There they encountered a genuine witch of the forest like it was a matter of course. Then, the witch of the forest-san was relatively evil. And so, Hajime-san burned her along with the forest.

But, it seemed there was a spot where it was easy to connect to hell inside the forest, so at the very end they were dropped by the very last strength of the witch. That place they were dropped at was the lower strata of hell. Both of them were thinking of it as 「It's a thrilling and lovely brutal other woorrld!」 all that time but.....

Anyway, they were attacked by the lower strata demons there.

The first thing the self-proclaimed model Japanese Hajime did was to avoid battle with the local people. It seemed there was a stair nearby them that connected to the stratum below so they escaped into it. Then, even stronger demon appeared and as expected it attacked with no question asked.

There were various reasons it attacked like it was his turf, or questioning why humans were there, or because they were intruder, but when it targeted Shia, well, it devolved into trouble.

With Shia's magic power that was in a different league, added with her gender as female with a body that was not just healthy but also extremely strong, it could be easily guessed how such female would look like from the view point of demon.

Like that, Hajime and Shia thought that perhaps this place was like Orcus Great Dungeon of another world. They went looking for cultured and peaceful

local people. There were getting into relatively serious deathly battle against the attacking demons while climbing up until here by busting through the bedrock.

「When we came out at the surface, it became an unexpected reunion but..... although it was only around nine floors, it was really troublesome to climb up until here, and yet in the end our harvest in this trip is zero. In addition the local people were all demon. And Hajime-san blew all of them away.」

The words “nine floors” that Shia said made Claudia and others spout out 「Bufuoh!?!」.

That was the lowest stratum of hell. It was the authentic hell where named greater demons who came out in books were running rampant. These two were traveling from there by bursting through the bedrock.

As exorcist, they couldn't help but opening their eyes wide until the white of their eyes showed.

Furthermore,

「The first contact was a failure. If only I knew they were demon, perhaps there would be another way before it turned into battle, and yet.....」

「I wonder about that. Seeing that they are demon, furthermore by the time they are standing in front of Hajime-san, I think the result is already obvious.」

「No, what are you saying Shia? It was your fault. It was because you smashed that building that looked like castle with 100 ton hammer. They absurdly snapped because of that. What was that guy's name again? If I heard right, it was a name that I had heard before. I was dodging desperately so I didn't listen properly though.」

「Wait a second, Hajime-san. That was a sad accident that happened in the middle of legitimate self-defense. Or rather, don't make it like other person's fault. Even Hajime-san, the instant you understood that I was targeted, you snapped and fired Hyperion horizontally. That shot made a place that was like a shrine along with the area around it into an empty lot right? The cause all the demon-san were unable to back away was absolutely that. Some guys that looked self-important and dangerous snapped into incoherent mess after that.」

Named demons who owned castle or shrine..... Destruction of place that was most likely their turf's stronghold.....

Group of grater demons pursuing the two from the lowest level in a state of complete rage.....

「Ahaha.....fuu~~~~」

「Aa!? Claudia-sama! Hang in there!」

Claudia suddenly let go of her consciousness. Anna hurriedly supported her, but her eyes were also dead.

「Aah geez. Nagumo, the Crystal Key! Let's return quickly to our world!」

「Hm? Isn't it better to do something about the group of greater demons?」

Kousuke explained the gist of the situation a bit impatiently.

That was, how the residents of hell fundamentally couldn't materialize in their world by their own strength.

Then the extermination of the greater demon called Unknown whose strength increased by the his worshipper's faith and possessed the authority to achieve such thing.

At present, a technique was executed to focus all the paths from hell to earth into Vatican. Yue was also at the other side, if they used Crystal Key, the connection to hell could be completely severed just by completely closing that place.

「I see. Looks like various things happened while we were at adventure date in hell huh.....well, that's fine. Tell me the detail later. The teleport location is St. Peter's plaza, that's fine right?」

「Ou. Please.」

Hajime took out the compass and confirmed the destination. During that time Kousuke turned his gaze toward the open mouthed Claudia and co.

「Haha-, I was worried for a moment what would happen to us but, it's alright already now.」

「Err, Kousuke-sama.....that person, as I thought.....」

The gazes of Claudia and others were focused at Hajime who seemed to be fixing the coordination even while being hugged by Shia.

Kousuke rubbed his nose while answering with a bit embarrassment and also pride.

「Yeah, that guy is Nagumo Hajime. My, us returnee's——demon king-sama.」

At the same time, a gigantic and solemn door suddenly appeared in empty air. It went without saying, that was the excessively decorated “Gate” that was opened by Crystal Key.

「——”Unlock”」

*GOGOGO*- The door was pointlessly emitting impressiveness while opening with light overflowing out from the gap. It was just an image projection, but it was like an act of god from the view point of Claudia and others.

「Fre, freely connecting the interval of worlds, with individual power.....」

「Ahaha.....no wonder, even something like world wide information control was possible.」

「What power.....」

The eyes of the exorcists were dead in this situation where they could only let out a dry laugh.

「Now then, guessing from the situation, it seems you all had looked after our vanguard. This isn't anything big that can be called as thanks but, I'll send you all to one-way path into earth now.」

Saying that, Hajime turned around with the meaningless light overflowing from the gate illuminating him from behind. The sight of the light that was like a halo made the deeply religious Claudia and others couldn't help but gulped.

It was just image projection though.

Kousuke stood in front of Claudia and others who couldn't move right away. And then, he offered his hand with a boyish grin.

「We finished our mission. What left is only the finishing touch. Lift your face and throw out your chest——we're going home yeah?」

Hearing those words and looking at that figure, Claudia felt like her view was blurred. Even though it was a completely dry world, she felt warm tears that almost overflowed from her eyes.

She slowly took the offered hand. The hand strongly grasped back. The best smile naturally formed in her lips.

Claudia only said a word.

「Yes-」

She energetically replied so.

Wynn and others also made a natural smile with a feeling as though the burden had been taken off from their shoulders. They followed behind Claudia.

「Uwaa, that girl has fallen completely. I wonder if Emily-chan is alright~」

「Rana will surely manage somehow. She is the first wife after all.」

Whispering voices could be heard, but Kousuke's ears couldn't hear anything.

That was what he decided.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

After this, the「Epilogue Second」 will also be uploaded at 19 o'clock.

With this Abyss Lord arc chapter 2 will be over.

It has become really long but, thank you very much for following this!

※ Arifureta “Nichijou” chapter 17 is posted!

It's freely distributed at Comic Gardo that can be visited from Overlap-sama's homepage, so please go take a look by all means!

For Shirakome, the「impression」from Tio's serious face this time really hit the spot lol

Also, 「wait for a bit」at this chapter is reimportation. Mori-sensei, sorry to always borrow from you, and also thank you very much!

# Arifureta Chapter 319

## Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Epilogue Second

—

AN: Before this, the「Epilogue First」was posted.

Two chapters are posted today.

Those who haven't read it, please go to the previous chapter.

---

Kousuke and others passed through the solemn (projection) gate and managed to return to earth.

Like that, what entered into their view was.....

——O king-, please answer-. Why, are you treating that kind of tiny human little girl as princess-

「You bastards-, as I thought you all are the pawns of demon-」

「You, you're wrong nano~! Myuu doesn't know about demon or anything! It's true nano! It's not a lie nano! Hell will freeze over before Myuu ever lie nano!」

Powerful greater demon that materialized with clear figure. And then, terrific number of demon swarms running rampant behind that greater demon and in the sky.

Director Dime was making a look that was more demonic than even demon even while bleeding from his head. And then, behind him the full force of Omnibus was standing.

Myuu who was waving around her hands while desperately making excuse



about something. And then, the Deadly Sins Squadron Demon Ranger who were covering hteir face with one hand and looked up to the sky while going「Achaa~」.

Also, behind the heaps of collapsed cultists all around, were Yue and others and the classmates standing still in a daze wearing a face that seemed to say「Ee~, what is this situation.....」. Plus Bernard and others who were all safe even though they were looking ragged.

An incomprehensible 3-way struggle (?) was created.

「Ee~, what is this situation.....」

Hajime who spontaneously muttered. The three camps who were in an explosive situation gasped and turned their gaze toward Hajime and co.

「Claire! Also Wynn and others too! You all did well coming back!」

——Crossing over the world boundary? Who are you-

「Aa———!! PAPAAAAA——」

Myuu who rushed through the demon ranger right away *sutetetetete*- toward Hajime. Without stopping *pyon* she vigorously jumped toward Hajime's chest. Hajime firmly caught her and caressed his beloved daughter's head while she was rubbing her face on his chest.

「Wai-, director! What in the world this situation is!?!」

Just when they thought they had returned after risking their life, they found their comrades taking combat stance toward the side of returnees who should be cooperating with them, furthermore it was toward a little girl as the opponent. In addition, even though demons were flooding into this world as expected, for some reason they weren't rampaging and instead in a dispute about something.

Honestly, it was incomprehensible. Even though they had resolved themselves to be suddenly thrown into battle depending on the situation until the path to hell was closed.....

Director Dime answered while glaring at demon ranger with a demonic look that said「You bastards, I won't let even a single one of you return alive!」.

「The returnees, the daughter of the codename “demon king” is colluding with demon! Most likely the source of power of returnees is also related somehow with demon, there is no doubt about it!」

There, Hajime-san suddenly recalled something.

The golems who possessed communication ability that he didn't remember installing——demon ranger.

If he remembered correctly, Myuu said to him. She didn't name them. In other words, demon ranger introduced their own name.

——“Bel-chan”, who was Belfego~r

——“Sa-chan”, who was Sataan

——‘A-chan”, who was Asmode~us

——“Lu-chan”, who was Lusife~r

——“Ma-chan, who was Mamo~n

——“Levi-chan”, who was Levia~tan

——“Bal-chan”, who was Baalzebu~b

「Man, they are totally demon.」

Hajime-san muttered. He didn't even imagine that demon really existed, to say nothing of how they could existence from earth's fairytale could possess the living golems he created in other world Tortus.

Although, for Hajime, this could be said as an act that was a bit too careless, to an unnatural degree.

One thing came to mind.

「.....You guys, you did interference huh?」

*Whoosh*, demon rangers averted their gaze with all their might.

Most likely, they were sending thought ‘Their name is the same like famous demons but, well, they don't actually exist so it doesn't matter I guess.....’ so that they wouldn't be deeply doubted.

If for example demon ranger had even the slightest ill will or hostility, a mind

interference to make Hajime ignore that surely would become completely ineffective, but at that time the situation was like that. Various coincidences also piled up and until now he was overlooking them.

Although, now that he realized the existence of demons, his attention couldn't be diverted anymore!

Hajime's eye glint was intensely focused on demon ranger. Demon rangers somehow looked like they were shivering.

(Yue, please explain the situation concisely.)

(.....Nn. Leave it to me.)

According to her, it seemed Myuu summoned demon ranger in the fight against the cultists to participate.

And then, the materialized demons noticed that what were inside demon rangers were their "kings" who had vanished a slight while ago. The demons were thunderstruck and went 'what the hell you are all doing!?'.

Then, from that exchange between demons, Director Dime also noticed just what kind of existences were inside there. And so he resolved himself to fight to the death.

After all, they were the seven demon kings who governed over the famous Deadly Sins. Although they weren't materialized, they were fully armed with unknown technology. Depending on the situation, they could lead the demons and trample this world.....

Surely it couldn't be help that Director Dime thought so. He was the absolute demon killer man after all.

「Se, seriously.....Myuu-chan, what in the world you are keeping there.....」

Kousuke spoke with a dumbfounded voice. Myuu spoke with a crisp expression.

「Because I am the demon king's daughter.」

The little girl who was obeyed by the seven sins——certainly, it was worthy for a demon king's daughter.

It seemed the materialized demons ran out of patience. They started moving to exterminate the humans here for the time being. Yue and others narrowed their eyes and heightened their magic power to exterminate them instead. Director Dime activated his sacred vessel.

And then, Kousuke glanced aside at Hajime with eyes that asked「What to do now」. Claudia and others were flustered and,

「Oi, demon rangers」

A terrifyingly low voice that resounded from hell reverberated.

Even though the voice was only at the volume of a mutter, it reverberated to every corner of the plaza and sent fear that grasped the listener's heart tightly.

It was a bloody and ominous dominating aura that stopped everyone there at their track.

Especially the demon rangers who were targeted by that aura, their body jerked and trembled.

「I heard that the saint or something was targeted as a mother body. When the demons at the lower stratum saw Shia, they said she will become magnificent mother body. Don't tell me.....」

Demon rangers stood at attention with their golem body. Somehow they were oozing great amount of cold sweat (?), oil (?).

「You guys, you are possessing my golem because you are looking at Myuu with that kind of eye.....it ain't anything like that riight?」

If that was actually the case, what would happen?

「Perishing for the second time. Want to try experience that?」

However, this time not even the soul would remain. Far from that, even the other world called hell might not even remained.

Demon rangers, they shook their head left and right *whoosh whoosh* with unprecedented high speed. They waved around all their arms. And then, unison prostration!! What a truly beautiful kowtow. It was like the kowtow that was inherited in Nagumo family.

Because, they knew! They knew a god who really got blown away until not even his soul remained! They also saw the destruction of the other world called holy precincts! They seemed to want to say that.

——Wha-, kings! Acting like that

The materialized demons were flustered and tried to remonstrate them but.....

Are you guys idiot!? You guys don't get it!? You guys will seriously get destroyed you know!? Come on, prostrate! Prostrate quickly! Come on, quickly!

As though to say that, all of demon rangers kept their head lowered while their hand was making a gesture that seemed to be telling the demons to bow too.

「Aa? You guys over there wanna have a go?」

The pupil in Hajime's eyes shrunk and glinted. Bursting out crimson magic power. It was already Limit Break state! From the space behind him Cross Velt came out——a thousand of them. In addition, the swarm of Grim Reaper crawling out. Everything was clad with crimson magic power to annihilate the demons.

「Let's have the continuation of the trip. It's the start of the curbstomp tour of hell's residents.」

A one man army, taken to the extreme here.

The members of Omnibus with the exception of Director Dime and Madam Maya couldn't feel strength in their waist. Even those two were getting pale with their fighting spirit almost broken.

The demons finally noticed that the existence before their eyes might be a bit, no, might be a really bad news and backed away.

Bow down! Come one bow down quickly!

Demon rangers, desperately insisting.

「Papa, papa.」

「Nn? What, Myuu?」

Hajime snapped when thinking they were doing Hikaru Genji project to his daughter, that they would protect Myuu until she grew up and could bear children before they made her into mother body. But he then smiled gently when Myuu lightly tapped on his cheek *slap slap*.

The gap was terrifying.

「See, Bel-chan and others won't do such thing nano.」

「.....How do you know that?」

「See, Bel-chan and others, they told Myuu nano. They all are just bored, doing nothing but ruling or quarreling, that they even got sick of their friends, and then, one day they felt power with presence that is similar with themselves, and when they tried going following the attraction, they came to Myuu's place, they said.」

「Similar presence.....」

Could it be, they referred to the self-proclaimed god of Tortus? Or else, did they mean the age of god magic? At that time, Tortus was just a step before the world's demise. Certainly tremendous power was at work at that time.

Perhaps it somehow shook the worlds interval between Tortus and hell.

「Also see, Myuu has no power, so Myuu cannot become mother body? Or something anyway, and they are desperately saying that there is no way they would do anything like that to princess nano. It's not really clear but, they are saying that it's easeful being together with Myuu, and it's fun with various things that happened.」

「.....H~m?」

‘Is that so? That's really the truth?’, Hajime looked at demon rangers with pupils that instantly shrunk. Demon rangers nodded in high speed simultaneously. They nodded *nod nod nod nod nod-*.

At the same time, Hajime's eyes caught the demons.

Demon rangers emitted tremendous aura before the demons could say anything. It was a pressure that made even the returnees gulped unconsciously. They were oozing out cold sweat at the display of power that was definitely

surpassing Unknown.

It went without saying how the demons reacted.

They simultaneously stood behind the demon rangers and prostrated similarly.

「Papa. Myuu like Bel-chan and others nano.」

「.....I see.」

Hajime's eyes returned to normal!

「Very well. Stay as Myuu's ally from here on too. As long as you guys don't show any suspicious act, I'll allow you guys to stay beside her. However, if you turned traitor——you get it right?」

‘We understand that we will be blown up together with hell!’ Demon rangers performed an admirable salute simultaneously.

And then, they went 「Go home now! Look, go back quickly!」 toward the demons and chased them into the path that Unknown connected.

Although the demons looked like they wanted to ask various things to their kings, they turned a terrified gaze toward the figure of their kings who prostrated without hesitation, Hajime's magic power that surpassed those kings, and the presence of age of god magic while returning into hell.

Hajime also returned Cross Velt and Grim Reapers back into the treasure warehouse.

Voice reverberated like a ripple through the plaza that had fallen quiet.

「De, demon king.....」

Certainly, it was a demon king. Demon king-sama who was carrying his beloved daughter in his arm.

A really complicated atmosphere flowed in that area.

The gazes of Claudia, Director Dime, and others were swimming around wondering what they should do. The returnees were exchanging words like 「As expected from demon king」 「Rather, as expected from papa」 「Or rather, Myuu-chan is just plainly bad news」 at Hajime's entrance and deed at this time.

And so, in order to return the atmosphere that had been absurdly messed up by the demon king back to normal, a hero stood up.

「Yosh-, the case is closed! Claire! Let's eat the promised lemon cake!」

「Tha, that's right! First it's necessary to talk! Let's talk while eating Maya's lemon cake!」

The saint answered the hero's expectation and responded right away. She pleaded loudly 「Maya-! Cake-! I demand lemon cake-」. Madam Maya was trickling out cold sweat as though she wanted to say 「I'm troubled instead if you are expecting that much!」.

Anyway, Kousuke somehow took charge of the place, and just in case, Yue also completely severed the path that connected from hell to here. Like this the battle of Vatican where the fate of the world was at stake was over.

—

—

—

A week passed since then.

After Hajime did his thing “as expected from demon king” against Omnibus, he quickly dealt with the aftermath including the heaps of body of the cultists everywhere.

Although, what was troublesome was the custody of the cultists, and dealing with the citizens of Roma and mass media that witnessed the concentration of armed group attacking Vatican. Other than those there was also things like fixing the wounded people and damaged building, though there was no problem to heal and fix all those using magic.

And so, at the surface the pope of Rome dealt with things skillfully, and this case was taken care of with the explanation of a kind of mass hysteric by the people who lost their faith due to the tragedy that visited them.

Of course it went without saying that a certain demon king who was chuckling because Vatican was owing him backed up that explanation with the aforementioned technology – magic hybrid information control. It also went



without saying that Omnibus was getting faraway look once more.

A few days after that, an unofficial three-way meeting between Omnibus that was headed by Rome's pope, the returnees, and then Britain national security bureau that had connection with returnees was opened once more.

Fundamentally the meeting was about declaring their non-interference policy toward the returnees. If the returnees people got involved with some kind of incident in Britain or Europe, they would report it and depending on the situation Omnibus and security bureau would take cooperative stance.

And then, the side of Vatican and Britain would also contact the returnees if they wanted cooperation about something.

However, the agreement was settled with something like 'the contact person and also the responder will be Abyssgate-san!'.

It went without saying that Kousuke's eyes opened wide in shock.

Also, regarding the seven pillar of deadly sins, the pope of Rome pushed through to leave it to the demon king. A certain cardinal insisted 「Annihilate them!」 till the end, but rather it felt like that was the cause of the decision to entrust the matter to the demon king.

After all, a certain someone wouldn't hesitate to trample down sacred vessel or even if the church was destroyed if it was for the sake of killing demon, in a sense he was a berserker. It seemed the pope even said 「Please stay quiet! I'm almost died from overworking here!」.

Like that, the Unknown case was resolved more or less despite all the commotions, and everyone sighed in relief at this day.

Claudia who was the one with the greatest involvement and also service in this case asked for a brief holiday and stepped on the land of her birth.

She was walking on a quiet suburb path while her soft blonde hair and her gentle white dress were fluttering.

Sometimes, the local people, especially the youngsters who passed her by would unconsciously gulp when seeing Claudia. Their eyes opened wide, their feet stopped walking.....

They were charmed by her expression that was gentle and soft like her hair and clothes.

Several youths were showing hesitation whether to call out to her or not, but in the end, they were unable to take a step forward because they felt she was a woman who was living in a different world from them.

Yes, she was like a sheltered young lady. Or perhaps, that was exactly how a saint would look.....

「——Ah!？」

The beautiful person who really looked like a sheltered young lady and a saint tripped on her own feet and tumbled down.

*BAM-!* A comical and laughable sound resounded. The sound came from the face. Her stretched posture didn't even twitch. It was a blessing in disguise that the ground at least wasn't asphalt.

Although, seeing how she at least had protected the bouquet her hand was carrying to the end could be said as an astonishing progress for the people who knew her.

The brand new saint who had accomplished her long standing desire, even if she stumbled, it wouldn't occur that easily! No, it might still occur so easily, but the damage was minimized!

Anyway, the people who kept glancing at Claudia were dumbfounded at the sudden happening.

They came back to their senses with a gasp and the youths stepped forward thinking 'If I help up the beautiful lady, than perhaps-!'.....but, they were already too late.

When they noticed, a man was standing beside Claudia. It was Kousuke.

「.....How can someone make blunder like that so skillfully？」

「.....He, heheh」

It seemed she couldn't lift her face from shame. Only laughing voice to cover up the blunder like a henchman who easily got carried away laughing apologetically to the boss he idolized could be heard from her.

Kousuke pulled up Claudia on her feet.

「Kousuke-sama, why are you here?」

「Right, I'll explain, so first how about wiping that nosebleed?」

「! He, hehe.....」

「Ehehe, huh?」

「Ehehe.....」

She was helped to stand up, the dirt on her clothes was brushed off, her nosebleed was wiped off, and next her hair was also put in order.

While being taken care of, Claudia asked while Kousuke was here beside her when she was returning to her birthplace using her day off. It seemed, the cause of it was also Claudia's carelessness.

When exorcist went far away other than for mission, they had to report their destination beforehand no matter what. It was in order to deal when something emergency came up.

And, Claudia-san, she splendidly forgot to do the paperwork for that report and thoughtlessly went out.

Unknown had been exterminated, regarding the lower stratum demons too, at their side they more or less had the cooperation of the seven deadly sins who were being led by the demon king and his daughter, so surely she wouldn't be targeted to become mother body anymore, even so the opponent was demon. It was impossible to hold them in check absolutely, and there was also danger from the cultists.

When Omnibus tried contacting her in panic, for some reason the call didn't connect.

As the result, it became 「Kousuke-san! Help!」.

「Ah, my smartphone.....」

Claudia took out her smartphone from her pouch. It was splendidly split into two.

「What did you do that it become like that!?」

Is she swordsman!? Was it used to test new sword!? Did she use her smartphone in a flash for substitution when she was slashed!? Kousuke tsukkomi-ed.

「Wha, what do you mean testing new sword? There is no way it's like that. This is, that, I stumbled for a bit.....and then on the dropped smartphone, should I say I fell on it.....that, my butt, it's a bit big so.....」

It seemed there was accidentally a stone below the dropped smartphone. The smartphone that received Claudia's butt attack was tragically split into two because of the stone acting as fulcrum.

Claudia-san shyly pushed her butt with her hands while fidgeting.

From distance, the youths sulkily said 「So she has a boyfriend already, keh-」 and stared intently while getting slouched forward for a bit.

Claudia's body bugled out greatly at the places where it should bulged out, and tightened greatly at the places where they should tighten. Her style rivaled Tio so the destructive power was extraordinary.

「I see.....so, the smartphone was split into two by your butt.....」

「E, heheh.....」

‘Hahaa, I've really done it now.....’, Claudia laughed while scratching her head as though to say that. As expected that appearance looked more like a person who got carried away easily rather than a saint.

Kousuke contacted Omnibus that he had secured Claudia, then he asked her.

「And, you came here.....to report to your parents?」

「.....Yes.」

Going back to her birthplace while carrying flower bouquet, there would be no other reason than that.

「Got it. I'll kill time around here then. Call me when you are going back.」

Kousuke considerably returned back.

But, the sleeve of Kousuke who was turning around was caught by Claudia.

「If it's not a bother to you, will you come together with me?」

「.....I don't mind but, is it fine?」

Claudia nodded with a smile. Kousuke shrugged and accepted.

Sometimes Claudia would do an artistic blunder, but Kousuke's fine play supported her while they somehow reached the grave without her dress getting dirtied.

A lot of pure white crosses were lined up orderly.

One of them was a cross with the name of Barenberg family and the name of her parents carved on it. Claudia stood still in front of it. Kousuke also stood slightly behind her.

Claudia slowly put the bouquet that she had desperately defended in front of the cross. Wind blew gently, caressing Claudia's hair and the flowers.

「Mama, papa. I'm back.」

She plopped down to sit with girl posture while tracing the names of her parents that were carved on the grave stone with her fingertip.

And then, she put both her hand on her chest and closed her eyes quietly.

There was no word, but, Kousuke beside her understood well that she was reporting a lot, really a lot, yes, the track of twelve years worth she had taken with a flood of emotions behind it.

That was why, Kousuke also moved closer beside Claudia while quietly closing his eyes.

Claudia said that she had hatred. That she wanted to kill Unknown with her own hand.

But, she said that she wanted to get revenge for her parents even more.

Seeing the current Claudia, what would her father and mother think?

Were they thankful that Claudia had taken revenge for them?

Or else, would they get angry that they didn't wish for her to force herself to do such thing?

Or perhaps, they would accept everything, and said the words that Kousuke thought they surely would say.....

The dead couldn't talk.

That was the truth of the world.

But, exactly because that absolute was overturned, human——called it a “miracle”.

——You have, worked hard

「Eh?」

Claudia gasped and raised her face. Kousuke too. Both of them looked forward together and opened their eyes wide.

Because there it was.

Over there.

A man with drooping eyes that looked really gentle, and a woman smiling while her blonde hair was softly fluttering.

「Papa? Mama?」

They looked like they would vanish even now. It was a transient, faint figures that perhaps could be called as just visual hallucination.

However, those figures that there was no way Claudia could mistake were certainly her father and mother who she was eternally separated from twelve years ago.

Claudia was dumbfounded.

Kousuke too couldn't move right away. But, he gasped as though noticing something, and a beat later, he made a small smile.

And then, he gently put his hand on Claudia's shoulder.

With that, Claudia also came back to her senses.

「Papa, mama.....I.....Claire is.....」

Even though she had just talked a lot inside her heart, even though there was a lot of things she wanted to say and ask, she couldn't make any word.

Her feeling only became tear that flowed down Claudia's face.

Claudia's father and mother formed a heartrendingly gentle smile looking at

their daughter who was like that.....

「a.....」

The softly embraced Claudia.

Even though there should be no sensation of touch, a nostalgic warmth enveloped Claudia.

And then,

——Be happy alright?

——Live happily and energetically

Saying that, they vanished as though melting into the breeze.

With tears that wouldn't stop keep trickling, Claudia digested the voice of her parents that miraculously reached her, and then she made an expression of crying and smiling with gentleness that resembled her parents while,

「Yes. I'll live.」

She said that.

She kept sitting down while continuously shedding tears. Kousuke simply stood close to her quietly.

After that, it was unclear how long they stayed in front of the grave. Before long, Claudia wiped her tears and stood up while sniffing.

「Let's go, Kousuke-sama.」

She put on a beaming smile as though what was possessing her had gone away and she was reborn.

It was the best radiant smile that couldn't be expressed with words, that made him convinced a new Claudia Barenberg would start from here.

Kousuke gulped for a moment and.....

「.....Yeah, let's go.」

He replied with a soft smile and nodded.

Both of them left the grave and walked silently for a while.

The miraculous phenomenon just now. Claudia didn't try to talk about it. She also didn't question whether Kousuke had seen it too or not.

For Claudia, something like the cause was trivial. Even if it was just a kind of daydream, even so Claudia understood. The feeling of her parents certainly existed there.

She understood that much. That much was enough.

There wasn't even the slightest awkwardness in the silence. They shared a deeply emotional and gentle time as though their heart had become one, walking through the street with roadside trees beside them in the aged townscape.

.....

.....

.....Although, surely this time should be ended soon. Kousuke thought.

He turned his gaze toward Claudia and opened his mouth.

But, it seemed Claudia had been staring at Kousuke before that. Their eyes met and she averted her gaze in a bit of embarrassment.

「Kousuke-sama, are you hungry?」

「Eh?」

Claudia asked a bit unexpected question with a slightly fast talk.

Leaving behind Kousuke was unable to respond right away, Claudia talked quickly while looking down and her cheeks slightly blushing.

「A, ahead from here, there is a really delicious pancake restaurant. I often went there with my parents. It was managed by husband and wife, the wife was really close with my mother. They were also really affectionate with me.」

「O, ou, is that so. But wait a second, Claire. Actually——」

「A, and, sometimes I exchanged letter with them, but I haven't met with them since becoming exorcist. When I looked from afar before coming here, they were still opening the restaurant, so I thought to visit there! That, if you like-, let's have tea, together with me-」



Claudia-san was talking innocently with a tension like someone who was inviting opposite sex to a first date.

There was no doubt that until now she couldn't even approach the places of memory with her parents. That was, until now that she had accomplished her longstanding desire.

The inside of her heart needn't to be said after seeing her inviting him to such important place with an attitude that would make anyone writhe just from looking from the side.

It was an invitation filled with all the might of the fidgeting saint-sama. A normal man would be openly happy without restrain in respond to this.

Of course, Kousuke was.....going pale. He was absurdly going pale.

Because,

Bernard

——This is Saber 1. The target seems to plan to head to a café four block ahead.

——Saber 1, roger. Nagayama party is waiting three block ahead.

Vanessa

——This is Archer. Contacting everyone. Light is disappearing from “Doctor”'s eyes. What should I do?

Wynn

——This is Caster 1, there is a bad news. Director is guessing the movement there. It seems he is already heading there with personal airplane. He will launch airborne assault in two more hours.

Yue

——Caster 1, this is Queen. No problem. I'll shoot it down.

——This is Ange.....uu, it's embarrassing as I thought! Calling myself angel make me looks like a painful person! Also, Yue! No shooting down! Absolutely!

——O, oi! That saint-san, he is staring at that bastard Endou with moist eyes there! Is it okay to burn him!? Is it okay to turn Endou into cinders!? Using my flame of envy!

——Calm down Shinji! Ah, no, Envy! Wait, this guy is crying blood here!? Someone, Saito——not, Envy 2-, Envy 1 is going to go berserk! Lend me a hand!

—This is Archer. Contacting everyone. “Doctor” is starting to tremble all over while staying expressionless. What should I do?

Anna

returnees

—Aah geez, this is Caster 2! Saber team and also Returner team too, if you are only going to be a hindrance just go home right away! Claudia-sama is doing her best right now!

Because Kousuke’s excellent ears caught such conversation. The overhearing skill of vocation Assassin was perfect.

Or rather, he was feeling countless familiar presences at the surrounding buildings’ rooftop and interior encircling around him and Claudia.

To say more, there was even a classmate shedding tear of blood trying to crawl out from inside a trashcan that was put on the street. The lid of that trashcan was being pushed down with wind pressure by a desperate looking classmate inside the adjacent trash can.

Above all else, he could perfectly see “Doctor” with only half her face showing out from the shadow of roadside tree diagonally behind him, sending him a lifeless gaze.

She was indeed trembling all over! It was absurdly scary!

Yes, Kousuke and Claudia were currently completely encircled by returnees and Omnibus and Britain national security bureau’s assault department members! From slightly a while ago! With objective of peeping!

Claudia’s parents appearing too was of course wasn’t because of god’s miracle, but because of Yue and Kaori’s soul magic. It was realized with the two of them using necromancy by age of god magic.

Kousuke of course noticed, but when he sent his gaze toward Yue and others, Yue put her index finger in front of her mouth and winked, so he stayed quiet.

He thankfully accepted the consideration to let the miracle stay as miracle.

Well, putting that aside!

The problem of Kousuke’s fourth wife was a matter of concern and interest for everyone!

「Let's calm down for a bi, a bi~~t, Claire! Tha, that's! If it's a restaurant that is that amazing, ri, right! Let's go there together with everyone! If we call them, they will come here right away! They will really come right away!」

Well of course. They were right nearby.

But, Claudia-san who seemed to be about to blow her fuse was of course, couldn't guess Kousuke's intention.

「That.....if possible right now I want.....to go with just the two of us, alone with Kousuke-sama.....」

Fidget fidget, wriggle wriggle. The saint asked with an upturned gaze 「Is that no good?」. Really a saint. Kousuke spontaneously leaked out a strange voice 「Nuguu」.

*Snap*- Emly-chan's eyes opened wide! Kousuke sensitively detected it! His body jerked and trembled.

And then, Vanessa who tried to stop her ate a lariat that could be said as artistic, and Emily launched out to exterminate the thieving cat that was making eyes at her beloved!

Seeing Emily's battle ready state walking with heavy footsteps toward Kousuke, all the observers at the surrounding went into an uproar 「O, oo!? A carnage!?!」. No, the security bureau group was cheering 「Go-, missy Emily! Two heroines aren't needed for the hero!」.

「That isn't allowed! Barenberg-san!」

「Eh? Yo, you are! Kousuke's lover.....eh, fiancée? Wife.....but, second.....err, a, anyway-, the somewhat intimate looking person!」

「Gafuh」

Doctor Emily was suddenly hit with a body blow of words.

It seemed her heart was damaged when someone who might be her love rival pointed out implicitly how ambiguous the nature of her relationship was.

The security bureau members sent their encouragement 「Don't lose-, missy Emily!」 「That's just a shallow scratch!」 「A woman of Britain shouldn't fold just from that-」 「Remember-, your guts at that time!」.

On the other hand, the members of Omnibus were also sending encouragement like 「Claudia-sama-, don't withdraw! We exorcists know no retreat!」「Please show the stubbornness of the saint!」「You are the exorcist's strongest-. Don't lose against a mere little girl!」「It's faster than expected! The director will descend in one and half a hour! Recommending short decisive battle!」.

Claudia too finally noticed that she was being peeped at by her comrades and the returnees. Her face turned bright red and she glared angrily at her comrades.

「A, anyway-. I think there is something wrong with inviting a man who has a lover to a date.」

‘That is really a boomerang statement.....’, everyone starting from Kousuke thought, but they put it aside for now.

「Yo, you're right.....」

Emily's words made Claudia looked down in shame because she had done a shameful behavior. The saint was looking wholly downhearted.

‘E, eh? Somehow her reaction is different from what I expected! Perhaps the way I said it was a bit too harsh? It was harsh wasn't it!?’ Emily was starting to get flustered like that.

Claudia opened her mouth even while her expression turning a bit pained.

「Even though Grant-san who is younger than me is also controlling yourself, I'm sorry. I was really shallow.」

「Uguu」

Emily-chan who didn't control herself at all. Rather, she was living together with Kousuke although it was only his clone. Everyday she was full of happiness. She baked apple pie and so on.

Emily averted her gaze with all her might while starting to sweat strangely. Claudia tilted her head seeing her like that.

The expression of the saint which was only filled with pure wondering made Emily-chan's paper armored heart easily raised the white flag and she divulged

the truth.

「Err, that, it was only with clone but, we more or less, cohabitating.....」

「Cohabitating? .....Come to think of it, when you were delivering the secret medicine to Omnibus, you two also hugged each other weren't you.....」

「Tha, that was, simply, an expression of affection.」

「.....You are saying, you had no ulterior motive at all?」

「.....That, how should I say it, it's, you know?」

Gazes that seemed to say “You know?” my ass’ pierced her from the Omnibus faction.

Sharp gazes that seemed to say ‘This is because you asshole is indecisive!’ stabbed Kousuke from the returnee group and security bureau group.

Claudia-san somehow guessed it. Emily’s position, and the current situation.

Like that, when she looked at Kousuke, he was looking at Emily who got teary eyed from having the table turned on her (it was mostly her self-destructing though), then after showing hesitation for a bit, next he showed an expression as though he was resolved about something.

Yes, it was as though he was going to declare the matter about his lover (second) or his fiancée (second) for the sake of Emily!

And so,

「Emily. I——」

「Then, Grant-san. That, how should I said it, it's, you know? Like that is it fine if I also go to the nostalgic café together alone with Kousuke-sama?」

「Wha-, tha, that's no good! That's obviously no good!」

「Why?」

「Wh, why you ask.....that's, it's.....」

She couldn't say. ‘Because he already has lover!’ she couldn't say that anymore. Emily who noticed this late that she had no weapon whatsoever even though she charged forward. She was all flustered and shook up.

Kousuke whose words were intercepted was also all flustered and shook up.

The cornered Emily raised the corner of her cat eyes glaringly as though she had thrown caution to the wind.

「What! I'm the one who encountered Kousuke earlier!」

It was Rana who encountered him even earlier. 100 boomerang damage in Emily's heart.

「Just because you are a bit beautiful, big breasted, have tight waist, your butt and legs are also sexy, and you have bombshell style.....just because of that.....I, I'm, I'm more.....hics, saint, is just too powerfuul.....」

Emily-chan who was speaking herself and damaged herself too as expected. Even now she looked like she would crumble on her knees anytime.

「E, err, thank you very much? Bu, but but, Grant-san too, is really cute! Like your legs are really long and pretty! Your gaze also looked crisp, looking really intellectual! I'm often told that I'm really clumsy so, a beauty that is cute and yet intellectual is just unfair!」

「What's with you! Thank you! But, Barenberg-san yourself, you even have special power! Even when you were rushing into hell while carrying a large cross, it was really cool!」

Why was it? Even though it should be a battle of woman, it was excessively warming. The security bureau faction and Omnibus faction, and not just them, even the returnee faction were looking at them with warm gaze.

It seemed even Emily herself also had the feeling that it shouldn't be like this. In order to make an appeal that she was the one who was worthy for Kousuke, she wracked her head searching if there was something.....

「I am-, a doctor! I have a doctorate!」

That was what came out. Everyone's eyes turned sad.

「I, if you say such thing, even I am a saint! A saint sound more like a heroine!」

The saint didn't even make tsukkomi and accepted the challenge from the front. Emily made a sound 「Kuu.....」 in vexation.

Kousuke was saying 「He, hey. Both of you. Listen to what I have to say——」, but his voice didn't reach the two's ears at all. The two were getting even more heated up.

「In the end it's only "like" right!? In other words, it's not heroine!」

「Even though like is just like but it's really like! In other words, it's already heroine!」

「Like isn't heroine!」

「Like is already heroine!」

Like like-, like like-, lili~ke-, the saint and doctor who like like at each other. Kousuke tried to cut in a bit forcefully saying 「Both of you, let's stop there and listen to——」 but, 「Kousuke just stay quiet!」 「I wish Kousuke-sama will stay back from this!」 he easily got rebuffed.

「Whaat, it's decided that doctor is better!」

「Somehoow, it's obvious that saint is the better one!」

Emily and Claudia pushed their forehead on each other and they both kept insisting while getting teary eyed.

And then, a beat later, the two called on Kousuke 「Kousukeeee~」 「Kousuke-samaa~」,

「Doctor is better right!?」

「Saint is better right!?」

‘Even though you two just told me to stay quiet or stay back..... incomprehensible’ even while thinking that, in front of the pressure from the two's menacing look that made him unconsciously stepped back, against his better judgment Kousuke——said it.

「I think bunny girl is better? How do I say it.....」

「「.....」」

Returnee faction, Omnibus faction, security bureau faction. From all the factions astonished muttering like 「He is saying that in this situation!?」 「That guy, that's just too heroic right!?」 leaked out.

Kousuke's expression was convulsing while cold sweat was trickling out.

Why?

That was obvious.

Because before him, there were the doctor-chan and saint-chan who were making eyes like rotten dead fish.

It would still be fine if he was insulted. He also wouldn't protest if he was punched.

But, he wanted to be spared from the two of them losing sanity.

Furthermore, even though they were making such eyes, those eyes were getting teary fast. Kousuke was already having guilt crushing his heart that made him wanted to say 「I'm begging you, just insult or beat up an asshole like me!」.

However, a beat later Kousuke tensed his expression. In any case, he should firmly convey his honest feeling to the two, especially to Emily.

He was still having hesitation and resistance to have a relationship like a certain demon king and the wife~s. But, he couldn't keep depending on Emily's devoted feeling while being ambiguous.

「Both of you, listen to me. I——」

But, not letting his right-hand man having things went as he wanted in that timing was demon king quality. Hajime-san who actually was there from the start together with Yue and others made his entrance when the time was ripe!

The ground beside the three rippled like a spring! Or rather, with the Crystal Key's image projection, an illusion that was really like a spring was created!

From there, like a lady of the lake, Hajime-san surfaced up slowly with a bright smile, one of his hand carrying something. It was “that” which looked terribly familiar.

「Is the order a Hauria?」(TN: Reference to Gochuumon wa Usagi desu ka)

If possible surely normal rabbit would be better. Not the head decapitating rabbit.



Although, surely there was no mistake with the order. Because “that” was,  
「Ah, Kou-kun! I was wondering what was going on because boss suddenly abducted me♪ Boss! So you are taking me to meet Kou-kun! Thank you very much!」

「Your welcome.」

A pure Hajime-san was there. It was the effect of the dazzling spring. His wide smile looked radiant.

Rana    Hauria

And then it was thrown, the first wife.

「Ra, Rana」

「Kou-kun♪」

The rabbit eared-oneesan who was at her best form too today. She happily embraced her younger lover. Kousuke who was buried into the heavy twin hills. He tried to say that right now wasn't the time for this, but strength instantly left his whole body.

Power of resistance, zero. The first wife was powerful.

After that, it went without saying that Emily and Claudia made a great commotion, and Rana's gaze who noticed the two brightened.

It also went without saying that after seeing through Claudia's heart, Rana's skillful words that were like a sect founder inviting someone into a new religion attempted to drag Claudia to become the “fourth”.

other    wife

At the end, Claudia said 「The, the god had spoken! Love thy neighbor!」. She kept muttering with low voice many times while her eyes were rolling around like a brainwashed person. Surely it went just like Rana's expectation.

Like that, that night something like “Congratulation party for fourth wife Claudia and the finishing of dealing with all the aftermath!” was opened in Omnibus where all the factions participated. The party was greatly heated up.

Of course, a certain director took action in order to make a certain screwing around bastard who called his beloved daughter as “fourth” into a rust of his book but.....

Unfortunately, Kousuke wasn't there.

The reason was, that guy who tossed the primed explosive called Rana with his mischievousness in full force,

「——Last Zell. Limit Break」

「Eh? Wai-, you-, stop tha——」

Yes, because a thousand lords were chasing after the demon king who was running away while blocking his ears with all his might going 'no no'.

The game of tag between demon king and abyss lord continued until the dawn came.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Anyway, the abyss lord arc chapter two is over with this.

Things like the detailed setting, or the later development, or the hell trip of Hajime and Shia, I want to write various things but, I don't have the time and stamina.....

I'm thinking to do it when I have time again.

I had notified at last week's afterword too but, I'm thinking to take a rest for a month starting from next week.

Most likely I'll resume at 16 June, so please take care of me again if possible at that time.

Best regards for Arifureta from here on too!

# Arifureta Chapter 320

## Arifureta After Ill Yue's Diary ④

—

AN: It has been a long time.

I'm really happy that you readers come to read this again!

---

Month ○ Day ♪

Several days has passed since Hajime and Shia went out for a travel date.

Everyday Shia will enthusiastically send a email that said 'Today we did ~!'.  
It's just.....too long. The eemail is terribly, long.

Shia. A diary isn't a written progress report.

It's fine to not write everything starting from the moment you wake up in the morning in chronological order.

Ica used Kaori who saw the email to misunderstand 「Uwaa, Yue, you, I thought you were sending them off cheerfully, but you were actually tasking Shia with monitoring Hajime-kun that strictly? That's a bit putting off you know~」 with a creeped out face.

At that time I sent lightning dragon right away at her though.

Good grief, I wonder just how much Shia likes me. If she has the time to compose that kind of long email for me, it will be better if she use it to flirt with Hajime instead.

That adorable rabbit!

Even so, the photo that was sent from Shia's smartphone.....

Just from which jungle and which local people that photo was taken from? Why were you making a fresh smile while showing body builder pose with a group of beefy men? It's a bit painful for the eyes looking at it.....

Hajime, be firm! Look at Shia properly! It's no good if she turn into a second Myuu!

—

—

Month o Day \$

When I replied to Shia that 'It's fine to send shorter email you know?', she sent a email that is titled 『From earth version Raisen Great Labyrinth (lol)』 that had a single photo of a trap's wreckage.

I see, I don't get it at all.

No, I can imagine it. I can, but still!

Shia. It's abbreviated too much, Yue-san is bothered about various things.

It's fine even if you send more detail at this kind of time you know?

Also, Hajime. Even if you sent me a email saying 『It seems Shia now has become able to shot Eternal Shia Fever. What do you think I should do?』, I also don't know what should I do.....

Or rather, what do you mean by Shia firing out great excitement eternally?

—

PS

Just now, an additional email arrived.

I was dying with curiosity wondering just what kind of situation that makes them looks like they are conquering a great labyrinth even though they are in earth. I checked the email while feeling a throbbing thrill but.....

The email's content is 『I forgot to mention just now! We are going to hold

Nagumo family's emergency family meeting when we get home desuu! The agenda will be about Hajime-san's dangerous driving! I think there is something wrong with the thinking that a vehicle has to be installed with weapon no matter what!』

No, not that. Shia, it's not that, what about the detail? The vampire princes want to ask the rabbit-san about the detail of the travel you know?

Reach her, this feeling!

Also, Hajime. Even if you told me 『It seems that Shia can also do Shia Impact. Now I'm thinking that perhaps I should just create things like Warship Beheading Sword or the Hero With Thousand O at this occasion, what do you think?』, in the first place I don't really get what are you talking about.

Anyway, let's google it before going to sleep.

—

PS 2

More reply came. It's a fast reply. As expected from my Shia. Our mind is connected.

Was what I thought, but.....

『Rather than something like that please listen to me, Yue-san! The arachne-sans of Hajime-san are strange! They are absolutely being possessed by something. Perhaps by the apostles even!』

That's not it~, what Yue-san is curious about isn't that~-.

No, the arache-sans being possessed by something is also really curious though!

Eeei-, Shia! As I thought, report everything to me without leaving anything!

The vampire princess is demanding a written report that goes into the minutest details!

—

PS 3

The reply came.

『Everything, you say..... Geez-, Yue-san you are really a possessive woman! This greedy attention seeker! I'll talk to you when we go back home, so please wait patiently while looking forward to it. Then, I'll go to sleep already, good niii~ght.』

Wait, wait a second! There are various things that I want to say!

Thinking that I replied immediately but.....

The reply, didn't come.

I sent email three times. 'Now that it has come to this!' Thinking that I also tried calling directly.

The reply, didn't come.

The call, also didn't get picked up.

I don't get itt~.

Now I can only throw tantrum on the bed. I even punch the pillow.

This damn pillow-.

I who vented my anger for a while toward the bed and pillow for a while suddenly got a clever idea. I went to Myuu's room. I thought that if it's Myuu who called, then perhaps it will be picked up.

The sleeping Myuu is cute no matter how much I look at her. I cannot bring myself to wake her up. But, Yue-san is already too curious about various things that I cannot sleep.

Thinking so, I shook Myuu's body several times and woke her up. And then, when I told Myuu who woke up while rubbing her eyes that I want her to call Shia,

「.....Yue-oneechan. That's enough already, I wish you will learn to let go of Shia-oneechan nano. Or rather, I'm sleepy. The exit is that way nano.」

I was told like that with terribly cold voice and reproachful gaze.

A crack entered my heart.

—  
—

Month o Day ¥

I who couldn't even sleep at night wondering whether I'm hated by Myuu stealthily lie in wait beside Myuu's bed in seiza posture but.....

At morning, when Myuu woke up she raised a very loud scream.

According to her, when she opened her eyes, there was me staring with unblinking eyes that had no light in them, it seemed that it was extremely scary.....

.....Right, that's indeed scary. It was something that I did myself but, it was completely a horror.

When I kowtowed and apologized, I was forgiven and felt relieved.

Or rather, Myuu was letting out a sigh before in the end she apologized instead with a gentle gaze because last night she was saying too much, furthermore she consoled me.

.....

It's depressing.

Today I have no motivation anymore to do anything.

—

PS

Kaori made fun of me about the morning incident, so I teleported only her underwear and let the wind carried it away.

Fly away~, to the ends of the earth~

—  
—  
—

Month o Day ∞

Right now, there are a large gathering of the classmates and their family inside the house.

It's in order to prepare against the attack of the demons and their worshippers.

Fuh, pay a close attention. At the first wife Yue-san's "hospitality"!

Setting that aside, those demons targeted my relatives and comrades, on top of that although it was indirectly but they even caused Otou-sama to be injured.

Kill. Not even a fragment of their existence will remain.....

Was what I thought but, Endou told me to butt out, so I'm staying quietly in the home, writing diary like this right now.

After Endou said that it's him who was entrusted with the job by Hajime and so on, I have to let him do it, besides, that girl.....she said her name is Claudia? When I recalled that girl's earnest eyes that are holding back something, it also made me want to let her do it.

Anyway, when this incident is taken care of, I'll strangle Endou for a bit. Right now, what I should do is doing my house-sitting duty perfectly, and watching over the children who are trying to advance forward with all their might.

Oh? While I'm concentrating to my diary, the inside of the house is turning really chaotic when I noticed.

Yuuka is looking absurdly fidgety. Come to think of it, is this the first time Yuuka entered into Nagumo family house?

Are you curious? Are you that curious about Hajime's room? Very well. This me the first wife will generously play the role as the guide for touring around Hajime's place in Nagumo family house.

But, taking home Hajime's clothes as you please, especially the underwear like our family's girls is not allowed!

Also, Taeko. Stop swinging whip around inside the house. Stop licking your lips too. Allen is shaking really pitifully there. Also, several of the boys are also muttering 「Queen.....」 while looking at you.

Doing strange play in Nagumo family house isn't allo——



It isn't allowed other than this family!

Also, Kaori papa and Otou-sama is quarreling and grappling with each other aga.....

Oh?

I see. There are a lot of people so they aren't quarreling physically, they are going to settle it with fighting game.

It's a rare chance, so I want to try holding a tournament with everyone.

.....Very well. Let's show them the true strength of gamer Yue!

.....

.....

.....

Uu, Hajimee. Myuu is! Myuu iiss~.

This is totally strangeee. Myuu, she is too strong.....I was completely helpless there.....

Myuu, could it be, you are still angry? The midnight waking up, the seiza standby in the morning, you are still angry about them? Is that so?

Ah, Myuu is getting thoroughly beaten up by Otou-sama.

Myuu is desperately trying to rally herself while looking like she is going to cry, but Otou-sama, he is viciously beating her up with nasty combo while laughing loudly.

Aa, Myuu's character is flying in a beautiful parabolic arc.....

Otou-sama stands up while proclaiming his victory 「I'm number o~~~ne!」 with raised index finger.

Otou-sama.....

Seeing you seriously playing to win against a little girl and celebrating your victory wholeheartedly like that caused everyone to get put off.

I too, am a bit put off.

Myuu is falling on all fours below Otou-sama's feet you know? Do you notice?

Aa, look, Myuu cried, she is wailing.

Ah, Myuu activated the final weapon 『I really hate Ojii-chan!』!

Otou-sama crumbled!

A grown-up man is getting on all fours beside a little girl who is also on all fours.....

For some reason the classmates and their family are making a face that seem to say 「I see. So this is the daily life of Nagumo family.....」.

Everyone, you are wrong. Nagumo family is, Nagumo family is.....right, it's like usual.

Rather, it's really peaceful compared to usual with Sumire-okaasama doing her best in giving hospitality to the classmate's family.

Remia is hugging Myuu and consoling her. Beside them Kaori papa is patting Otou-sama's shoulder with excessively kind expression. He is saying「You really felt it right? Like this, in your soul. I received such pain, almost everyday」 with a face like an old man that had received enlightenment.

When I looked at Kaori, she quickly averted her gaze.

I see. In Shirasaki family, dispute about Hajime occur almost everyday, and each time Kaori papa will get hit by bullet of words from his daughter until he is on the verge of death.

Nice job, Kaori papa! Do it more! Win over your daughter and pull her apart from Haji——

Ah, what are you doing-, Kaori!

——

——

——

Good grief, trying to take away the diary while I'm in the middle of writing like that, Kaori is really violent. She is wild Kaori. She is like a beast that is constantly getting cornered. Or rather, even though I'm writing at the corner of the room while hiding, how did she know the content of what I was writing?

She said something like a maiden's instinct but.....fuh, damn Kaori, not bad.

Mu-. It looks like there is movement at Vatican. Let's finish the diary here. Midway the sweat of my heart trickle down and it somehow become hard to read, perhaps I'll rewrite it later.

Now then, demons. It's time for war.

My sorrow from getting thoroughly beaten up by a little girl in fighting game.

You can taste it to your heart's content-!

—

—

—

Month o Day v

The incident finally reached a point where we can take a pause.

The diary is also blank for several days, but I'm resuming it from today.

Even so it was shocking. To think that the people inside Myuu's Deadly Sin Ranger were actually the kings of the demons.

Before Hajime, the so called Belphegoor (?) said 「No, that's too insolent in front of the demon king. The likes of us are just mere demons, no, we are just some punk!」 but.....

When they showed their seriousness in order to hold back their subordinate demons, their pressure was terrific. Perhaps it was in the level that wasn't at all inferior compared to Ehito.

They're dangerous. It's dangerous that they are in the level that we cannot let our guard down against.

It seems Myuu trust them, but just in case, it'll be better to display the power of the first wife to them.

Thinking that, today I asked Myuu to take them out.

When that happened, the so called Belphegoor (?) said 「No, it's really insolent in front of the first wife of the demon king. The likes of us are just some

punks, no, we are just the princess's pet!」.

What should I say, is that really fine? Each time you came out, your “status” just keep getting lower though.

Furthermore it's you yourself who are lowering it so low like that.

The seven deadly sins are tentatively demon kings who made appearance even in books, you all are legendary demons right?

For some reason it made me felt painful. Just like Myuu said, they aren't giving me bad feelings, so perhaps it's fine even if I don't make a display of my strength. If it feels like they are getting cocky, I'll discipline them along with Endou too at that time.

Although, that Myuu, getting called as 「Princess!」 by demons of Ehito class, and getting treated with sentiment of deep affection from who knows if it from loyalty or friendship or anything else.....

Remia was saying 「Myuu, I wonder where is she planning to head to」 with a faraway look. I think it can't be helped that she got like that. I also have the same thought after all.

Thinking really, really carefully, we——the person who is called as demon king or demon god in another world, an immortal vampire princess who can use even the power of god, superhuman rabbit whose ability is broken at various things, a covert pervert who completely became god's apostle, a maiden swordswoman who recently became 「There is almost nothing that I cannot cut! .....No, actually there is really nothing at all isn't it, thing that I cannot cut」, an abnormally pervert dragon, *etc.* ——too, objectively speaking are people who are treating Myuu with sentiments of deep affection.

While writing on the diary, I got a bit of cold sweat.

A sudden thought suddenly crossed my mind, when Hajime and Shia first encountered Myuu, could it be it wasn't that the two of them discovered Myuu, but perhaps Myuu was the one who drew them toward her?

This time too, she shrewdly caused the chief of Britain's security bureau to lose her backbone.

She already turned the next king of Heiligh Kingdom spineless.

As a kid who can restrain the seven pillars of demons, even Vatican can only take their hat off toward her. Rather, in the end it seems that the exorcist chief who looks like he can kill someone with his gaze melted to look like a good-natured grandpa.

.....Yep, let's not think further of this.

—  
—  
—

Month o Day ⇄

Now, Myuu! Take the controller!

It's the fighting game's revenge match!

The true power of fighting game gamer Yue who had secretly polished her skill through days of sleepless night, taste it to your heart content!

I'll teach you that there isn't anything like a vampire princess who lose against little girl!

—  
—  
—

Month o Day ✂

Not yet-. It's not over yet!

—  
—  
—

Month o Day † 日

I, it's not over yet

—

Month o Day ≠

N, not over yeeet

Month o Day @

Myuu is! Myuu is too strong I cannot defeat her!

Month o Day ∃

Hajimeeee. Myuu! Myuu finally won't play with me anymore!

What should I do!

Month o Day ⚭

These several days, it seems I'm somehow not like usual. For me to get absorbed into fighting game until dark circle appear under my eyes..... It's simply, Hajime scolded me, Myuu is looking at me with a really complicated gaze, Kaori completely made fun of me, Otou-sama and others are looking at me with warm eyes.....

This vampire princess, is greatly reflecting.

Setting that aside, Nagumo family's family meeting number '.....does anyone remember what number of meeting this one is?' is being held.

The agendas are 「Regarding Hajime's habit of weaponizing vehicle」 and 「problem of the people inside the suits」.

The former was an agenda that Shia brought up. Also, while she is at it, it seems she also want to overturn the decision 「In case there is passenger other, Shia cannot be allowed to touch the handle」 from the previous meeting.

Anyway, Hajime's fervent speech was amazing. To explain just how indispensable weapons are for a vehicle, he even expressly brought out a projector and strongly insisted like he is doing presentation for a company somewhere.

Sumire-okaasama who seemed to get fed up in the middle said 「Aah geez, it's troublesome! Just do whatever you like! Also, Shia-chan's revocation request is rejected」. With that Hajime made a guts pose while Shia fell on all fours with her head hanging down.

Well, this is Hajime who installed weapon not only in vehicle, but even in Myuu's bicycle, so I think it's already too late talking about this now, and until something is done about Shia's personality shift when she is gripping handle, there will be no room argument for that.

.....I too previously met horrible experience when riding behind Shia on a bike.

Now then, it's the important 「problem of the people inside suits」.

The people inside the Demon Rangers, they are like that. There is possibility that there are also others. The possibility that it's only Myuu's golems is certainly existent, but it has to be confirmed to erase all doubt.

Because of that, Hajime tired taking out the Grim Reapers, arachnes, and other things at the vast underground space but.....

As expected.

Although it's mainly with the Grim Reapers, demons with famous backgrounds are possessing them.

According to them, it seems 「It's unfair that it's only the kings. We don't know why but for some reason master's puppets are ignoring various

restrictions and are easy to be possessed y'know」 (liberal translation).

It looks like there are quite a lot of fellows who shrewdly got in when Hajime got lost into hell.

Hajime tried to chase them out with twitching face but.....

Even when they got hit by bombardment that dealt damage to the soul, 「Stop-, we are going to perish so stoop. We are going to be useful for master so pleaseee!」 they were considerably persistent like that. Do they want to have fun in this world and other world that much?

It seems that hell is a really dull place.

In the end, with Myuu's intermediation too, Hajime allowed the haunting of the golems.

Fumu. With this Hajime became “demon king” without any way to make excuse about it.

Hajime! Lovely!

Setting that aside, there are around two golems of different disposition.

They are the arachnes. The golems that Hajime named Erst and Neunte to amuse himself.

The two golems didn't introduce themselves as demon. Or rather, it felt like they didn't have name and couldn't introduce themselves.

When Shia tried asking 「Don't tell me.....you two aren't really apostle aren't you? You two aren't Erst and Neunte that I and Hajime-san murdered right?」 with slightly twitching face.....

The two golems simultaneously looked toward the far away. They wouldn't meet anyone's gaze no matter what.

It was terribly suspicious.

But, for apostles their every single movements are comical, the excessively feels human. If speaking about apostles, it was their default to be cold, emotionless, and expressionless. They were an existence that truly ought to be called “god's puppet”.



For a test, Hajime took out a certain thing.

After Kaori returned to her original body, I used a secret art and made her able to use apostle transformation by herself, but after that Neunte's body was stored just in case.

If someone fell into a dangerous situation that made them lost their flesh body, we imagined it would be better if there is an excellent body that can be used for emergency refugee in the same way like with Kaori.

The instant Neunte's body that was stored inside a crystal was taken out.

The two arachnes dashed fiercely. Toward Neunte's body.

Of course, Hajime didn't instruct them to do that.

Furthermore, in the middle Erst took a violent action of tripping the leg of Neunte who was running parallel with her and made her stumbled.

Then, the tumbling Neunte spouted out string and caught Erst's leg. She then kicked flying the struggling Erst and dashed fiercely again.

Not allowing her to do that, Erst fired the needle attached to her leg and sent Neunte flying.....

The two started an ugly scuffle. They hit their opponent repeatedly with their legs, and rolled around the floor while grappling continuously.

When Hajime returned Neunte's body inside the treasure warehouse while holding his head, the two simultaneously reached out their legs and went 「Aa~~!」, and then they hung down their head.

Hajime. Let's recognize it? The people inside them are the apostles.

Hajime's expression was twitching grandly. The expression of Shia and others were also twitching.

Hajime was muttering to himself 「No, impossible. In the first place those guys didn't have anything like soul, and even if they had soul, this kind of behavior is like that of a human cannot be explained」 with a low voice.

Certainly that's true but.....

For some reason, even when we tried asking for detail, it seems even Myuu

cannot hear the voice of the two. Even when we gave them writing tools they didn't try writing anything.

The instant Hajime muttered 「.....Let's dispose them」, they desperately appealed that they will be useful (it's only a guess though), and Myuu's impression toward them is that there is no bad feeling from them, so for the moment their disposal is put on hold.

Since when, where, and how did the arachnes got possessed?  
It looks like Hajime also want to solve those questions, so it seems he is going to research and investigate it for a while.

Fumu. It's also something I'm really curious about.  
Anyway, until then Erst (temp) and Neunte (temp), for short they are called Etemp-san and Netemp-san, are the last decision made for today's meeting.

—  
—  
—

Month o Day x  
The Haurias came!  
Starting from tomorrow, it will be earth sightseeing together with the Haurias.  
By the way, Hajime. That 「Special attention needed when handling! Hauria Manual」.....  
Will it be fine?  
Yep, surely it won't be fine.  
Let's also prepare various things for tomorrow.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.  
Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Notification.

Currently, I'm unexpectedly getting pressured to write the second volume of spin-off Zero. It's a harsh situation to take time to write new chapter update.

The words number and content of this chapter are also (sweat).....my apologize to all of you who were looking forward to it.

The update for next week too, it will depend on the progress of my writing but, perhaps it will be hard.

I'm sorry toward those who are looking forward to new chapter, but it will really help me if you all can think of it as 'Shirakame is really hopeless huh' and kindly wait until 30<sup>th</sup> day of this month.

My best regards.

—

※I haven't mentioned about the newest update in Comic Gardo until now, so just in case.

– Nichijou chapter 19 is updated

=>Myuu who coached Hajime hit the bull's eye lol

– Zero chapter 4

=>The beginning of the annoying Miledy. Her expression at the end was really great. My respect to Kouchi-sensei's drawing skill!

– Main story comic chapter 22

=>Miledy is in here too! The golem is cool.

—

I'm ashamed to put an advertisement here but, the comic of Zero volume 1 will be released at 25 July. It's also announced at the homepage of Overlap-sama.



Her energetic atmosphere is cute! My thanks to Kouchi Ataru-sensei!

Why is she that annoying, it will become clear from Miledy's past (the little girl Miledy).

I will be very happy if you readers will pick up the book.

# Arifureta Chapter 321

## Arifureta After III The Hauria Came! First

—

One day after the problems about Vatican and demons and so on were taken care of and around a month passed.

A strange tense atmosphere was floating inside the living room of Nagumo family house. Everyone was excessively restless.

It was only Myuu who was lying down on the living room's sofa with her small legs moving back and forth while she was focusing on her portable game but..... Sometimes her fingers would mash the button fiercely while swearing 「Goddamn! Nano!」 that she learned from who knew where.

「Myuu-chan, as I thought she is really amazing. Her nerves are just too brazen.」

The one who muttered so was the man with thin shadow sitting on the neighboring sofa——Endo Kousuke.

「A, as expected from the daughter of demon king-sama.....」

The one who replied with shivering expression was Emily Grant who was sitting stickingly close beside Kousuke as though snuggling up to him.

Why were these two in the house of Nagumo family? The reason was the same with why the people of Nagumo family were strangely tense.

「It's about time.....I guess.」

Hajime muttered while staring at the wall of the living room. Inside the living

room, Yue, Kaori, Shizuku, Tio, and also Remia were swallowing their saliva audibly altogether.

Additionally, the two happy-go-lucky two people of Nagumo family who delighted in people's shocked reaction were currently facing battlefield in their workplace. The two of them were so vexed with a look as though they were going to cry tears of blood because they were unable to stay at home in this day that ought to be commemorated. Surely around this time they were working hard while crying river of blood.

Then, at that timing, the wall suddenly began to shine. Light danced sparkingly in a vortex, and right after that the space distorted like jelly.

It was a gate. A sign that spaces were connected.

The light became even stronger, and before long an illusionary door appeared. It was shining brilliantly while opening along with a solemn music that was flowing from out of nowhere. *Gii*, a sound like the door of an ancient mansion opening was piercing their ears.

Light was overflowing from the gap of the door that was gradually opening.

At the same time, there was even smoke that was crawling on the floor overflowing out. The living room was instantly filled with a lot of white smoke like a sea of clouds.....

Everyone's gaze turned to Hajime. Is this also a newly added show feature? They wordlessly asked. Hajime shook his head left and right repeatedly. It seemed that other than the illusionary door and light, he didn't know anything including the music.

The Crystal Key's creator-san was bewildered. Yue-san and others who were even more bewildered.

And then, there was Emily-chan who was muttering 「Ah, that's why Rana-san said that she was recently working hard on musical performance using instrument.....」 with a faraway look, and Kousuke-san who was muttering 「Ah, that's why that Rana was so zealously asking about the way to make dry ice.....」.

Before long, inside the whirling white smoke and the light that was like halo,

silhouette could be seen inside the completely opened double-leafed door. The figure wasn't clear due to the backlighting.

At first there was one person. The figure was slowly advancing with a swagger and a way of walking that was putting on airs. Also, there were rabbit ears.

Next, there were two small silhouettes that appeared at both sides of the person who was walking at the forefront. As expected, they were also walking with exaggerated swagger. In every single step of the way they were walking, there was refinement that even gave off sexiness as though their toes were caressing the floor. Also, they had rabbit ears too.

And then two more silhouettes appeared at both sides again. The silhouettes of the newest additions looked female. Their hand was placed on their fragile looking thin waist, their unrealistically slender legs were moving forward as though being crossed. That way of walking was like model. Also, they had rabbit ears too.

And then, behind them were four people. They were similarly walking with a swagger (abbreviated)—they also had rabbit ears.

The expression of Hajime and others was twitching. Kousuke was writhing while both his hands were covering his face. Emily was looking up to the ceiling. Amidst that, the figures that appeared through the whirling white smoke that was like sea of clouds were.....

「The heaven is calling, the earth is calling, boss is calling」

「No, I ain't calling anyone here.」

The man in the lead let out a sonorous voice. Hajime's tsukkomi also burst out. Skill 「Sudden rabbit ear's deafness」 activate!

The man in the lead meaninglessly lifted up one leg overhead and turned beautifully! The move was truly brisk! There was no doubt that the move was amazingly practiced!

「Crossing over time, crossing over land, crossing over world——」

「We came running. For the sake of the boss」

「Have some self-respect.」

Next was the rabbit eared boy and girl. They were moving with a smooth motion from the pose of a savage eagle to a flowing turn. Even their rabbit ears were flowing savagely!

「Watch, and be amazed.」

「We are the one and only clan of black darkness. The light devouring fang of demise.」

「No, you guys are forest rabbit aren't you? Rather, right now you guys are absurdly bright. The backlighting is completely covering you guys.」

The two rabbit eared ladies were generously showing off the goodness of their body style that would make even world level model to run away barefooted. They brushed up their hair, curved their waist sexily, and make a tuu—rn-! It was truly the height of refined movement!

Then, the four people at the back starting from the right also one by one (abbreviated)

Kousuke finally blocked his ears with both hands and started with his legs put up on the sofa where he buried his face into his knees to escape from the callous reality with all his power. There was no doubt that he was also running away in full power from his other self.

Emily-chan was rubbing the back of Kousuke with a gentle hand movement.

The man in the lead spread open his arms like a stage actor and raised his voice to a degree that resounded to the whole neighborhood.

「Shrink back, lament, despair! We are the dagger of Nagumo Hajime, the white fierce god crimson demon emperor, the rondo of red scarlet and ruination white, the incarnation of the god of thunder clad in frenzied whirlwind! We are the crawling dark hunter demon!」

From out of nowhere, the sound *DODODODO*- like a drum roll was sounding. The next instant, smoke blew out strongly. Furthermore, due to magic item of lighting that was rolled out below them without anyone noticing, spotlight was turned on from right under them!

And then, a simultaneous tuuuuuurn-! They took their own preferred cool



pose and a proclamation burst out grandly!

「「「「「WE ARE HAURIA-!!!」」」」」

A painful silence ruled the place.

Hajime had covered his ears with both hands and his face buried into the knees that were raised on the sofa before he knew it, running away with all his strength from the callous reality. Surely, without a doubt he was also running away with all his power from the chuuni self that wouldn't vanish by any means inside his heart.

Yue who was snuggling beside him was patting Hajime's back with gentle hand movement.

「Yes yes yes! It's enough already! You all are satisfied right!? Come on, maintaining the gate isn't easy! Please get in right awaaay!」

‘Hau, ugeh, higii’, such screams rose up. At the same time, the rabbit eared silhouettes were thrown in one after another from the other side of the gate. There were also people holding musical instrument and people holding fan, even people holding case filled with dry ice. Looking from that, they must be the show production staffs at the other side of the gate.

Shia returned from the other side of the gate without even giving a glance at a rabbit eared boy who was screaming due to the dry ice that was sticking on his face. No one mentioned about the red something that was sticking on her fist.

「Hajime-san! I'm back——」

Rakshasa Oni of Calamitous Realm of the Dead

「Boss! “Ominous Hell Disaster” Carmlite Mors Exdix Hauria, has arrived in your presence! In this chance, we Hauria clan cannot endure our feelings of gratitude from receiving the summon into boss's world! This is truly our greatest honor!」

‘The name is different from before.....’, Hajime thought, but he was busy with shutting himself inside his shell, so he kept being small while not reacting. He didn't see the strange person beautifully kneeling right beside him, not in the least.

But, such figure of their respected and beloved boss was something completely trivial. The Haurias who arrived here introduced themselves one by one.

Abyss's      True      Wife  
「It has been one month, boss! “Abyss Cenicienta” Ranainferina Bride Hauria, is present!」

Certain      Death      Madness  
「“Death Rapsodia” Baltfeldt Tirailleur Hauria. Boss! Please kidnap me too this time no matter what!」

Outside Massacre Flower  
「Wait a second Baltfeldt! Stealing headstart is forbidden! Boss! “Kill Nahatol” Nea Stadtrm Adeka Hauria, has arrived! That aside, it’s unfair that it’s only Ranainferina! I beg you please kidnap me!」

Rending      Vacuum      Burial      Jail  
「Little kids just stay quiet. My lord, “Reaper the Inferno” Minasteria Diabolos Hauria, is at your side! If possible, allow me to stay at your side for eternity in this chance!」

「Boss! I will surely be of use-. This “Thunder Blade (abbreviated——)”」  
‘Anyway’, Hajime thought. ‘They have powered up even more than beforeee’, he thought. ‘I don’t even get what are they talking about anymoreee.....’, he thought.

As expected even Yue and others had expression that gone past the usual wry smile and became twitching expression.

It seemed that because the Haurias were able to come to their boss’s world, they were in a state of max tension.....it didn’t just stop there, it seemed they were in the limit break state that pierced through the heaven. Surely, without a doubt they were spending days of sleepless nights to think of their new name. Also, things like the naming’s name or the basis of the naming were without a doubt absolutely noncommittal. They only focused at the impact of the wording.

The blank eyed Kousuke was staring at empty air while saying 「Heheh, can you believe it? I’m slotted to become these people’s head you know?」, Emily was clinging on him imploringly and said 「Get a hold of yourself-, Kousuke!」. Seeing them, Hajime rallied his mind somehow.

There was a person in even more terrible state beside him. Somehow it felt like he could still keep going-! Something like that.

But, there,

「Everyone of Hauria! Good work in coming here! Nano! I am the one and only “demon king’s daughter”, Myuu Southcloud nano!」

Standing imposingly on the sofa, and both arms crossed with cool impression! Myuu’s triumphant look was fixed on her face!

Carmite— —not that, Carm and others offered their loud applauses and praises saying 「Oo! Myuu-dono! What a magnificent introduction!」.

Remia suddenly looked like she would faint. Tio hurriedly caught her body. It seemed mama Remia’s consciousness was getting farther when she overlapped her daughter’s future with the current Hauria.

「Dear-, please! Myuu! Myuu is!」

「Yeah-, I get it, Remia!」

The two’s figure was like a mother whose beloved daughter was kidnapped and a husband who was relied on by his wife and took a stand.

From behind, Hajime hugged Myuu who was making a turn with a triumphant look. Without pause he lifted her up. The Haurias’ eyes were shining in expectation 「Will it be the introduction of parent and child!?!」. For the time being Hajime sent them flying and then he scolded Myuu with ‘No-’.

Myuu was making an unconvinced expression saying 「Even though papa sometimes would also be like that.....」, but it seemed she somehow consented. Though her muttering inflicted a deep fissure into papa Hajime’s heart.

After that, Hajime pulled himself together and coughed once.

「Aa~, let’s see. Well, for now, good work in coming here.」

「Thank you very much, boss. Allow me to express our gratitude once more for listening to our request for base searching.」

「This time it will be a preliminary inspection. It will be mostly like a sightseeing, so relax. Shia too, she was enthusiastic that she will be able to give

a tour to her family in this world.」

When Carm who heard those words looked at Shia, Shia was making a slightly embarrassed look while her rabbit ears were moving restlessly. Carm too, his seriously ill chuunibyou state vanished and he displayed a warm face of a father.

The Haurias came this time was because their work of hardening their foothold at Tortus had calmed down, so they raised up a new objective of getting useful for Hajime even at earth too.

For that, they requested to search for base at earth (mainly to Shia), but in any case there was also Shia's request of wanting to show them the sight in the world of this side at least once. That was how the visit this time came to be.

By the way, as expected it was impossible for the whole Hauria clan to come, so it was the visit of the picked elite twenty.

「Tou-sama. How about we go to the city right away?」

「Let's see..... I'm curious about the base location candidates that Shia and others picked out for us but, we don't know anything about this world other than some second-hand knowledge.」

「That's right. It's better to get used to the atmosphere a bit more. After all Tou-sama and everyone else's head is like that even at the best of times! Please feel the atmosphere and common sense of this world directly with your skin!」

「Aah, let's do that. Also, what do you mean by "our head is like that", Shia.」

Shia papa made a tsukkomi at his daughter's natural insult, but he was beautifully ignored.

Hajime smiled wryly while opening his mouth.

「Right. Let's stroll around the city relaxedly and then eat outside. Although, moving around in a group of twenty will be a bit hard.」

「.....Do you mean that it's better to split up then, boss.」

「Ou. For Rana, it's better to be together with Kousuke right? I called him here for that.」

Rana was moved to tears by the boss's consideration while leaping toward Kousuke— —Emily-chan intercept!

Although, she only cut in between them really like a cat going 「Fushaa!」. In the end, she instantly got embraced together and became totally flustered.

「That's how it so, Tou-sama. Please decide— —」

‘The grouping’, Shia was about to say, but those words got swallowed back in the middle. She was literally made to swallow those words by the extremely dangerous atmosphere that Carm and others emitted.

「Fumu. Then, this is the clan chief's order. I will be with boss. The other can decide by yourself.」

Killing intent!

「Chief, you want to die?」

「Rather, I'll kill you.」

Par-kun made a neck cutting gesture with a smile.

Nea-chan equipped a sunglass! & at both hands short swords stand b~~y-.

Even though the two of them were still around twelve years old, the atmosphere they emitted was that of a veteran warrior.

「Shia and also Rana are unfair! Why was it only me who couldn't come at the spring! At the very least I should be allowed to serve at boss's side! I'm not scared at all against the like of Shia! Do your best me!」

Mina-san often listened to Rana talking fondly of her lover, so it seemed her mind was relatively cornered. She pushed aside the chief and challenged Shia to a fight was also because she wanted to serve the boss it seemed.

The other Haurias were also claiming that ‘I am the one that will go sightseeing with boss!’ and they equipped sunglass one after another. They started to take out short sword or knife or the like from who knew where.

「You bastards.....that's some guts you have there trying to supplant your superior-」

Killing intent overflowed from Carm-san. ‘I absolutely won't yield the place at

boss's side!' Such passionate thought was overflowing from the rabbit eared uncle!

A bloody "contest for the spot at boss's side" by the Haurias was going to start at Nagumo family house.

「.....Nn. Hajime, you're super popular.」

「Papa, you're super popular nano~」

「Everyone really loves Hajime-san aren't they~. Anyway, the way everyone is looking cornered like that is terrible.....something have to be done quickly.」

「Goshujin-sama. Like this, art not it better to just do a group tour?」

Yue and others directed a complicated expression toward Hajime. Kaori and Shizuku were desperately trying to remonstrate Carm and co. Kousuke too, he was being told unreasonably by Rana 「Now, Kou-kun! As the next chief, tell them firmly with impact here!」. Even though his eyes were looking dead, he was standing up to respond to the expectation.

Anyway, they were at the living room of Nagumo house, so Hajime took a deep breath.

「Etemp-san, Netemp-san. Do it.」

'Roger!', the two arachnes that had appeared on the table unnoticed by anyone pushed out their improved front legs. What was shot out from there was super small stun gun. The moment it hit the target, the switched was turned and electricity flowed.

*Chu chu chu chu chu chu*, such strangely cute shooting sound resounded. At the same time, 「ABAA-!?」 countless screams rose.

In less than a few seconds, the living room of Nagumo house was filled with a mountain of rabbit corpses.....

Also, the true identity of the two arachne-san still hadn't been ascertained at this time.

「This is bad. As I thought, something like sightseeing feels like a suicidal act to me. Especially for my social position.」

Hajime’s spasming voice echoed slightly.

Although, he had a rabbit eared wife who wanted to give a tour to her family in earth, so he had no choice but to do his best. There was no option of cancelling since the beginning.

Hajime made a wry smile toward Shia who was looking slightly apologetic while standing up and psyching up himself.

—  
—  
—

It was noisy somewhere in the downtown.

There was a heavy pedestrian traffic also because it was nearby a large shopping mall nearby a station. The gaze of all those people was fixed toward one place. There were people whose jaw dropped down, there were also people who was watching in fascination, people who were raising voice of despair because their smartphone went up in smoke for some reason when they were trying to take picture using it, etc.....

「.....Damn it. I was only vigilant of their speech and action, but these guys are the rabbit people race in the end.」

「Ahaha..... In a sense it was also a bad decision to ask Remia-san to coordinate their outfit isn’t it~」

Hajime’s expression looked like he was enduring a headache. Shia was making a wry smile in respond.

The source of the attention was naturally, Carm and co.

After the contest for the spot beside boss was suppressed, in the end it was decided to split the group into four. Each group was composed of five Haurias with two people attached as guide. With that each group would walk around separately to various places and later on the Haurias would share the information with each other.

Then, in the glorious “boss group”, Carm, Par, Nea, Mina, and Io, these five were chosen for it. It would be troublesome if it became a dispute, so it was

decided by the boss's command. Here, two more people, Shia and Myuu were also added as guide.

In addition, the other groups consisted of Yue & Tio group, Kousuke & Emily group, and Kaori & Shizuku group.

「Hou hou. This is also amazing. Buildings like large trees are lining up like this.....good gracious, this is truly another world. Truly a magnificent view!」

「To think that boss's Brieze and Schutaif are spreading through general public like this.....I had heard about it already but, seeing it with my own eyes still make me lost for words.」

「Yeah, everything is different from our world. As for the air, well, it's a bit like that though.....」

Carm, Mina, and Io, the three of them were saying so. They were looking around with a surprised and admiring expression.

Each time admiring long sigh leaked out from the surrounding.

There was one reason. It was the good look of Carm and co.

For Hajime and co, they had gotten used on seeing it and on top of that they knew of the Haurias true character, so they didn't think anything about it anymore. But Carm and co were of rabbit people race. That was to say, every single one of them was a possessor of good look that boasted terrific popularity as prized slave.

Furthermore, their current appearance was dressed to blend normally into modern Japan. No, far from blending in, the great sense in the clothing coordination was suiting them too much.

Carm's appearance was a classic fashion that looked tastefully casual with a felt hat on his head, which made Hajime wanted to make a tsukkomi that he looked like a dandy movie actor from somewhere. If he also held a cane, it wouldn't be out of place even if he introduced himself as an old noble gentleman.

Mina too, she was wearing pants look with calm atmosphere on the whole. She was only wearing a round-necked T-shirt with a long cardigan put above it,



but because she was a possessor of a figure that wasn't at all inferior compared to Shia or Rana, her gallantly walking figure stole everyone's gaze without exception. No one would hold any doubt if they were told that she was a top model from overseas.

Io had a rough appearance that consisted of slacks and jacket, but compared to Carm he was taller and had better physique, so his appearance was truly fit to be called as a good looking man. He truly looked stylish.

And then,

「We are strangely gathering a lot of attention here. Milady, I don't think there will be anything to worry with boss here, but just in case, please don't get too far away from us okay?」

「Well, these aren't unpleasant gaze like from the people of the empire so I think it's fine but still..... It will be fine, milady. This Neastadtrm will protect you even at the cost of my life.」

Par and Nea were standing in position that were putting Myuu between them while sending sharp gaze toward the surrounding. They were unmistakably a handsome boy and a beautiful girl.

The two of them, or rather the Hauria clan was basically calling Myuu as「Myuu-dono」or「milady」in respect and affection.

She was the boss's beloved daughter, so from their point of view she was like a princess. The way they were calling her sounded like yakuza was for fun.

The dignified atmosphere of the two and their adorable appearance formed a gap that struck the heart. Whether it was Par who was dressed in a jean and white jacket, or Nea who was wearing a miniskirt and sleeveless shirt with a necktie, both of them were giving excessively stylish impression even though they were children.

By the way, all of them were using artifact that was hiding their rabbit ears. Carm's hat actually had holes opened for his rabbit ears, but it too was turned invisible using a type of illusion.

「My? What is Par-kun and Nea-chan talking about nano?」

Myuu tilted her head in puzzlement. In contrast to the two, Myuu was wearing a loose white dress. She was truly giving an impression like a princess.

Everything was fashion coordination from Remia who was requested by Shia. It seemed that all the clothes were the creation from her company from how she was saying「This will be a great advertisement!」. She really had a strong business spirit.

「.....Milady. I am Baltfeld yeah?」

「Milady, please call me as Neastadtrm by all means.」

「? Par-kun is Par-kun, and Nea-chan is Nea-chan nano.」

「Mi, milady~. Please properly call our name there.」

「We are begging youu, milady~」

「Ee~? Because, those names, they're long. It's troublesome nano.」

Par-kun and Nea-chan, the two of them raised a groan「Guhah」together while hanging down their head.

Even though they looked dignified just now, the handsome boy and beautiful girl got depressed by the words from a girl younger than them and looked dejected.

The big sisters at the surrounding were spurting out red shower of happiness from their nose! The station's front was dyed by blood!

Also, rough breathing of excitement was blowing out from the nose of the gentlemen. Someone, please call the police! It will also be for protecting their life!

Hajime was giving his all to chase out the surrounding commotion from his sight while looking up at the large shopping mall across from the traffic ahead.

They came here first to have Carm and co to experience the common livelihood and marketplace of the people in this world, but right now he could only look at the shopping mall as a thrill ride at a clamoring amusement park.

The schedule tomorrow would be a sightseeing at place of abundant nature using teleportation, but right now Hajime was already anxiously looking forward

for that time to come.

「Ee~rr, Hajime-san! Perhaps it will be fine!」

「Right, yeah.」

If speaking about the beginning, the cause of this was because of his devilish remodeling toward the Hauria clan. He was reaping what he sown, his just deserts.

Above all else, it was his role as the host to make Shia's family had fun.

No problem, I'll do it. My head has received damage since the entrance scene but, I won't go down just from this much!

Look, the moment I psyched up myself, the traffic light turned green. Isn't it look as though the traffic light-san is telling me「It will be fine you know?」. 「Your future is green lighted♪」 it said!

Now, let's go. It will be fine, problem won't occur that quick——

「Say~, can I have a bii~t of your time? I am from the oo television, is it okay if I hold a street interview with you here?」

「!?」 flew out above Hajime's head.

「Hmm? Are you talking to me, beautiful young lady?」

「O, oh you, calling me beautiful like that.....」

When Hajime turned around, he saw TV staff doing street interview there and the figure of Carm and co facing them smilingly.

As expected, it seemed a group of good looking people was really conspicuous.

The female interviewer looked a bit enthusiastic facing the stylishly dandy old gentlemen. She was asking his name with her cheeks slightly blushing. She was also asking about his profession, whether they were a group of model or actor.

Hajime tried to intercept in panic but.....

「O, oi, Carm. Something like this is——」

「Fuh. You are telling us to introduce ourselves? Very well. In that case, put up

your rabbit ears and listen well!」

The old gentleman smirked! Blood left the demon king-san's face. "That" would be broadcasted into the living room of houses throughout Japan!

「We are——」

「You think I'll let youu-」

Boss's right blow!

「Gahah!? Bo, boss? Even though I was at the nice part just now! Just why!?!」

Carm held his side while falling on one knee. Cold sweat was oozing from his whole body.

A beat later, the female newscaster screamed 「Kyaaaaah! A violenceee!」.

Ignoring that, Hajime informed the Haurias smilingly.

「Listen to me, you guys. It's forbidden to introduce yourself without my permission. What you are allowed to say is only your real name. You get it? Just try introducing yourself with more than six letters. I'll tear out your prided rabbit ears for eternity.」

「Ye, yes, boss! We won't introduce our name using more than six letters!」

Carm stood in attention and displayed a beautiful salute. The other Haurias were also turning pale simultaneously and displayed an admirable salute posture.

That harmoniously synchronized movement conveyed clearly to the surrounding people whether they liked it or not.

It conveyed, just who was the boss of that group.

Shia was covering her face with one hand while muttering.

「.....Hajime-san. I understand your feeling, I also understand why your body reflexively moved. But, I think your action just now also feel like that enough you know?」

Hajime-san gasped in realization. The camera was firmly recording the figure of the boss and his underlings. The figure of Japanese youth who was being absolutely obeyed by a group of foreign good looking people that stole

everyone's attention was.....

「Excuse me~, can I question you mister for a bit too?」

The female newscaster timidly held out the mike toward Hajime.

「Boss! Please, teach us how to deal with this kind of situation too!」

「Please! This Balt——cough-. This Par swear that he will learn it in one go without fail!」

Carm and others raised their spirit. The TV crew looked deeply interested.

Hajime looked up to the sky.

And then, he thought.

‘I hope, this isn't a live broadcast’, he thought.

‘Also, let's not have lunch in the shopping mall, let's do it in Sonobe's restaurant, yeah let's do that’, he also thought.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I'm thinking to return to the usual update interval from next week.

I'll sort out the chronological order already (sweat)

—

At Comic Gardo,

- Main story comic version chapter 23
- Nichijou chapter 20

They are updated.

They are in the middle of being freely distributed at Overlap-sama's homepage, so please go take a look!

The main story comic finally entered the versus Miledy golem fight. The impact is amazing lol

At the Nichijou, Kaori-san's proclamation from the rooftop is nostalgic lol. I saw it every week in the past huh, it made me recalled various things.

# Arifureta Chapter 322

## Arifureta After III The Hauria Came! Second

—

Fortunately, the downtown interview wasn't broadcasted live.

The camera was hindered due to the interference from Lightning Clad. The TV crews withdrew because they weren't in a state to do recording anymore. They looked terribly frustrated.

It wasn't because their camera broke, but because it returned to normal after they took a certain distance. Surely that was frustrating for them.

Hajime and Shia dragged away the Haurias from the noisy location to escape. They let out a large sigh when they entered the entrance of a shopping department.

「Hajime-san, are you alright, mentally?」

「It felt like my soul got shaved off a lot, but I'm still alright. Though, don't let your guard down Shia. Concentrate. If not——you'll die.」

「No, we aren't in a battlefield. This is a departm——」

「Boss! This is a really amazing place! If it's here surely they will have splendid collection of weapons!」

「Around here there are only clothes..... Boss, where are they selling tools? I want to resupply my wire soon.」

「Ah, boss, I also want sharpening stone for my knife.」

「Are they selling hidden weapon here? I want a spare blade for the assassin blade boss bestowed to us.」

「No no, chief. Also all of you too. We are finally able to come to boss's world yeah? Then, first it has to be explosive! Boss, please show us the best explosive material!」

For the time being, the ladies who were sending feverish gazes to Carm and Io opened their eyes wide in shock. Their eyes were darting around was undoubtedly the proof that they were hesitating whether to report this to the police or not.

Shia raised a dry laugh 「Ahaha.....」.

「I retract my words. This place is a battlefield. Our heart will be done in if we let our guard down. Also please don't report this to police.」

「Perhaps it might be best to go to hardware store.」

There wouldn't be any explosive or assassin blade there, but perhaps there would be a full set of material there. At the very least, there would be a mountain of product for making traps there.

Although, the store would also have a bar or chainsaw. Hajime didn't want Hauria to equip these two items.

Rabbits equipping "bar-like thing" or "chainsaw" inside forest.....that was a nightmare. If it was turned into a horror movie, it felt like it would give a terror that surpassed that person in Friday the 13<sup>th</sup>.

Hajime shook his head to chase out the scary imagination. He then thoroughly, very thoroughly told Carm and others that there wasn't any weapon here, that till the end this was a market for general public. He told them to never ask anything like 「I want to buy explosive though, where is it placed?」 to the shop staff no matter what.

Carm and others were a bit disappointed, but they came here today for the sake of learning a part of living in another world. They accepted that they didn't come for weapon resupply. For the present time they were following behind Hajime obediently.



「Hmm, it's unfortunate that they have no weapon here, however, this place is really resplendent. It looks like the imperial castle's audience hall or party venue.」

Carm let out an impressed voice. The first floor that became atrium which reached until third floor was certainly resplendent not just from the ceiling's lighting, but from the lights of each store too.

「Look around casually. Tell me if there is something that pique your interest. However, don't go off by your own. Tell me properly. You all get that? This is an absolute order okay? Completely absolute okay?」

「.....That's a joke isn't it boss?」(TN: Here Carm said the sentence in a slang wording usually used by youngsters in Japan)

「That ain't it.」

The chief-san grinned broadly and guessed the boss's meaning. It made Hajime wanted to make a tsukkomi why they knew about earth's culture (?) only in that kind of area.

The atrium floors that reached until the third floor were basically consisting of only brand clothes or bag shops. Perhaps because of that, it seemed the Haurias weren't really interested. Their gaze were sliding away from all of those in disinterest other than learning what kind of clothing Japanese people were wearing and just how much was the price.

「Hmm, Mina-san, Nea-chan. Are you two interested in western clothes? Look, something like this, I think it will look good on Mina-san see? Isn't it cute?」

Shia smiled wryly at the disinterest of her fellow female Haurias toward fashion while pointing at the mannequin display of a certain shop.

The group of good looking people was naturally also standing out inside the department store. Noticing that Shia stopped walking, the female shop staff's eyes were shining hopefully. She was quickly closing the distance with a perfect smile.

Two beautiful women who looked like foreign models. The female customers inside the shop and also the passing by people inadvertently directed their gaze to them.

Amidst that, Mina who was staring intently at the mannequin display that was dressed in long skirt Shia pointed out was.....

「It looks hard to move at. I think it will be a hindrance in battle.」

「.....」

The shop employee stopped approaching. The female customers went 「Eh?」 and tilted their head wondering if they were mishearing.

「No, now now, Mina-san. This is a casual wear you know? It's worn in time like when you are going out shopping for a bit for example, at that kind of time——」

「Fuu. You have become completely lax haven't you, Shia.」

「Yes?」

In response to Shia who was explaining that it wasn't a battle clothes with a bitter smile, Mina shrugged her shoulders looking like she was saying 「Oh dear」 really condescendingly. Shia's expression became somewhat irritated.

「Casual wear? Shopping? I wonder what could you refer to by that. We are the Hauria! How can you be so lax to forget the constant alert state of mind as though you are in a battlefield like this!」

「Eee~」

Shia who was preached at for some reason by her relative who was like her big sister. In addition, Carm and others were also sending her an exasperated expression that said 「Good grief Shia. Can you properly become boss's wife like that?」. Shia's irritated expression was getting deeper.

But, she endured! Because, Shia was an able bunny wife after all! Though she couldn't avoid having her unseen bunny ears trembling.

The female shop employee thought 「Ah, these guys might be a no good type of bunch」 and stopped approaching. Her impregnable friendly smile wasn't disturbed at the slightest, but her legs stopped moving completely. She was entering a wait-and-see mode.

Mina didn't even bother with the surrounding's thought and,

(This is a chance! If I speak as Shia's big sister that I want to watch over my unworthy little sister, I might be allowed to serve at boss's side! Ku-ku-ku-. Don't think bad of me, Shia. Oneechan is at her limit already here. Each time I listened to the love talk of Rana and you, my heart feels like they are going to crack!)

Mina slipped out a black smile inside her heart. Like this she was going to develop a carefully reasoned logical argument that she ought to stay at the boss's side using Shia's clothing choice as excuse. But, however,

「Aa, geez-. What's with that attitude just because of some clothing! It's alright to wear cute western clothes occasionally! Even your attire today is lovely you know!？」

(Fuh, that's naïve, Shia. Really naïve! My outfit right now is trouser look. What's more, I asked Remia-san to choose one with soft fabric that has elasticity for me! In other words, it doesn't violate my constant state of mental readiness at all! You who don't even notice that really need my supervision just as I thought!)

Mina thought that within 0.03 second and replied with an overreaction that wished to express just how exasperated she was toward Shia.

「Fuh, really Shia. You are really a hopeless little sister aren't you? Now listen, this is——」

「Hajime-san. Don't you think that this long skirt will absolutely look good on Mina-san?」

「Hm~? Well, I guess it will?」

「Clerk-san! This one, give it to me!」

Mina-san snapped her finger and changed her attitude as easy as turning her palm. Inside her heart the scheme of just a moment ago had been sent flying to the beyond.

(Waa~~~i♪ I was praised by bosss~♪)

She was in a really high spirits. By the way, this year Mina was 23 years old.

She flapped her unseen rabbit ears energetically while passing by Shia who

was making a look of incomprehension toward the shop employee.

By the way, each Hauria had been given their own Japanese yen of a certain amount. This was their “first shopping”. It was a part of their learning of currency value and calculation.

It was a brand product, so the price was quite expensive. The shop employee would prepare a different item that was the same like the one in the mannequin display. While waiting for it, Mina was humming ‘un un’ while counting the money she had with all her might.

While waiting for her calculation, the sleeve of Hajime’s clothes got pulled weakly. Hajime went 「Hm?」 and when he turned his gaze, there Nea who was fidgeting went.....

「Bo, boss. I also, want some clothes. Is there anything, that suit me?」

The rabbit eared beautiful little girl kept sending glances with an upward look. She was explicitly begging 「I want clothes that boss think will look good on me」.

It seemed there was a gentleman among the passerby. The gentleman made a beautiful turn while passing through. He continued to walk backward while gazing intently at Nea and collided on an auntie with a huge build. *Slap* Such nice sound resounded. The price of staring at a beautiful little girl seemed to be getting hit by an auntie’s slap.

It was Myuu who became flustered by Nea’s attitude.

「Ne, Nea-chan! Myuu and Shia-oneechan will pick up clothes that will look good on Nea-chan nano!」

「Eh? Milady, but, I want boss.....」

「Don’t say something bad nano! First-, Myuu and Shia-oneechan will be the one who choose! It’s okay to ask papa whether it look good or not after that!」

Myuu’s stern look was frightening. Myuu tightly grasped Nea’s shoulders and persuaded (?) Nea with a ghastly look.

「That’s right, Nea-chan. It’s just as Myuu-chan said. If not——」

「I, if not?」

「You will end up wearing something like the sweater of a black dragon with terrific fashion taste!」

「You also will end up wearing something like sweater of crap taste with heart mark scattered on it nano!」

It seemed that Hajime-san was thought by his beloved daughter as a person with crap fashion sense. By the way, the black dragon sweater was a loose and oversized sweater with the kanji of “黒龍”<sup>black dragon</sup> printed on it, while the heart mark sweater was a sweater with heart mark printed everywhere on it.

The former was for Tio's use, while the latter was for Yue's use. The expression of the two of them became something that was hard to be described which they had never shown until that time when they were wearing the sweater. (TN: This referred to a scene in Arifureta Nichijou when Hajime designed clothes for Tio and Yue. The design and their expression were pretty funny)

「Nea-chan is cute nano! There is no way we can allow papa to choose clothes for you nano!」

「Spare me already Myuu.」

Hajime had a faraway gaze. Just where in the world he could be looking at.

Was he looking at the distant past? His previous offense? Or perhaps only the world of unreality.....

Carm clapped Hajime's shoulder kindly. When Hajime turned his gaze toward him, he found a gaze that was displaying understanding and sympathy there. That was the expression of a father who had gotten the pile bunker of heart driven into him by his daughter who was at that age. Surely Carm had also gotten struck down by Shia in the past.

Hajime made a clear smile and nodded. It was a moment when their heart was connected as fellow father.

After that, Hajime and others were dejectedly following behind the female camp that was getting excited choosing clothes.

Midway, Par alone got treated as dressing doll by Shia and Mina, even his

scream and begging 「Stop iiit! Please spare me only from thaaat! Bosss, heeelp!」 ended up in vain and he got dressed with female clothing. He looked like his soul had left his body but.....

Baltfeld of certain death was supposed to be a tough man, so surely he would be fine.

After that, Hajime and co entered the general store in the fifth floor. There, Carm and others accomplished a revolutionary meeting.

「Bo, bo-bo-bo, boss!」

「What is it Carm? I told you not to be loud.」

A loud voice came from a slight distance away from Carm who was taking wallet into his hand and staring at it fixedly. The surrounding people were also paying attention to him wondering what was going on. Hajime approached him and Carm showed him that.

「This is-, what is this!?!」

「It's wallet.」

「That's obvious when looking at it! It isn't that, it's this!」

*Rip rip rip* sound resounded.

The wallet opened.

Carm closed the wallet once more. The wallet's mouth closed without any sound.

Then once more, *rip rip rip*!

「What.....the」

Io opened his eyes wide in shock.

「Don't tell me.....this is an artifact?」

Mina took a different wallet with trembling hand. *Rip rip rip-. Pop-.* (AN: I just can't find any good sound word for the wallet closing)

「Just, what in the hell.....」

Young boy Par's dead and rotten fish eyes recovered their light. *Gulp-*, he

swallowed his saliva.

「.....」

*Rip rip rip-. Pop-. Rip rip rip-. Pop-.Rip rip rip-. Pop-.Rip rip  
rip-. Pop-.*

Nea-chan wholeheartedly did *rip rip rip*- and *pop*- without stopping while staying wordless and expressionless.

「.....It's called magic tape.」

「Magic.....as I thought, it's magic.」

Hajime smiled wryly while explaining the manufacturing of magic tape. The expression of Carm and others became even more astonished knowing that it was functioning without any magic at all.

「Unbelievable.....here is, here is the crystallization of mankind's wisdom!」

「You are that astonished with it huh.」

Certainly, Hajime also thought that it was a ground-breaking and genius invention, but hearing someone praising something so common for him until that far caused him to make a really complicated expression.

‘Also, Nea-chan, I wish you will stop opening and closing the wallet expressionlessly and wordlessly like that soon’, Hajime thought. The smiling shop employee was slowly closing the distance.

Hajime was making a slightly twitching expression and took away the wallet that was making ripping sound from Nea's hand.

「Ah.....」

Nea-chan, she showed a sad expression that she had never showed before! It looked like she just had her treasure taken away from her. Her eyes were getting moist with tears. He could imagine her rabbit tears drooping down with dejection.

It caused a terrible guilt even for Hajime.

Unconsciously,

「I, I'll buy it for you, so do the ripping at home.」

Nea-chan's expression brightened radiantly in a flash! It was the radiance like the shine of a dazzling sunlight after the dark clouds of a century was cleared away. Her usual cool warrior face couldn't be found at the slightest.

Her rabbit ears and rabbit tail were whooshing up and down fiercely! So much so the illusion was shook off and they became faintly visible, expressing her intense happiness!

「I, I'll treasure it forever!」

「O, ou. No, don't make a wallet of only a thousand yen as your treasure. Hearing that make me sad for some reason.」

At that timing, quietly young boy Par— —not just him, even Carm and others, all of them were wordlessly, but, with extraordinarily sparkling eyes, they were slowly showing him the crunchy sounding wallet.

「.....Geez, I'll buy the magic tape itself, so put them back.」

「That is that. This is this, boss.」

It seemed what was important for young boy Par was to receive the discovered crystallization of mankind's wisdom from boss as present.

Hajime was making a difficult expression at the cheap Haurias and purchased matching wallets with five different colors at the cashier. When the female clerk properly received the really crunchy sounding wallets at the counter, her smile also became a genuine smile.

He already came this far, so he also asked for the wallets to be wrapped. He then handed them to the Haurias. The Haurias' expression became really pleased.

Especially, Nea was,

「Ehehe.....」

She was already making a soft and loose smile. Not a trace of her warrior expression or chuuni disease could be seen.

「Tha, thank you very much, Onii-chan!」

「@?」



“!?” came out above Hajime’s head. He was so shocked he took a step back.

A beat later Nea noticed her own statement and she corrected herself 「Tha, that was rude-, boss! My deepest gratitude for this!」 in panic.

However, when Hajime also saw Par’s face that was similarly showing a soft and loose smile that was fitting for his age.....

「Shia, this is earth-shattering. I, might have found a way to return them to normal.」

「So it’s “happiness” that surpassed their maximum tolerance! I have to quickly tell Emily-chan about this desuu!」

When they first met, the way the children of Hauria called Hajime was basically 「Onii-chan」. Now that word just came out from a Hauria’s plain self, on top of that looking at their current peaceful and warm atmosphere.....

The sign for the betterment of their symptoms had come into sight.

Hajime and Shia nodded to each other and wordlessly did a high-five. Emily-chan! It’s a good news for you!

After that, they went to a shopping spree for bunches of magic tape, and then they also got stuck further with bubble wrap (cushion with a lot of small bags filled with air. The thing that went *pop pop*), and it became a great commotion of the crystallization of mankind’s wisdom part 2, the shop’s employee came out.....

Midway, at the toy corner, they encountered with the boss and young leader of the “self-employed profession which started with ‘ya’” that Hajime had previously crushed. It seemed they came to buy present for the birthday of the boss’s granddaughter. It looked like the granddaughter was very loved seeing how the boss directly came to buy the present.

When the two of them saw the good look of the Haurias and the way they called Hajime as boss, they raised a loud voice 「As I thought, you are really a mafia boss!」 half in shock and half in understanding.

Furthermore, that yell was broadcasted to the surrounding, and the department store at afternoon fell into an uproar of ‘there are dangerous

organizations having meeting here!?’ and so on.....

‘No, what kind of yakuza and mafia will have meeting at toy corner’, Hajime made such tsukkomi.....

There, the Haurias who heard that the other party was a group with occupation that was similar with them and they had got beaten up by their boss tried to make it clear which one of them was the superior one. They glared while going forward to introduce themselves.....

‘Could it be, it’s not a meeting but gang war!?’ , the security came running while trembling.....

Hajime applied pressure on everyone and retreated from that place for the time being into the rooftop. When they arrived there, a hero show was playing. When the hero introduced himself, the Haurias went ‘That’s insufficient!’ and tried to interrupt. Hajime tied them up.....

And, at the end, they could see police car coming. Knowing that they had got reported, they hurriedly escaped from the department store.

Like that at present Hajime and co was in the middle of moving using a subway train.

「Hey, the place we are going at right now, are you guys really okay with it?」

「Of course. We heard it from Shia, isn’t it the “holy land” in this Japan? In the past, we guided boss to the location of the sacred place, the giant tree. And right now boss is generously guiding us to a holy land.....I can completely feel destiny at work here.」

「No, there ain’t anything like that at all though.」

Hajime watched at the corner of his sight of Carm who was soaking in deep feeling alone while nodding to himself. At the same time he stared fixedly at Shia who was sitting beside him.

「Eh? What is it, Hajime-san? Akiba is a holy land isn’t it? Otou-sama and  
mother-in-law  
Okaa-sama, and also the people in their workplace also said that you know?」

「.....That’s because the people you asked are all people in that business.」

Yes, the holy land of the people who were completely immersed in the subculture, Akibahara, or Akiba for short. That place was exactly the place where they were heading at because of the request of the Haurias.

Incidentally, today was the day of –car-free day. That place was surely bustling right now. For him to bring people with real animal ears there although they were hidden with illusion artifact.....

How terrifying. Hajime shivered, at the same time he resolved himself like a hero that was going to face the final battle. Everything was for the sake of giving “hospitality” to the important family of his rabbit eared wife.

Putting that aside,

「Oi, Par, Nea. Sit properly. Are you two kids.....no, you two are kids huh.」

Even though there wasn't anything particularly interesting to see while riding subway train, the kid duo Par & Nea were on their knees on the chair while looking outside the window. When Myuu rebuked them with 「Par-kun and Nea-chan too, mind your manner nano」, they reseated themselves looking somewhat embarrassed.

「Sorry boss, milady. I never thought that there would be a place that is like a great labyrinth in this side too.」

「There are a lot of tunnels and doors outside. Boss, just how large the scale of this place is?」

「Labyrinth you say.....no, well, certainly, this is an underground space that is like labyrinth so it I guess it can be called as earth's underground labyrinth.....as for the scale」

For the time being, Hajime put out the track map of the subway train in his smartphone and showed it. Seeing the vastness of the scale, not only Par and Nea, all the Haurias opened their eyes wide in surprise.

「This is astonishing. What about the depth? Is it at the level of the abyss where boss fell into?」

「No, as expected there isn't anything like that. Till the end this is only an underground route for travelling long range. Even though the extent is vast, the

depth doesn't reach the level of the abyss at all. Although I said that, it seems there is also space under the city that the general public doesn't know about. It's unknown how large the scale of it in reality though.....」

「Hou.....」

Carm's eyes were shining mysteriously hearing Hajime's explanation.

Hajime returned a suspicious gaze.

「You, you aren't thinking anything like this might be a good base candidate right?」

「! As expected from boss! What a keen insight!」

「Stop it, seriously stop. Something like Hauria infesting the underground is seriously scary to imagine. It will completely become an urban legend.」

「Is that so? Really unfortunate.」

That was what Carm said, but his eyes were still shining mysteriously. Somehow, even Par and others gave the impression like 「Ora, that sounds really exciting yeah!」. They were sending gaze outside the window with fiery eyes.

Perhaps the day was near that the underground in the city center got occupied by the rabbits.....

While that was happening, the train arrived at the station of Akiba. They got down on the platform and the Haurias were looking with eyes shining with curiosity toward the back of the leaving train.....or rather, to the underground space that was continuing deeper. Hajime and others dragged them away and got out to the surface.

Even though it was a familiar sight for Hajime, for the Haurias there were a lot of things that knocked them with surprise as expected, so they were looking around restlessly at the surrounding just like country bumpkins.

「I thought it would be a quieter place because it's called as a holy land, but, to think that there will be this many pilgrims, it's shocking.」

Hajime's face turned complicated at Carm's statement and he averted his gaze.

They advanced smoothly through the crowd with assassin-like movement and visited the shops that were managed by acquaintances and Hajime often visited. They were people who were friend with his father Shuu, so they were also acquaintance with Hajime since he was a child.

They didn't go to shops that expanded countrywide and visited by a lot of people was of course as countermeasure for Hauria.

As expected, as soon as they entered the shop, the Haurias saw the promotional video for the animes that were running this season, and then they began to copy the speech and posing from the video.

The people inside the shop was shocked, but as soon as they saw that Carm and others were foreigners, their eyes turned warm and ignored them. As expected from the pilgrims of the holy land.

It was a shop where customer could do trial read of a volume for a lot of books, so the Haurias split up and fished for books with a serious expression as though they were going to a final battle.

「If possible, I want to find the bible for us Hauria here.」

「So the culprit is Vanessa huh.」

「Her affinity with my family is extraordinary after all~」

Hajime and Shia instantly guessed. Hauria wanted to come to Akiba seemed to be for searching for bible.

「Boss! Boss! Please look over here!」

「Wha, what does boss think!?」

「Hah? .....」

The voices of Mina and Nea came from deeper inside the shop. Hajime who turned his gaze there witnessed it.

What was there was a figurine display.

And then, there were the two rabbit eared girls who were mimicking the sexy pose of heroines who showed a lot of skin. Yes, they arbitrarily took off their artifact and displayed their rabbit ears!

‘The heroine we are copying has rabbit ears so it’s fine!’ Perhaps that was what they thought. Mina made a pose that was emphasizing her breasts, while Nea was taking a pose on all fours while giving an upward gaze. Their eyes were sparkling with anticipation as though saying 「Praise me, praise me!」 at Hajime.

At that time, several of the customers inside the shop had their gauge of ignoring power decreased until zero instantly and had blood spurted out. Also several people clapped their hands together and prayed. It seemed they were thanking the god and the girls because they were able to look for free at the sexy pose of undisputedly beautiful woman and girl.

Then, regarding Hajime who was asked for comment,

「Sorry. Shia had also done that. And, Shia is better.」

「What are you saying at outsideee!」

Hajime asserted that his wife was better with a serious face. Nea hung her head down in disappointment, while Mina fell on all fours and hit the floor repeatedly while cursing 「Shiiiit, shiiiit-」.

Hajime who mercilessly cut down rabbit-eared beautiful girl and woman. While the customers were sending him a shuddering expression, Hajime immediately put the artifact back on them.

A while after that, it seemed Carm and others had discovered manga that was worthy to be their bible seeing from their pleased face. Hajime and others led them to walk around the city casually.

The Haurias who had obtained the crystallization of mankind’s wisdom and the bible seemed to be very satisfied already. They were in a state of complete obedience. It looked like they were purely enjoying the atmosphere of another world.

「Papa. I’m hungry nano.」

「Yeah, I guess it’s a good time to go there now.」

Myuu’s eyebrows arched into a troubled look. One hand was rubbing her stomach, it looked like she had been enduring for quite long. Today was the day they were giving hospitality to Hauria, so they were prioritizing Carm and

others. However, it seemed even that would reach the limit soon. *Kukyu~*, a cute empty stomach sound was starting to sound.

Hajime confirmed the time and agreed while carrying up Myuu.

So that they wouldn't bother other customers in Sonobe family's western restaurant Wisteria, they planned to go there when it was quite late, but it would soon be a good time.

By the way, the female camp became absorbed with choosing clothes at the department store, and while Par became a noble sacrifice, Hajime made a call to Wisteria. Yuuka who seemed to have become a proper helper there took the call. When she heard that there was a group of Hauria here, it felt like her voice was shaking a bit but.....

Also she was huffy saying 「Say something like that sooner! I cannot give a proper welcome like this!」. But, as expected Wisteria was the oasis of his heart at the point how the possibility of Yuka refusing was zero from the start.

The Haurias were obedient, and soon it would be time to go to a safe area. Hajime's expression also loosened thinking that. Yes, it loosened up. His vigilance to not let any danger approach was slightly loosening!

「What the! There is a fellow family here in another world!?!」

When Hajime went 'Eh?' and his gaze chased the figure of the Haurias, there was a rabbit-eared maid there calling at customer with energetic voice. She was a resident of this holy land.

「No, chief! Please look closely! That girl.....she is a fake!」

Par-kun pointed out with a pointing finger like a detective saying 「You are the culprit!」.

Io's expression looked uncomprehending.

「Although it's a fake, why is she wearing animal ears by her own initiative.....」

「Iorni——cough-. Io, I've heard about this. In this world here, it seems “animal ears are status”. They are raising their status by compensating what they don't have with that kind of fake.」

「The discrimination toward beastman has lowered considerably even at Tortus but.....to think that there are humans who are seeking to put on animal ears by their own, it make me feel strange.」

Mina and Nea stared hard at the rabbit-eared maid with great interest.

「You guys, I think you understand already but——」

Animal-eared people didn't exist in earth. And then, a part of Japanese people greatly loved animal ear. That's why, absolutely don't take off your artifact.....

Hajime was about to explain the situation once more like that, but before he could, the rabbit-eared maid who noticed the passionate gaze on her approached them by her own.

「Oo! What a good looking group of people pyon! Do you understand Japanese language? If you please, won't you come to our shop pyon♪」

「Boss, she put an unfamiliar strange word at the end of her sentence. It seems that the translation artifact you lend me is broken.」

「That's not it you know, she is just acting that kind of character you know.....」

Hajime explained to them about the adding of 'pyon' at the end of sentence. A crack appeared on the smile of the rabbit-eared maid who got hit with the calm tsukkomi, but it seemed she was a rabbit-eared maid who was a hard worker and had guts. She desperately smoothed over her smile!

Hajime was explaining, however, Io and Par were tilting their head.

「Character acting, is it..... However, boss, why is it 'pyon'?」

「Yes, I also cannot understand that point. Rabbit and 'pyon', just what is the relation between those two?」

「H, hmm. Err see, you know, rabbit give the impression of pyon pyon with their hopping right?」

「Certainly that's true but, in the end that is the sound that express the time when rabbit is hopping correct? Then why is it used like it's a rabbit's voice? At the very least we have never seen any clan who add 'pyon' at the end of their sentence.」



「Even sir Inaba too, he would cry ‘kyu!’, but he never said any ‘pyon’。」

「.....」

Hajime was at a loss. ‘These guys, why are they serious at only this kind of thing dammit’, he thought with twitching cheeks. His gaze naturally moved to the rabbit-eared maid in a search for resolution but.....

The rabbit-eared maid, she jerked with the smile still fixed on her face. Par launched pursuing attack.

「Onee-san. Please teach us. Why did you use ‘pyon’? Just what kind of obsession you have with the word ‘pyon’?」

In respond to the serious and earnest question from the handsome boy, the rabbit-eared maid.....

「.....That, I’m sorry for saying ‘pyon’. I won’t say it anymore, so please don’t bully me.」

A smiling face. The smiling face didn’t crumble at all. However, tears were gathering at the corner of her eyes while she was smiling!

The rabbit-eared maid heroically dealt with the troublesome foreigners so that the evaluation of her shop wouldn’t drop. Surely, her rabbit-eared maid café was an amazing café without a doubt. After all it had this kind of rabbit-eared maid as a mirror to reflect it.

「Oi, you guys cut it out already. It’s fine that there are various rabbit ears out there. It’s fine to say ‘pyon’, no problem at all! That is also the rabbit ears of Japan!」

A mediation from Hajime-san. The people at the surrounding who were watching raised admiring voices 「Oo」 for some reason. Shia already took away Myuu from Hajime and pretended to be stranger.

‘Ah, Myuu-chan, you want to eat candy? I’ll eaaat~♪’

The rabbit-eared maid looked at Hajime as though he was a messiah, however, the Haurias were merciless! Because, they were deeply interested with the rabbit-eared person of another world who was mimicking them! They attacked further purely, without any malice, simply because of their pride!

Mia's face frowned at the rabbit-eared maid's rabbit ears while opening her mouth.

「Understood. Then, it's fine already in regard to the 'pyon'. But, I want to ask you. Is it fine that you are wearing such rabbit ears?」

「I, it's fine. I think there is no problem.」

As expected from the rabbit-eared maid. Against Mina's question, she was doing a skillful thing of despairing with a smile because the torture was still continuing while replying with a template answer. As expected, the girl was a capable maid.

「There is no way it's not a problem!」

「Hii!？」

The one who raised an angry voice was Nea who was raising her eyebrow. The oppressive aura that was too heavy to be coming for a girl in her early teen caused the rabbit-eared maid to jump *pyon*. She didn't express it with words, but it seemed she embodied it with her act.

Nea was quietly approaching the rabbit-eared maid who was trembling fiercely like a rabbit.

「You, are you looking down on rabbit ears? Or perhaps, are you actually an idiot?」

「Tha, tha-tha, that's not my intention.....」

「I see. In other words, you simply don't know what is a real rabbit ears, is that it?」

Nea-chan sighed 'fuh' and smiled. Beside her, Mina and Par sighed 'fuh' similarly. Carm and Io also stood in sideways posture and sighed 'fuh'.

「Hajime-san! I'm getting an acutely bad premonition desuu!」

「I know! Oi, you guys! Don't——」

'Take off the artifact', there was no doubt Hajime wanted to say that.

Before he could, Carm took a small pipe from his pocket and threw it on the ground, causing a thick smokescreen to rise. Because of that, screams came

from the surrounding and Hajime's words didn't reach.

「Observe carefully! O comrade of heart who loves rabbit ears even without rabbit ears of your own! This is the real rabbit ears!」

The smokescreen was blown away. Inside, there were five rabbit eared people who were posing like five men rangers.

*Twitch twitch twitch. Flap flap. Myo~n, myon♪*

The rabbit ears that were moving as though to reflect their emotion.

The rabbit-eared maid swept away her mental state that almost fell into panic due to the smoke screen and spoke with a trembling voice.

「I, it's like the real thing pyon.....」

It was the real thing. Also, the 'pyon' was returning.

「It's fine to touch it you know?」

Nea walked forward. It seemed she was specially allowed to touch the ears because she was a comrade of heart in another world.

The rabbit ears were adorably waving up and down as though to say 'Come come♪', The rabbit-eared maid approached Nea with an unsteady footstep as though she was sleepwalking, and then her hand reached nervously toward the rabbit ears.

「Flu, fluffyyy. Sooof~. Ya~ahn, it's waaarm~」

The rabbit-eared maid instantly lost her backbone. Both her hands moved around to enjoy the fluffiness, and at the end she rubbed her cheeks on the ear and her expression became a look of ecstasy that was a bit dangerous to be exposed in public.

Perhaps it was a bit ticklish getting the ears rubbed like that because Nea twisted her body while letting out 「Nh」. The eyes of the surrounding were starting to emit suspicious light seeing her figure. Furthermore, 'what what, it's rabbit eared beautiful girl! Ah, there is also middle-aged man!?' Like that people were gathering one after another.

「Aa~, Hajime-san, what should we do?」

「Those guys.....」

Hajime looked like he got a headache.

There was no way anyone would believe that there could be a genuine animal-eared girl, so naturally they would think that it was a very well made imitation. And so, there was really no need to worry about the concealment.

‘Anyway, let’s punch their stomach and drag them away.....’, Hajime decided. It was at that timing,

「Excuse me! Please let me take picture!」

「Please look over here!」

「Can you make a pose!?!」

The people who were readying their camera pleaded Nea and others to be allowed to take picture. These were trained people who couldn’t be found on other city looking at how they wouldn’t suddenly take picture without permission.

And then, the trained rabbits couldn’t reject them normally.

Mina brushed up her rabbit ears coolly while saying.

「Fuh. It’s not like I don’t understand the feeling of wanting to leave behind memorial for the rabbit ears of this me, but please refrain from that. Even if it’s just a picture, boss is the only one allowed to put me at his side!」

Mina-san made a wink with all her might that she sent toward her boss. Everyone’s gaze moved toward the Japanese youth who seemed to be the person in the heart of this foreign rabbit-eared beauty. Cloudy gazes that looked like they were filled with mud stabbed Hajime simultaneously.

「E, err, then. Won’t you come home together with me pyon?」

It seemed the rabbit-eared maid had completely became Nea’s prisoner. She was still rubbing and enjoying the fluffiness in a posture that was almost completely hugging.

「Fuh. Although you are a comrade, nh, that cannot be allowed. Be thankful, uh, for being able to touch my rabbit ears already, au, wait a second you are

touching too much! Let go already!」

「Just a bit more! Only a little bit more!」

「This is enough! After all my body and my heart, all of them are only for boss!」

The surrounding's gaze became severe. A girl whose age was in her early teen no matter how they looked said that she was devoting her body and her heart to a Japanese youth while sending said youth a mushy gaze.

Among them there were also people who were sending Hajime a gaze with eyes that were cloudy with jealousy like a black hole. Also, there were also people talking to their smartphone. One could see it from their expression. It was written on their face that they were making report.

「Fuh. That's how it is. My everything belong to boss.」

「We cannot allow this body to become spectacle without boss's permission.」

「Because boss is the only one who can do as he please to us.」

Par, Io, and Carm prattled in order with a pleased look.

The surrounding people were making shuddering expression. The beautiful woman was understandable. The beautiful little girl, it was out but still understandable. However, to even lay his hand on a handsome boy, handsome man, and also a dandy gentleman.....

「Tha, that man, just how high level is he-」

「That ain't at the level of having wide strike zone anymore! Monster!」

Certainly, he was the monster of abyss.

That monster of abyss-sama was expressionless.

It was to the degree that everyone there reflexively jerked and stiffened.

Hajime suddenly stroked his face with one hand.

What appeared was a smile as though the expressionless look just now was a lie.

Everyone jerked.

「It's fine.」

The Haurias replied 「Eh?」 at Hajime's words. Hajime continued still with a smile.

「It's fine to take pictures. Take them without any reservation.」

「E, err, boss?」

Carm was trickling cold sweat while asking back, but Hajime kept smiling widely.

「Rabbit-eared maid-san.」

「Hy, hyes!」

「I give you permission.」

「Pe, permission?」

「You want to bring that girl back home, I give you permission.」

「Bo, boss!?!」

The rabbit ears of Nea who was sold away stood straight and shivers ran through it, but Hajime looked around him and declared smilingly.

「Everyone, these people love cosplay and Japan's subculture. Even now they are completely submerging themselves into the character that they remembered from somewhere. In reality they wanted their photo to be taken by everyone so much they can't help it. Especially, the woman over there seem to want a boyfriend. As for the males, they are willing to do one night stand you know? Please, do with them as you like without holding back.」

「「「「BOSSS!?!」」」」

The boss's conclusion toward the Haurias who violated the boss's command and displayed their rabbit ears, and also dealt serious damage to the boss's social status.

The boss left all them in the hand of the holy land's warriors.

The people themselves said that it would be okay if there was the boss's permission. Now that boss had given permission. There was nothing in the way anymore!

War cry resounded through the holy land.

People who stretched their hand toward the rabbit ears, people who pushed their camera button like mad, the rabbit-eared maid who was trying to bring Nea home.....

「Nuoh, wait-, don't push! My rabbit ears are boss's——Ah!?!」

「Sto, stoop! Don't get neaaaar!」

「Bo, boss! Somehow these guys seem dangerous! Heeelp!」

Carm, Io, and Par were buried under people, especially by women.

Nea and Mina were also losing strength in their waist from the rough breathing and bloodshot eyes of the warriors.

「Now then, Myuu, Shia. You two must be hungry. Let's go eat delicious meal in Wisteria.」

「Pa, papa.....is it okay nano? Ah, Nea-chan is carried away by the rabbit-eared maid-san nano!」

「That, Hajime-san. Par-kun is in chariso guard pose against the Onee-sans dangerous look though.....he is looking like Emily-chan like that though.」

「No problem.」

Hajime was walking toward the station with a calm expression like a Buddha. Shia and Myuu were looking at each other seeing their family and friends in a pinch but.....

‘Well, the world's toughest rabbit clan is going to be fine I guess’, they rethought back and followed Hajime.

「Kuh, what pressure-. In addition their physical ability is also awfully high! You guys! Disperse! Secure your safety using pattern β!」

「「「「YES SIR!」」」」

Such order and angry yell resounded from behind. In addition there was also the command of the warriors 「The targets are running away! Go around and cut their path!」. Amidst the yells, Hajime and the others departed to the safe area——Wisteria and continued on their way without looking back at all.

—  
—  
—  
—  
—

Like that, they safely escaped from the holy land and when Wisteria came into view.

「Oh maan, as expected from the holy land. It's filled to the brim with nothing but people that cannot be underestimated.」

「That rabbit-eared maid, her run was absurdly fast. Even though she was carrying me, no one could catch up with her. She made a sharp turn at the corner without any loss in speed, and she showed super reflex while shouting something like 'god speed imolse!'. The rabbit of another world is also amazing.」 (TN: Reference from eyeshield 21)

Carm and others were unharmed, on top of that they were speaking while looking strangely delighted. The chase that occurred in holy land didn't become punishment, far from that, it seemed that it ended in a result that satisfied them instead.

「Is that so.」

「Hajime-san.....that's, I'm sorry about my family.」

「Papa.....are you okay? Want to eat candy?」

「Even though the sky is this blue.....', Hajime looked up to the sky with a faraway look that seemed to want to say that. Shia and Myuu turned a considerate expression at him.

Hajime replied 「It's fine. I'm used with Tio already at this feeling of the opponent getting satisfied no matter what happen like this」 with a strangely enlightened expression while his hand reached at the doorknob of Wisteria.

No matter what happened, his willpower would surely recover after fortifying himself with a meal. He opened the door while thinking so.



*Clang clang*, a pleasant sound was tinkling into the ear while Hajime entered inside the restaurant. What he found was,

「Ah」

「Nn」

「Ahaha.....」

They looked at each other's face.

Kousuke & Emily group, Yue & Tio group, and then Kaori & Shizuku group.

It seemed that everyone had the same thinking.

Sonobe family's western restaurant was everyone's oasis of heart.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I was unable to finish writing, so I split the chapter.

I'm sorry but, please accompany the Hauria chapters for one more week.

Regarding the joke material.

- The black dragon sweater and heart mark sweater are reimported from the aforementioned "Nichijou" (Chapter 10) lol

I burst out laughing at the seriously indescribable expression of Tio and Yue there lol

- God speed imolse

It's from American Football manga that has a main character with number 21 on his back and wearing a certain eyeshield. Amazing reflexes. By the way, the rabbit-eared maid is also able to use Devil ot Ghost.

- This one is advertisement.

At July, Arifureta spin-off——Zero volume 2 and comic volume 1 will be published.



The cover illustration of Zero volume 2 is that person from the undersea ruin. Yes, the person who carelessly throw out Hajime and co into the sea.

The root of the undersea ruin and the newly appearing liberator, what kind of person she is.....

Please get the book no matter what and check it yourself. Other than that, I also scattered various things that will connect to the present time, so I will be happy if you readers can enjoy that part too.

The right image is the cover of comic volume 1. In Gardo comic the last scene

of little Miledy that is also included in this volume is being published for free, so please take a look if you are interested.

Like usual, there will also be special side story. I will report it as soon as the details are finalized.

Best regards!

# Arifureta Chapter 323

## Arifureta After III The Hauria Came! Third

—

Hajime smiled wryly while entering inside the restaurant with Myuu in his arms. Behind him, Shia also followed inside with the same expression.

「Oo! You guys! So all of you also came here!」

Carm who entered after them opened his eyes wide in surprise seeing his whole family gathered there and his face broke into smile.

In respond to that, one of the Haurias who was assigned to Kousuke & Emily team, “Creeping Decapitation” Jorgandr.....——perhaps his name right now should have become something with even more gorgeous feel, so for the time being he was Jor——rushed toward Carm smilingly.

And then, without stopping,

「Die, chief!」

A sharp slash from creeping posture was unleashed! It seemed he was hiding a kodachi on his back.

「Naïve!」

Carm splendidly blocked it using the short sword stored in the holster on his waist.

*Kin-* High-pitched sound from the clash of metal resounded.

Furthermore,

「Go to hell-, Baltfeldt!」

「Hah! Is that all? Anikiii!」

A teenage Hauria around fifteen years old threw knives. The four knives cut through the air. Par intercepted them with quick draw of sling shot. He splendidly shot down all four knives with four simultaneous shots. It was truly a superhuman feat.

Right after that, Nea and Mina, and then Io too had fierce attacks from their comrades rushing at them. The three of them snorted while handling the attacks.

「WAAAAITTTTT! Just what are you all doing in someone's restaurant!」

In the place of Hajime and others who were dumbfounded with opened mouth, the one who raised an angry yell was this western restaurant Wisteria's poster girl——Sonobe Yuuka.

She came out from deeper inside the restaurant wearing crimson apron, scarf, and limp hat. She stood with her hands on her waist and her eyebrows bristling on end. She looked pretty angry.

Jor who fired the first shot answered while locking sword with Carm.

「Chief who is in a good mood after being shown around by boss directly is irritating!」

「Are you a kid!」

Yuuka's sharp tsukkomi. In respond to that the other Haurias who were launching surprise attack argued vehemently.

「However, Yuuka-dono! Did you see Baltfeld's face!? That self-satisfied face! I cannot hold back!」

「That's right! Besides, please look! That bag Neastadtrm is holding so carefully! Neastadtrm won't make that kind of face if htat is something she bought by herself!」

「Minasteria too! In other words, those are undoubtedly a present from boss!」

Correct.

「So what!?!」

Yuuka who witnessed bloodshed suddenly occurred inside her restaurant raised her voice with extreme anger.

The criminals, no, all the Haurias inside the restaurant who were brimming with battle spirit declared「There is only one answer!」 in one voice.

「「「「We will take it away even if we have to kill them!」」」」

「DO IT OUTSIDEEEEEEE!」

Vegetable sticks materialized from both of Yuuka's hands. The celery and radish and cucumber and carrot that were held between her fingers flew in the air with impossible trajectories like jet coaster.

The vegetable sticks that were thrown using throwing technique that could be called as godlike feat without any exaggeration flew into the mouths of Jor and others who were getting highly spirited and Carm and co who were preparing to meet the attack with a battle cry. It was direct hits to the throats.

‘Hogeeh!?’ Carm and others raised a strange scream and fell on their knees. Yuuka sent them a brief glance before taking out playing cards from her pocket and spread them out in fan shape like a magician.

Like that, she swung them in a horizontal sweep. All the Haurias who were about to advance in order to steal the “presents from boss” from Carm and co got the tip of their rabbit ears *slice*- cut off.

「「「「「.....」」」」」

Rabbit furs fluttered midair inside the restaurant.

All the Haurias stiffened with a snap as though they had been frozen. Next *gigigi*- they moved their head toward Yuuka with a stiff movement.....

Yuuka-san beautifully caught the playing cards that were making U-turn and returned to her. She then spoke with a grin.

「Quarreling is not allowed inside our restaurant. Will you all act as docile customers, or will you get thrown out with lopped off rabbit ears.....choose which one that you like.」

The Haurias folded their rabbit ears flat on their head with a plop and slowly returned to their seats. They then sat down on their chair with straight posture like a new graduate coming for a job interview and silently stared at the cup before them.

Yuuka-san nodded in satisfaction. And then, her face turned toward Hajime in a snap. Hajime quickly averted his gaze.

Carm and others who somehow finished eating the vegetable sticks even while choking opened their eyes wide. They seemed to want to say「Boss averted his gaze!?!」.

「Nagumo. How long you are going to stand at the door. How about coming in right away?」

「Yes ma'am. Excuse me.」

「「「「「!!!!?」」」」」

Even more shock ran through the Haurias.

Respectful gazes were sent to Yuuka who was narrowing her eyes suspiciously at Hajime's behavior. But, before Yuuka could notice it,

「Yuuka~? The cooking is done so please bring it out.」

「Rogee~r!」

From inside, Yuuka's mother——Yuuri's voice resounded. Yuuka turned around to respond to that.

Hajime ran his gazes at Carm and others.

「You guys, sit wherever you like. Do that while offering your gratitude to Sonobe Yuuka who someday will become the owner of this Wisteria, the “holy land of us returnees”.」

「!? A, as boss command! You lot! I want to exchange information! Hauria clan is to gather over here! Don't you dare do anything coarse to Yuuka-sama for the second time!」

「「「「YES SIR!」」」」

Hajime glanced at Carm and others who quietly gathered at the seats deeper

inside before sitting beside Yue. Yue looked at Hajime as though she was looking at a slightly difficult person.

「.....Yuuka-“sama”?」

「She settled down things right away from the start after all. I’m thinking to leave the disciplining——cough-, looking after the Haurias to her at least in lunch time.」

「Hajime-kun.....don’t play stupid. You are planning to push everything to Yuuka-chan right?」

「Kaori, this too is within the category of serving customers. In other words, it’s Sonobe’s job.」

「Goshujin-sama. Do thy know that it looks like Yuuka were working hard to contact the regular customers because we suddenly made the reservation?」

‘That’s why, be kind to her’, Tio implicitly said. Shizuku, Kousuke, and even Shia nodded in agreement.

By the way Emily-chan, right after Yuuka shut up the Haurias, she sent a gaze that was filled with respect somewhere inside toward the kitchen while saying「Yuuka, onesama.....」.

Hajime nodded deeply at such gazes from Tio and others.

「It’s fine, there is no problem. In the end, that girl is a magical girl filled with love and dream and hope——」

「Just who are you calling magical girl」

*Gon-*, a large plate of potato salad was placed on Hajime’s head.

When Hajime looked across his shoulder while skillfully keeping the potato salad staying on his head, Yuuka-sama was there giving him a super reproachful look at him. She had three plates placed on one arm, while her other hand was placed on her waist.

Hajime brought down the potato salad while spreading open the menu. And then without any delay, he pointed at the picture of fluffy and melty egg decorated with this restaurant’s original ketchup and spoke his order with an extremely serious face.



「Give me a special omelet rice.」

「I'll bring you food scraps if you don't fix that screwing around attitude.」

「How can a restaurant employee say something like that.」

Yuuka let out a deep sigh「Haa」at Hajime's playful attitude while placing the plates safely. And then, her displeased expression toward Hajime changed completely into a soft smile and she asked「Have you decided what to order?」at Shia and Myuu.

「Please give Myuu the special omelet rice! Nano!」

「Ah, I'll also have the special omelet rice!」

After Myuu and Shia ordered energetically, even Carm and others all ordered the omelet rice perhaps because it was what Hajime ordered.

「Ahaha, today the omelet rice is greatly popular huh.」

Yuuka wrote the order on the sales slip while orally telling the head chef who was her father——Hiroshi the order.

Hajime's attitude returned back and he smiled while speaking to such Yuuka.

「My bad, making reservation so suddenly like this. I didn't think that everyone will come here.」

「Exactly right. Next time I have to give some kind of service to the regulars here in exchange.」

There were a lot of neighbors who became regulars here since a long time ago, so Yuuka knew their phone number. The number of customers who came late after two o'clock in the afternoon was limited, but even so it was painful to contact and told them that the restaurant would be used by a group that was quite large in number.

For the regulars who Yuuka didn't know how to contact, she prepared a bit of her handmade sweets for them, even so as expected it was painful to make them go back after especially coming here.

Of course, a group suddenly visiting a restaurant which caused the regulars to be unable to come was something that happened to restaurant everywhere.

Customer who would complaint about that was just a selfish claimer.

In fact, at this time it seemed there wasn't a single regular who was feeling dissatisfaction. Rather, their heart was feeling warm that Yuuka had expressly contacted them to let them knew or prepared sweets for them.

This consideration that normally wouldn't be done was surely the reason why Wisteria was loved.

「But, you really saved us. After all I cannot think of any other place except yours where it's possible to eat delicious food without feeling any mental fatigue.」

「.....E, even if you praise me Nagumo, I'm not going to give you any service.」

Yuuka said coldly, but her fingers were playing with her scarf. Although she was averting her gaze, her lips kept twitching as though they would break into a grin.

The Haurias were staring with deep interest!

「No, I didn't say that looking for anything. Rather, I need to pay you back somehow in return for the bother.」

「.....It's not like I'm thinking that it's a bother or anything. I'm happy that you come to our place.....ah, just now I don't mean that I'm happy Nagumo is coming! Don't misunderstand it!」

「No, I'm not but..... Well, anyway, I owe you one. Tell me if there is something that you want. If you like, I'll even work part-time here for free when it's busy y'know?」

「Eh? Nagumo working part-time here? Nagumo.....working part-time..... here.....」

In other words, Hajime was saying that he would wear Wisteria's uniform and worked together with her? If that happened, the two of them would be in charge of serving the customers. The two of them would team up to take order, set the table, sometimes they would almost crash on each other and smiled in embarrassment to each other because of that, they would converse with only their gaze about who would be in charge of the cash register.....

And then, finally when they closed, inside the quiet restaurant the two of them would sit side-by-side and sighed in relieve. No words would be said with only the sound of the clock's hand resounding clearly.

Yuuka would brew coffee while feeling strangely embarrassed. Hajime would took the cup and took a sip, then he would only say a word「Delicious」and thanked her with a smile.

They would spend a quite time once more then.

That time felt unbelievably happy.....

「.....Perhaps, this is the picture of the future of the two of them, Yuuka thought, the end.」

Storyteller Yue concluded with a triumphant look. It really looked like she wanted to say「How's that? Right in the mark right?」.

Everyone's gazes that were directed to Yue who suddenly started talking moved toward Yuuka.

That Yuuka was,

「I, I-I, I'm not thinking thaaat!」

It seemed she wasn't thinking it.

Though her face was bright red and she was taking a step back while trembling all over. She looked absurdly shaken, but! If she said she wasn't thinking it then she wasn't thinking it!

A hand clapped Yuuka's shoulder. She went *Twiiitch!* while hesitantly looking back. There, that person was standing.

「Yuuka-chan. How about we “talk” for a bit?」

It was Kaori-san who wasn't smiling even though she was smiling. There was something that was faintly visible behind her.

「No no no, I'm really not thinking of anything! It's just Yue-san saying whatever she like!」

「Yuuka-chan! Why is it only the two of you!? If it's a talk of the future, I think it's fine even if it's all of us working in Wisteria!」

「You aren't listening to me!? Or rather, really please stop that talk of everyone working here! It will be chaos!」

「By that you mean, you want to monopolize Hajime-kun for yourself isn't it! You want to manage this restaurant with just the two of you forever isn't it!」

「Words play catch! It's important!」

Kaori-san shook Yuuka back and forth. Shizuku went 'good grief' while moving to tear off Kaori from Yuuka. Shia and Tio sent a glance to that and,

「Come to think of it, when everyone evacuated to our house before this too, Yuuka-san, she was really absentminded like 'pohe~' when Yue-san gave her a tour of Hajime-san's room.」

「Right, after that her face suddenly became red and she slapped her own face. She didst that while making tsukkomi alone 『Are you idiot me!』.」

「How cute desuuu」

「That art truly cute~」

They sneakily talked about such thing.

There, Emily who was the most uninformed about the relationship between Hajime and co asked a question reservedly.

「Say~. Yuuka-oneesama, she isn't demon king-sama's wife?」

「I, I'm not. Or rather, what's with that "oneesama"? Something like that is Shizuku right?」

Yuuka who somehow escaped from Kaori's demonic clutch was breathing hard 'zee zee' while saying that. Emily fidgeted looking a bit embarrassed.

「That, Oneesama's figure when shutting up everyone of Hauria just now, I thought, you look really cool.....is it, no good?」

The ongoing battle that Emily threw herself into——the war front of chuunibyou treatment versus Hauria.

At present she was unable to even make them shut up, far from that she only got toyed around as though they doting on her like one would treat a cat. It seemed that from the view point of such Emily, it was no one but Yuuka who

was “Onesama”.

Emily spoke her wish with an upward gaze, however, Yuuka was,

「No good.」

She completely and thoroughly rejected her. The reason was, if she was treated like a big sister by Emily who would become a member of Hauria, it felt like even her would also get considered as a member of Hauria. It would be unbearable if a subspecies of soul sister got created with Emily as the impetus. That was her reason.

「It’s fine if you just normally call me while adding ‘-san’ or ‘senpai’. Or rather, Emily has also skipped grades right? Then I’ll be happy if we become equal friend without taking our age into consideration.」

「Friend.....」

There Emily suddenly noticed.

‘Come to think of it, is there anyone around me who I can call “friend”?’, she thought. Naturally she had none in the university. She skipped grades so she also had no acquaintance in the same age with her. She was close with the people of Britain national security bureau, but they were a bit different from friend. Kousuke and the Hauria too were of course different.

AGENT

Vanessa was.....that thing was just a SOUSAKAN. She was in the Hauria category. She often wore rabbit ears hair band anyway.

After that, she had substitute big sisters and big brothers.....

‘Eh? I, have too few friend? No, it’s pretention saying that. I, don’t have friend.....

「Yep-, friend is fine! Yuuka-san-, nope, Yuuka! Be my friend!」

「Yo, you are really enthusiastic. Of course, it’s fine though.....」

Emily-chan’s eyes brightened. She rushed toward Yuuka and tightly grasped both of Yuuka’s hands with her hands and did a little dance while singing 「Friend♪ Friend♪」. Kousuke cried seeing that.

There, a certain rabbit-eared lady who was actually watching the exchange

between Yuuka and Hajime with fixed stare of hollow eyes since some time ago slowly approached Yuuka.

「Please become my friend too.」

The person strongly grasped Yuuka's shoulder and requested with a strongly spirited voice. The sudden appearance of the rabbit-eared lady clad in dreadful aura——Mina caused Yuuka to say 「Ye, yes?」 while tilting her head with twitching expression.

「I, I don't mind but.....why, so suddenly?」

Shia who seemed to have guessed the answer of that question held her head looking like she was at her wits' end while Rana was covering her eyes with one hand.

Mina answered Yuuka's question with eyes that were starting to get slightly bloodshot.

「Because I caught the smell of a first class mistress from you! If I'm together with you, perhaps I will be able to casually position myself as boss's mistress!」

「I take my words back! No way I will be your friend!」

「Please! Let's become mistress friend!」

「What is mistress friend!? I don't understand! Or rather your face is close! And scary!」

「I get it! Then let me call you master! One day you will be a great mistress! My sharp instinct is telling me so! Let me study under you from now on!」

「Stoop! I'm not a mistress! I won't become one! Let go of my haaand! Also your face is too close!」

「Master! I won't let go!」

「Don't call me master!」

‘Heelp!’, when Yuuka who became teary eyed from Mina's bloodcurling state asked for help, right after that Shia's fist impacted Mina's head. Rana caught Mina whose eyes rolled back until the white of her eyes showed. She then bound her and laid her down on the sofa.

Even the Haurias were giving off conflicted atmosphere at the amazingly desperate state of Mina. Inside the silent restaurant, the voice of Yuuka 「It was scaryyy」 who was half crying and the voice of Shia and Emily who were consoling her were echoing overly clearly.

It was at that timing a bright voice resounded to change the atmosphere.

「Thank you for waiting~. It's the special omelet rice.」

「Hahaha-, it's always lively around you guys.」

Yuuri brought the omelet rices while smiling wryly at the atmosphere inside the restaurant. After that, Hiroshi who was similarly carrying several plates on his arms also arrived.

Carm had been quiet until now, but as expected he had kept his rabbit ears opened wide all this time even then. He appeared suddenly in front of the parents of Yuuka. Hajime and others directed a gaze to him that seemed to say 'So it's you next huh.....'.

「Forgive me for the late greeting. This is the first time we met. I am “Omi——”」

Boss's killing intent!

「I'm Carm. Carm Hauria. I am Shia's father and boss——Nagumo Hajime-dono's loyal servant.」

「How polite. I'm Yuuka's father, the owner of this restaurant, Sonobe Hiroshi. Thank you for taking care of our daughter.」

「I am the mother Yuuri. I'm happy to meet you.」

Hiroshi and Yuuri returned the greeting smilingly. While Hajime and others were looking at Carm who was suddenly giving a polite greeting with suspicious gaze, Carm received the plates from Hiroshi and Yuuri and instructed Io and others to distribute them.

「Oh, thank you. But, you don't need to be that considerate.....」

The Haurias were starting to proactively carry the other dishes that hadn't been taken out too. Hiroshi was feeling obliged seeing that.

The Haurias even started to voluntarily clean the rabbit furs that were sliced off by Yuuka just before. Yuuri hurriedly said 「We will do it」, but the Haurias refused respectfully.

Hiroshi and Yuuri were a bit troubled at their awfully polite attitude.

Carm said to the two of them.

「What are you saying? Aren't you two the family of someone who will become the wife of the person who we respected and even offered our faith to? That is enough reason for us to offer our life.」

「Life!? No, that's too exaggerated.」

「No no, Otousan! Your tsukkomi shouldn't be about that! The wife part! It should be the wife part!」

Hiroshia and Yuuri were flustered at the reverent attitude of the Haurias. Yuuka sent them a fierce tsukkomi.

「Yuuka! I'll teach you! This flow is one that cannot be changed no matter how hard you tsukkomi-ed them! After this kind of atmosphere, usually I will get toyed around by the Haurias!」

「Thank you for the information Emily! But, even if you said that with a face that seem to say 『I wonder if I'm useful as friend?』, the content just make me want to cry!」

Yuuka sent her gaze to Hajime. Although her face was bright red, her gaze pleaded to him 「Deny it!」.

Hajime nodded as though to say leave it to me.

「Oi, Carm. I don't know what misunderstanding you have, but Sonobe is just my classmate. Our relationship isn't like that, and it's not gonna become like that even at the future.」

Hearing that, Yuuka was strangely feeling depressed even though it was something that she demanded herself.....was how it looked like.

And then, Emily strongly insisted 「Demon king-sama! How can you say such terrible thing about my friend! Please retract it!」, and for some reason the wive~s starting with Kaori who was pressuring Yuuka just before this for some



reason were also sending him gaze that seemed to say 「That's saying a bit too much.....」.

「.....Why are you all looking at me like that?」

「Fuh, boss. No one knows what will happen in the future. In that case, we will just move by hypothesizing all of boss's future.」

「I want to punch your self-satisfied face that is spitting out words filled with implication like that.」

Carm immediately returned to his seat in respond to the reproachful look from Hajime. Like that when then they began their lunch, the Haurias were giving praise one after another.

It seemed the western food of Wisteria had firmly grasped the stomach of the rabbits from other world. The special omelet rice was especially popular, to the degree that Par and Nea returned to their “former rabbit-eared handsome boy and beautiful girl” once more.

It went without saying that Emily's respect level and friendship level toward Yuuka were deepening.

After a while, around the time they had eaten about half of their food, their hunger was finally quietening and calmed down a bit, Hajime addressed Yue and others.

「So, how did it go with all of you? You also brought them around to place like department store or downtown right?」

In order to obtain as many information as possible regarding the marketplace and townscape so they could share to each other later, it was decided that every group would basically look around similar places.

Yue put the mixed sandwich she ordered into her mouth and chewed while making a distant look. Tio answered in her place while smiling bitterly.

「We hath also gone to department store, but it seemed they felt let-down because there were only clothes there, so we immediately went to another place.」

「Aa~, there is only one female Hauria in your group so they didn't get excited

huh. So, where did you go?」

「Right. We departed to home center Goshujin-sama.」

But of course. As expected it seemed that place was great for the Haurias. Hajime and Shia could only smile wryly.

「It was terrible..... They said that the hardware store art a mountain of treasure. Everyone was overly enthusiastic. They almost started a gunfight using nail gun, they also bought up the crowbar and chainsaw when I noticed, they asked the store employee which one art the ingredients for explosive and got reported.....」

「O, oo.....they did everything I feared.....」

「Yue-san! Please get a hold of yourself! It's fine already!」

The Haurias tried to fearlessly oppose the police that came after receiving the report head-on, so the commotion was rapidly growing big.

Yue used gravity magic to forcefully made the Haurias kowtowed and shut them up, but from the outside it looked like a peerlessly beautiful girl who was being obeyed by a dangerous group was trying to buy up dangerous objects. The police officers completely suspected the group as a suspicious and dangerous group (in the end around 20 officers gathered and asked the group to accompany them to the police station) and they received police questioning.

The other side was only trying to fulfill their professional duty, so the bad one was completely their side.....because of that, for the first time in her life Yue experienced bowing her head repeatedly while apologizing with her all just like a fresh recruit office worker.

Even with Shia hugging her and patting her head, the eyes of Yue whose pride was greatly injured from kowtowing to the polices were staying somewhat unfocused.

Hajime left Yue to Shia's care and cleared his throat once. He then directed the talk to Kaori and Shizuku to also change the topic.

However, before he could,

「I'm sorry.....Hajime-kun. I was, powerless.....」

「Please harden your resolve, Hajime. I think that the Haurias will appear in the evening news.」

「Just what in the world happened!?!」

Kaori-san and Shizuku-san had distant look as expected. Perhaps an unpleasant memory was resurrected in the middle of her eating because a piece of spaghetti slid out from Kaori's half-opened mouth. It was a serious illness.....

Shizuku returned the spaghetti back into Kaori's mouth while answering. According to her, the incident seemed to happen at the sky tower.

「After giving them a tour of a shopping mall, we went to the sky tower. They saw the tower at far away from the shopping mall and said that they really want to go take a look from nearby. It was also a disaster with them in the mall, so we thought that it was convenient. I proposed that we go up with everyone until the viewing platform.」

By the way, in the shopping mall, one of the female Hauria saw the animals in a pet shop and got a flashback of rabbit demi-humans who were captured as slave in the past. She rampaged to free them, and in the end she hugged an infant rabbit in her chest saying 「Please! Please at least overlook only this child!」while crouching down and wouldn't move at all.....

It was like a mother whose child was going to be taken away from her so she was pleading while crying to be let go. Or rather, she was also wailing loudly in reality which caused uproar inside the mall.

In the end, they bought the young rabbit, and right now the female Hauria in question was at the corner of the restaurant feeding the little rabbit with the carrot stick that Yuuka threw before this. Her face looked like a mother.

「And then, we relaxed our attention a bit. Because, you can only look at the sight on the viewing platform. It's different from the shopping mall that is a minefield.」

「It's also amazing to hear you call shopping mall as a minefield though.」

Ignoring Hajime's tsukkomi, Shizuku continued while hugging Kaori who got dead-looking eyes with her spaghetti sliding out from the corner of her mouth

once again.

「When we noticed, they, had climbed. The sky tower.」

「Hm? What is strange about tha——」

「They climbed, the outer wall.」

‘Uwaa.....’, a put off atmosphere was hanging in the air.

「Kaori immediately chased after them and dragged them down but.....looking objectively, it became a scene of a high school student rushing up the outer wall without even using hands and then going down while carrying five adult in her arms. Coincidentally at that time there were also TV crews taking picture with the sky tower in the background.....」

With that, the surrounding was showering Kaori with tremendous attention as superhuman high school student.

Fortunately, when Kaori was in the middle of rushing up the tower to bring back the Haurias, Shizuku at least stopped the recording by launching a slash from using her hand as sword to cut little part inside the camera like the circuit or something, so it seemed that most of the scene wasn’t recorded but.....

With the location as it was, surely there were a lot of people taking picture with their smartphone.

At the very least, after that they received strict lecture from patrolling police officers. There was no doubt that their kowtowing figure while apologizing was perfectly recorded.

Also, a person who introduced themselves as the producer of the TV crews invited them to appear in TV as superhuman high school student with extremely passionate speech. During the process the Haurias also gathered attention and it went without saying that their usual behavior exploded into action.

「.....Well, that’s. I’ll do something about the TV so, don’t worry okay?」

「Yes.....thank you, Hajime.」

「Hajime-kun, thank you.」

「Ou. More importantly Kaori, the spaghetti is coming out you know?」

Kaori who seemed to slightly recover put back the spaghetti into her mouth while Shizuku was sighing in relieve.

After that Hajime who heard the name of the TV station left his seat and opened the restaurant's door. And then, he made arachnes——Etemp-san and Netemp-san to appear on his hand,

「The place is around here. Link your vision with me when you arrive nearby, I'll guide you then.」

Hajime showed the two a map in his smartphone. Etemp-san and Netemp-san saluted 'Roger!' with their front leg and deployed their new function of flying wings. Even though they were spider, they were flying in the sky.

Surely they would descend on the TV station from the sky and infiltrated inside like in spy movie.

「So, how about you two? You two are more used to the Hauria compared to Kaori and other right?」

Hajime who returned to his seat directed the talk to Kousuke and Emily.

For some reason, Emily quickly averted her gaze. Kousuke made a transparent smile like someone who had sensed his death and answered.

「It was carnage.」

「.....I see. It must be terrible.」

Hajime returned a kind smile. It seemed he had guessed various things. Kousuke unconsciously stabbed the fried minced meat before him with his fork repeatedly while opening his mouth.

「We went to the city hall. Rana and also the others said that they want to go looking the workplace of Tou-san and Kaa-san.」

「Aa, if I remember right, your parents, both of them are working in the city hall huh.」

「Yeah. Tou-san is at the citizenry department, while Kaa-san is at the department of municipal tax. So, first we went to meet Tou-san but.....」

「He, hey, Kousuke. Can you stop telling that story? Tonight I will properly  
father-in-law mother-in-law  
apologize to Otou-sama and Okaa-sama so——」

For some reason Emily tried to interrupt Kousuke, but Rana who seemed to be opening her rabbit ears in attention smoothly approached.

「Boss! Please look! I received this marriage registration directly from  
father-in-law  
Otou-sama!」

Mina who was restrained and laid down reacted. She moved her body into a posture like a shrimp. Everyone pretended to not see.

「Marriage registration huh..... Speaking about that, Rana, if you are going to tie marriage bond legally in this side, I've got to prepare a family register for you too huh.」

「I beg you to please do so, boss. But, I don't mind if you do it all at once later.」

「Hm? All at once?」

Those words that gave him a feeling of discomfort was exactly the cause of the commotion.

「Yes! Putting aside Emily, Vanessa, and also Claudia, there might be those who don't have family register like me among the people who will be Kou-kun's wife in the future! Here, please look! I have properly asked for seven marriage registrations!」

Emily covered her face and looked down. Kousuke raised a dry laugh while focusing his gaze at a single spot on the ceiling.

Hajime imagined that Rana surely asked Kousuke's father——Eiji for seven marriage registration forms with a bright smile.

Naturally, the city hall staffs should be curious because a son of their coworker was asking for marriage registration form. There, a foreign beauty was demanding for seven of the form.....

Surely Emily tried to stop her. And then, there was no doubt that she did something like insisting that if there was only one form then it would be hers.

The place then inevitably descended into carnage.

In the end how would the virtuous citizens and the earnest staffs who were in the city hall thought about such scene.....

And then, what would happen to the future of Eiji-otousan there!?

「Sonobe! One drink to heal Endo-kun here!」

「What do you mean by healing drink huh.....well, I'll prepare it though.」

Yuuka who was diligently working behind the counter inside was making a complicated expression.

Hajime turned toward Kousuke with an extremely kind expression.

「Thanks for the consideration, Nagumo. But, your face is irritating for some reason so stop it.」

Kousuke looked like he had shaken himself free from something and put the fried minced meat heartily into his mouth.

It was at that timing, Myuu who was subduing her kid's lunch quietly (or rather she was really absorbed into it) since some time ago let out a sigh 'fuii~' of satisfaction after finishing her meal. And then she asked something that everyone was doing their hardest to not think while escaping from reality.

「Papa~, what are we going to do after the meal nano?」

「Hardening our resolve.」

‘That’s not what I’m asking’, Myuu thought with a troubled look, but everyone starting from Yue nodded seriously.

The latter half of the battle that would test their resolve.

For the time being, let’s just say that later on everyone would have to bow their head and kowtow at least three times to the police officer.

—  
—  
—

From the next day Hajime and others would set out into a trip to visit several

sightseeing spots as well as inspecting the base location candidates.

At the end, the Haurias seemed to prefer the area of ancient ruin and the witch forest in Britain that Hajime and Shia discovered.

But.....

Actually, in the middle, some people——Shizuku's papa and grandpa came and said that they really wanted the Haurias to come looking at their secret training place. The two led the Haurias to a mountain that seemed to be owned by Yaegashi family.

There, the Haurias who participated in Yaegashi-style training seemed to receive deep impression. They ended up sharing the secret place as a joint training area with Yaegashi family and that place also became one of Hauria base.

They also taught their technique to each other and the disciples of Yeagashi-style were increasingly becoming superhuman. It went without saying that Shizuku's eyes were turning dead.

Also, while staying in Nagumo family house, it seemed that a part of the Haurias were passionately investigating about the subway and underground facility but.....

Before returning to Tortus, Carm handed a document to Hajime with a bright smile. No matter how he looked, it was a comprehensive report regarding underground facilities that must be government secret.

He wondered when did they infiltrate the government. Or rather, how did they usurp the facilities.....

The day that Japan's underground, no, the world's underground got infested by head-reaping rabbit might be near as expected.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.



## ※ Sky Tower

The fictive tower of this world. Let's not climb the outer wall of the real tower and tree.

## ※ Gardo update

"Nichijou" chapter 21 has been updated.

I burst out laughing at the cross-counter of Yue and Kaori lol

Also, Lili-san is giving a hint of the future lol

Right now it can be read for free in the homepage of Overlap-sama, so please go take a look.

## ※ Regarding the timeline

I put it up at the activity report.

# Arifureta Chapter 324

## Arifureta After III Tortus Travel Journal ④

—

AN: The Tortus Travel Journal at the last episode

- Hellina looked like she was going to become the demon king's possession
- Randell was sunk down in a flash by Shirasaki mother and daughter, but he showed his guts.
- Liliana was a black-hearted superior. The knight commander too looked like she would become the demon king's possession.
- Hellina came to inform that Queen Luluaria's preparation was finished <- We are here right now

---

The place Hellina led Hajime and others at was a small garden in the palace.

There was no various flowers blooming profusely or trees that were artistically pruned like the previous garden. It also had no size that was ideal for small children to play hide-and-seek.

However, it was a garden that was vaguely giving a gentle atmosphere that blew refreshing cool breeze that calmed down the heart that was continuously blazing with zeal for the country's restoration.

Hajime and others sat surrounding pure white long table that was placed in the middle of such garden. A bright voice that invited jovialness was resounding with tea and sweets in front of them.

「My, Sumire-sama. If you speak more than that, Hajime-done won't be able

to recover anymore.」

The one who was elegantly speaking with a pleasant, high-pitched sound while placing her hand in front of her mouth was Liliana in ten more years.....it was a beautiful woman who could be mistaken like that.

Luluaria S B Heiligh——she was Liliana's mother and the current queen dowager of this Heiligh Kingdom.

This year she would become 34 years old, but her figure sitting side by side with Liliana at the head of the long table looked like they were sisters. She was clad in gentle and kind atmosphere that was similar with Liliana.

Although, unlike Liliana, perhaps because she was a queen she was overflowing with grace and dignity that ought to be expressed as the lady among lady.

With the death of the king of the kingdom, her husband Eliheid, the destruction of the capital, and then the matters related to the reconstruction, her heart and body were exhausted from all the hectic situations. She looked thinner compared to before, that was why she was really looking forward to the future of her daughter Liliana.

「What are you saying Luluaria-sama. My son will be your son-in-law, so there are a lot more things that I want you to know about——」

「Kaa-san, just be silent already.」

Hajime's entreating voice interrupted the words of Sumire who was going to continue talking gleefully.

Sumire sent him a dissatisfied looking gaze that said 「Even though it will be the good place from now」. Ahead of her gaze there was the figure of Hajime lying face down on the table with an atmosphere like he was wounded all over for some reason.

「Even if there are things that her majesty the queen should know about, it's not my black history by all means.」

Yes, after they finished with self-introduction and idle talk, Luluaria asked about how Hajime was at his home. Since then until now Sumire kept talking

about Hajime's black history—how he tried to fire Kameomeha at the garden while yelling in high spirit when he was a child, how he was feeling that he was being targeted by a mysterious organization when he was in elementary school, how he wouldn't stop playing game until he collapsed forward while sitting down when he was in middle and high school.

In the middle Hajime tried to intercept, but Shuu intercepted the intercept. Furthermore the wife's who were eager to know about Hajime in the past no matter what it was about blocked Hajime using all the skill that they had, so in the end Sumire kept talking until Hajime's soul was slipping out from his mouth.

Like that, seeing the maids who were desperately holding back their laughter and Hajime who looked like his soul was going to leave his body because of the demon king's unexpectedly, cute (she wouldn't say it was painful no matter what) past that they heard from his mother, Luluaria finally extended a helping hand for Hajime.

Luluaria nonchalantly changed the topic even while smiling joyfully. The demon king-sama sent her a grateful gaze as though he was looking at messiah!

「Nevertheless, it's a relief to know that Sumire-sama and Shuu-sama are kind people. Everyone else are also good people that surpassed my imagination. Now I don't have any doubt about the happiness of my daughter's future.」

「Oh no, that's really exaggerating.....not!」

「Ha-ha-ha-, I'll warmly welcome a good child like Lily-chan!」

Sumire-mama and Shuu-papa weren't timid at all even when it was a queen they were talking to.

Even though Tomoichi and the others shrunk back timidly from the overflowing grace and dignity of the queen when she introduced herself, these two were the only one whose eyes brightened right from the start.

An encounter! With the seriously real queen of another world! Thank you lord, thank you!

That was how they were acting. It went without saying that the expression of Luluaria was slightly convulsing seeing that.

Tomoichi opened his mouth a bit reservedly.

「About that.....your majesty, you don't feel any dissatisfaction or anything that your daughter's partner has relationship with other women?」

「Wait, dear」

Kaoruko elbowed her husband chidingly. Kaori was looking at her father with her eye pupils contracting into a dot. Tomoichi-san was trickling out sweats like waterfall.

Luluaria perceived the feeling of a father from such Tomoichi and she answered while making a small smile.

「From the beginning, people with high social status are often surrounded with mistress or lover, and when it come to royalty and nobility, it's something natural to accept mistress. My husband——Eliheid didn't have a concubine was a rare case.」

「Ugh.....I see, certainly there is an image that royalty and nobility are like that.」

Tomoichi nodded with a bitter expression. It was hard for him to accept. Even though he was thinking that perhaps he could increase his ally with Luluaria, something like 'How can my daughter not be the first wife when she is a princess!'..... It was completely obvious that he was thinking such thing.

Hannya-san stand b~y. A strange aura was rising from Kaori who was staring with her pupils contracting into dot.

The smile of Luluaria who was sensing the habitual quarrel of father and daughter was deepening further, and then she gently caressed the head of Liliana who was sitting beside her.

「Originally, this child has no freedom to marry based on love. A marriage that isn't useful to the country's interest is against the duty as royalty. Such thing cannot be recognized no matter what.」

It was a sense of value that wouldn't be found in the modern age Japan. Tomichi and others unconsciously held their breath hearing Luluaria who was sternly asserting that without dressing it up.

「But, fortunately my daughter fall in love with “the godslaying demon king”, and that feeling is accepted. The love and country interest coexist in this case, and not just that it’s a peerlessly good opportunity that cannot be matched by any other. Even if she doesn’t become the first wife, there is no reason to object at all. That is just how great an existence Hajime-dono is for this world.」

Hajime who was the godslaying demon king and the savior of the world in the common recognition of Tortus’s people had the standing that was above the royalty of any country. Therefore, even if a princess only became his concubine or even just a mistress, that would be an unequalled honor and fortune.....that was the thinking of the people in this world.

Putting aside Tomoichi who was making a difficult expression, Luluaria continued 「Besides.....」.

「This child went through a lot of hardships because of my worthlessness. As a mother, I want her to go to the side of a gentleman that she love without being concerned of something like the country’s interest.」

「O, Okaa-sama isn’t worthless. I have never thought that I went through hardships!」

Luluaria looked apologetic from the bottom of her heart. Liliana gripped her hand tightly while responding with words of denial.

Certainly, it was Liliana who was publicly grasping the popularity and the heart of the people. It was also Liliana who was managing the diplomacy with the empire.

However, it was Luluaria who brought together the nobles after the king and top authorities died and the kingdom fell into chaos. She was also shouldering the majority of the burden regarding government affairs. Although Liliana acted as the substitute of the king, but until now it was Luluaria who was playing the role of the unsung hero.

Luluaria directed a loving expression toward her daughter who was vehemently arguing against her while asserting that because of such reason she had no complaint even if Liliana wouldn’t become Hajime’s first wife.

「Besides, this child is saying things like this but, it’s a fact that she is burdened

with many things. Perhaps because of her strict upbringing, she become someone who completely prioritized duty above all things.....even if she actually entered a political marriage, I'm worried that if it's this child she will keep work and work and won't be able to build a good marriage life.」

Liliana looked at Luluaria with a shocked gaze.

At the same time, the figure of the knight commander who they met just now crossed the mind of Hajime and others. The knight commander Kuzeri who was like a pitiful office lady who was cornered both in body and mind by a black company.

Hajime nodded while speaking.

「I see. Certainly if it's Lily, I feel like her first sentence when waking up her husband in the morning will be 『Now, it's time to work!』.」

「.....Nn. Even in the middle of work I think she will say 『Eh? Rest? Didn't you just have it for five seconds just now?』.」

「That's possible. Lily seems like someone who will say something like 『Holiday? I'm sorry for my ignorance. I'll look up the word in a dictionary in a bit』 when getting asked about a holiday.」

「Rather, even if her husband invite her to a date in holiday, I think she will say something like 『Because it's a holiday shouldn't we do a fun work instead?』 with a serious face desuu.」

「Lily.....a work date is, as expected that will be too pitiful for the husband.....」

「Liliana-san. Perhaps it's strange to hear this from a teacher like me but, I think it's better to introduce labor standards act in this country.」

「Everyone, is that how all of you are thinking about mee-!?!」

As expected Liliana howled in surprise from getting treated as a regrettable wife from the mouths of Hajime and co. She slapped the table repeatedly and fiercely protested that she was a healthy maiden and an exceedingly proper princess.

However, in reality she prioritized her duty as princess and chose to not come with Hajime to earth. Her action thoroughly took away the persuasiveness from

her protest.

「Uu, Okaa-sama! Okaa-sama too please tell them the truth!」

「Let's see. Indeed I think that right now she has become far more girly than before. Fufufu, that day, when you came back from the empire and kept talking endlessly about Hajime-dono in the meeting, I got thinking 'My my, so the day that even this child know love finally came!' and got into high spirits that was unbecoming for me.」

Liliana remembered the embarrassing past and she went 「Uh」 in a loss of words. Yue immediately urged Luluaria 「More detail of that story please」 to continue to talk.

According to Luluaria, after the "Revolt of Hauria" at the empire was over and the business at Fea Belgen was finished, Liliana who returned to the kingdom attended the meeting to give report and consolidated their plan going forward, where she complained about Hajime endlessly.

But, that too was going on only at the beginning and her complain was gradually changing into a talk that sounded like a maiden in love.

「If I remember correctly, you said that he helped you gallantly when you were in danger right? And then, I think you said in the party after that you pushed away the imperial prince who was your fiancée and asked him for a dance? And you also said that even with the prince glaring, he took your hand while looking really troubled correct?」

The gazes of Hajime and others snapped at Liliana. Liliana averted her gaze quickly.

It was a fact that Hajime took Liliana's hand. It was also a fact that he danced with her while ignoring Prince Bias. However, the fact was subtly shifty. It could be interpreted like Hajime was trying to take away Liliana from the imperial prince.

「I remember she was also talking happily how Hajime-dono praised that she looks good in her dress.」

「Sa, say, Okaa-sama? Let's stop with——」



Liliana pulled at Luluaria's sleeve while sweating from the gaze of Yue and others, but Luluaria continued further with a delighted look.

「Besides, when Lily talked how Hajime-dono said something like he would protect her no matter what happened, geez, she was really-, her face was adorably bright red. I never saw her like that before.....that was truly the face of a maiden in love. Even though she is my daughter it made my heart beating fast.」

「Stop it alreadyyy-」

Luluaria blushed remembering what happened at that time. Liliana's cheeks was blushing even redder than her while begging for her to stop.

Certainly, it was also a fact that Hajime said "something like" he would protect her.

However,

「Oi, Lily. If I remember right, at that time——」

「That's right-, I exaggerated it a bit! Do you have any problem! I'm sorry!」

The princess snapped and then confessed. Her maidenly heart wanted to make her experience to sound a bit more like a moving tale no matter what. It was what people called as a sudden impulse.

Kaori was looking at Liliana with a difficult expression.

「How should I say it, it's that isn't it? She isn't saying any lie but, how she is talking in a way to create misunderstanding is completely similar with Hajime-kun when inciting the people.」

「.....Nn. After all they were the draft writer and also the editor of the truth (lol) of the church and god.」

「In a sense, these two are the strongest provocateur couple isn't it.」

「We, well, any maiden would exaggerate about their love episode.」

The whispering talk of Kaori, Yue, and Shia that wasn't hidden at all made Liliana to fall prostrate on the table.

It was only Shia who at least sent her a consoling word but.....most likely that

came from her feeling of fellowship with Liliana. Shia too often went into a rant about her start of romance without being aware of it.

——‘How did it feel when I first encountered Hajime-san? I felt an impact that shook my brain and a tingling that made my whole body stiffened! I also felt like I was flying in the sky! It was truly a destined meeting!’

Something like that.

Luluaria was looking at Liliana who was writhing in shame looking somewhat amused. It seemed she was making fun of her daughter with full awareness of what actually happened.

「By the way, is it alright if I ask everyone what is your plan from here on? If possible I wish to hold a welcoming parade, and the a party.....」

Sumire and others opened their eyes wide hearing things like welcoming parade or party. In their imagination it was something like a parade in Disneyland. Their self advancing through the street while waving their hand to the many citizens surrounding them.

Kaoruko whose expression was twitching the very first exchanged glance with Tomoichi beside her while speaking their reservation.

「Tha, that is a bit.....yo, you know right, dear.」

「Ye, yeah. Doing something too grandiose is also a bit.....too much see.」

It seemed their commoner sensitivity wanted to be spared from being the leading role of such parade. Akiko also nodded up and down in high speed in agreement with the Shirasaki couple.

「That’s right. I’m not good at being standing out.」

「Yaegashi live in the shadows——cough-. We are just commoners after all.」

「It will be troubling to have our face getting known by so many people.」

Shuuzou, Koichi, and Kirino were also looking unwilling because of their commoner sensitivity.....or something that seemed to be a bit different from that.

Shizuku stared fixedly at her family. It was a gaze that felt like saying ‘Right

now, you almost blurt out thing like “We are a family that live in shadows after all” aren’t you!?’.

「Everyone, it seems that you all don’t really like appearing before the public!? I believe that it will be a great encouragement for the people of this country to catch a glance of everyone here but.....」

「H~m, it sounds fun, I’m completely okay with that. Right, dear?」

「Oo. I want to experience that at least once in my life! Something like showing up with impact you know.」

The Nagumo couple was in high spirits. Tomoichi was looking at Shuu with eyes that seemed to say 「This guy, unbelievable!」.

「Now look here, Nagumo Shuu. I’ve been thinking to say this since some time ago but, an adult at your age sticking your neck at anything just because of curiosity is just not right in my opinion.」

「Tomoichi-kun. You are a man with no guts aren’t you? It’s because you are like that Kaori-chan is closer to me——」

「Don’t say thaaat! Let’s take it outside-, this bastard!」

Kaoruku admonished Shuu and Tomoichi who looked like they were going to start quarreling and grappling with each other like usual while she was doing her best to express their intent to refuse with inoffensive words.

「Your majesty. Thank you for your kind words but, about us becoming an encouragement to the people just from seeing us.....it will be a different matter if it’s my daughter and Hajime-kun and the others, but we are just their family, we really are just commoners in reality.」

「.....I see. It looks like there is a bit of difference in our perception here.」

「Difference, is it?」

「Yes, I should have made clear our position respective to each other from the very beginning. It was something that is the norm for us that it became a lapse in my memory.」

Luluaria lightly apologized before she explained to Kaoruko and others who were tilting their head.

「In the first place, if we are speaking about status, then everyone here is above me you know?」

「Eh? You aren't referring to Hajime-kun and my daughter Kaori, aren't you?」

Luluaria nodded silently. Kaoruko and others looked like they didn't really get it.

「Naturally. Sumire-sama, Shuu-sama, Tomoichi-sama, Kaoruko-sama, Shuuzou-sama, Koichi-sama, Kirino-sama, Akiko-sama—everyone, you are the family of the apostles of god you know? From the viewpoint of the people of this world, you all are equal to the residents of heaven.」

「Tha, that's exaggerating.....」

「No, I'm saying the truth. Sumire-sama and Shuu-sama who are the parents of the demon king goes without saying but.....it's especially even truer for Akiko-sama.」

「Eh? Me?」

Akiko whose name was suddenly mentioned looked at Luluaria with a shocked face.

「Yes. Akiko-sama is the mother of Aiko-sama who is the “goddess of good harvest” as well as the “goddess of victory” after all. To be the parent who gave birth to a living god.....from the viewpoint of the people of the church, you are worthy to even become an object of worship.」

「I'm just a housewife of a farmer though!?!」

A housewife in countryside. But in another world she became an existence that was like holy mother Mary.

The holy mother whose specialty was rolled omelette and chopped burdock root. The tough holy mother who rampaged on a granny bike for a round trip of 14 kilometer for the sake special sale, four times a week.

Akiko looked at Aiko looking like she wanted to say 「There is some kind of mistake right?」. Aiko averted her gaze quickly. Akiko feebly staggered. She leaked out a strange voice 「Uboo」 while her eyes rolled until the white of her eyes was showing. 「Okaa-saaaaaan!?!」 Aiko yelled while immediately

supporting her.

Aiko too, perhaps because she knew about the zealousness of the people, especially the people of the church toward her, she was pleading to Hajime 「Please spare us from the parade, really!」 with teary eyes.

Hajime smiled wryly while speaking to Luluaria.

「Your majesty. I'm sorry but please don't hold any parade. In any case, such thing will put a great burden in the time and also manpower spend for it while this country is in the middle of the reconstruction like this, isn't that right?」

Luluaria smiled with a face that looked slightly troubled.

「If Hajime-dono say that, then it cannot be helped. Although in the first place this is a sightseeing tour for your family in the end.」

「Yes. We are coming here by using the consecutive holiday that is going on at our world. We don't have that much time. We are students, and our parents also have work.」

「I understand. But, in the dawn of the reconstruction's completion, please grace the people with your appearance along with your family too. Everyone surely will be happy with that after all.」

「I'll give it a consideration.」

Somehow the welcoming parade was successfully averted. Kaoruko and others sighed in relieve. They sent thankful gaze toward Hajime. But, at the same time they were in admiration that he was able to exchange conversation with the queen properly unlike his parents. They were sending extremely complicated gaze at Shuu and Sumire who were looking really down that they wouldn't get a parade.

They were chatting for a while after that. And then when everyone was starting to think that it might be the time to break up soon, Sumire spoke a single request.

「Luluaria-sama. I have a request though.....」

「My, what could it be? If it's a request from Sumire-sama then I wouldn't say no.」

Luluaria answered with a friendly smile but.....

「If possible, can you allow us to give a prayer in front of the grave?」

「——」

Luluaria spontaneously held her breath in a loss of words. It was unnecessary to ask who Sumire was referring to.

There could only be one person if Sumire was requesting Luluaria herself in this place.

Yes, it was Luluaria's husband, the dead king——Eliheid S B Heiligh.

「I heard from Lily-chan that the graves for those who died are still not build. But, as expected I don't think that even the king won't have a grave with only his name put on the memorial monument.....」

「.....Yes. It's just as you said. It's also related to the country's dignity, so there is a graveyard that is exclusive for royalty within the palace's ground. My husband's grave is also there.....Sumire-sama, I'm greatly obliged by your consideration.」

Luluaria made a faint smile and nodded slightly.

In respond to that Sumire hid her frivolous attitude and gazed straightforwardly at Luluaria.

「I'm not being considerate.」

「Eh?」

「I just want to give a greeting to the person who will become family after this.」

「Family.....」

「Yes. Although he has died, a family is still a family. I was wondering whether it will be a rude thinking toward someone who was a royalty but, it seems there is no need to worry about that.」

「That's.....of course, Sumire-sama has higher status than me after all.」

Luluaria thinned down the queen dignity that she was wearing from the beginning and showed a slightly perplexed look. Sumire shook her head slightly

toward Luluaria's words.

「I heard from Lily-chan that Luluaria-sama was earnestly wishing to meet with us. We are also feeling the same. However, what I want isn't to meet with the queen dowager of this country as the mother of the demon king. I want to come here to meet my new family.」

「Sumire-sama.....」

That was why she was interacting with Luluaria with an attitude that was friendlier compared with other people. She didn't understand about the way Luluaria thought and her sense of value, so she proactively talked to her to probe her and grasped the sense of distance between them.

「From the bottom of my heart I express my condolence, Luluaria-sama.」

「.....Thank you very much, Sumire-sama.」

A gentle wind was blowing. The words of Sumire who wanted to interact with her as family made Luluaria's eyes to moisten slightly. Tears weren't flowing from her eyes because she was a noble who mustn't cry in front of other people, but those eyes expressed her feeling more eloquently than anything.

Liliana grasped Luluaria's hand with a gentle expression. Luluaria also grasped back with her warmed heart in it.

There, judging that the talk had reached a stopping point, Hellina quietly appeared.

「Luluaria-sama. The lunch time is approaching, what should we do?」

「My? It's already that time?」

It seemed they had talked for quite long. It seemed that Luluaria herself was also enjoying the tea party more than a simple reception. In addition, there was also how Sumire was talking too much. Looking at how a third of the whole conversation consisted of Hajime's black history, in a sense it should be said that she was stronger than the demon king in this world.

In the end, this tea party became a luncheon meeting, and after that they had even more lively talk. Basically each parent got heated up in exposing the black history of each of their child, the demon king and also his strongest wife's were

looking uncomfortable, or rather they were looking desperate in enduring their shame. The people of the capital would surely doubt their eyes if they could see this.

Although, in exchange of the sacrifice of the children, Sumire and others seemed to manage to deepen their friendship, especially Sumire and Luluaria entered a relationship where they called each other as “Sumire” and “Lulu”.

Like that, while Hajime, Kaori, Shizuku, Aiko, and Liliana were completely limp due to the mental exhaustion, the whole group went out to take a stroll through the capital.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The chapter this time become a story that only consist of conversation due to my poor health on top of the business that I had to do.

Perhaps I will revise this chapter later.

Everyone too, please be careful of the heat wave!

※ 25 July 『Arifureta Gaiden——Zero volume 2』 as well as 『Zero comic volume 1』 will be sold.





The left image is Zero volume 2. It's a story about the distant past when Melusine's undersea ruin was still on the surface. This time it will be a 3-way struggle between Meil VS Miledy VS Raus (liberator of god mountain)? That kind of fight.....

There are also a lot of points that will connect to the present included in this volume, so please purchase it if you like!

The right image is Zero comic volume 1. Little girl Miledy appears. There is the chance meeting of Miledy and Oscar, and then the past of Miledy is exposed in this volume.

※ Regarding special perk side story

『Coupled』 refer to special perk when purchasing Zero volume 2 and Zero comic volume 1 at the same time.

- Chain store-sama

「Girl power-!!」

The girl power showdown of Miledy VS Meil-oneesan. Or so it seems but, that person's girl power is just like regarding the case of 530,000 power level (TN: It seems this is reference for Dragon Ball)

- All specialist shops 【Animate-sama, Tora no Ana-sama, Melon Books-sama, Gamers-sama】

「Secret and black history and other this and that」

A short time in a hideout of the liberators. Corin and co along with liberator members are talking about the past story of Oscar and Miledy.....the black history of the two are overflowing

- Animate-sama 【coupled】

「Romance will be accompanied with sacrifice」

Oscar produced a great number of romance weapon, but there the mother of success, experiment is necessary so.....

Comrade = test subject, by Oscar

- Tora no Ana-sama 【coupled】

「That guy is there, surpassing the era」

That guy is there. No matter how many months and years passed, no matter what era it is without fail he will be there! Yes, the monster of the clothing shop will!

- Gamers – Shosen

「Through 10,000 km searching for the beloved transmutation master」

That poster girl who love Oscar, this is the story of her travel while making a mess of various things.

=>It's the continuation of the story in the afterword of afterword at Overlap's special site for Zero volume 1.

- Melon Books 【coupled】

「Poster girl killer」

A new nickname for Oscar.....this is why handsome guy is just.....

- CCC (Tsutaya)

「She is siscon in any case」

Meil-oneesan is a “genuine Oneesan” who will love any kind of little sister.

※ The special perk's information is also written at Overlap-sama's homepage.

Please confirm there too if you like.

That's all.

It will make me happy if you readers can use them for accompaniment to kill time in a safe room where the air conditioner is working.

Best regards!

# Arifureta Chapter 325

## Arifureta After III Tortus Travel Journal ⑤

—

After finishing the luncheon meeting with the queen, Hajime's group that was joined by Liliana who was acting as guide set out to the new capital that was in the middle of reconstruction.

The sound of craftsmen exercising their skill was resounding from everywhere. Furthermore magic power lights of various colors were surging from the surrounding.

It seemed the magic used wasn't mainly transmutation magic, but body strengthening magic and wind element magic to assist with material transport were also being used. The fantastical scene that couldn't be found at earth caused the eyes of Sumire and others to shine.

Especially someone like Tomoichi who was a first class architect, as expected the stimulation to him was strong due to the nature of his occupation. When other noticed he was already getting drawn toward the dazzling sight ahead of his gaze with unsteady steps.

His figure was like a lost child wandering around following his curiosity. Kaori smiled wryly while grasping Tomoichi's hand firmly.

「Looks like the recognition obstruction is working properly.....」

「.....Nn. No problem.」

In respond to Hajime's words, Yue coolly pushed up her red framed glasses

while nodding.

If the demon king's group was walking at the capital, obviously the people would instantly mob them. Because of that, right now everyone was wearing Hajime's quality product, the recognition obstruction artifact.

「So, Hajime-san. Where are we going?」

Liliana imitated Yue with coolly pushing her glasses while asking. Perhaps because she was the princess who was making work as her priority, that gesture looked excessively appropriate on her. If she was also wearing earth's ladies suit, it would make her look like a female director that seemed really capable. She would be the director princess.

「We haven't really decided. I was only thinking of getting them experiencing the fantasy world for now..... It also depends on how much the reconstruction has progressed.」

「I guess that's understandable. Everyone, do you have any request——」

「I want to go to the adventurer guild!」

「I want to go to the adventurer guild though!」

The two people who were splendidly raising their hand swiftly in harmony were as expected, the Nagumo couple. They had bright smile on their face.

「Adventurer guild.....if my memory isn't mistaken, it is the organization of people who make fighting in this world as their occupation huh.」

「Hmm, that's certainly interesting.」

「I wish to see what kind of weapons they are using there.」

‘Eh? Suddenly the guild? There are other places we can go sightseeing to you know?’ Liliana almost said that, but before she could, the members of Yaegashi family displayed strong approval. With fierce smile on their face.

「I'm sorry Lily. Can I ask you to take us to the adventurer guild first? If we postpone it, Ojiichan and others might assault that place on their own instead.」

「I agree with Shizuku. It looks like Tou-san and others were talking with each other last night, that it's the custom for earthling that arrive in other world to

go to the adventurer guild first. They might rush there on their own if we ignore them.」

The eyes of Shizuku and Hajime looked distant. They were thoroughly familiar with their parents' behavior..... Their ability to take action sometimes could slip through even the awareness of the demon king and the swordswoman who would sometimes argue in the other world.

「I, I understand. The requests that are coming to the adventurer guild is in rapid increase because of the ongoing reconstruction, so we had prioritized its reorganization. I believe that everyone will be able to see it in a state that is no different from before.」

‘Yahoo!’ The intimate spouses Sumire and Shuu high-fived with each other. And then there was also the intimate (?) spouses of Koichi and Kirino who were making dangerous statements like 「I’m itching to have a go」 「I’ll have them show us the degree of their strength」 for some reason. Their daughter was sending them a fixed gaze hearing that.

And so, Hajime and co went to the adventurer guild that was newly set up slightly to the eastern side from the center of the capital.

Previously the guild’s building made from wood with solemnity that gave the impression of its long history, but the new guild headquarter now was a building with a lot of metals used in its construction, giving it a solemnity in a different sense from before. Perhaps because the building’s solidness had increased, its height had increased by three times, from the previous two floors into six floors right now.

There was a large double-leaf door at the front entrance, but surprisingly there was a very thick iron bars above that door. From its construction, it seemed that it was something like a shutter that could be dropped down or lifted up.

「It has really changed huh.....」

「Yes. It was the idea of the headquarters’ guild master. He said that previously we were overestimating the capital’s great barrier. He intended for the guild to serve the role of a fortress when push comes to shove.」

Hajime and others were listening to that explanation while getting hurried on by Sumire and others who looked like they were going to charge in anytime.

Due to the requests regarding the reconstruction or being the guard of the people who were coming and going because of the progressing cooperation with other countries, it seemed that it was the truth that works were rapidly increasing here. The enlarged request board was fully covered with request forms.

Adventurers with various appearances were tearing off those request forms one after another. The guild staffs were putting up new request forms continuously.

The place was extremely busy.....it was clear that the guild was filled with energy.

Sumire and Shuu cheered 'waaaaaah' and rushed toward the request board. It looked like they were somewhat regressing to become kids after seeing the basic staple of the fantasy in other world that they yearned for. They were completely like kids getting highly spirited in an amusement park.

The two were hopping up and down behind the many tough looking adventurers gathering in front of the board while staring at said board. Tomoichi was getting concerned with the attention from the surrounding while raising his voice toward the two.

「O, oi Nagumo Shuu! You're too high spirited! It's embarrassing so restrain yourself!」

「Tomoichi-kun! There is a request for construction work see! In order to produce a novel architectural style that is worthy for the new capital, they are recruiting people who are knowledgeable about the architectural style of foreign country!」

「Secure that request!」

Tomoichi-san raised a cheer 'waaaaaah' and rushed toward Shuu. Kaori's hand was shaken off and she raised her voice 「Ah!」.

Kaoruko put her hands on her cheeks seeing her husband's childish act and her face blushed.

「Tha, that person, really-. How embarrassi—」

「Kaoruko! There is a request about cooking here! Looks like it's looking for assistant, but it's written that if you want then the shop's original recipe will be added as the reward too!」

「.....」

Kaoruko-san wordlessly moved with soundless footsteps smoothly. The woman who was also a researcher in the level where she could open her own cooking class used Sumire's shoulder as support while hopping up and down to confirm the request.

「E, even Okaasan」

「Kaori. State of emptiness. Empty your heart and then count prime numbers in your head.」

The high spirit of the two groups of spouses that didn't look like adventurer at all no matter how you looked at them bewildered the surrounding adventurers and caused them to look at the spouses with warm gaze. Kaori covered her face with both hands seeing that.

Hajime kindly patted the shoulder of such Kaori. He was showing a clear smile like somehow whose mind had opened to enlightenment.

Shizuku suddenly gasped and looked around. The Nagumo spouses and Shirasaki spouses were like that. There was no way her hopeless family would just stay still!

As she expected.

「Hou. You guys have the atmosphere of really "capable" people.....your weapons are also really something.」

「You yourself have a sword that is quite high quality. If you don't mind can you tell me the workshop where you got that?」

There, Koichi and an unfamiliar adventurer were showing to each other their kunai and long sword,

「You.....you ain't a normal person. It's like your footsteps ain't making sound at all.」



「Fuh. Just as I claimed, I have taken your back. Now teach me about that special short sword.」

And, there was also Shuuzou who was placing his ninja sword on the neck of a coldly sweating adventurer from behind,

「Fufu, this is just a side show, so please calm down, the two of you.」

「I, I get it! I get it already so untie this!」

「It's digging into me! It's digging into me I'm telling youuu!」

And, Kirino were with two adventurers that were tied with superfine string which forced them into the posture seiza.....

‘WAAAAAAH’, Shizuku raised her voice angrily while dashing forward. She dealt a blow to her family that had too much freedom using her black katana (sheathed).

Just where in the world they were hiding weapons like ninja sword or kunai? She should have made them toss away those when departing from home, and yet.....

「Ojiichan, Otou-san, Okaasan. Try jumping for a bit over there. Jump quickly, now! Come on, quick!」

「Oh my, Shizuku. It sounds like extortion you know?」

「Okaasan, shut up!」

‘Come on, just jump already!’ Shizuku pressed with a fixed gaze. Everyone of Yaegashi family shrugged their shoulders and jumped up and down.

Instantly, flashes of slashes ran through the air. Shizuku's exquisite skill that only cut what she wished to cut caressed the body of her grandpa and parents.

Immediately, *drop drop clang* the sound of things dropping——caltrop, throwing star, dozens of type of bundle filled with unknown powder, sickle and chain, blowgun set, retractable claw, camouflaged thin fabric, log——from many kinds of ninja tool.

「Log!? Where did you keep something like log on you!?」

「It's just a bit of storage technique. We were thinking of teaching it to Shizuku

too but, you know, that. You received treasure warehouse from Hajime-kun so we thought you must have no need for it.]

「That's not the problem! Ojiichan you idiot!」

Just where in the world they were storing that many hidden weapons and dangerous looking drugs and even a log inside their clothing that wasn't really that loose?

The surrounding adventurers were taking steps back for about ten steps. 「These guys, they're absolute bad news!」 was written on their face.

In contrast, there was a single man who was getting excited.

「I, is that for substitution technique!? Is that log for that!? Shuuzou-san! Please show me the substitution technique in the flesh at least once!」

「Hajime!?!」

Shizuku was taken aback. Hajime's eyes that seemed to have opened to enlightenment now were sparkling with curiosity and romance. And then, Myuu beside him was also.....

「Myuu too! Myuu also want to see substitution technique nano! Or rather, Myuu want to do it nano! Shuuzou-ojiichan! Please teach it to Myuu too!」

「No way, Myuu-chan!? These similar father daughter!」

Hajime and Myuu were going to rush toward Shuuzou while going 'waaaaaah', but Shizuku put herself on the line to not let them pass. Shuuzou-san, he didn't look that dissatisfied to be asked so by the two.

「These guys, they are already hopeless!」 With expression that seemed like that, Shizuku sent a gaze that was asking for help.

「Right right, Hajime-san. Let's calm down.」

「My my, Myuu. Let's try asking again at night okay?」

Hajime, Shia put him in choke sleeper while dragging him back.

Myuu, she was carried up in Remia mama's arm and got brought back.

Shuuzou-san, he got dejected because he couldn't show his technique to the two while storing away the log.

As expected, it was unclear where and how he stored away the log.

Perhaps because they were making ruckus like that, someone called out to them.

「Oh myy! Isn't this the demon king-sama! Long time no seee. What are you doing at this kind of place?」

「Eh?」

A voice that sounded familiar made Hajime to tap on the arm of Shia that was around his neck and he turned his gaze toward the voice.....

「.....?」

It made him blink.

Ahead of his gaze, there was a beautiful woman of blooming age that he didn't recognize. Although she seemed to be of considerable age, her exceptional figure and her unique atmosphere that was bewitching even while giving the impression of liveliness and coolness made her a woman that was attracting much attention.

She was middle aged woman that looked really young for her age as though through magic. It was clear she was a staff of the guild from the uniform she was wearing.

She should be an acquaintance from how she was saying long time no see, but frankly speaking Hajime had no recollection of her.

「My bad, who are you?」

Hajime who was released from the choke sleeper tilted his head while asking. Just in case he also looked around to Yue and others, but they too were only tilting their head. As expected it seemed they also didn't know this woman.

The bewitching middle-aged guild staff folded her arms and shook her head toward Hajime and co who were like that. The twin hills that rivaled even Tio's got emphasized which spontaneously drawn in the gaze of the adventurers whose attention was caught because of the words "demon king".

「What is this. Could it be you don't remember me? How heartless. Who do you think took care of the adventurer registration of you all?」

「? It was the granny guild staff in Brook city whose appearance show the harshness of time progression though?」

「What, so you actually remember.」

「???」

Hajime was getting increasingly bewildered at the talk that didn't mesh with each other, but Yue and Shia looked like they noticed something. Their eyes opened widely and then they asked with a trembling voice that seemed to say 'that's impossible'.

「.....Co, could it be, you are Catherine?」

「Are you Catherine-san?」

「That's right you know?」

‘What did you saaay——!?’ Hajime’s yell resounded. Sumire and others gathered toward them wondering what was going on.

「Ahahah, you children are talking strangely. Who else can I be other than Catherine.」

「Rather, you look like someone who cannot possibly be Catherine! Is this metamorphosis magic? Are you using metamorphosis magic!? You have completely metamorphed here!」

‘This kind of before-after is impossible!’ Hajime yelled.

「H~m, well, certainly, Brook was tranquil, I was also putting on a bit of weight from the good life there. The busy time in the headquarter here made me lost a lot of weight, so perhaps now I’m giving different impression from before.」

「No no no, this ain’t at the level of different impression. This is in the level of Mooon turning into Shia.」

「Moomio? I don’t know what is that, but you are really exaggerating there.」

The transformation that was like a lovable chubby character turning into a lovable peerless beauty with extraordinary figure gave Hajime a great agitation.

Although, her current figure was understandable if he recalled the talk of the branch guild leader of neutral commercial city Fhuren, Iruwa Chang——that

Catherine was an existence that was like the Madonna of the guild staffs, who were idolized and called as “teacher” due to her position as the guild master’s private secretary and also her guidance to the staffs.

「Wait Hajime, don’t just stand there alone making funny faces, introduce her to us. She is your acquaintance right?」

Sumire sharply slapped the back of her son who was in the middle of confusion and said that. In respond Hajime introduced Catherine half in a daze.

In the city that they first visited after getting out of the abyss, this woman was the person who took care of his adventurer registration. He explained that after that, she also wrote introduction letter for their convenience in other guild branches and gave them a lot of help.

Sumire nodded in understanding and then quickly bowed her head to Catherine who could even make RIZAO seriously went white in the face from her dramatic before-after. (TN: RIZAP, it seems to be a famous private gym in Japan)

「My son is really indebted to you. Catherine-san, please let me express my gratitude for that to you as his mother.」

「Don’t mention it. It is my side instead that received the favor of having the world got saved. Rather it’s us who have to say thanks. If I was able to become of help to your son, then there is no greater honor than that.」

Catherine made a charming smile and grasped Sumire’s hand.

Hajime thought. This was a scam. Catherine’s outer face was made from scam, he thought.

Incidentally, he also wondered that perhaps Brook city was really a den of devils just as he expected.

After that, Catherine also exchanged brief greeting with Shuu and others. Sumire and others were completely pleased with the lively woman who was completely open without hiding anything and they hit it off.

But, it would also be troubling if they hit it off too much with each other.....

「That’s right. That demon king-sama, even while he was being served by two

beautiful girls like Yue-chan and Shia-chan, he was really disappointed seeing it was me who acted as the receptionist.」

「Wai-, that's misunderstand——」

「Aa~, that sounds likely. That son of mine, he is a child who love the templates of another world, so there is no doubt that he would want to hear the guild's receptionist saying things like 『Amazing-, you aren't an ordinary person!』 when seeing his ability or the material that he sold.」

「Kaa-san!? I didn't think anything like——」

「It will be troubling if you are underestimating woman's instinct. Yue-chan also noticed at that time, after all she was tightly grasping demon king-sama's hand to the limit at that time.」

「Stoop! That's a groundless——」

「.....Nn. Hajime, he was also holding expectation for the receptionist girl in the capital's guild.」

「Yue!?!」

With what Catherine, his mother, and his first wife pointed out, Hajime ended up in a state where his soul was going to escape from his mouth.

Shuu gave a thumb up saying 「That's how a boy is!」 with an understanding gaze. Tomoichi's murderous gaze was stabbing into Hajime, while the surrounding adventurers——especially the men were making highly sympathetic gaze that seemed to say 「I understand that」 toward the demon king's unexpected side.

But, at that timing, a voice called out to Catherine. For Hajime who wished to divert away this topic, it was truly a salvation.

He sent a grateful gaze that said 'Who is the one that is my savior!?',

「Myyy? Temporary manager Catherine-samaa! What are you doing in that kind of place I wonderr? The work is piling up you knoow?」

「God dammit! There is no salvation!」

Hajime despaired seeing the arriving savior.

The one who appeared from the guild's stair was a mass of muscle that was nearly two meter high. It was a pseudo human with grim face, short mustache, braided hair, wearing guild staff uniform's mini skirt version.

「Oh, Alabell, sorry about that. I'll return right away.」

「Please do soo. ....Oh? Ohohh? Could it be, the person over there is Yue-oneesama!？」

「.....Nn?」

The girl (?)——Alabell's movement was showing excessive wiggling and swaying. She was undoubtedly one of the group that was being mass produced by a certain monster of clothing shop.

One of that mass produced manly women was calling Yue as “oneesama”. That mean she was without a doubt one of the person who received Yue's smash.

「.....Who?」

「It's understandable for Oneesama to not remember. I was the stupid youngster who tried to make a pass at Yue-oneesama and Shizuku-oneesama in the past.」

‘I really don't want to remember it, the mistake I committed due to my youth.....’ the manly man became melancholic. It didn't matter but, she/he was standing still on the stair, so it felt like the inside of the extremely short skirt could be seen.

The area between the extremely muscular thighs was almost visible!

Several people among the adventurers were already collapsing with pitiful expression as though they had seen something that mustn't be seen. They were like the people who got done in by a certain cursed video.

As a matter of fact, it was truly a brutal brief glimpse.

「Ah, could it be, you are the adventurer of that time? Er~r, if I'm not wrong, you said your name at that time was Abel the “Flash Blade” or something?」

「Myy! Shizuku-oneesama! You remember!」

*Gou* There was the sound of wind roaring. When they noticed, the gigantic face that seemed only possible because of the use of metamorphosis magic was already in front of Shizuku's eyes. Shizuku-san spontaneously screamed 「Hiih」 and backed away.

The fake gold ranked adventurer that picked a quarrel with them in the capital's guild at the past. He was a handsome man with pompous attitude. Even such person now had evolved into a splendid abnormal creature. It was unclear why he changed job to become a guild staff, but based on his strength there was no doubt that he was gold ranked for real this time.

Yue hit her palm *pon-* and opened her mouth.

「.....Aa, the person that time. I remember. Is Mariabel healthy? Has he opened a shop in the capital?」

「I'm happy! You remembered! Yes, yees, Mariabel-neesama is also healthy! She made a lot of lovely clothes! Please be kind and visit her shop no matter what!」

「.....I see, that's good. It was worth it for me to smash him.」

Yue nodded while using barrier to block the gigantic grim face that was quickly approaching.

At the same time, the inside of the adventurer guild became noisy. The presence of the demon king's group here was gathering people and attention, but Yue's remark caused the male adventurers to push and shove at each other to back away.

「Do, don't tell me.....don't tell me she is the legendary!?!」

「Smasher.....she is the legendary Smasher! The founder of the path of smash that wouldn't let go of the prey it aimed!」

「!?!」

A mark of “!?” appeared above Yue's head. When she restlessly looked around her, she saw the male adventurers looking at her with frightened gaze.

She was feared even more than the demon king, limited to the male!



Or rather, what in the world the path of smash was.....

The treatment that was treating her like she was some kind of legendary gunman was also extremely curious.

Yue was a bit shaken up while trying to know more about that but.....

「Tha, that person is Smash Master Yue.....the grandmaster of the path of smash.....」

「That's right-, she is the one and only peerless Smasher who made numerous  
Goddess of Manly Women  
men to reincarnate! The Smash Goddess who can't help but going smash if she meet a crotch!」

「!!?」

Even more terrible title showed up. It seemed the first wife of the demon king had become a goddess without noticing it. The goddess of crotch crusher that is.

「Yue-chan.....」

「O, Okaa-sama, this isn't what you think. There is a bit of misunderstanding.....」

Starting from Sumire, the parents' gazes were getting really doubtful. 'It will be a disaster if they think I'm a wife who love to crush crotch!', Yue-san was shaken up like that while attempting to dispel the misunderstanding.

Shuu was listening to that while speaking to Hajime with a slightly twitching expression.

「Ha, Hajime. You, what in the world you made Yue-chan did.....」

「No, I'm telling you that's not it, Tou-san. I also have smashed numerous crotches to this day. Me and Yue combined were even called as "Smash Lovers", shortened into "Sma-Love".」

「Oi, Hajime-kun. That won't serve as excuse at all.」

Tomoichi started to take distance from him with a creeped out expression.

To speak further, Yue was the only one whose title became expanded was because midway Hajime refrained from doing smash due to his sense of

impending crisis from the mass production of the manly women.

Even after the legendary decisive battle, the whole world banding together in solidarity without any exception was obviously impossible. Among the people naturally there were those who were thinking of bad things.

Especially the fools who were trying to target the female of the beastman who tried to go out from the sea of trees.

The one who flattened their crotch flat was none other than Yue. From that, she was given the title as the grandmaster of the crotch smash, the smash goddess of the manly women.

As expected, it was a nickname that was embarrassing to be known by her relatives. Yue was unusually red faced and shaken up. However, the fact was the fact so she was at a loss for words and sought for help from Hajime with teary eyes.

「.....Ha, Hajime. Hajime too say somethi——」

「Yue.....I, told you before to refrain from doing smash in order to avoid their propagation too. But, you said you cannot forgive woman's enemy and didn't stop. That will of steel in smashing crotch.....it's worthy to be called as grandmaster!」

「! ?」

Seeing the refreshing smile and thumb up of Hajime who was always supporting her in any kind of time, Yue showed a really shocked face that made it felt like the sound effect of *GAAAAN* could be heard. And then, 「.....Uu, Hajime! Idiot!」 she expressed her dissatisfaction with sulking light punches on him.

Seeing such Yue, there was one girl who approached with a refreshing smile at this perfect timing.

「Hey hey, Yue♪ Right now, how are you feeling? Grandmaster-san, how are you feeling? Vampire princess-san who is showing an abnormal obsession to man's important part, how are you——」

「.....Drop dead, Kaori!」

Yue-sama transformed her light punches into a serious punch with flowing smoothness. A golden right straight gouged into Kaori's cheek! But, she must have anticipated it. Naïve! Kaori's fist that was unleashed at the same time became a cross-counter and drilled Yue's cheek!

Both sides didn't flinch and executed an artistic body blow! *BAM*- The graphic sound was accompanied with exhalation 「Fuguu」 that leaked out from their mouth.

「Aaa, Yue-chan! Now ow, Okaasan isn't put off by you so calm down!」

「Kaori, you are violent only to Yue-chan. Now, apologize! Ah, hey! Don't kick with your feet!」

Sumire and Kaoruko each pinioned Yue and Kaori from behind and separated them from each other. The two who would quarrel (?), frolic around (?) if there was a chance made their respective mother unable to hold back their wry smile.

Each of them knew that their daughter would only take this kind of attitude only toward each other, so their expression was complicated.

The noise inside the guild was getting louder and louder. Too many people had gathered that not only moving in and out of the guild, even the work inside the guild was starting to get hindered.

They would be nothing more than hindrance if they stayed longer than this, so Hajime bid farewell with Catherine and urged everyone to go outside.

Hajime responded to the cheers of good will from the people like a celebrity appearing in front of the fans before he suddenly noticed an unpleasant fact that he spoke up.

「.....Come to think of it, it feels like there was never a time where there was no commotion when I entered the guild.....」

「As expected from Goshujin-sama. Thou must be born under that kind of star.」

「That's one unpleasant star.」

Hajime was feeling down at Tio's words that seemed to say 「What are you saying after this late」 while escaping from the guild.

After escaping from the eyes of the people for a moment, the recognition obstruction was coming into effect once more. Hajime and others talked about the commotion just now while heading to the center of the capital.

The plaza where the church of the reborn holy church was located had the size that was similar with a sports ground. There was also a fountain at the center of the plaza. Liliana explained like a tour guide that the place was set to be a place from relaxation and refreshment.

But, for some reason she was showing a strangely awkward look even while explaining, so Hajime and others tilted their head in puzzlement. Especially Aiko who kept getting glances from Liliana was feeling even more confused.

「Err.....Liliana-san. Is there something that you want to tell me?」

「N, no. That's not.....」

Liliana was evasive, but when the plaza came into view, she fixed her gaze at Aiko as though she had resolved herself.

「Aiko-san.....please be strong!」

「What do you mean!?!」

Liliana clenched both her hands to form fists and yelled out 「Fight!」. That behavior made Aiko wanted to ask her for more detail. But, there was no need for that. The cause immediately became clear after all.

Yes, at the center of the plaza. Enshrined at the center of the fountain that was spurting water in arcs to twelve directions was.....

「.....Eh? Li, lies.....tha, that's, could it be.....」

It was an Aiko statue.

An artistic statue that lifted both its hands to the sky as though offering a prayer to the world was there! Aiko was looking up to the sky with an expression of love! She was smiling as though she was asking for blessing to spread far and wide in the world!

Truly a goddess! It was the magnificent statue of a living god who governed over good harvest and victory!

「No, NOOOOOOOOOO-!? WHY!? WHY IS SUCH THING!?!」

Aiko's scream echoed.

In the world, just how many people could see a statue of themselves while they were still alive? To say nothing of people who could see believers kneeling in front of that statue and praying wholeheartedly, how many of such people existed in the world?

Hajime and others glanced at Aiko who snapped into a frenzy while leaking out strange voice 「O, ou.....」 that was unclear whether it was a voice of shock or sympathy.

But, at that timing, the door of the church that was located at the south side of the plaza was thrown open loudly.

When they spontaneously turned their gaze there, they saw multiple men clad in armor and priest robe breathing roughly.

「A, AIKO-SAMAAAAAAA-」

「Hii!?!」

A familiar man at the forefront raised a loud voice that shook the world. The volume of the voice that made even the windows of the church to rattle calling at her caused Aiko to scream while jumping up in surprise.

「AIKO-SAMA IS GRACING US WITH HIS PRESENCE YOU ALLLLLLLL-」

「Fuhya!?!」

The next man was also someone who they had seen from somewhere. The look of the man who was holding back emotional tears with bloodshot eyes was guaranteed to make ten from ten people to be creeped out. Aiko jumped up in surprise once more.

「YOU GUYS! GOO! GOOOOOOOO-!!」

「JUST WHAT IN THE WORLD IS GOING OOOON!?!」

‘Is that a call when dealing with intruder?’ Aiko made that tsukkomi in his heart while snapping and yelling angrily.

*ZUDODODODO*- The men's footsteps resounded and without pausing they

performed head sliding. They performed a forward roll with superb positioning and smoothly ended up kneeling on one knee sharply.

「Aiko-sama. It has been a long time! Your David is present here!」

「Similarly-. Your eternal servant, Chase, is right here!」

「Joshua here! It has been like an eternity that I'm waiting for the day where I can meet you once more!」

「My goddess-. Please bestow this Jade with any divine decree of yours!」

Aiko turned on her heel with all her strength. It was the greatest turn of her life, with sharpness that spontaneously made her wanted to sing her own praise.

But, even that superhuman movement that was brought about by her feeling that wished to escape from this dangerous place for even an instant sooner didn't work against the demon king. Hajime strongly grabbed the collar of Aiko who was trying to escape.

「Let me go! I'm begging you please release me, Hajime-kun! I'm in front of my mother! I cannot endure this at all!」

Because of the shame.

Akiko blinked seeing the men who was handsome but a bit creepy kneeling in front of her daughter. There, Yue-san suddenly stepped forward. It seemed she still hadn't forgotten the setting of tour guide Yue.

「.....They are the people who once belonged to Aiko's bodyguard squad. Aiko made all of them fall for her and they became the member of her reverse harem.」

「Yue-san!?!」

「Aiko!?!」

Both mother and daughter raised a voice that seemed to say 「Just what have you done!?!」.

「Fuh. Even that is a matter of the past. The current us are pious believers who are faithful to Aiko-sama. We are the knights who protect the goddess.」

「David-san please just shut up for a bit!」

‘By your will.’

Like that, David, the captain of templar knight order understandingly bowed his head. He had only changed the target of his faith, but it seemed his slightly dangerous fanatically faithful heart hadn’t changed at all.

While that was going on, the plaza was starting to get enveloped by a commotion.

They were too noisy, so as expected the recognition obstruction was dispelled. The people could be heard saying things like 「Oo, don’t tell me, the person over there is the goddess?」 「Wha-, the living god who was sent by Ehito-sama!?」 「It’s Aiko-sama in the flesh! Bless her!」 「Aiko-sama in the flesh, banzai!」 「Aiko-sama in the flesh! YAHAAAAAAA-!」 and so on.

Aiko went ‘Oh nooo-’ and slowly backed away. Or rather, she hoped that they would stop with the “Aiko-sama in the flesh”.

Even though beside her there were also the demon king and the princess, the gazes of the people that were gathering in accelerated speed were fixed on Aiko.

In the occasion of the legendary decisive battle, with his incitement technique Hajime called himself as “the goddess’s sword”. That was one of the causes of this. In their point of view, the relationship between the two was something like master and servant in love with each other. Of course, the master in this case was Aiko-sama.

To say nothing of how Ehito had already got flattened in reality. In the first place the common believer would never heard their god’s voice even once in their life. But, such common sense was overturned by the living god Aiko.

It could even be said that, perhaps.....it was already at the level that it was natural for them to be moved to tears and breathe roughly while staring in fixation at her.

If Aiko was left alone then she might ran away alone to the end of earth, so Hajime tightly grasped Aiko’s hand. That also caused the people to cheer.

Aiko's face was rapidly turning red. If it came to this then she would just act in abandon like usual! 'I'm gonna do the goddess act seriously yeaah~, I'll super seriously do it yeaah~, like that she accepted her fate.....

「Puh. Aiko, even in another world, this is how it always goes for you?」

「.....Okaasan?」

Akiko-okaasan was trembling while desperately biting her lips to hold back the laughter.

Of course she was shocked by her daughter's position, but she was her mother. She was able to accurately guess what was going on inside her daughter's heart. She understood like the back of her own hand that his daughter was going to act as goddess in completely desperate state.

Even if her daughter was getting worshipped at another world, she was still making useless effort and charging ahead in complete desperation like usual.....

And then surely after that she would hold her head while being at her wits' end.

It seemed that the gap between her daughter that was like usual and her daughter that ended up became a living god went past through her shock and caused laughter to well up from her.

Aiko's eyes became resentful seeing her mother laughing at her cornered self.

And then, she turned around to face the direction of the plaza and,

「Everyone in the capita~l! Good day, it's me!」

She brazenly greeted the people while lifting both her hands to the sky just like her statue. Cheers burst out and Hajime and others focused on her half in bewilderment and half in interest while going 「Oo?」.

Aiko whose eyes looked somewhat glassy moved her hand in a snap toward behind her dramatically——pointing at Akiko. Aiko glanced at Akiko who went 「Eh?」 and grinned widely,

「Today, I came here in order to introduce my mother! Yes, this person is none other than my mother——the mother of the goddess of bountiful harvest and victory——the holy mother Akiko!」



「Aiko!? You!」

The shocked and protesting voice of Akiko-okaasan was drowned by the loud cheer that was like an explosion right after that.

The chorus of voices that were praising the holy mother Akiko was resounding wide.

「Fu-fufufu-. A mother that is laughing on the suffering of her daughter who is treated as goddess can just become the holy mother.」

「You! You are selling away your own mother!」

「That sounds bad in people's ear! I'm just taking you along with me!」

「Either way it's still bad!」

In the capital's central plaza that was enveloped in roaring cheers where even hymn was starting to resound, the ugly quarrel of mother and daughter was developing.

And then, at that timing a woman wearing a beret quietly approached Hajime.

「Demon king-sama. I am a painter called Caliope Elegy. Please, allow me to draw the beautiful frolicking of the honorable goddess and holy mother.」

It seemed she was a painter. She had tools for drawing picture set up throughout her body.

Hajime thought for a bit before looking at Aiko and Akiko who were still quarreling.....he grinned.

「I allow it. Draw to your heart's content. I don't mind even if you dramatize it.」

「All my thanks to you!」

The female painter took distance with a movement that seemed slimy somehow, then she set up her tools in the blink of eye. She began to draw with bloodshot eyes and terrific momentum.

「I don't care of someone like Okaasan anymore!」

「A child like you! Even if you come home I won't make rolled omelet or chopped burdock root for you anymore!」

「That's harshhh!」

The two were still doing a questionable quarrel (?).

They didn't know. That currently they were being drawn by the painter of the age.

The quarrel scene was drawn as religious painting of beautiful frolicking between the goddess and the holy mother. The duplicates later on would sell like hot cakes.

And then, with this as her stepping stone Caliope-san would attain great success instantly, she would get the job to draw a huge painting to decorate the shrine, and it would become a legacy until the later generations.

The housewife of a farmer family and her daughter would be depicted in a historical painting in another world and got worshipped religiously.....

It went without saying that later on, the mother and daughter would go 「Uboo」 together with their soul coming out from their body.

—

—

—

After that, Hajime and others succeeded in escaping from the plaza that was in uproar.

At that time, the little sister of David who heard the commotion and arrived there exercised her shrewdness and gave them an escape but.....

Hajime who recalled that her name was written in the document that Hellina wrote up smiled inside his heart at the capableness of the actual little sister nun-chan and Hellina's capability that didn't overlook that.

Like that, they went around at places that were unique to another world like weapon shop, magic tool shop, and shop of general good, and Sumire and others, the parent~s had a good time in the capital of the other world.

—

In the middle, it seemed that Hajime's visit was detected by the artisan's

instinct of the leader of the kingdom's exclusive transmutation masters, Wolpen, he and his happy go lucky subordinates crawled out from the woodwork to crowd Hajime, then Mariabel who heard the news from Alabell assaulted——or rather coming to give his greeting.....

At the site of the demolished library, regeneration magic was used to reproduce the figure of Hajime who was working hard in the past there in order to supplement his lacking ability by learning knowledge. Shuu and Sumire felt warm seeing that, while Tomoichi and others were blinking in shock seeing the complete difference of the image with Hajime's current atmosphere.....

Everyone shivered seeing the figure of Kaori that was continuing to watch fixedly at the studying Hajime from behind bookshelves.....

Each time Hajime moved between bookshelves, Kaori would swiftly and silently moved from shadow to shadow while keeping a fixed gaze on him through the gaps of the bookshelves. Seeing her daughter like that, Tomoichi escaped from reality while Kaoruko was holding her head.....

When Kaori was desperately making excuse, as usual Yue raised her voice in delight 「.....Proof obtained! Proof obtained! Officer, it's this person! This person is a genuine stalker!」, and then as usual too it devolved into a scuffle.....

Hajime's group who was spending enjoyable time like that enjoyed a dinner with Luluaria once more that evening,

Like that, the next day, Hajime and co departed to the place that Shuu and Sumire strongly wished for.

It was a place that for the two of them, no, for anyone was a harsh place, however, it was a place where a happening that could even be called as fateful occurred.

Yes, they departed to Orcus Labyrinth.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

※ Below is the update in Gardo.

- Zero Chapter 5 Oscar's serious mode
- Nichijou Chapter 22 Meunte-san finally appear.

※ Arifureta Gaiden——Zero volume 2 as well as Zero comic volume 1 are now on sale!



The left is Zero volume 2. Meil and Raus appears. Also, a guy who hasn't appeared in the main LN but has appeared in WN version also appears. The story also bring to light of the original place of the undersea ruin. The right is Zero comic volume 1. The cause why Miledy has such annoying personality is brought to light there.

※ Regarding special perk side story

『Coupled』 refer to special perk when purchasing Zero volume 2 and Zero comic volume 1 at the same time.

- Chain store-sama

「Girl power-!!」

The girl power showdown of Miledy VS Meil-oneesan. Or so it seems but, that person's girl power is just like regarding the case of 530,000 power level (TN: It seems this is reference for Dragon Ball)

- All specialist shops 【Animate-sama, Tora no Ana-sama, Melon Books-sama, Gamers-sama】

「Secret and black history and other this and that」

A short time in a hideout of the liberators. Corin and co along with liberator members are talking about the past story of Oscar and Miledy.....the black history of the two are overflowing

- Animate-sama 【coupled】

「Romance will be accompanied with sacrifice」

Oscar produced a great number of romance weapon, but there the mother of success, experiment is necessary so.....

Comrade = test subject, by Oscar

- Tora no Ana-sama 【coupled】

「That guy is there, surpassing the era」

That guy is there. No matter how many months and years passed, no matter what era it is without fail he will be there! Yes, the monster of the clothing shop will!

- Gamers – Shosen

「Through 10,000 km searching for the beloved transmutation master」

That poster girl who love Oscar, this is the story of her travel while making a mess of various things.

=>It's the continuation of the story in the afterword of afterword at Overlap's special site for Zero volume 1.

- Melon Books 【coupled】

「Poster girl killer」

A new nickname for Oscar.....this why handsome guy is just.....

- CCC (Tsutaya)

「She is siscon in any case」

Meil-oneesan is a “genuine Oneesan” who will love any kind of little sister.

※ The special perk's information is also written at Overlap-sama's homepage.

Please confirm there too if you like.

That's all.

Best regards!

# Arifureta Chapter 326

## Arifureta After III Tortus Travel Journal ⑥

—

A huge object was floating in the world of azure where the light of the sun was pouring down.

Hajime's artifact, the airship Ferner. It was flying as though gliding above the sky where clouds that looked like cotton candy were floating sparsely.

Originally they planned to use gate to teleport until the city of Horuad, but the wish of Shuu and others 「This is a rare chance, so we want to try flying in the sky of another world」 resulted in this.

「UOOOOOOOOH」

「HOAAAAAAAH」

It went without saying who was the people who were making those strange voices. It was the Nagumo spouses. They held on the handrail on the rear deck and leaned their body forward to gaze at the superb view of another world. As for the strange voices, it seemed it was because they were deeply moved.

And then, although the other weren't raising strange voices like those two, the Shirasaki spouses, Hatayama Akiko, and the members of Yaegashi family were also similarly feeling moved seeing the other world's sky, mountains, plains, and the European Middle Ages styled cities and villages that sometimes came into view.

The scenery that they were seeing right now itself was moving, but it was also

added with how they were staring at the surrounding area outside the plane that was moving in high altitude. The experience that was impossible to get in earth made them couldn't help it to feel excited even though they were adults.

「Son! You are amazing!」

「Son! You are the best!」

「Well, thanks.」

Shuu and Sumire rotated their upper body and snapped up a thumb up to behind them. The synchronization in their words and action made one wondered whether they had made prior arrangement beforehand. Though for Hajime, his parents were already like this since he became aware, so it was already too late to wonder about that.

Hajime smiled wryly at the delight and action of his parents. Tomoichi asked him then with a bit of excitement.

「Hajime-kun. What's with this avant-garde hull? How about the propulsive power? How can something this big is flying even though it has this kind of shape? Or rather, in this altitude we aren't having trouble breathing or even feeling the slightest breeze.....」

Hajime's wry smile deepened at Tomichi who looked like he would press his question further even now while explaining.

So to speak, Ferner was moving by adjusting the gravity neutralization effect and the gravitational direction from the gravity stone. More accurately speaking, the airship was “falling” rather than “flying”.

So to speak, the propulsive force came from magic power, as long as Hajime was on board, he could freely move the ship no matter where he was. There was a barrier put up so the wind pressure could also be adjusted, and so on.

Also, about the avant-garde hull——the shape that was like manta fish was because of Hajime's preference. Things like aerodynamics and the like, he didn't give a damn about those things, so he said.

「No, how should I say it, it's really fantastical huh.....」

「Fufuh, Otou-san, Otou-san. Hajime-kun is amazing right?」



「.....」

Tomoichi-san fell silent morosely. His daughter circled to in front of him and pressed for answer, but he turned around and drove her out from his vision. When Kaori circled around once more, he turned around. Tomichi, turn-. Kaori, turnn-.

The Shirasaki father and daughter was turning and turning and turning.

It was the persistent offense and defense of the father and daughter, but seen from the side it only looked like a super close parent and child. The atmosphere was naturally getting filled with warmth and smile.

Tomoichi was sending a gaze that was filled with demand for help! To his wife.

Kaoruko was making a gaze as though she was looking at difficult people while her gaze turned toward Hajime. It seemed she left it completely to him. Please change the topic okay! Her gaze said.

Hajime shrugged in acknowledgement and after showing a pondering look for a bit, he grinned widely.

「Oi, Tio.」

「Mu? .....Aa, I see. Kuku, I doth not mind.」

Tio was quick on the uptake. The two of them really had mutual understanding of each other.

Everyone's gaze was turned at Hajime and Tio, at the same time the two of them started walking together to the edge of the deck.

「Yue, take care of the ship's handling.」

「.....Nn. Have fun.」

Yue laughed 'fufu'. Sure enough, it seemed she had completely grasped the intention of Hajime and Tio. She poured her magic power into Ferner and accepted the control of the ship while smiling gently.

「Tou-san, I'll show you an astounding fantasy scene after this. It will be a fantasy among fantasy that anyone will absolutely admire if they are a man.」

「What? Hajime, just what in the world are you planni——」

Shuu didn't even hide his excited face after hearing his son's words, but the next moment, his expression became frozen.

Because Hajime and Tio jumped off the ship.

A single hop from Ferner, really casually.

「Heh?」

「Eh, huh?」

Shuu and Sumire were dumbfounded with mouth gaping open. Tomoichi and others were also in a daze with their mouth staying open.

But, the next moment they raised a shocked yell 'WAAAAAAAAAH!?' and rushed forward toward the deck's handrail.

Yue and others the wife~s were completely calm. Despite that they didn't notice that fact at all and they leaned forward while holding on the handrail to look below in order to search after Hajime and Tio who suddenly leaped to their death.

It was right at that moment.

——'GURUAAAAAAAAAH!!'

A grand and majestic roar that stirred the air hit the ears.

Shuu and others spontaneously jerked and backed away while trembling.

Ahead of their gaze, a giant jet black shadow passed through from below to above.

Akiko and Kaoruko unconsciously fell on their butt from the impact of the view. The shadow that was causing that by rushing in the sky was of course,

「Dra, dragon!」

Shuu's emotional and shocked voice echoed to the surrounding.

He already knew. That she was able to transform into dragon like what came out in book or game. He had also seen it for real before.

Although, this was the first time Shuu and Sumire saw her flying in the sky

freely like this. In the end they had only seen her figure transforming on the ground.

Above Ferner that was gliding in the sky, Tio in the black dragon form was circling around elegantly.

The jet black dragon scale that was shining from the sunlight reflection was very beautiful. The large wings that were catching the wind and the huge body that was full of impact were tremendously majestic.

One more roar surged out as service. This time it was accompanied with a scorching breath attack.

The eyes of Shuu and others who were looking up from the deck of Ferner were emitting a shine that didn't lose to the sunlight. They were letting out voice of excitement that sounded similar like a roar.

Tio circled around above them one more time before flying parallel to Ferner with smooth gliding.

「How's that, Tou-san? Great right?」

Hajime said that while unusually sticking out his chest looking incredibly proud. He was standing imposingly on Tio's back with his arms folded while grinning.

「I'm totally jealous-. A man's romance is right in front of meee-」

Shuu hit the handrail in frustration repeatedly. He was also kicking the ground with a vexed look.

Hajime laughed cheerfully seeing his father looking like that. Then he told Tio to land on the deck.

「It seems Tio doesn't mind, so how about Tou-san and everyone else also ride on her back? Flying on the sky riding on a dragon's back in another world will be a nice memory of a lifetime you know?」

「.....Tou-san has never felt so grateful like today, for having a son like you who have a dragon wife. Please let meee!」

「Tio-chan! Actually I had the thinking that someday I want to ask to ride on you! Please」

『Fufu, it wouldst be mine pleasure if it's Hahaue-dono and Chichiue-dono. The others art also like family to me, so come up without worry, because I wouldst guarantee thy safety.』

The voice of Tio that was directly resounding inside their head seemed to make Tomoichi and others to be convinced for real that the majestic black dragon near them was really Tio. They nodded up and down in high speed speechlessly.

Like that, Shuu and Sumire rode on Tio first and Tio leaped up to the sky once more.

Just when it seemed they looked a bit scared, as expected from the parents of Hajime, the spouses' tension was at max right from the start. Shuu was even hopping up and down on Tio's back while yelling 'hyaho~i'.

『.....Fumu』

「Hm? What's the matter Tio?」

Hajime sharply noticed Tio letting out a voice that sounded deeply emotive and asked. Then, Tio spoke with a voice that sounded vaguely in agony.

『No, it's nothing big. Being stepped on like this by Goshujin-sama's parents art quiet pleasant in its own wa——』

「Hmph」

『HIGYAAAAAATHANK YOU VERY MUUCHH!』

Goshujin-sama's fist that impacted hard until the internal organs smashed on the back of the perverted hopeless dragon. The hopeless dragon-san smoothly spoke out her gratitude even while screaming.

The terrific impact caused the altitude to drop with a jerk and the body balance crumbled.

「——ah」

Shuu fell leaving behind that voice. Like that 「aAAAAAAAAAAAA~~~」 a trailing scream resounded through the sky.

Hajime made a face that said 「Ah, damn it」, while beside him Sumire

screamed 「DEAAAAAARRR~」. And then, a silver flash rushed at the corner of their vision.

A beat later.

「Geez-, Hajime-kun, what are you doing! Otou-san almost turned into a stain in the ground just now!」

Kaori flapped her silver wings to fly up while carrying Shuu in her arms from behind.

Shuu who experienced skydiving without parachute was muttering 「Thank you very much, thank you very much-. Living is wonderful.....」 while his eyes were half rolled back.

「Well, even if he become a stain on the ground, if it's Kaori then it's recoverable.....」

father-in-law

「Don't treat Otou-san like a broken doll! Geez.....treat life with care, you know?」

Although there was limitation to a certain degree, the demon king-sama's group had basically risen above death. Even Hajime himself was starting to have thinking like 「It's fine, it will only be death for a bit. It will only really be for a bit」 taking root inside himself.

*Flap flap. Flap flap.* The silver wings that actually didn't need to be flapped at all to fly were flapping adorably due to habit and Kaori returned Shuu on Tio's back.

The moment it became obvious that there wasn't any particular problem, Shuu stared fixedly at Sumire who was laughing while holding her stomach while raising his voice toward Tomoichi who was on the deck.

「Tomoichi-ku~~~~n! It's just like you said, Kaori-chan is~, certainly an angel!!」

「That's right isn't it! Kaori is an angel! Kaorii~, that was amazing~! You did great! But, Otou-san's life has shrunk by fifty years here, so please don't suddenly jump off anymore~」

It seemed that Tomoichi-san would soon run out of life span.

『Chichiue-dono, I beg for thy forgiveness.』

「No no, that's fine. I was getting a bit too high spirited. And it was also really thrilling.」

「Pupupu~, dear, you went 『Aa~~~』 in real life! Ahahahah」

Laughin unreservedly at her husband's shameful sight was Sumire quality.

Shuu cleared his throat to cover up his embarrassment while attempting to shift the topic.

「The great labyrinth we are going to right now is also a really thrilling place right? That free diving was a good side entertainment.」

「I think the thrill of a great labyrinth is different from just now though.....」

There, Hajime who was also smiling a bit like Sumire made a slightly worried expression.

「Tou-san, Kaa-san. As I thought, I think it's better to only visit the surface floor and Oscar's hideout in Orcus. Fighting against monster is.....it's more gruesome than Tou-san and others think.....」

「No, Hajime. We came here because we want to know the track that you followed. I want you to show us what kind of path you were walking.」

「.....」

Although, Hajime wondered how much he should show them. In his opinion, the happening before he fell into abyss and the survival after he encountered Yue would be fine to be shown.

That was as long as the two of them, and also Tomoichi and others didn't give up from the bloody battle.

However, the event at that time when he went through the change of his mind.....

He flatly refused to do something like bragging of his misfortune. There would be no point of him purposely showing the bloody and nauseating event. If they wanted to know about the path that he walked, he thought that it would be enough to start from after his encounter with Yue.

But, would Shuu and Sumire be convinced with that much.....

It would be great if it went well and they let the censoring passed. Hajime was thinking of such thing for a while.

『Kuku. Even Goshujin-sama who was always quick and decisive art also a parents' child. I couldst see thou straying in various things before thy parents.』

She was saying those words while laughing slightly, but her voice was filled with gentleness, understanding, and also affection toward Hajime's hesitation.

It seemed that the telepathy was sent only to Hajime seeing that Sumire and Shuu didn't react.

Being seen through at various things and having a definite affection directed to him like this made Hajime to avert his gaze to faraway in embarrassment.

「You're right. I'm like this in front of family, "princess Tio".」

『!?!』

「Really thank you for always considerate at various things, "princess Tio". You are always reliable, "princess Tio". No, I'm seriously not your match, "your highness".」

『Stop calling me princesssss-. That is truly embarrassing! Goshujin-sama! Thou art childish!』

Strength left Hajime's shoulders and he sat down cross-legged. He then caressed the solid and smooth scale with a surprisingly gentle hand movement. Tio slightly shook as though writhing emotionally.

「Tio, turn around. Also hold back that expectant gaze of yours. Perform a lovely sightseeing flight okay?」

『Right-. Leave it to me. I'll have them taste to their heart content, just how great the black dragon of Goshujin-sama art.』

Question mark floated above Shuu and Sumire seeing the intimate conversation of their son and his dragon wife that seemed to have ticklishly sweet atmosphere somehow. Even so they were sending a gentle gaze at their son.

After that, Tomoichi and others also enjoyed being dragon rider to their heart content. Then the group arrived at the city of Horuad while their excitement hadn't cooled down.

—

—

—

「.....Right, everyone. Here is the spot where the famous incident “Kaori-san confessed wholeheartedly, she got easily rejected though and went pugyaaa” took place.」

「YUEEE!!」

In front of Orcus Great Labyrinth, the cat fight that was like usual occurred.

Hajime and others who entered Horuad introduced the inn that they once stayed at and the guild that they used while going until the entrance of Orcus Great Labyrinth.

Like that, the first voice that Yue spoke out was that.

Tomoichi's gaze became fierce. 「You bastaardd, why the hell you rejected my angel, huuuh!?」He spoke with a thuggish look like that.

However, surely even if the place got introduced as 「The place where her confession succeeded」, there was no doubt that he would still say 「You bastaardd, what do you mean that you are going out with my angelll, huuuh!?」 with a thuggish look.

While Kaoruko, Kirino, and Akiko were giving a deeply interested gaze that said 「Oh my」, Shia smiled wryly while giving mediating words.

「Eeer, about that. It's not like it was just Kaori-san who got rejected by Hajime-san. Other than Yue-san, everyone got thoroughly rejected after all.」

「My, is that so? Shia-chan also got rejected?」

「Somehow that sounds hard to believe.」

Kaoruko and Kirino's eyes turned into saucer because they knew about the current intimate relationship of Hajime and co.



Myuu smiled cheerfully while adding the explanation at the two.

「For papa Yue-oneechan was “special” nano!」

Kaori whose appearance was a bit messy made a displeased expression as though to confirm those words and said.

「It’s frustrating but, that’s how it was, Okaa-san.」

「Truly. Goshujin-sama at that time was completely an adherent of Yue supremacy doctrine.」

「He hasn’t changed that much even now though~」

Tio and Shia muttered in nostalgia. Aiko and Shizuku smiled wryly while continuing after them.

「Thinking back, Shia-san’s guts was amazing. Even though when I reunited with Hajime-kun it was a Hajime-kun that was a complete believer of Yue supremacy doctrine, she still brazenly declared 『I’m Hajime-san’s woman desu』.」

「In a sense, that time of confession was Kaori’s turning point. Since then, Kaori began to rush nonstop to a strange direction.」

It was human’s nature to become absurdly curious when seeing the related party to be immersed in recollection by that much. Especially when there was a method to reproduce that scene, then it would be even more so.

Kaoruko’s eyes shined and she pressed on Yue.

「Yue-san Yue-san. Can you reproduce Kaori’s confessions scene?」

「.....That’s a piece of cake, Kaori mama.」

Yue’s crimson eyes sparkled. She gave a powerful thumb up. Kaori attacked to stop her.....

Kaori mama pinioned her from behind.

Kaori papa who didn’t want to see something like his daughter’s confession scene tried to chide his wife, but before that the magic of past viewing activated.

And then, the confession scene was unfolding before their eyes.

『I love you.』

「NOOOOOOOO~~, DON'T LOOOKKK~~~!」

Kaori who turned bright red blocked her ears with her hands while yelling 'no', but the past image was mercilessly progressing. The eyes of her mother were shining brilliantly as though saying 「Myy myy」.

Inside the image, Hajime turned Kaori down, however, she exposed herself with strong gaze and words.

And then, at the corner of the image, for some reason there were men piled up with this and that getting discharged from their crotch.....

『Because, my feeling that think of Hajime-kun won't lose against anyone.』

「NYUWAAAAAAAAA~」

Kaori tried to drown out her own words with a loud strange voice, but her line resounded clearly.

By the way, they were at a public place, so naturally there were a lot of people. Like adventurers, or merchants..... Everyone had warm eyes like 「Hou」 or 「Oh my」.

Anyway, Kaori kept blocking her ears and rolled around on the ground while hugging her knees. It seemed she couldn't help but roll in a frenzy from the overflow of her embarrassment.

The battle of woman inside the image ended, and at the end Yue gave permission for Kaori to accompany them while Hajime got left out from the talk for some reason, and then the two smiled at each other fearlessly.

It was the moment of beginning of the history of the love rivals that still continued even now.

「Watching it once again, rather than the beginning of Hajime and Kaori, it's more the beginning of Yue and Kaori. They are super close with each other using the love rival relationship as cover.」

「「We aren't close!」」

Yue and Kaori intimately objected in synchronization. They were really close

with each other.

By the way, the image of Kouki challenging Hajime to a duel and fell into hole at that time was also playing, but the kind everyone splendidly pretended to not see it.

「Uu, Okaa-san you idiot!」

Kaori pointed the tip of her ultra shyness at Kaoruko. However, Kaoruko gently caressed the head of the crouching Kaori like she was a little kid.

「Fufu, I'm sorry Kaori. But, Kaori was really cool there. As expected from Okaa-san's daughter. You really did your best.」

「uu.....Okaa-san.....」

Other people were watching, it was a bit embarrassing to be consoled like a little kid.....Kaori fidgeted with blushing cheeks.

「You see, Okaa-san too was fighting against the swarming cockro—cough, women in order to catch your Otou-san. I remember in the past~」

「Okaa-san, just now, you said cockroach.....hey, just now, you were going to call other woman as cockroach——」

「Your Otou-san, he was really, really popular. What's more, he was someone who couldn't differentiate between being kind and pampering, he was being kind to any kind of cockr——woman, so Okaa-san had it hard.」

「Ka, Kaoruko? You don't need to go that far about the matter of the past I think? I think? We are in front of Kaori, look, there are also everyone else, right?」

「Otou-san. More importantly than that, Okaa-san called other woman cockroach.....」

It seemed that the Shirasaki spouses had also gone through various things. Tomoichi-san was sweating like rivers, while Kaori-san was put off that her mother almost called other woman as cockroach so naturally.

The bearer of the original Hannya, the current user of Yaksha stano——Shirasaki Kaoruko.

Seeing from this, indeed, it seemed that Kaori had really inherited her blood. As expected, Kaori didn't call other woman cockroach, but that must be because luckily she was similar with Tomoichi in that aspect.

Soon the crowd of people would get too big, it looked like it would become a commotion if they stayed longer than this.

Hajime thought that as expected, this wasn't something to be done in front of the entrance. He forcefully carried Yue like a sack when she was going to invite even more chaos by saying 「.....And then, this is the figure of Shizuku rejoicing from receiving a present of sharp thing from her best friend's loved one」, and he urged everyone to enter inside Orcus Great Labyrinth.

—

—

—

「Hou, it's quite developed. It looks exactly like a game's dungeon.」

「Really. The lighting is.....aa, is this the green light stone Hajime mentioned? A natural mineral become lighting for the place as it is.」

Shuu and Sumire were looking around busily inside the dungeon with great interest.

Tomoichi and others too surely had the image that the place would be darker and eerie like a tunnel. They seemed to be greatly interested seeing that the path was unexpectedly developed.

「The monsters that comes out in the surface of Orcus aren't a big deal. But raw material can be taken from them to a certain degree. With the level of the monsters here, not just low level adventurers, even civilian can manage somehow, so there is also a lot of demand. That's why this area is properly developed.」

Hajime's explanation that was like a tour guide was added further by Kaori.

「Conversely, if you come out to a place like a natural cave that isn't developed, it means that it's a place that is dangerous for people who aren't combatant, so be careful okay?」

Hajime said 「Although.....」 there while pulling out Donner with really natural movement.

And then, he pulled the trigger even without really taking aim. It wasn't accelerated electromagnetically, even so the firing sound was loud and echoed greatly due to the location.

The bursting sound that made the air shook made Shuu and others to turn their gaze to the front in surprise.

Over there, there was a monster like mice with its head blown away. It was a ratman.

「Uh」

「.....」

Kaoruko covered her mouth with her hand while Akiko went a bit pale. It seemed the people of Yaegashi family were calm, but even Tomoichi's expression looked tense.

Even more ratmen crawled out from the corner ahead. They shrieked up 'KIIIIII' which sounded harsh on the ear and their dark red eyes glinted fiercely with killing intent.

Clear killing intent and hostility rode on the wave of air that descended on the group. Kaoruko immediately clung on Tomoichi while feeling like weak in the knees. Tomoichi was supporting her with pale expression.

Beside Hajime, Yue was looking up at him wordlessly. Hajime guessed what her gaze was saying, but he smiled and shook his head.

Right after that, the group of ratmen fiercely rushed forward. Their number was roughly thirteen.

「O, oi, Hajime? That's——」

「Hajime, it's alright isn't it?」

Shuu and Sumire asked in a bit of agitation. Hajime answered with his action.

Firing sounds burst out consecutively. It was precisely five shots. One shot would open wind hole on several of the ratmen altogether, furthermore the

penetrating bullets would ricochet and dug into the remaining targets.

It was a swift killing, no, it was truly an instant killing.

Shuu and Sumire, and then Tomoichi and others were dumbfounded in mute amazement seeing gun fired from nearby and the technique that looked like it came out right from Hollywood.

Even calling the fight overwhelming would still be presumptuous. It was a difference of status between both sides that was exactly like an elephant stomping on ants. They couldn't help but feeling that.

Hajime made his "treasure warehouse" shined and summoned bullets from empty air like it was nothing and casually performed gun spin reload while turning around. The bullets were loaded into the cylinder like a joke, and just right after they perceived that the gun was put into a holster with flowing motion.

「Just as you saw, even if we are in the abyss, there isn't anything here that is a match against me. And just like Kaori said, I hope you all would refrain from acting on your own because of curiosity but.....well, Yue and others are also here so it's fine even if you think that there would be no danger here.」

Tio and Shia stayed in the rear, while Kaori, Shizuku and Aiko stayed at the left and right. As long as they were staying in the middle of that formation, nothing would happen even in the worst case.

There was one problem. The reason why the monsters weren't turned into ash by Yue's magic or turned into dust by Kaori's disintegration, but dealt with gunshot that left behind remains which looked the most graphic in a sense.

「So, how is it? As expected, should we just go directly to Oscar's hideout?」

That question was especially directed to Kaoruko and Akiko.

They must had understood how graphic a battle could get from the scene just now. Although they were monsters, seeing a living thing burst out right before them was a traumatic shocking sight.

However, the image of the past they would see from here on would be even more gruesome than this. It would be better if they rethought once more right

now.

This was a consideration from Hajime who was thinking that. Sumire who saw the how greatly shaken Kaoruko and Akiko were proposed that the two of them took a rest at the hideout ahead of them.

It seemed that Sumire and Shuu didn't plan to pull back. They intended to follow after the track of Hajime till the end.

Kaoruko looked at Tomoichi. Tomoichi nodded with a strong gaze even while he was still a bit pale. Kaoruko looked at Akiko next. Aiko was worried about her and grasped her hand, but she too took a firm look at Aiko and then turned her gaze to Kaoruko and gave a strong nod.

After Kaoruko saw that, she looked like she had resolved herself.

「No, we are fine Hajime-kun. Please teach us too the path all of you have gone through. ....I too want to know the path my daughter had followed.」

「.....I understand. But, please don't force yourself. The chance isn't just this time. If it's necessary, I'll be available anytime to show you anything.」

Seeing Kaoruko recovering her smile back and saying her thanks, Hajime shrugged with a troubled expression in resignation.

After the parents cleared the first barrier, he advanced while talking about the memory of that time.

Midway a monster that looked like a cute raccoon came out,

「Kukyu?」

「Uh」

Shizuku who loved cute things hesitated a bit. This monster almost had no combat ability, but it had a battle style of approaching with its adorable appearance and then injected a powerful paralysis poison with a bite. And so, there was no danger even if she hesitated but.....

「Haa, I'm not good with this type——」

「Ei-」

*Supan-*, a pleasant sound resounded. The raccoon-chan cried 「Kukyu?」 and

its head flew.

The perpetrator was Kaori-san.

Kaori turned around while behind a fountain of blood spurted out from the monster's neck.

「Shizuku-chan, it's alright? Leave this kind of thing to me!」

「.....Yes.」

The empty eyes of the raccoon's head that was rolling on the floor was looking at Shizuku hatefully.

Shizuku replied with a faraway look. Surely ahead of her gaze there was the Kaori of the past who was gentle and unrelated with violence.

Kaori papa and Kaori mama who were making the same faraway look behind Shizuku undoubtedly were also recalling their past daughter in nostalgia.

After that, Shuuzou and others said 「I can't endure anymore! Let us fight!」, so they advanced while experiencing real battle under their daughter's supervision. After a while, the group finally arrived at floor 20 that connected to the floor 65.

The first thing they did was taking care of several Rock Mount that were camouflaging themselves as rock by disintegrating them, opening win hole on their body, splattering them, or turning them into ash.

「I think you can call this place the fated crossroad. It has been removed right now but, at that spot there was a crystal with beautiful appearance called Glanz crystal, but it was a trap that teleported the victims to floor 65.」

Tomoichi asked with a complicated expression after hearing Hajime's explanation.

「.....I heard. The kid that once killed Kaori, activated that trap right?」

「Yes, that's right. That guy had feeling for Kaori, and because of that he reached out for that Glanz crystal for her.」

「I wonder, what would happen if that time I didn't show interest to that crystal.....」



Would their fate change? Kaori showed a complicated expression.

Hajime kindly patted the head of Kaori who was like that while speaking.

「It wouldn't change anything. He didn't act because of one cause. ....The target of his scorn which was a virtually incompetent guy had the attention of the girl he liked. The days in the school and then everything that happened since coming to this Tortus were nurturing the seed of killing intent inside that guy.」

And then, he literally “succumbed to evil temptation”. He, the human called Hiyama Daisuke didn't have the strength to oppose that devil's whisper.

「There is no need to worry about it, both in good meaning or bad meaning.」

Hajime asserted firmly with unwavering tone toward Tomoichi and others whose complicated thought was showing on their face from hearing the deed of the classmate who died in another world.

「That guy is already gone. I killed him. Everyone doesn't need to feel troubled about that guy or that guy's family. Even if there is a need to worry, it will be my burden. It will be troubling if other people get concerned on their own about my burden.」

‘I've got no plan to feel burdened about it though’, Hajime read the atmosphere and didn't say that.

It was a harsh manner of speaking that felt like rejecting away others, but it was clear that those words were filled with thoughtfulness toward Tomoichi and others. Tomoichi and co relaxed their expression slightly.

Even so, perhaps in order to change the atmosphere that had become slightly gloomy, our Yue-sama took a step forward.

「.....Don't worry, Kaori. It's just as Hajime said, nothing would change.」

「Yue.....」

The smile of Yue that was even emitting kindness made Kaori's expression broke out into a smile.....

「.....Yes, no~thing would change. Hajime would encounter me without a doubt, and inevitably rejected Kaori.」

「Yue?」

Yue-sama threw out her chest and snorted ‘fufuh’.

「.....Because, Hajime said it. Even if he returned to the past, 『I’ll follow the same path no matter how many times』 『I want to meet Yue after all』 he said.」

‘Mufufuh’, Yue-sama laughed while her hand elegantly covered her mouth. *Snap* Kaori kept smiling while blood vein pulsed on her forehead.

「.....Yes, Hajime would come to meet me. Leaving Kaori behind! Leaving Kaori behind! No matter how many——」

「Disintegrate!!」

A silver flash surged out while grazing Yue’s head. The thrust of a large sword that was clad with disintegration magic was unleashed!

If Yue didn’t immediately bent down, she would become like the raccoon-chan before this!

「.....My, my scalp, it got slightly shaved, perhaps」

「Chih, I missed.」

Yue-sama held her head with both hands saying 「Even though the experience of my scalp getting shaved happening once is enough.....」 while her eyes became slightly tearful. It seemed she still perfectly remembered how in the past she got shot by Hajime.

「.....You-, this stupid Kaori! It’s really childish to get angry from hearing the truth!」

「Yue is the bad one! Besides, I’m still in my teenage year! Not like Yue! Eh, come to think of it, Yue-san Yue-san, how old are you right now?」

「.....Die」

「Come at me!」

Yue and Kaori started quarreling that was like breathing to them.

Certainly the atmosphere had returned to normal but.....at this point this felt a bit exasperating already.

While the two were grappling with each other, they

「If the trap didn't activate, various things would absolutely change I'm telling you!」

「.....No way it would change! No matter what kind of path it was, it's destiny that Hajime would meet me!」

「The, then, it will be fine if I lock him up! Like in the inn or in the palace..... anyway I'll just lock him up! If it's Hajime-kun at that time even I can lock him up anyway!」

「.....Confinement!? Terrible!」

「I, it's not terrible! Everything is for Hajime-kun's sake!」

「.....Kaori you psycho! Rather than getting confined by the dangerous Kaori, better me who confine Hajime!」

「No! I'll be the one confining him!」

「.....I'm the one-, who am going to-, confine him!」

‘Confine, confine! Confine Hajime in!’ Yue-sama and Kaori-san grappled with each other while repeatedly yelling that.

Hajime opened his mouth with unusually pale expression and also trembling voice.

「The past me was really in serious danger huh. Before talking about Hiyama or whatever, the imprisonment bad end from Kaori and Yue was right beside me.....look, this arm. It's really getting goose bumps.」

A hand gently patted Hajime's shoulder that was slightly trembling. Unexpectedly it was Tomoichi.

「Hajime-kun. It's fine, in the end love will win. I too, in the past I also got confined by Kaoruko.」

‘This uncle, he suddenly revealed something outrageous’.....not just Hajime, everyone other than the two grappling with each other also thought that. It was only Kaoruko who for some reason was fidgeting with embarrassed look while saying 「Geez dear, don't mention that」.

「You see, at first she would only come to look after me devotedly like a regularly visiting wife, but during that time her private items keep increasing inside my room, and when I realized it was like the two of us were living together.....」

「E, err, Tomoichi-san?」

Tomoichi-san was looking back at the past while slightly trembling. What's this, it looked like light was gradually vanishing from his eyes.....

「We were always together when going out, even though we had different class in the university, when I noticed she would be waiting for me outside the classroom.....」

「O, o~i! Kaori! Stop fighting and look after your father for me! Somehow this looks bad!」

Tomoichi-san's eyes were rapidly getting blank.

「Kaoruko would do all of the shopping, so there wouldn't be any need for me to go out other than for a date. But, even that date would gradually turn into things like watching movie inside the house, or spending comfortable time together, things like that.....」

「Kaoruko-san! Your husband's eyes are dead you know!?!」

Kaoruko-san was blushing hearing her husband talking about their life before marriage while fidgeting.

「I wonder when did it happen. Once I went out for drinking with the girls in the university, then the next day, Kaoruko told me. 『It's okay that you don't go to the university anymore. Leave everything to me. It will be fine if Tomoichi-san stays forever in this room』 she said.....」

「Kaoriii-!! The dangerous one was actually your mother! Ah, no, you are also a dangerous enough girl huh! God dammit!」

「Tomoichi-san! Return to your senses!」 Hajime said while shaking him back and forth.

Tomoichi gasped and returned to his senses, then he looked at his daughter who was still making racket about 'confinement-confinement'.....

「Hajime-kun. Call me when it get bad. I'll give you some advice.」

「.....Yes, thank you very much, Tomoichi-san. If it feels like Kaori finally become like “that”, at that time please let me listen to your life experience.」

Right now they looked like a happy husband and wife, so surely Tomoichi had handled the past yandere Kaoruko well.

In Hajime's view, for the first time Tomoichi looked like a very reliable adult.

And then, seeing Hajime honestly begging for help with an expression that was slightly twitching, Tomoichi too was also feeling something.

The two of them exchanged a powerful handshake with each other.

Hajime and Tomoichi. It was the instant where the distance of their heart shrunk by a little.

After that, Myuu who was actually having fun with following the track of the Hajime before she met him remonstrated Yue and Kaori because the group didn't make any progress at the slightest due to their quarrel.

She came forward, faced the two and pointed her finger forward and said 「Myuu know the two of you are really close with each other nano! That's why please be a bit more quiet nano! Both Yue-oneechan and Kaori-oneechan are bad nano!」.

To think that a five years old little girl would caution them with 「Let's be quiet」.....

Yue and Kaori who were told that they were bad got depressed and sat with seiza posture before Myuu, and they apologized 「.....Sorry that Kaori is too high spirited」 「Forgive Yue for her noisiness」.

Like that, the group that pulled themselves back together finally teleported to the floor 65 using the gate, toward the destination of that trap.

—

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about

misspelling and omitted words.

Next chapter, the Orcus sightseeing part of Tortus travel journal will be over.

At that point I will put an end to this arc temporarily, do another short story for a bit, and then I'm thinking that I want to write a long extra story again (like the story of Shia, the hero that punch the enemy to death.....or perhaps another story.....).

The Tortus travel journal that is following the journey of the past is a story that Shirakome himself want to write slowly while having fun remembering various things, so forgive me that the chapters are scattered here and there like this, but please understand.

※The main comic chapter 24 is updated in Comic Gardo.

It's the climax of the battle versus Miledy. It's impactful like usual!

It's distributed free of charge, so please go there to look no matter what.

※Arifureta spin-off——Zero volume 2 as well as Zero comic volume 1 are on sale!





You can use them as accompaniment inside your cool room.

The murderous heat wave is continuing, so all of you the people of Narou too please pay attention to your health.

# Arifureta Chapter 327

## Arifureta After III Tortus Travel Journal ⑦

—

They noticed that the air had changed at the same time when they got through the dazzling light.

*Hyyu hyyu* The sound of wind shook their eardrums.

「.....So this place is like this.」

「How should I say it, this place, it's really eerie.」

It was a space that was shaped like a gigantic dome. And then, there was a long and large stone bridge that connected that space from end to end.

Shuu and Sumire who were looking around on top of that spoke their impression sounding like they had their breath taken away.

The wind that felt like it was stickily caressing their skin from the bottom of the earth was blowing up from below. It made the parents to get goosebumps.

They were on top of a bridge that felt like it was floating midair without any handrails or a curb. Kaoruko and Akiko were looking around with terrified expression while staying at the center as much as possible.

Hajime opened his mouth toward the parents who were busily looking around.

「This is the place where we were teleported to by the trap——the sixty fifth floor.」



In case they were descending through the floors normally, they wouldn't come out into this place. This was a place where they would be teleported into only in the case they got caught by the trap.

Hajime explained so, but,

「I, I see, I got it, Hajime. But you see, before you explain!」

「Oi-, Hajime-kun! Behind, behind!」

Shuu and Tomoichi were desperately pointing behind Hajime while raising their voice. Hajime's tour guide explanation entered their right ear and slipped out through their left ear. Kaoruko and Akiko, and then even Sumire were staring unblinkingly at behind Hajime right now with a pale expression. They didn't look like they were listening to his talk.

That was only natural.

After all, if speaking in manga terms, there was a monster approaching with a pressure that felt like there would be *GOGOGOGOGO*- sound effect drawn behind it with big and bolded letters. It was emitting pressure that forced the parents to comprehend whether they wanted it or not that this was an existence that was in a completely different level from the monsters they saw until now.

——'GURUAAAAAAAAA-'

The monster's roar resounded and shook the atmosphere. Kaoruko and Akiko hugged each other tightly while their legs became unable to stand anymore.

Furthermore, a lot of Traum Soldiers were approaching from the other side of the stone bridge. Their eye sockets were shining piercingly with dark red flame. Even the members of Yaegashi family had tense expression.

「Aa~, this is bad. I should have put mental resistance on everyone beforehand.」

「.....Nn. This is a failure. Everyone, sorry.」

——'GURYAAAAAAAAA-'

Hajime awkwardly scratched his cheek while he still hadn't looked back. Yue too was making an apologetic look while applying fear resistance using soul

magic on the parents.

‘No, that isn’t the time for that though.....’

It felt like the sound of the parents’ heart could be heart like that.

——’GURYAAAAAAAAA-‘

The third roar. At the same time, the stone bridge shook fiercely.

The monster was the master of the sixty fifth floor that once cornered Hajime and co into a predicament. It began to charge above the stone bridge where there was no place to escape.

And so, for the time being,

*DOPAN-♪*

——\*GYAAAAAAAAAH\*

A roar that was a bit different from before resounded.

A crimson flash blew up one of the monster’s front legs. It happened right when it was stepping forward, so the monster that lost its support fell on the ground face first like in a comedy skit. It then obeyed the law of inertia and slid *SUZAA~~~*.

And then it stopped still right before Hajime with only a single step of distance remaining between them.

「Cough-. Ee~, this thing’s name is Behemoth. Fundamentally it only has two attack patterns of a normal rush or a rush while transforming scorching red like “My horn is burning reeedd”. It’s a relatively disappointing monster.」

Behemoth roared *GURYA-* and somehow it managed to stand up. It stared down Hajime with an angry eye glint while its horn transformed scorching red above its head.

Hajime-san pointed with his finger and said 「As you can see, this is its scorching red transformation」 as introduction for Behemoth-kun’s signature move.

「Although it was when we still hadn’t arrived for long in Tortus——」

Behemoth swung down its head.

Hajime's uppercut burst up.

The artificial arm's vibration pulverization and skill "Strong Arm", and then the explosion from the elbow accompanied the punch.

——\*GYAN-!?!\*

New discovery. Behemoth's scream sounded like a dog.

「Thinking back now, getting tossed around helplessly by this kind of pseudo cow that know nothing except charging ahead is nothing but the height of stupidity. Surely there was a way that would be a bit better to deal with it.」

「It can't be helped Hajime. At that time everyone was absolutely at their limit.」

Shizuku smiled wryly while agreeing. During that time Behemoth that got hit by a fierce punch on its nose was desperately rubbing its nose with its remaining front leg. It was a gesture that a puppy would often do when appealing 「My nose feels really hurts」.

「Hajime-sa~n! What should we do about the skeletons over here?」

The crowd of Traum soldier was gradually approaching Hajime and co.

Hajime pointed there with his finger while saying 「Please look over there. They are bones」. The parents' gaze was naturally guided to there.

「They are called Traum soldier. Their strength isn't really much. But, they have many soldiers. The choices in the trap at this floor is fundamentally to advance ahead and slip through a single powerful Behemoth, or to pass through the Traum Soldiers with their violence of numbers and then go back to floor 20 through the stairs ahead of them. 」

Hajime continued his explanation while turning to Kaori and gave an instruction 「Ya, Kaori-san, disintegrate them along with the magic circle」 sounding like an elderly nobleman from somewhere. Kaori replied lightly 「Ye~s」, while at the same time silver flash planted trauma into the Traum Soldiers.

They instantly became ash, and furthermore the magic circle that continued to produce the Traum Soldiers turned into ash along with the ground.

The parents went 「O, oo」 sounding half bewildered and half in admiration like ‘Kaori-san is seriously awesome’.

There, Behemoth recovered from its pain. It made its horn scorching red once more and assaulted Hajime with clear killing intent and hostility.

「And, through one thing and another, I held back this Behemoth, the bridge crumbled, and we harmoniously fell together.」

Along with the really abridged explanation, a Cross Velt appeared above the Behemoth that was going to charge ahead. *Pashu*- An object that was like an anchor fired into the Behemoth, and right after that it got pulled toward the end of the stone bridge.

——‘GUO!? Gu, GURYAAAA-!!’

‘Wai-!? What’s this!? I, I’m pulled.....no, NO WAY I’LL LOSEEEEEEEE-!!’

It felt like such voice of Behemoth could be heard. It desperately stood its ground in the attempt to prevent itself from getting dragged away, but from the beginning it almost had no leeway to control its posture with the size of its physique.

When it got dragged draggingly for a meter, its resistance ended in vain and it easily got dragged toward the stone bridge’s edge.

‘AH!? My hind legs!?’

Behemoth wriggled and struggled. Its hind legs fell while its front leg’s claws were clawing on the ground desperately to crawl up but.....

「Ee~, about its depth, I fainted at that time so I don’t know how deep it is, but in this rare chance we have here the Behemoth-san who possess a conspicuous burning horn, so let’s test for a bit if we can confirm how far it will fall down.」

Behemoth’s gaze snapped toward Hajime. Surely there was no way that it understood his words, but its expression really looked like it was saying this.

——‘You’re lying right?’

Like that.

Hajime-san grinned and aimed his Donner.

His aim was the front leg of Behemoth that was desperately clinging on the ground, the claws there.

*DOPAN-* A shooting sound echoed. At the same time the claws of the Behemoth that should be said as its lifeline were pulverized.

Behemoth's eyes were saying 「This is, just too cruel.....」.....it felt like that.

——'aAAAAAAAAAAA-'

Behemoth raised a scream that sounded slightly similar like Shuu when he was free diving from Tio's back while falling toward the bottom of the Abyss.

Thanks to the scorching red horn, the sight of its falling could be seen clearly.

For a while everyone was peering down harmoniously without saying anything, and then Kaori opened her mouth with a really complicated expression.

「.....Thinking back after looking at this, it's really deep. It was really a miracle that Hajime-kun survived from this.」

「You're right. If I remember right, he was blown away by the water stream that spurted out from a tunnel on the wall and the stream brought him into a different tunnel was it.....」

「Papa, papa. Myuu think if Papa appeared at the nine death one life special show in the TV before this, papa would surely get the first place nano.」 (TN: Nine death one life, it's a phrase in Japan that means a narrow escape from death)

「Myuu, I wonder about that. Goshuujin-sama hath returned alive quite a lot from extremely deathly situations, so it couldst already be said that it's nine death nine life instead.」

「.....Nn. Perhaps it will be ok if it's a special show about a man that absolutely won't die no matter what happen.」

「No no, Yue-san. In that case it will be better to just upfrontly make special show of shocking video or astonishing video. There is no doubt that Hajime-san will monopolize the best 100.」

The parents were letting out a dry laugh while making faraway gaze at their

son and daughters who were talking carefreely with the fading Behemoth's scream as BGM.

They slowly and quietly returned to the center of the stone bridge and let out a large sigh.

And then, Sumire spoke.

「Theeen, Yue-chan. Please replay the past image okay?」

「Why!? I had explained it carefully and thoroughly just now right!?」

Hajime spontaneously made a tsukkomi. Yes, Hajime was acting like a tour guide because he was aiming to avoid the replaying of the past image by explaining it orally.

「.....Nn. Hajime, you don't know when to give up.」

「N, no, but you know, Yue.」

Hajime who got scolded 'bad child' by Yue, but for him who was always decisive and resolute in everything, at this time he was being really obstructive even at this late.

「Goshujin-sama, firm thy resolve already. Hahaue-dono and Chichiue-dono, as well as everyone else, they wouldst not change their decision to watch the past of Goshujin-sama.」

「That's right Hajime-san. Besides, if it's the usual Hajime-san, even if everyone's mental image of you become bad, won't you say something like 『So what. If it become bad, then I just need to make it good again』.」

Yue and others thought that Hajime was still reluctant to show his gruesome past. They made a slightly exasperated expression while expressing such words to persuade him.

However, Hajime attempted to object with his expression still looking bitter.

「No, about that it doesn't really matter anymore for me. I have consented and also resolved myself regarding *that point*.」

「.....Nn? Then what are you dissatisfied about?」

Yue tilted her head. Hajime spoke in respond.

「.....This is just for example, something like a drama that you are acting in it, isn't it a relatively high hurdle to have your family watch such thing?」

「.....」

The reason of Hajime's reluctance came to light. It seemed he was simply embarrassed.

Kaori and Shizuku, and then Aiko turned their gaze to their respective family and nodded 「Indeed!」.

At that time they were under various pressing crisis. Their discomposed figure, their heated figure when making some kind of resolve, their failure, and also their hardworking figure, everything would get seen by their parents.

Thinking really carefully, certainly it might be embarrassing! Shame assaulted Kaori and co at this late.

An atmosphere that perhaps as expected it would be better to explain orally and stopped with the past playback was starting to flow.

「Tha, that's right isn't it. It's a bit, you know, the me at that time, was like that in various things.....」

「Ce, certainly. Unlike Kaori, I think it's fine for me at Orcus but.....I, I want to be spared from the past playback in the ic, ice and snow cavern.....」

「I wasn't here at all so there is no problem but.....after this.....e, especially in the city of Ur.....」

Seeing their daughter who were starting to become reluctant, Kaoruko, Kirino, and Akiko looked at Yue with a smile. Their gaze spoke more eloquently than their mouth.

Yue glanced at Hajime.

「That's why, Yue. Also you too Tio. Right now stopping it is——」

「Yue-chan, Tio-chan, Sumire-okaasan is feeling sad.」

Sumire cut off Hajime's words and said such things with a dramatized gesture.

Yue and Tio who were about to accept Hajime's words thinking that it couldn't be helped were startled and looked at Sumire.

「I really hope you two will listen to Okaasan's request. If not, Sumire-okaasan will become really sad and have to rethink about various things, about the suitability of my son's wife and so on——」

「.....Nn-! Please watch Okaa-sama! The image that is even more vivid than the combination of Ultra Blu-ray and 4K HD! Fast forward, replay, skip and slow function, everything can be done at will!」

There was no hesitation. Hajime raised his voice 「Yue!?', but Yue intentionally put her hand on her ear saying 「Eh? What did you say?」 and pretended not to hear.

While that was going on, the figures of Hajime and co getting teleported to the center of the stone bridge were projected.

Sumire and others, the mother camp high-fived 「Waa~i」 with each other. Shuu and others the father camp were sending Hajime kind gaze of understanding and sympathy. During that time the nostalgic Hajime and others of the past were teleported to the center of the stone bridge.

‘Oo!’ Cheers were raised. Sumire and co watched over their children of the past. But, their voice immediately quieted down and their expression stiffened.

——‘I definitely won't let you kids die!’

The tense voice of Captain Meld resounded.

The reproduced Behemoth and also the Traum Soldiers were things they had seen just now. They were monsters that Hajime and Kaori casually took care of.

But, the situation where the students inside the image were becoming half panicked conveyed the urgent situation at that time clearly. It conveyed the killing intent of the monsters fiercely through the image.

Kouki got into a heated dispute with Meld who was trying to make him retreat. Shizuku recommended to obey Captain Meld, but Kouki shoved aside the words of his childhood friend and resolved to fight.

There, Hajime came running.

——‘They're all panicking because their leader isn't with them!’

Hajime who had docile personality and thoroughly avoided quarrel raised a



thundering yell.

——'Quit being so focused on what's in front of you! Look at what's behind you for once!'

The classmates were attacked by the Traum Soldiers and showed a chaotic situation.

The scene of other kids also screaming in fear and despair while fighting made the parents wanted to avert their gaze.

The development after that was truly like surging waves.

Behemoth's charge. The shockwave blowing violently. Hajime and others who tumbled around like toys.

In the place of Meld and other soldiers who were wounded and couldn't move, Kouki and co challenged the monster.

However, even the hero's trump card "Heaven's Might" didn't do anything. Kouki was blown away and they ran out of method.

——'Carry Kouki out of here!'

Meld's words were directed to Hajime. His words said to abandon them the knights, and even Shizuku and others, to save only Kouki no matter what.

In this situation where no one would survive if someone wasn't abandoned, Sumire and others, especially the members of Yaegashi family who was shown right now the decision to cast away their daughter were gritting their teeth hard. Their daughter was lying down on the ground while groaning in agony before their eyes. It was unknown how they were feeling as parent.

Like that, the moment of destiny finally arrived.

A single young man whose fighting ability was equal to nonexistent came forward.

He only had a single weapon. With just the technique to process mineral, he remained in the battlefield by himself.

「Hajime.....」

「.....」

While everyone was retreating, he was frantically holding back Behemoth. Shuu called out the name toward that figure of his son, while Sumire was tightening her lips.

They understood. Their son normally had the principle to not rock the boat, but he was a child who wouldn't hesitate to take action when it was really mattered.

At this kind of time, he was a child who absolutely wouldn't show his back no matter how scared he was.

However, as parents they thought this as expected.

'Why didn't you run away.'

They felt proud of their son who took a step forward for the sake of someone else, but at the same time they also thought that they wanted him to discard such courage.

Like that, 「Ah」 a voice was raised.

It was unknown whose voice it was. Or perhaps, it might be the voice of everyone there.

The multitude of magic that rained down like falling stars were flowing above Hajime who was desperately retreating, and then, a single fire ball landed right beside Hajime.

Hajime was blown away easily like a leaf. His eyes were blank, however, he desperately tried to return.

That effort, was prevented by Behemoth's last killing intent.

「Hajime!」

Shuu and Sumire spontaneously reached out their hand toward Hajime inside the image.

As though reacting toward the two of them, Hajime was reaching out his hand while falling toward the abyss.

He was immediately swallowed by deep darkness and vanished.

What resounded after that was Kaori's yell. Only that sad yell that screamed

out her pain which broke open the heart echoed in the surrounding.

And then, the image of the past vanished suddenly.

Not to mention Shuu and Sumire, even Tomoichi and others continued to watch the spot where Hajime was falling.

Seeing that, Yue seemed to think of something and nodded 「Fumu」.

「.....Nn. That was a marvelous gutsy image of Hajime. I can eat three bowls of rice with only that gallant figure of Hajime just now.」

「.....Yue, try to read the mood for a bit.」

Kaori-san's tsukkomi ended up as empty air. Yue lifted her hand and said 「..... By the way everyone. Please look at this image for a bit」, then she snapped her finger while looking at Tio.

Tio wordlessly asked 「Ee~ seriously? We are going to do that in this atmosphere?」 with a troubled expression, but Yue pointed sharply with her finger as the GO sign.

Tio sighed while putting into her smartphone a pseudo SD card that had recording of past image. She then projected the image in midair with hologram.

——'Nagumo-kun, are you awake? It's me, Shirasaki. Can we talk for a bit?'

「!?」

「!?」

The two who reacted and turned their face toward Yue in a flash were Kaori.....and Hajime.

「Wawawa-, Tio! Stop!」

「.....I won't let you!」

Yue-sama took the advantage of Kaori's agitation and restrained Kaori with combination magic of gravity – space – binding light chain. Kaori screamed 「Fukya!?」 while collapsing on the ground like a bagworm.

「Hajime-kun! Please!」

「Acknowledged!」

Hajime aimed Donner at Tio. He planned to shot the smartphone. He pulled the trigger instantly without any hesitation.

But, in that instant,

「.....Shia!」

With Yue's order, the superhuman rabbit reacted spontaneously. She reached her hand in front of Tio with a speed that didn't even leave behind afterimage, and grasped the bullet that flew with speed that far surpassed the speed of sound.

Although it wasn't railgun shot, but this rabbit was really damn bugged..... Hajime thought with twitching expression.

Shia stepped in within that opening and restrained Hajime firmly with a solid grapple.

「Ahaha.....I'm sorry, Hajime-san.」

「.....In most case, you are prioritizing Yue rather than me huh.」

Hajime thought 「How miserable」 somehow.

The image kept playing even during that time. Kaori dressed in negligee entered into Hajime's room even though it was late at night.

「Kaorii!? Yo, yo yo yo, you are in a man's room dressed like that! Otou-san don't remember raising Kaori into such bad child!」

「Oh my Kaori! How bold!」

The Shirasaki husband and wife were in great excitement. Although it seemed their excitement's vector was to the opposite direction.

「Yue! Stop alrea——muguh」

Kaori removed the binding by disintegrating it along with the magic power, but she was unable to stop the recording. She was embraced by her own mother and her mouth was also blocked. There was no way she would be able to disintegrate her own mother.

Inside the recording, a conversation that caused the people involved to writhe in agony was continuing.

——‘Why don’t you protect me?’

——‘I’ll protect you, Nagumo-kun.’

Groans that sounded like ‘NUOOOOO~’ resounded. They came from Hajime and Kaori. It seemed the mental damage on them was critical.

Kaori separated herself from Kaoruko and covered her face with both hands and crouched down. Yue patted her shoulder kindly.

「.....Don’t worry Kaori. From here on I will also properly display my embarrassing sides after all.」

「Rather by that you mean, because it’s unavoidable if Hajime-kun’s past image is displayed, before that happen you will take me down with you.....it was something like that right? Right?」

「.....Kaori. This is what I think. Friends are wonderful.」

「Let’s review the definition of friend okay! It isn’t anything like a relationship to go to the grave together just so you know!」

Kaori grabbed at Yue with teary eyes. Yue lightly dodged her ‘hyoi hyoi’ while rhythmically humming 「Friend♪ Friend♪」.

Excluding Hajime who was still having a faraway look from the serious damage he bore due to shame, everyone returned from the painful atmosphere just now into the usual atmosphere seeing the two who was acting comical harmoniously like that.

Amidst that, Shuu was roughly stroking the head of Hajime who was busy running away from reality due to the lethal embarrassment damage.

「What are you doing, Otou-san.」

「It’s nothing? More importantly, what happen after this? From here on is exactly the time when you have it the hardest right? Show it to Tou-san properly.」

「.....Haa. I get it. I’ll bring you there. Just, it’s worrying that you all have Yue acting considerate just from a past image of this level.」

「Haha.....I get it.」

It seemed that everyone understood that more than the objective of taking Kaori down together with her in shame, Yue was projecting Kaori's past image because of her consideration to the parents.

Warm gazes that were filled with gratitude were showered to Yue who got her cheeks stretched out by Kaori.

Yue who noticed such gazes while her cheeks were stretched out *munyo~n* by Kaori blushed slightly from a bit of bashfulness.

—

—

—

Hajime and co arrived to the abyss instantly using gate.

When they stepped on the bank with flowing cold underground water where Hajime was washed away to, there was a magic circle there, the one that Hajime carved in the past using transmutation magic in order to warm himself.

After staring at that a bit emotionally, Hajime turned his gaze ahead of the tunnel, to the depth of the darkness.

「.....So Hajime, advanced through this path.」

Hajime shrugged affirmatively at Shuu's question.

「Now then, with us here, even the abyss won't pose any trouble. Although, the abyss is the abyss. The level of the monster here is different. I'm thinking to take some measures before advancing.」

Saying that, Hajime looked at Myuu. Myuu tilted her head in puzzlement. Hajime spoke to her.

「Myuu. It's the demon ranger's turn. Have them thin out the enemy at this floor for us.」

「Got it nano! You bastards~, it's time to work yeah! Nano!」

Myuu's exclusive treasure warehouse shined.

The next instant, smokescreen of seven colors that didn't have any particular meaning burst out! What showed up from inside the colorful smokescreen that

dispersed with a whirl were Myuu's exclusive multi legged living golems where each one of them were making cool pose.

Their name, Demon Rangers!!

「Everyone have at them! Nano!」

‘Aye aye-ma’am!!’ Demon rangers made a splendid salute as though to say that, equipped wheels at their feet, and then they showed beautiful skating like master of skiing while vanishing into the corridor ahead.

After a while, explosive sound *chudon*- and firing sound *dorururururu* resounded, then after that screams like 「Kyukyu!？」 or 「Gurya!？」 or 「Pigyaaaaa!？」 echoed.

‘Aa, surely the wild rabbit ears are being turned into raw meat thereee’, thinking so, Shia asked while her rabbit ears were slightly shaking.

「Hajime-san Hajime-san. Why are you using Myuu-chan's golems? I think it's fine to us your own Grim Reapers.」

Hajime scratched his cheeks awkwardly while replying with a really complicated expression.

「Well, that's true, but in that case, their action fundamentally will stay within the range of my perception no matter what. Even if there are multiple of them, it doesn't change the fact that I'm the one controlling them.」

‘However. Demon Rangers are.....’, when Hajime looked at Myuu,

「Myu? Myuu isn't controlling Bel-chan and others nano. Bel-chan and others will do their job properly if they are ordered nanon.」

‘Why are you asking something so obvious?’, Myuu tilted her head while saying so.

「That's why. Rather than controlling multiple bodies using the perception ability of a single person, seven people.....no, seven bodies? Aa~, well, setting aside the inside, having seven perception ability to deal with it is more certain right?」

「Thinking it over once more, what is “inside” them?」

Not just Shia, the other people were also asking with their slightly twitching expression. However, Hajime also didn't happen to have the answer. They tried looking at Myuu but,

「? Bel-chan is Bel-chan nano. Sa-chan and the others are also Sa-chan and the others nano.」

‘Why are you asking something so obvious?’, Myuu tilted her head while saying so.

「We, well, no matter. In this world here there is also soul magic or necromancy, this kind of thing must happen sometimes. I'll clarify it eventually but.....for now, it's not anything bad for Myuu so I guess I'll put it on hold.」

Their identity would come to light due to a certain incident, while the demon king would notice that the unnatural working of their consciousness that didn't try to seriously investigate the inside of the golems true identity seriously was the working of demon kings. But this was a story of slightly ahead in the future.

「Now then, those guys are securing the safety of this area so there is no problem.....Tou-san, Kaa-san. Also Tomoichi-san and everyone too. Sorry that I'm sounding persistent, but I think it's pointless to watch what happen from here, rather it will be disgusting. Putting aside Tou-san and Kaa-san, for Tomoichi-san and everyone else it's not like what happen here is related to Kaori and the others. Purely unrelated to my own feeling, I strongly recommend to not see the event here.」

Hajime's words that were laced with the air of seriousness didn't even shake Shuu and Sumire's determination.

Tomoichi and others looked at each other for a bit. And then, they seemed to reach mutual understanding and nodded to each other, then they turned a strong gaze toward Hajime.

「There is no way it's unrelated to us, Hajime-kun. We here are the parents of our daughter who got caught by a harem bastard. You, the case that made it necessary for you to become the current you.....as Kaori's father there is no way I can avert my eye from it.」

It seemed everyone shared that thinking of Tomoichi.



Then, Hajime shrugged and he had nothing further to say.

And then,

「Understood. Then, Yue, I'll leave the image projection to you. Skip and fast forward at the timely moment. After all I was here at this level for about ten days. Also, Kaori and everyone else, I'll leave the protection of everyone's mind to you all.」

Hajime gave his instruction while lightly lifting up Myuu in his arms for some reason. Next he also took Remia's arm and pulled her to his side.

Myuu and Remia tilted their head. Hajime smiled brightly to the two of them while saying this.

「Let's meet again here when you all finished. We are going to have tea time, so take your time.」

「Myu!? Papa! What about Myuu!? Myuu also want to watch nano! Or rather, papa also won't go with them nano!？」

「I won't.」

Hajime papa. His face was smiling, but his tone was firm.

Sumire and Shuu went 'Ee~?' with a dissatisfied voice.

「Hajime, just what are you saying.」

「No, Kaa-san. Why do I have to watch together with everyone else the scene of my sad self writhing around. What's more if I have to give commentary or something.....that's too surreal, impossible.」

「No, but you see, Hajime.....」

「Tou-san. If it's about what I was thinking at that time or whatever, ask about that to Yue and the others. When we created the Crystal Key at the ice and snow cavern, my emotion was completely transmitted to them. They should know about it really well.」

'Besides', Hajime strongly hugged Myuu while saying.

「If it's Tou-san and the other parents, and Yue and the others who already know about it then it's one thing! But I absolutely cannot show to Myuu the

embarrassing sight of me writhing around looking like this and that because of whatever while shouting kill kill kill!」

It seemed that was the biggest reason. A papa always wanted to show only his cool side to his daughter.

「It's not embarrassing at all nano! That's why, papa! Myuu also——」

「If you say that you want to see it no matter what, then go after crossing my corpse.」

It was a tremendous resolve and determination.

Myuu's expression became dejected saying 「Ee~, that's just not done nano.....」

And then, Myuu tried to wriggle and squirm to escape from Hajime's hold, but the desperate Hajime papa showed no carelessness or opening with resolve that there ain't no way he would show his daughter his black history. His hold was unshakeable and she couldn't get away.

「E~rr, dear. I'm also staying behind? I too have interest to your past though.....」

「Remia. Look, this struggle of Myuu. It's obvious that after this she will be in a bad mood. I need support to fix Myuu's mood during the time until everyone come back. The burden is too heavy for me alone.」

That's true. He would be the culprit of her bad mood. Like that the papa~s nodded deeply. It seemed that it was the same for everyone at how they had it hard when dealing with their daughter's bad mood when they were the cause.

his granddaughter

Shuu too, when he against his better judgment viciously beat up Myuu in a fighting game, Myuu would often tell him 「I hate someone like Shuu-ojiichan!」 and he would end up like a corpse, so recently he came to understand really well the difficulty of dealing with a daughter. ....Though that was simply him reaping what he sow.

While Remia mama was sending to Hajime papa a gaze that was saying 「My my, really you are.....」 as though she was looking at a truly difficult person, Hajime urged Yue and others with his gaze that was saying 「Now, leave

this place to me and go ahead!」.

Yue and others, and then Shuu and others advanced ahead with a really complicated expression.

From behind, a loud voice of 「Papa you idiooo~t!!」, and then there was a loud voice of 「Ouch!? Oi Myuu! You mustn't squeeze the base of the nail! Ah, oi! Don't bite!」, and a voice without a care 「My my ufufu」 were resounding. It made their expression became even more complicated.

Like that, after they took a distance that hid the figures of Hajime and others in the darkness, Yue finally reproduced the image of the past around the area of a large intersection.

The illusion Hajime that appeared in reality was advancing step by step even while looking scared.

The frail figure that was completely different from Hajime's current state that was overflowing with confidence that could even be said as haughty and arrogant made Shuu and Sumire looked nostalgic. Tomoichi and others looked like they couldn't connect the illusion figure with the current Hajime no matter what, so they were showing a bewildered expression.

Then, right after that, a battle between a kicking rabbit and two tailed wolf began. Hajime's expression was twitching at the kicking rabbit's overwhelming power and he tried to get away from that place.....

「Hajime-, don't!」

Right after Shuu spontaneously yelled so.

A cruel past began to play in a pace that was like raging wave.

The eyes of Shuu and others couldn't even perceive the kicking rabbit's charge. It was a kick that possessed a destructive power that surpassed Behemoth's charge even with that small body.

Hajime was blown away along with the blasting of the ground. He rolled over on the ground many times. His left arm was broken and dangled down powerlessly, however it didn't end there.

「U, a.....」

It was unknown whose groan it was. The appearing floor master——claw bear. Even through the image of the past, the atmosphere of killing intent and brutality that ran off the proper course could be felt.

Ahead of the gazes of the parents that were completely swallowed by the sight, Hajime lost his left arm. That arm was eaten right in front of him and he crawled deeper into the wall desperately while crying.

「Uh, guuh」

Kaoruko and Akiko fell on their knees. They put their hand on their mouth with their face losing complexion. It was literally a memory that overturned their stomach. Kaori immediately raised their mental resistance using soul magic and healed them with regeneration magic.

「.....He is really something.」

In the place of Shuu and others who were losing their words, it was Shuuzou who muttered with a low voice.

Koichi and Kirino whose expression was similarly grave like Shuuzou continued after him.

「Exactly. In this situation, there aren't that many people who can move for survival even only unconsciously.....」

「Normally, they would be unable to move from fear and it's over.」

Kirino got close to Sumire who was biting her lips.

Yue was making an expression that seemed to say 'No matter how many times I see it, I want to kill this claw bear!' while turning toward Shuu and others and asked.

「.....It will be even more terrible from hereon. Will it be fine?」

「.....Yeah. Please do, Yue-chan.」

Yue nodded briefly and continued the replay. In the reality, there was an entrance where people could enter while standing into the place where Hajime once used it as a base. They advanced from there.

The playback from there was fastforwarded. A total of ten days. Hajime

feeling nothing but agony and the process of the way of his mind getting remade could be clearly seen.

There was no help from anyone. There was darkness, hunger, phantom pain, and then solitude.

Even if there was anything unpleasant, Hajime's principle was always to make a troubled smile and warded it away without rocking the boat. Even when he stepped forward for someone else's sake, rather than getting into a fight he would perform a dogeza with his principle of nonviolence.

Such Hajime divided the world into two sides in order to survive.

That was, whether it was an enemy, or not.

And then, he established an absolute standard.

That was, to kill anything hostile to him. He absolutely wouldn't yield toward everything in this world.

A completely transformed look. Eyes that were like beast.

「Dear.....」

「.....」

Sumire clung on Shuu. Shuu also wordlessly hugged Sumire tightly.

From there it was the height of gruesomeness.

In order to survive, he slurped the lifeblood of beast and devoured their flesh. That was truly the act of a beast.

The breakdown of his flesh arrived. The regeneration using the divine water.

He was within the violent agony where death would be a salvation, however, it was a hell where he couldn't die by all means.

Breaking, healing, breaking, recovering.

Perhaps it was because of the agony that surpassed the permissible amount, his hair lost its color. Perhaps it was the proof of his reincarnation and growth, faint dark red line ran on his skin.

It was, truly.

The moment of the birth.

The monster of the abyss.

While such scene was playing, not just Kaori, even Tio and Aiko were busy rallying up the mental strength of the parents many times using soul magic. If they didn't do that, the parents' mind would already shut down from a long time ago. It wasn't a scene that could be watched by ordinary person with their sanity intact.

For a while no one said anything.

Before long, inside the past image, around the time Hajime was starting to do numbing trial and error in order to create Donner, Kaori opened her mouth and a small voice leaked out.

「.....I wasn't able to do anything for him. It can't be helped that I, we all vanished from inside Hajime-kun.」

Her eyes were holding back tears. Rather than sadness, it was the proof of her frustration.

Everyone's consciousness was finally taken off from Hajime and turned toward Kaori.

「I'm thinking it once more, I'm glad that Yue was here, at the bottom of this abyss for Hajime-kun.」

「.....Kaori」

Kaori spoke her words with her eyebrows knitted apologetically because she knew about Yue's suffering from being imprisoned for a long time here.

However, Yue didn't look like she was feeling any displeasure at the slightest, far from that she was showing a faint smile. A gentle smile.

Seeing the two of them like that, even the parents who had their heart completely chilled after losing all complexion watching Hajime's past that was too ghastly looked like they recovered back a little bit of warmth.

Even if only awkwardly, everyone had a small smile on their face. And then, they began to watch once more at Hajime who was standing up.

Following the past Hajime, they arrived at the scene of a decisive battle.

The battle against the claw bear that once broke Hajime's heart.

Even though they understood the result already, the ferocious battle made everyone clenched their sweaty hand.

Like that, Hajime who won the battle at the end and finished off the claw bear was.....

——'That's right... I just want... to go home'

He would live, and went home to his birthplace, to his family. To where his father and mother were.

No matter what he had to do. Even if he had to kill someone else.

He would absolutely go home.

He looked up and ascertained his own heart.

Hajime started walking. Toward the abyss's even deeper abyss.

However, this time he wasn't tumbling down into it, but with his own legs, carrying a clear and absolute determination, and resolve.

Shuu and Sumire couldn't endure it anymore. There was no way they could keep their tears from flowing.

Their cry might be infectious. Tomoichi and Kaoruko, and then Akiko too were wiping their eyes. Shuuzou and others seemed to hold some kind of large emotion within their heart which caused them to take deep breath repeatedly.

Yue, she took the hand of Shuu and Sumire and formed her words while smiling gently.

「.....Otou-sama, Okaa-sama. Please feel proud. Hajime was strong. He didn't return home because he became strong. He went home because since the beginning, his heart, was really strong. It was Otou-sama and Okaa-sama, who granted him that strength.」

「Yue-chan!」

Sumire was overcome with emotion and strongly hugged Yue. Shuu too hugged Yue along with Sumire.

Everyone was staring at that with warm gaze.

Before long, perhaps a bit embarrassed from such gazes, Yue tapped the back of Shuu and Sumire *pofu pofu* and separated her body from them.

Within the atmosphere that was solemn but somewhat warm, Yue coughed and cleared her throat.

「.....Then, for now let's return to where Hajime is. Hajime should agree now to properly accompany us from here. Or rather, I will make him come along.」

The first wife-sama declared with a serious expression. Next, in order to change the place's atmosphere, she even uttered something unnecessary.

「.....From here on, it will be the happy and embarrassing heroine time of Yue-san. Forgive me Kaori.」

「Why do you apologize I wonder!? I wonder!?」

「.....At first, surely anyone had this thought, the “Kaori is the heroine theory”. Forgive me for betraying that.」

「Who are you apologizing to!?」

「.....I'm sorry for stealing the person that you love.」

「Okay, you are picking a fight with me aren't you! I accept, bring iiit!!」

‘Calm down Kaorii!’ Said Shizuku while pinioning Kaori from behind. Kaori-san struggled somewhat more than usual.

With Kaori's noble sacrifice of her emotional state (?) as the compensation, the atmosphere recovered to some degree just as Yue aimed. To be able to use even recovery magic for the mood through the sacrifice of her emotional state, as expected from the healing master.

Like that, Yue and others returned to the bank where they first arrived at.

Shuu and Sumire were wracking their brain thinking what kind of words they were going to say to their son. Tomoichi and others were also at a loss of how they should act toward Hajime. When they arrived while feeling like that.....

「Look, Myuu. What about this? It's pretty right? It's a ring processed from the grantz crystal I mentioned just now. There is also a necklace see!」



There was the figure of the relatively no good Hajime papa who was desperately observing his daughter's mood by giving present of expensive accessory.

However, Myuu herself kept hugging tightly into Remia's chest. She looked like a koala.

She glanced across her shoulder briefly at Hajime, but she immediately huffed 'puh' and returned her face on Remia's chest. Her face was completely buried into Remia's breasts, so even her field of vision at the left and right was completely shut out.

The five year old kid who was completely sulking seemed to be a formidable enemy even for the monster of the abyss.

「Remia! Give me your wisdom!」

「My my, dear, really.....first thing first, I think trying to win over a young daughter using jewel is completely out you know?」

「.....Then, what about candy?」

「Myuu isn't that kind of simplistic woman nano.」

「Guh.....」

The monster of the abyss-sama finally collapsed on all four.

「.....Somehow, it feels stupid to think complicatedly.」

「You're right.」

The ghastly and grand past of just now felt unreal. No, well, he was like this right now after overcoming all of that, so it wasn't like it was strange though.....

The Nagumo husband and wife smiled wryly thinking that.

Tomoichi and others too, seeing the figure of Hajime in a whirl of busyness dealing with his daughter erased their pensive feeling.

However, their emotion and gaze were a bit different from before. Like that they walked toward Hajime, Myuu, and Remia.

‘Let's see, as your senior in fatherhood, we will kindly give you a little lecture in how to deal with your daughter’, the father~s said.

After that, it went without saying that the father~s got hit by their respective daughter's nitpicking of their fault and they got sunk instantly.

Like that, the "papa group" deepened their camaraderie in a strange way. The distance of their heart toward Hajime was especially shortening while the group went toward the next fateful location——

Toward the place of encounter of the monster of the abyss and the vampire princess.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The Orcus arc isn't finished.....

I plan to finish it at the next chapter, but before that forgive me,

I wish to have holiday for the Obon festival next week.

Best regards.

—

PS

Nichijou's newest chapter is in the middle of publication at Gardo.

Lily's pitifulness gave a nice taste lol

Also, in the latest chapter of Nico Nico Manga's Nichijou, they become able to use the space magic.

If you like please try reading it lol

# Arifureta Chapter 328

## Arifureta After III Tortus Travel Journal ⑧

—

Hajime papa who managed to fix the humor of Myuu somehow or other showed a tired look like right after his transformation from eating the monster meat the first time.

「About from here on ahead, it will only be a repetition of me single-mindedly fighting and eating monsters until floor 50. The sun will goes down if we are going to watch all of those, and it's not really entertaining anyway. I'm thinking to go right away to floor 50 so.....」

‘Is there any objection?’, Hajime asked with his gaze. Shuu and others replied that they didn't mind.

「.....Nna. We teleport?」

Yue raised her face with a slightly lascivious expression from Hajime Hajime's neck and asked.

She was replenishing her magic power that was decreasing from consecutive use of regeneration magic by bite and chuu~. It looked like she was biting from behind while getting carried on his back.

Yue habitually bit and chuu~ at everywhere on Hajime's body if there was a chance, so her movement was so natural just like how grass swayed from blowing wind. It was to the degree that there was no ground for making tsukkomi at it.

Yue was going to crawl her tongue on Hajime's nape looking like she wanted to have a bit more, but Kaori tore her off from him and tossed her away. Hajime glanced at that while saying.

「Before that, this is a good chance, there is something that I want to take a look for a bit beforehand.」

「Hajime, what could it be?」

Shuu tilted his head in puzzlement. The one who knew this place the best was Hajime, and there wouldn't be anyone else than Hajime who was doing anything here. It was natural to wonder what in the world he would want to see.

Hajime carried Myuu on his shoulder while starting to walk ahead. At the same time, he took out a sunglass from his Treasure Warehouse and put it on.

Sumire's gaze became excessively gentle.

「Hajime.....」

「Stop it Kaa-san. That gaze which is saying 『Putting on sunglass in a dark cave like this, geez, really this kid! He still isn't able to graduate huh!』, don't look at me with that gaze.」

This sunglass was an artifact to look at the past image——Urd Glass. Hajime explained while walking through the cave searching for something.

「Hajime-san, what are you searching for?」

Everyone walked behind Hajime. There Shia asked as their representative.

「A rabbit.」

「A rabbit is right here you know?」

*Pyon pyon!*, Shia rabbit hopped up and down while placing both her hands beside her rabbit ears. Attracted by that, above the shoulder Myuu was also mimicking rabbit ears with both her hands while going *pyon pyon!*

Hajime smiled warmly while adjusting the Urd Glass and looking around,

「Ah, there it is.」

Saying that, he sent a gaze at Yue asking her to execute regeneration magic.

Yue consented and snapped her finger.

What was projected was.....

「That's, a kick rabbit? Ah, could it be!」

Shia went *pyon!* with a comprehending expression. Right after her Kaori continued with the answer.

「Inaba-san!」

Yes, what was being projected before everyone was Inaba-san in his younger days with his splendid rabbit ears twitching around, no, this was the origin of Inaba-san!

「Kaori, what is this Inaba-san you are saying?」

In respond to Tomoichi's question, Kaori explained in a way so that everyone else could also understand.

She explained, that Inaba was a monster of this floor, a kick rabbit, but he accidentally consumed the god water that Hajime spilled behind, which strengthened his magic power and physical body further. From that he became an existence that deviated from a normal monster.

「It seemed that he was watching Hajime-kun defeat the lord of this floor, the claw bear. He said that if he too can still become stronger, then he want to chase after Hajime-kun! So he departed to a training trip while going down the floor with his own strength, that's the kind of rabbit he was.」

Tomoichi and others made admiring voice 'hoe~' hearing Kaori's explanation. Ahead of their gaze, Inaba-san was searching for the slightly remaining god water in the ground's depression and drank it while casually kicking and killing its brethren and two tailed wolf.

Shizuku smiled wryly while adding more explanation.

「before the final battle, Suzu who came here to obtain subordinate monsters accidentally discovered him and she formed a contract of employment with him.」

「Co, contract of employment.....」

——Full guarantee of all necessities of life. Three meals a day. No, four meals with afternoon nap included, five days work a week with two days off. Paid vacation provided! In addition, free time also could be negotiated! Furthermore! If the offer was taken right now, oh my, a special magic stone of Suzu would come along free of charge! With this you could say good bye to yourself of yesterday! Now, in this chance, wouldn't you take this status up surrounded by happy comrades in a lovely workplace!?

Surely, Suzu at that time wasn't right in the head. Because the monsters that obeyed her were nothing but insects, her heart became somewhat ill. She was desperate. It was for the sake so that Eri who was her opponent in the decisive battle wouldn't say「Ee, what's with this insect woman. It's disgusting.....」to her.

While hearing that explanation, Inaba-san finally had an encounter.

Yes, an encounter with the claw bear-san that was revived by the dungeon's characteristic function. The rabbit face was totally anxious looking like it was saying「This is bad-, totally badd-」.

The claw bear made the gaze of a predator and didn't doubt that it was absolutely the stronger monster. It approached as though to show off that dignity.

There was no place to escape. Death would be a certainty if he showed his back.

His instinct was ringing, insisting to run away immediately, but the thinking ability that was bestowed by the god water was thrusting that fact before Inaba.

There was no path of survival other than fighting, it said. Nothing but death was waiting if he escaped, it said.

『Kyu.....kyukyuu—!!』

「Oo! He resolved himself!」

「Inaba-san! Do your best nanoooo!!」

‘Rather than resolve, it's more like a complete desperation though.....’,

everyone starting from Shia who were watching the sight were thinking so, but the father and daughter who reconciled with each other were getting excited for some reason, so they were staying quiet.

Hajime and Myuu were completely transformed into cheering audiences. Everyone else glanced at the two of them who were like that while also directing their focus toward Inaba's do-or-die battle.

Inaba-san made use of his speed and did everything he could to leap around the claw bear. From a distance that should be said to be a super close range, he evaded the claw and fang of the claw bear and landed a low kick.

「Ah, that's dangerous nano-. Inaba-san! Put some more distance nano!」

Myuu reflexively covered her eyes with both her hands, however, she was properly watching the battle from the gap of her fingers while yelling.

「.....No, it's fine like that.」

「What do you mean papa, nano?」

「Listen Myuu. The claw bear, even though its body is big like that, it's a speed fighter. In a straight fight, it's faster than a kick rabbit. It will be a checkmate if that big body approach with that speed. It will be impossible to get out from its attack range.」

There was the extending wind claw, and also the flying slash.

In other words,

「It's only blind spot is right beside that big body! A super close infighting is the only path of survival for Inaba!」

「Oh gosh nano! It's a single high risk high return gamble! Inaba-san, what a man nano!」

The father and daughter were absurdly heated up.

「AA! Inaba-san's midair spinning kick hit the claw bear-san's head nanoo!」

Taking advantage of an instantaneous opening, Inaba leaped using a claw that was slashing at him as a foothold and his fierce spinning kick caught the claw bear's head. The claw bear staggered and pitched forward.

However,

「It's not working nano! Inaba-san! He got hit by a severe counterattack and got sent flyinggg! His stomach is seriously damaged nano! Papa, why is the claw bear alright nano?」

「At the moment of the impact, the damn bear shifted the hit spot slightly. That super reflex is also the claw bear's strong point. After all even my railgun too, as expected it couldn't be dodged if the enemy reacted after confirming the attack by sight, but it dodged it by sensing the killing intent the moment it fired.」

「I see nano.」

While they were speaking like that, Inaba narrowly escaped from that due to the continuation of the god water's effect. He raised a battle cry「Kyuuu~~~」 while standing up. It looked like he was saying「Not yet.....ain't no way, I'll die hereeeee-」.

「Wo~ah! Inaba-san's speed is increasing nano! What's more! He is accelerating further within acceleration nano! What could that be, papa!」

「That's.....Ground Shrinker and, Stacked Ground Shrinker. That guy, he awakened the derivative skill at this instant.....」

「Say, Myuu and Goshujin-sama. Somehow, both of thee hath become like commentators.....」

Myuu and Hajime looked at each other in respond to Tio's half smiling pointing out,

「No good nano! Even with him getting faster the claw bear-san is going even further than that! A sharp turn using the claw stabbing on the ground! The claw bear-san's mobility is monstrous! Nano! Inaba-san, he received a fierce tackle and got blow awayyyy! Commentator papa-san, is there any chance of victory for Inaba-san? Nano.」

「Broadcaster Myuu-san, let me answer. If it stay like this, Inaba-san's chance of victory is zero desu!」

「Both of thee art having fun!?」



When everyone noticed Myuu was even holding a mike. Above her broadcasting seat which was Hajime papa's shoulder, she shook around her small fist while continuing with her passionate broadcasting.

「Inaba-san fell! Can't he stand-, can't he stand anymore!? No, he stand up-, he is standing up, Inabaaaaaa-! Nano!」

「Standing! Inaba is standing! This is really soul stirring!」

Inaba-san was vomiting blood, even so he stood up. In his eyes the color of resignation was nonexistent. Rather, the flame of fighting spirit was burning up even more fiercely there!

And then, Hajime papa and Myuu were also blazing up! Somehow that spirited mood spread out, so that not only Sumire and other parents, even Yue and the others were also letting out feverish cheering.

Like that, Inaba got sent flying many times, he were slashed up many times, even so he held on to his thread of life by desperately moving to avoid fatal wound with the god water's recovery only barely holding on. Even while his whole body became covered in wounds and blood.....

「Inaba-san! Fast! He's fast! Only his afterimages can be seen nano!」

「I'll explain. That is a movement of variegated and free tempo using the skill Rhythmless. The braking and acceleration that are too drastic surpassing the focused acceleration and produced afterimages!」

「Thank you nano, commentator papa-san! Ah, when Inaba-san swung his feet at empty air, the claw bear-san got sent flying nano!」

「Fuh, it looks like he finally also learned the flying kicking attack——Rankoku. That cheeky bastard, he is rapidly growing in this battle.....no, he is evolving-」  
(TN: One Piece reference)

「oankyaku! Evolution in the middle of battle! Powerful words are coming out! Oooohh! What could that be, commentator papa-san! When Inaba-san crossed his feet while headstanding right below the claw bear-san, the neck of claw bear-san who should have dodged burst out and blood spurt like fountain nano!」

「Holy cow.....is that Dragon Slao.....」(TN: Slayers reference)

「ogon Slave? Commentator papa-san, what could that be? Nano.」

「It's the martial art that boasted undefeated in the history of a thousand years.....the opponent will die!」

「Commentator papa-san who is getting lazy with the explanation, thank you very much nano! Just search the explanation in google okay! Nano!」

Kaori spoke 「Myuu-chan!? Who are you talking at!?」 in bewilderment, Shia was saying 「That bastard, he was hiding his technique.....how impertinent. Next time, I'll make him taste my Muoha desuu」enthusiastically, while Shuu and the parents were cheering in high spirits. Right after that, Inaba made his last dance. (TN: Search for 無空波 in google for the reference of Shia's word)

The claw bear's balance crumbled from consecutive flying kicks, furthermore Inaba-san leaped up using Rhythmless and vanished from the claw bear's field of vision. He landed on the ceiling right above.

His bending legs caused a great crack to occur on the ceiling, the next moment, 「KyukyuuUUUUUUU (With this.....IT'S OVERRRRRRRR-)」 along with such battle cry, a crater was formed on the ceiling while he fell like a comet.

The crown of the head of the claw bear that had just adjusted its balance was pulverized when the strong kick with maximum power landed.

「「「「「YEAHHHHHHHH— — — —」」」」

「INABA BANZAI!」

「INABA AWESOME!!!」

「「「INABA-! INABA-! INABA-! INABA-!」」」

「He did well despite his injury! Thank you for the moving scene!」

Loud hip-hip-hurray applause was echoing inside the cave. Even the demon rangers who had returned when anyone noticed were stomping the ground with their many legs and giving grand applause.

Ahead of the gazes of Hajime and co who were as though they were looking at a Hollywood masterpiece action movie, was Inaba-san looking up to the sky

in front of the formidable enemy he defeated.

Even without any words, from his strongly clenched fist, his rabbit ears that were standing up straight toward the sky, and his rabbit tail that was shaking with warrior's excitement, it was easy to guess the inside of his heart.

Right now, he understood his wish. That wish was to train himself, and ran up toward the faraway height. It was the wish to go out to the wide world, fight against a the line up of powerful opponents, and then one day, to reunite with the new king!

With his front leg he brushed away his rabbit ears *fuasa*-!

Like that Inaba-san started walking. Toward the dark path ahead.

「.....Somehow I'm feeling déjà vu.」

「Before this, it's exactly like what my son had done.」

Hajime pretended to not hear the words of Shuu and Sumire and looked aside.

Sumire mama and Shuu papa grinned widely toward such son while attacking further.

「Or rather, compared to a certain somehow who was messily eating various things that mustn't be eaten.....」

「While chanting kill kill disturbingly, while laughing like a psycho.....」

「He is, far more like a main character isn't he!」

「He is, far more like a main character!」

‘Certainly!’ Tomoichi and the others also nodded.

In respond to the parents who were like that, Hajime screamed ‘This is why, I don't want to show my black history at all!’ inside his heart while yelling back 「My bad okay! For not being like a main character!」 with slightly reddened cheeks.

—

—

The party that was greatly heated up from the beginning of Inaba-san's adventure directly teleported to floor 50 also because of Hajime's shame.

In that place, there was a large door that was in an opened state, and large human shaped depression at both sides.

In front of that sight, Hajime turned a worried expression toward Yue.

「Are you alright, Yue?」

「.....Nn. No problem.」

This was, the place where Yue was imprisoned for three hundred years. Ordinary person wouldn't even be able to guess what she was feeling inside her heart.

Guessing Hajime's concern, Sumire and the others were also giving her worried look.

「Yue-chan. If it's painful for you, you don't need to force yourself you know?」

「It's just as Sumire said. Yue-chan, if you like we don't mind if we just go already to the hideout at the lowest floor.」

「.....Nn?」

The concerned Sumire and Shuu, and then Tomoichi and others who were also feeling the same were directing gaze of consideration toward Yue. However, Yue was showing a perplexed expression that seemed to say 「Eh? What's with this atmosphere.....」. But, she immediately guessed the circumstance and smiled wryly while opening her mouth.

「.....It's misunderstanding, Otou-sama. Okaa-sama.」

「Misunderstanding?」

「.....Nn. Hajime is worried, not because this is the place where I was sealed. Ahead from here, I was mostly stark naked, that's why.」

「「Ah.....」」

When Yue said that shyly with blushing cheeks while fidgeting, not just Shuu and Sumire, everyone there leaked out 「Ah」 from their mouth.

Correct, Yue-sama, from here on ahead, she would be mostly wearing only a coat with opened front while being stark naked underneath. She would be in such truly outrageous appearance all along from here. When there was battle, it was a coat with defensive power that was lower than a wet tissue. This was the same like a lavish panty shot.....no, it was a dreadful appearance that was normally exhibiting this and that completely.

「Tha, that is certainly, it's understandable that Hajime-kun would worry.....」

Tomoichi's words that had no composure at all was responded by Yue with the shaking of her head.

「.....No, what Hajime is worrying about, is not me but the eyes of Otou-sama and everyone else.」

「.....Eyes?」

「.....Nn. The meaning of his worry is 『Are your countermeasure really effective? Depending on the situation, the eyes of Tou-san and others will get crushed but even so, is it really okay, Yue?』, like that.」

「Hajime-kuuun!?!」

Knowing that his eyes were in the verge of danger, Tomoichi turned in a flash toward Hajime. Shuuzou and Koichi were also taking slight distance away from him in wariness.

In the home, when they almost got a look of various things from a happening that was like lucky pervert event (mainly caused by Yue and others running wild), Shuu often got hit with eye crushing or electric attack. Because of that right now he was making a comprehending look.

Hajime was showing a really surprised look seeing the slightly scared Tomoichi. Seeing that, Tomoichi said 「As expected, it must be Yue-chan's joke isn't it」 and he was going to sigh in relief.....

「There is regeneration magic so it's fine.」

「It's not fine at all!」

It looked like, regeneration magic would give bad influence in various senses.

Hajime coughed while watching Shuuzou and Koichi who were taking even

more distance from him.

「No, it's really alright. Because Yue want Tou-san and Kaa-san to watch the time when she met me no matter what, it seems she has already prepared a countermeasure properly.」

「.....Nn. Leave it to me.」

Yue-sama was full of confidence. Seeing that attitude in this situation where it was involving the possibility that her nakedness could get seen, Shuu and the others felt tension leaving their shoulders thinking that it would be fine in that case. The seriously wanted to be spared from getting their eyes crushed, and also from the situation where their wife would give off frightening air that would be accompanied with some kind of physical violence.

「.....Then, let's start.」

Yue's finger snap echoed clearly. The past playback began.

The past Hajime appeared, and two pseudo Cyclops manifested from the wall's depression. Hajime took care of them with his gun.

「By the way, these monsters don't resurrect because only the monsters related to this sealing room have a different origin.」

Hajime's explanation was given while the past Hajime was fighting the other remaining pseudo Cyclops.

In other words, while the great labyrinth's monsters were prepared by Oscar Orcus and his comrades the liberators, the pseudo Cylops and pseudo scorpion were monsters created by Yue's uncle, Denreed, so they wouldn't resurrect again.

Denreed was a user of creation magic and metamorphosis magic, but he couldn't use regeneration magic or soul magic, so it was only natural that it was like this.

「.....Nn! It's here! Everyone attention! Here! Here!」

At the same time when the explanation ended, Yue-sama was greatly excited for some reason. She extended her finger straight and urged for attention.

Inside the projection, Yue who was imprisoned within a gigantic sealing stone

was desperately saying 「Help」 with a hoarse voice.....

——‘No way’

And there was the figure of Hajime-san who was going to close the door mercilessly.

Everyone’s gaze turned toward Hajime.

Seeing an imprisoned beautiful girl desperately asking for help, Hajime looked absurdly suspicious and absurdly irritated.

Even Shia and others who knew about this already were making look that said 「This is just not done isn’t it~」 or 「Demon~」 once more. As for the parents, it went without saying.

However, when it came to Yue-sama herself who was the person who got abandoned,

「.....Nnh, this lack of hesitation. Hajime right now who is extremely sweet is also great for me, but Hajime of this time who was relatively merciless was also great. Kufu-」

She looked slightly intoxicated. She was already, or rather, as expected, this person, if it was regarding Hajime then it seemed anything would be fine.

「Yu, Yue. Acting like that, art not that mine character? I wish that you wouldst not take away mine setting.」

「Tio-san, I think it’s not that kind of problem though.」

Tio was speaking with troubled look. Aiko too was giving a tsukkomi with even more troubled look after that.

「That time at the encounter with me, Hajime-san was also completely merciless though.....although I sometimes talked about it with beautification, even so I won’t get intoxicated while remembering about it. Yue-san is too much of an advanced level. As expected from someone who is able to hit it off with Kaori-san.」

「Shia!? What do you mean by that!? I wonder!？」

「The meaning is exactly like it sounds. Kaori, you, remember like the time

when Hajime dropped his fist on your head because you played around with Yue too much, you were grinning for a bit from that weren't you? Both of you are two of a kind.」

「.....」

When Shizuku pointed that out, Kaori turned her gaze to far away. Tomoichi was crying seeing his daughter wasn't denying that.

「.....Nnh. Quiet! It will be the important scene after this! It's Hajime and my, yes, Ha – ji – me – and – my! Scene of the beginning!」

「You don't need to emphasize it like that! Yue you idiot!」

Inside the sealing room where Kaori's angry yell echoed, Yue's pained scream 「I was only betrayed!」 resounded.

Hearing those words, the light from the gap of the door that was becoming a thin line kept shining in just barely before it completely vanished.

Hajime looked up to the ceiling.

A painful silence was enveloping the area.

At this time, what could be happening inside the heart of Hajime who was betrayed and fell into the bottom of the abyss.

For the sake of living, he shaved off all superfluous parts and swore in his heart to make his wish come true even if he had to get off from humane path.

And yet, with that single sentence, he stopped moving the door that he should close. His expression turned like he had just bit a sour grape.

His heart vehemently argued to not get involved with something unnecessary, however, his body wouldn't obey.

When he noticed, he was opening the door.

As though to buy time in order to ascertain his heart, Hajime asked Yue's circumstance.

And then, Yue was simply earnestly staring at such Hajime continuously.

She looked as though, she was a person who was witnessing a miracle itself. Or perhaps, like a person who finally came across someone she had been



waiting all this time by chance.

Like that, it gushed out.

Hajime should have cut off everything, removed anything that would be a hindrance, and swore to live only for himself, but he then poured all his strength in order to save only a single girl.

Vivid crimson color filling the room. Red sparks brushing away the darkness.

The cage of three hundred years, melting down like mud.

Like that seeing the liberated Yue, Hajime was.....

「No, this just ain't right, Yue.」

「!？」

A tsukkomi came with a greatly twitching expression. Yue-sama, a shocked face was on her face as though to say 「That's impossible!？」.

「Right, this isn't right at all, Yue.」

「It's disappointing nano, Yue-oneechan.」

「!？」

Kaori and Myuu launched their exasperated tsukkomi. Yue-sama, her face was twitching as though to say 「You're lying right!？」.

「Yue-chan, can you perhaps make it a bit better?」

「Okaa-san, is sad. Yue-chan's sense, perhaps it'll be better if I personally polish it.」

「!？」

Tsukkomi mixed with a sigh also came from Shuu and Sumire. Yue-sama, her face was blank as though to say 「I don't understand」.

She believed in hope and looked around but.....there wasn't even a single ally for her.

If it was said that it couldn't be helped, perhaps it really couldn't be helped.

After all, no matter although it was so that her nakedness wouldn't be seen.....

——This can't be shown!

There was a Self Restraint-kun appearing in front of Yue holding a signboard with those words. (TN: Ask google sensei this 自主規制君 to know what is going on)

Even though it was a serious and moving scene, it became wasted in various things because of this.

「.....Ho, howevert, in TV it's always like this!」

「It's mainly in variety show right? If this comes out in the emotional scene of a drama, the show will undoubtedly goes down in flame.」

「!? Blu, blunder.....」

The vampire princess who sometimes just fail fell on her knees and then got on all fours.

This was the result from her thinking that from the sensitivity of Japanese than Self Restraint-kun surely wouldn't harm an emotional scene, but actually, that sensitivity, isn't it a bit.....but, when in Rome do as the romans do.....nn, it should be ok! Was what Yue thought. This was a complete lack of research on her part.

It was like the misunderstanding of foreigner who was under the impression that in Japan there would still be someone who was styling their hair in topknot.

「.....E, even though I thought, that I finally can show my emotional scene with Hajime to Otou-sama and Okaa-sama.....」

「Aa~, Yue? This is an illusion laid on the past image right? Then, won't it be fine if you just overlap clothes appropriately on your image?」

「.....Hics. I'll do that. Okaa-sama, Otou-sama, can I replay it for a bit? Is it okay to do a Take 2?」

The warm expression of the Nagumo spouses expressed their okay permission more eloquently than anything.

Take 2-!!

For now in the image Yue looked like she was wearing a dress. The figure of Hajime breathing roughly from magic power exhaustion was also projected.

The Yue in the image had faint expression that couldn't be compared with the current her. However, she took Hajime's hand and with a straightforward gaze,

——'Thank you'

They could see the overflowing emotion from Yue who was saying that.

「.....Well, about this time」

「What is it?」

Shuu asked in respond to Hajime's mutter. Ahead of their gaze, the moment when Yue became "Yue" for the first time was playing. Everyone was watching with a moved expression and warm gaze.

Hajime stared at the past Yue with a gentle expression. And then he turned his gaze toward the current Yue and opened his mouth.

「When Yue told me "thank you", perhaps, it connected me to Yue. Like, even though I've fallen to become a monster, I didn't fall to become a fiend.」

Saying that, Hajime turned his gaze toward the past image once more. When everyone's gaze followed to where he was watching, there was the image of Hajime and Yue facing the pseudo scorpion.

The pseudo scorpion had terrific appearance that was in a different level from anything before.

Yue was in front of that monster, however, she was calmly staring at only Hajime.

That wasn't a gaze that was begging for help at all.

It was a gaze that yielded herself to him.

It was the expression of her will, that no matter what option Hajime picked, she would entrust her everything to him.

Getting betrayed, and then three hundred years in the darkness at the bottom of the abyss.

Toward the determination of such girl, Hajime formed a fearless grin that

bared his canine teeth.

「Thinking back, the determination at this time was the turning point. It wasn't about walking to the future with Yue or not. It was the crossroads, whether I'll be able to stay as me or not. Seeing Yue who entrusted her life to me even after getting betrayed and then locked into this kind of place, rather it was me who was saved.」

He was going to completely lose his human heart and be reduced into a beast that wouldn't shirk from any inhuman act.

If he abandoned Yue, or perhaps, if Yue only begged to be saved without caring of her appearance, surely Hajime would walk through such path, and then he wouldn't interact with Shia or anyone else, and surely he also wouldn't be able to laugh like right now.

「.....Hajime」

Yue entangled her hand to his hand and snuggled on him. Hajime's hand gently grasped her hand back and poured an extraordinarily gentle gaze on her.

Although the past Hajime and Yue were in a mortal combat against the pseudo scorpion, however, the gazes of Shuu and others were directed to Hajime and Yue.

The two snuggling on each other looked really natural. They looked really picturesque.

It truly made anyone watching to be convinced without any reason, that the two were fated to meet and in the end they actually met with each other.

Shuu and Sumire stood before Yue.

「Yue-chan, thank you that you met with our son.」

「It was really great that in this foreign land of another world, Hajime was able to meet a girl like Yue-chan.」

「.....Okaa-sama, Otou-sama.」

‘Nnu’ The sound of a small groan surely came from Yue holding back her tear.

At that time, within the past projection Hajime and Yue finished defeating the

pseudo scorpion at that timing and smiled at each other.

Kaori puffed up her cheeks slightly, however she immediately formed a wry smile that seemed to express 「It can't be helped」.

Even Kaori was feeling like that. The expression of everyone else was soft, and then, they certainly seemed to be understanding.

How Yue was special for Hajime, and how Hajime was special for Yue.

What was between the two of them was something unshakeable that no one, yes, not even god could lay their hand on.

「Kaori, you're amazing. To charged in between these two, Okaa-san is in admiration at you once more.」

「Is that a praise.....I wonder? Somehow it also sound exasperated though.....」

Kaori's expression was complicated toward Kaoruko's words. And then, Tomoichi's expression looked like he had stomachache, it was a hard to describe and complicated expression.

「It's really just as you say. Aiko, since when you became that proactive? What's more even though it's with your student.」

「Fuguuh!？」

Aiko-sensei. Her expression became hard to describe, as though her vital spot got stabbed through.

「Shizuku——」

「Don't say anything, Okaa-san!」

「It's amazing that you got between them, Shizuku. What's more, even though it was with a person who your best friend Kaori-chan loved.....the life in another world really changed our daughter.」

「Fuguuh!？」

Beside Aiko-sensei, Shizuku was also making a hard to describe expression, as though she just got hit with the body blow from a heavy weight boxer.

「However, if we art saying that then Shia is the most amazing one then. Thou were the first attacker right? Furthermore, at that time it was Goshujin-sama

who was still eighty percent made from brutish factor, and against Yue who was the advocator of Goshujin-sama supremacy——no, Yue who couldst be called as the founder of Hajime religion without any exaggeration. Thou art seriously a hero.」

「A, ahaha.....looking back, I was really blind to any fear even if I say so myself.」

While Shia and others were laughing like that, Yue who separated herself from Hajime took the hand of Shuu and Sumire.

「.....Nn! Next, over here! Otou-sama, Okaa-sama, over here! Come!」

「Oops! I get it I get it. Yue-chan, we will properly follow, so you don't need to pull like that.」

「Fufuh, Yue-chan really, you are so high spirited.....」

Seen from the side, Yue who was insistently pulling at the two was really enthusiastic. Her cheeks blushed and her eyes sparkled. She looked like a child in amusement park pulling at the hand of her parents toward a ride.

It seemed she was very happy that she could share with Shuu and Sumire her important memory with Hajime.

Starting from Hajime, everyone was stimulated by the gap moe from her childish figure and they had a warm expression. Even Kaori who usually should be ridiculing Yue right away was like that, so it could be seen how powerful the destructive power of the childish Yue.

The place that such Yue was pulling them toward, was a cave in the same floor.

「.....Nn. This is the place, where I and Hajime conversed with each other slowly for the first time, after finishing the battle against the pseudo scorpion.」

The finger snap went *snap*-. The past projection started.

The two's conversation. Before long, the scene that Yue wanted to show the most arrived.

——'Going home?'

——‘To my original world? Of course I’ll go home. I want to go home. ....I have completely changed in various things but, I want to go back to my birthplace.....to my home.’

Shuu’s hand messed up Hajime’s hair roughly, while Sumire placed her hand softly on his shoulder. Perhaps Hajime was slightly embarrassed, because he intentionally didn’t react and fixed his gaze toward the image.

Ahead of his gaze, shadow fell on Yue’s expression.

——‘I already, don’t have.....a place to go back to.’

Unlike the past Yue, the present Yue’s expression was extraordinarily sweet, and overflowing with warmth.

It was clear to anyone’s eyes, that the next words were a treasure that couldn’t be replaced by anything for Yue.

——‘Then, won’t Yue come too?’

Hajime’s words asking if she would come along to his birthplace.

Yue couldn’t hide her shock, however, she asked 「Is that okay?」 along with hope and slight anxiety that couldn’t possibly be hidden.

When Hajime nodded in respond.....

「He fell.」

「He fell in love there.」

「.....」

The words of his mother and father made Hajime averted his gaze with all his strength this time. While getting slightly red. While thinking that the grinning face of his parents was extremely annoying.

Although, it couldn’t be helped that Hajime reacted like that. That was how charming the smiling face of Yue that was like a blooming flower after making that “promise”.

Kaori leaked out a negligent voice 「So this was it~, this was where Hajime-kun~, Tio and Shia spoke 「Now I see」「It can’t be helped isn’t it」 in understanding, 「.....Dear?」「Yo, you’re wrong Kaoruko! It’s not like I got

charmed or any—huh!?!」 and the comedy skit of Shirasaki spouse played on.

「I, I'll say this first, at this time it was still like that you know? I'm telling you I wasn't that much in love with Yue okay? We were in the middle of survival live with our life in the line. Something like time off for romance was—」

「We get it, we get it. In other words, you fell in love, but the situation was too desperate in various senses that you “didn't have the awareness”, that's what you're saying right?」

「Right, he just didn't have the self-awareness. Even so, the factor that made Hajime fall in love with Yue-chan was “blushing smile” wasn't it~. It was that kind of smile so if you said that it can't be helped it can't be denied but Shuu and Sumire were speaking together to Hajime who was making twitching expression with grinning face that couldn't get any wider.

「Hajime-san, you were seriously easy heroine!!」 (TN: In the raw they called Hajime choroin, or choro heroine, or easy heroine. It referred how in WN or LN a heroine can easily fall in love with the MC or consoled just from a single smile or the like)

「Shut up!」

Even though he was a man, the monster of the abyss, someone who was called the demon king and the like, to be like a heroine that blushed easily when getting smiled at.....

Hajime couldn't admit it by all means and objected. But Yue silently snuggled up on him and smileee-.

Hajime-san, he became quiet like a deflating balloon.

Everyone thought.

‘That's seriously easy!!’

「.....Fufu」

「Nuguh」

Yue looked delighted, and Hajime raised a groan. And then, ‘that's some guts trying to lead me around by the nose.....no, I really got led around by the nose already but, that's that, this's this! No way I can back away like this!’



Like that, Hajime was somewhat getting wild while in embarrassment.

He took out the Crystal key and connected the space to somewhere,

「Let's stop by somewhere else for a bit. There is something that I want everyone to look no matter what.」

Saying that, Hajime invited everyone to the other side of the gate.

The place they arrived was a cave that was particularly gloomy. Hajime used Urd Glass to confirm the past's time axis and place before whispering to Kaori for some reason to perform past playback magic.

When Kaori was doing the past projection just as she was told while getting bewildered.....

「That's, Yue right?」

「.....Nn. That's me but.....-!?」

Inside the cave, Yue who was properly clothed was walking alone while looking around restlessly.

Why, she was at this kind of place.....rather, why, Yue was alone here.....

Kaori was going to speak that question representing everyone, however, those words were prevented from coming out by Yue who turned toward Hajime in a flash looking like she had noticed something.

「.....Ha, Hajime?」

「Hm? What's wrong Yue? You looked shaken. I only want everyone to watch Yue's cute aspect you know?」

「.....Payback for just now!? Childish!」

「I don't know what are you saying.」

Hajime laughed 'ha-ha-ha-ha-'. Yue looked at him with a slightly angry look saying 「Geez-」 while——assaulting Kaori.

「Wai-, Yue!?」

「.....Resolute, prevention!」

「Shia!」

「Acknowledged!」

The rushing Yue and the shaken Kaori. Hajime who handed down the order that was even accompanied with aura of supremacy. Shia who moved reflexively from her conditioned reflex.

Yue's face crashed on the chest of Shia who stood on her way with speed that didn't even leave behind afterimage. Without delay she then got restrained by Shia's breast valley and both arms.

‘Fuga!? Fugafuga!’ Only that sound could be heard but, surely she was saying 「Shia!? Me and Hajime, whose ally you are!?」.....perhaps.

Even while all that was going on, the image was still playing. At the same time, Hajime started explaining.

「This is image from after conquering the lowest floor and we were training using the hideout as base. I was doing hide-and-seek with Yue as training in presence isolation. Yue had the demon role. Because she is a vampire.」 (TN: In the raw, there was a play of word here. The kanji for vampire has the kanji for demon mixed in it. That's why as the vampire Yue got the demon role)

‘You are doing wordplay there.....’ Such tsukkomi was poured on Hajime from everyone's gaze, but Hajime-san didn't pay it any mind.

「Please look. The figure of Yue who was unable to find me and gradually become anxious.」

‘Fugaa~h’, a stifled voice resounded from Shia's breasts, but Shia also didn't know about this scene, so she said 「Yue-san, sorry! But, I'm curious!」 and strengthened the restrain from curiosity.

——‘Ha, Hajime~? Le, let's take a break for a bit? Come out~’

Yue-chan couldn't find Hajime and raised her voice while walking trudgingly inside the cave.

However, in training, Hajime of this time was absurdly stoic. He was a person who would act until surpassing the limit in everything.

——‘Wh, why aren't you replying to me? Hajime~’

Her eyebrows were knitted down pathetically, her small hands were placed in

front of her chest, while walking coweringly, nervously. That figure of Yue-chan was far removed from the figure of the current Yue-sama who was brimming with confidence.

She was like a lost child.....

It was a figure that dangerously stimulated the protective desire, to the degree that the parents almost stepped forward reflexively altogether. If it was in the middle of city, it was guaranteed that the big friends or the self-styled gentlemen would gallantly come to protect her. Without fail!

Hajime-san who should be able to hear the voice of such Yue-chan, even so Hajime-san didn't come out.

In everything, do it until surpassing the limit!

Like that, Yue-chan passed through the limit.

——'Hajimee~, whereee~, uwaaaahn'

It was only a matter of time until she cried, Yue-chan wiped her eyes while starting to cry normally!

As expected, it seemed Hajime couldn't endure that and hurriedly rushed out.

While keeping such image at the corner of their eyes, everyone's gaze moved toward Shia's chest.

Yue who was liberated from the restrain was covering her face with both hands. It really looked like she was in a state of wanting to enter a hole if there was one! She was bright red from her ear until her neck.

There,

「Yue-oneechan, is cute nano!」

Myuu's words were half serious and half consoling in her own way but,

「.....Please just kill me.」

Yue-sama who was immortal so she couldn't die held her knees curled into herself!

It was a truly rare appearance.

「Hajime. You are really childish huh. Good job!」

「Really, to be happy from seeing Yue-chan's crying face, what kind of sadist you are. I don't remember raising up that kind of son, GJ!」

Hajime smiled with a sigh 'fuh'. With the parents like this, the son was also like this. And then, 「Uu, Stupid Otou-sama and Okaa-sama! Also, Kaori who is grinning over there, you'll absolutely get judgment」 Yue expressed her indignation.

Kaori raised her voice 「Why only me!?」. Completely ignoring that, Yue opened a gate with a heart that was blazing in revenge.

「.....Everyone, over here.」

The pressure that wouldn't let any objection to be said caused Hajime to let out cold sweat saying 「Crap, I might have overdone it」. While he was like that, the place they arrived at was a cave somewhere.

Right away, green spheres flew from deeper inside like buckshot.

「.....Nn, Lighting Dragooon」

GOAAAAA- The lightning dragon raised the roar of a thunderbolt and annihilated all the green spheres while going deeper into the cave.

A beat later.

From inside the scream of 「GYAAAAAAAH!?」 could be heard, but it became silent right after that. ....Evil had left. Without even any chance to make its appearance.

Yue began the past playback as though nothing had happened.

It projected Yue who had flower blooming on her head that manipulated her, and a vexed Hajime. And then a quasi alraune appeared. A scene of Yue being turned into hostage which would be an impossible sight at the present flew into their sight.

——'Hajime! Don't mind me.....shoot!'

A tragic heroine, get. Everyone was holding their breath at the urgent situation and Yue's self-sacrifice.

‘Where has the comedic footage just now gone to, it suddenly become too serious!’ Shuu and others wanted to say.

But, as expected serious-san was in the middle of vacation.

——‘Eh, is that okay? That saved me the trouble.’

*DOPAN-♪*, after a li~ght speech, the trigger was pulled with a really li~ght feeling.

Above the crown of Yue’s head burst, and the pulverized flower fluttered in the air.

Inside the projection, Yue went 「Eh?」. Even the quasi alraune went 「Eh?」.

At the same time, Shuu and others also went 「Eh?」.

「.....Nn-. Everyone, do you see! Do you see!? Hajime, he shot! He shot me without hesitation! Please look! My scalp, it was shaved! The sound *pshew-*, it was the sound of my scalp getting shaved! Truly a brute! Inhuman! A super sadist!」

‘Certainly!’ Everyone nodded.

It appeared Yue brought out the “Yue-sama’s scalp *pshew-* incident\* for revenge against Hajime. It seemed she was plotting to overwrite the memory of her embarrassing past using Hajime is a brute opinion.

「Hajime, you, such thing.....」

「If it’s in a tale, Yue-chan is the heroine you know? I never heard something like a main character that shaved the scalp of the heroine.」

「Hajime-kun, don’t tell me, you’ve never done anything like that to Kaori too right?」

Shuu, Sumire, and Tomoichi stabbed Hajime with their creeped out gaze. In addition Kaoruko, Akiko, and Kirino too were stabbing him with gaze that was saying 「As expeted, Yue-chan is too pitiful」.

Hajime tried to cling on a ray of hope by sending his gaze to Shuuzou and Koichi, thinking that if it was them then perhaps they would recognize his method as valid when a hostage was taken? But,

「We, well, that's. That was a nice shot.」

「Although it was in order to shot through the flower, aiming at the head is..... as expected it was shocking.」

Koichi and Shuuzou, as expected they were creeped out. 'That's impossible!' Hajime pleaded. 'You two are in the lacking common sense faction right!? Here is a scene where you two should go 「Umu, splendid!」 isn't it!?' He insisted with his gaze.

「Ha, Hajime-kun at this period, is really merciless isn't he.....」

「Ka, Kaori, even you.....」

「Look, those eyes of Goshujin-sama when saying 『saved me the trouble』 and pulling the trigger! Not calling those eyes as the eyes of a brute art——」

「Tio, you just shut up.」

「Papa.....」

「Sto, stop it, Myuu! Don't look at papa with those eyes like you are looking at someone beyond help!」

Hajime papa who seemed to be tormented the most by Myuu's gaze threw a sharp glare at Yue who was making a triumphant look for some reason.

「Yue, you, you are still holding a grudge huh. That's really petty of you.」

「.....Nnh!? What a remark. Even though it's a fact that Hajime is a brute.」

「It's in the past. Besides, you are too exaggerating just from getting your scalp shaved slightly.」

「.....It's not that kind of problem. The shooting itself is the problem.」

「You told me to shoot.」

「.....You don't understand woman's heart too much.」

「It was because I was considerate to your woman's heart that I even showed hesitation in the middle of combat. Or rather, in reality there was also the idea of not aiming at the flower and just shot through the face, and yet I did my best to settle it with only shaving your scalp.」

「!? .....Fi, first time I hear that. Hajime, you intended to shot my face!？」

「That will be the fastest right? You can regenerate after all, so I thought it might be alright.」

「.....No way it'll be alright! Stupid Hajime ! Brutish fiend!」

「Wah, what's with you! Wait, dangerous! Stop with the Flame of Divine Punishment! That ain't a joke!」

Kaori took over the past projection and repeated the image.

The projection of the manipulated Yue and Hajime battling overlapped with present Yue and Hajime getting into a fierce exchange.

Kaori led everyone to the corner of the room and activated a powerful barrier, then she spoke with a bright smile.

「Couhg-. Eee~, just now an extremely rare event of Yue VS Hajime-kun started. Please, watch till the end leisurely.」

「Kaori.....you're really」

Shizuku's exasperated face didn't do anything.

Something like the quarrel of Yue and Hajime, certainly, it was extremely rare to the degree everyone was thinking that perhaps this was the first time.

Even if they weren't Kaori, it couldn't be helped that their gaze unconsciously became fixed into the scene. In fact, even Shia, Tio, and also Aiko had their gaze fixed to it with their eyes and mouth wide open saying 「Oo~」.

「Ka, Kaori, is it alright not stopping them? Somehow Yue-chan become an adult and something like a halo is starting to appear behind her. Hajime-kun too, somehow crimson light burst out like a tornado around him.」

Tomoichi asked his daughter with twitching face. But, Kaori herself was,

「It's fine, it's fine. They are going to flirt with each other at the end anyway. ....Chih」

「Kaori!? Just now, did you click your tongue!? Otou-san don't remember raising Kaori to be that kind of child you know!？」

Putting aside the Shirasaki father daughter,

「.....Stupid Hajimee! Recently our alone time is too little! Spoil me moreee」

「That's really my bad huh! This damned spoiled woman! When the Tortus travel is over, I'll plan the travel for just us two next time so just be quiet!」

Hajime and Yue's quarrel.....quarrel (?) was getting increasingly intense. Their argument was completely off the mark, but in the end did the two of them notice it?

「Chih」

「Kaori!?!」

After that, Kaori forcefully interfered when the quarrel became something that only looked like mere flirting.

Hajime and Yue who were showered with warm gazes from everyone curled to become small together while urging the group to the next place to divert the attention.

During that time, it needn't be said that Kaori's clicking her tongue was mass produced.

And then it also went without saying that even from here on, Kaori's clicking her tongue kept getting mass produced.

—

—

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

While writing what I want to write unexpectedly was increasing,

The result, it's like this. Orcus arc will continue for a bit more (sweat)

At Gardo, the comic below got updated with newest chapter.

- Zero Chapter 6

=>'Manner makes the man', it make me want to say that to Oscar lol Also, it was a nice smile there.



- Nichijou Chapter 24

=>Endo-kun, long time no see! You are there? lol

The chapters are freely provided from Overlap-sama's homepage. Please go take a look no matter what.

Best regards.

# Arifureta Chapter 329

## Arifureta After III Tortus Travel Journal ⑨

—

Hajime collapsed before their eyes.

「「Hajime!」」

Shuu and Sumire spontaneously rushed toward him seeing that scene.

They kneeled beside him and reached out their hand, but those hands passed through their son's body and wandered in empty air.

「Tou-san, Kaa-san. I'm over here.」

Hajime approached Shuu and Sumire while smiling wryly. Yes, the real Hajime was.

The two gasped and turned their gaze. They saw the figure of their son holding up Myuu there and let out a long sigh in relieve. And then, they made a similar wry smile.

At the same time, before their eyes the past Hajime who was wounded all over melted into thin air and vanished.

This place was the true Orcus Great Dungeon—floor 100. The final destination of the abyss, the place where the hideout of Oscar Orcus was located, and then, the location where the strongest guardian the Hydra was lying in wait.

Until now Hajime and co were watching the grand last boss fight that Hajime and Yue got into.

Even though they understood that it was nothing more than projection, it was a fight for survival with impact that couldn't be compared with a mere 3D movie.

The hydra's roar, the fatal breath attack, the counterattack using magic and gunshot.....

And then, Hajime who covered Yue and got swallowed by the fatal light.

His right eye was evaporated, a part of his body was carbonized, and he pitched forward falling as though he had no strength left.

In order to protect Hajime, Yue dashed forward holding Donner with one hand in her condition that only had meager magic power.

The scene was a storm of light bullets trampling through space like a meteor shower couldn't help made the parents but stiffen up even though they knew that it was just a projection. In fact, if Kaoruko and Akiko didn't receive magic that increased their mental resistance from Tio, they would have fainted more than dozens of times about now.

The sight of those light bullets hitting Yue hard until her body became tattered was something hard to believe looking at her current invincible queen like self.

At the same time, her figure that was gritting her teeth without taking even a single step back no matter what, risking her life in order to protect Hajime looked so noble it shook them. Sumire and Shuu too, they couldn't help but hugging Yue tightly while watching the projection.

Before long the fatal light of judgment was fired. Before that attack that was unleashed in order to annihilate the insolent intruder, Yue was staring straight ahead, however.....

Hajime revived in a hair's breadth.

Everyone spontaneously cheered 「Oo!」. But, they immediately understood from looking. That Hajime didn't revive or anything. It was only his guts supporting him. Hajime's figure that was visibly in appalling state vividly displayed that he almost wasn't even healed at all.

However, from there it was a dramatic development. It was overwhelming, astounding, and miraculous. It was like a tale of a legend.

The two nestling close to each other within the meteor shower was slipping through as though they were dancing. The light of annihilation was already like it was nothing more than a splendorous lighting illuminating the two.

Running through the air, smashing the ceiling and dropping it, transmuting an improvised smelting furnace. The blue flame of demise was unleashed with harmonized beat of the two.

The scream of death agony of the last guardian echoed.

When everything was over, Shuu and other parents, no, even Shia and the others who were watching that sublime scene that could be mistaken as a part of a myth forgot to even breath due to the intense deep emotion they couldn't describe with words inside them.

Like that, when Hajime said 「I'm spent」 and fell flat, all of them finally returned to their senses.

「Amazing right?」

Hajime's words that sounded somewhat elated echoed.

Shuu and Sumire's eyes turned wide hearing that.

If pushed to say, all this time Hajime had no motivation in showing his past projection all this time, but now he wasn't even really alluding anything like 「It's just something of the past」 about this scene, instead he looked proud..... no, just from looking it could be seen that he was being smug.

In the middle, Myuu who was being hugged clung to Hajime tightly, so half of his face was covered by the little girl, but the other half of his face was clearly showing his smugness.

「That's unusual, for you to make such self-satisfied look when it's not about your invention.」

「Because it was that kind of deadly battle. ....The cheat recovery item that was the god water, a weapon that can fire excessive fire power regardless of the state of the user, and then a partner with cheat-like magic ability. I wouldn't

be able to survive if even a single one of those was missing. It was a battle that was literally putting up everything I and Yue had.」

In a sense, perhaps it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that everything began from this victory.

「Above all else, my partner did her best here. The victory of this battle, well, there isn't any need to be humble about it. It's my and Yue's——pride.」

Saying that, Hajime gently patted the head of Yue who had come to his side unnoticed. Yue's expression became loose and soft, as though a voice 「funi~」 would leak out from her mouth somehow.

Shuu muttered 「Is that so.....」 while narrowing his eyes from the dazzling sight, while Sumire too was saying 「I see」 with a gentle smile.

「Even so, that was truly intense Goshujin-sama.」

「Yes.....it far surpassed my imagination.」

Tio and Shizuku's words served as the beginning. After them the other people also started saying their impression.

The parents couldn't hide their excitement, while Shia and others were oozing out some envy and admiration. Shia alone was knocking her fist together while saying 「I want a one-on-one fight. How far I can go in a handicap battle using only my fist, I wish to test myself desuu! Won't the monster pop up again?」 with her rabbit ears shaking wildly.

The wild rabbit couldn't stop herself from swinging her fist after knowing there was such a formidable enemy.

The hopeless rabbit of the past who wasn't good with strife.....had died!

「Now that she said it, Hajime. The monsters of the labyrinth can pop up again right? It looks like the hydra doesn't come out though.....」

「Aah, perhaps because it's the last boss. It won't pop up when I or Yue are here.」

‘I see, so if I'm alone I'll be able to have at it with that guy then!’ the fighting god rabbit said with her rabbit ears swinging wildly. Leaving the rabbit aside, Tomoichi was turning his gaze to deeper inside with shining eyes.

「So Hajime-kun, the hideout is behind that splendid door?」

「Yes, that's right. How about we go there right away?」

For Tomoichi, it seemed that this last boss room was actually really interesting and attracted his attention.

The pillars in the pillared corridor had splendid engraving applied to every single of them, displaying a solemn atmosphere. The double-leafed door standing at the inner part itself was also a work of art. In that case, the hideout was surely a place that would charm the heart of an architect without a doubt, Tomoichi thought.

By the way, it seemed regeneration magic was applied to this place, so the trace of the fierce battle had been automatically fixed. In a sense, this large space itself could be called an artifact that possessed automatic recovery function. It could be perceived clearly that Oscar's skill was godly.

「.....Nn, before that, please watch the training scene of Hajime without fail.」

This room after the battle versus the Hydra became a good training place for Hajime and Yue during the two months after the dungeon conquering.

It seemed that Yue wished to show everyone that the current Hajime's fighting ability and precise shooting that made everyone shudder weren't something that were easily obtained. She wished to show Hajime's effort here.

Tomoichi said 「Hmph.....very well, let me take a look of it」 while he sent the gaze of “evaluation of worthiness to become son-in-law of who knows how many times it is” toward Hajime. He received an elbow on his side from Kaori.

「Actually I'm really interested. That shooting skill isn't normal. I'm curious what kind of training he did to learn it.」

「His martial art too. It's not systematic but, it has a really rational movement.....I understand that it's something cultivated in real battle but, as expected, I'm also extremely curious at his training too.」

It seemed that this was an extremely fascinating event for Shuuzou and Koichi. The eyes of the two were shining blazingly. Next they moved forward in order to secure the front seat with rough breathing. They received a strike from

the back of Shizuku's katana.

「.....Nn. Then.....around here I think?」

Yue muttered while at the same time she adjusted the time axis and snapped her finger.

What was projected was the firefight between Yue and Hajime.

From what they could see, Hajime was exhausted from excessive training while Yue was looking worried. Even so, Hajime said that there was no meaning in training that wasn't surpassing the limit and he asked Yue to be his opponent.

Yue nodded to respond to Hajime's determination. Hajime yelled to her.

——'Now, no need to hold back. Come! Magic cheat!'

——'Nn-. Eat this, the violence of quantity!'

It was the violence of quantity. It was flame bullets in number that covered the sky. And then, for some reason the bullets were heart shaped. Yue-sama, seeing the heart shaped fire bullets got their magic core fired through and dispersed, her chest tightened *kyu-!* and she prattled something like 「I was shot through」.

Her feeling toward Hajime, was 3000 Celsius≡

Something like that. In addition, it was a tyrannical number that showed no end in sight.

「Yue-chan.....Okaasan, doesn't hate you okay?」

「Tsk-.....」

「Yue-san.....」

「As to be expected from thee, Yue.」

Gazes that were filled with exasperation stabbed Yue. There was just a single person clicking her tongue.

「.....Nn-. I made a slight mistake.」

It seemed she mistook the time axis. She tried to show the training in a different time axis while feeling slightly flustered but.....

Putting aside Yue's behavior, the unfolding scene was intense. The storm of magic bullet that even resembled the meteor shower of light bullet before this was shot through by the two handguns Hajime wielded. He continued to stave off the attack just barely.

Concentration power to the degree that made his speech became halting.

Super high speed midair reload using super fast gun spin. Precise sniping that was like aiming at the approaching grains of rice which made the heart of the spectators skipped——firing through the magic's core.

Like that.....

——'Then, itadakimasu'

——'Wai-, sto-, aaa——!!'

Hajime-san who was unable to resist was overcame, or rather he was pushed down and devoured deliciously——

「Disintegration-」

The past projection was disintegrated along with the magic power and it dispersed.

「Yue you pervert! Saying it's a training while doing such envio——impure act! Unbelievable, completely unbelievable! What's more, to think that you would assault Hajime-kun who was completely exhausted and couldn't move, how envi——terrible!」

「Kaori, your real thought」

Just as Shizuku pointed out, Kaori-san, her real thought was completely leaking out. She was slightly drooling. Tomoichi san was looking at faraway. It seemed that he decided that he didn't see anything.

「.....Nn, I'm sorry. Assaulting Hajime became a daily occurrence so」

'That ain't any excuse at all.....' Everyone thought. And then, the male faction thought 「So he was assaulted routinely.....」 and looked at Hajime with a complicated expression. Hajime threw his sight to really faraway.

Like this and that, for a while they watched Hajime who trained until he



collapsed every time, Yue who would nurse Hajime who became unable to move in various senses, and Kaori who would go ‘Disintegrate-’ every time the nursing looked like it would become R-rated.

By the time Shuu and others started to show comprehending expression of Hajime’s current strength seeing how he continued to train absurdly, the <sup>flirting</sup> training <sup>show</sup> ended and the group finally stepped inside the hideout.

「This place.....is it underground here?」

The one who unconsciously muttered that was Tomoichi who was looking forward to it the most. It seemed that the whole group had the same feeling like that leaked out sentiment.

Spacious area, artificial sun shining at the ceiling, one side of the walls inside became a waterfall, there was also a river and also fruit trees and vegetable field.

And then, a three storey mansion that looked like it was created by directly scraping off the rock wall was being illuminated by the artificial sun, showing its white wall gorgeously.

「The sun will become like a moon when night comes. By putting this artificial sun into practical use, I created the sun convergence laser weapon——Hyperion.」

「.....Hajime-kun. As an adult, I think there is something that I should say to you who thought of a mass destruction weapon when seeing a sun of blessing but.....sorry. I cannot find any word.」

「No, Tomoichi-san, even if you apologize to me with that kind of creeped out face.....」

「Papaa—! Myuu also want a sun as present for Myuu’s next birthday nano!」

「No, Myuu. Even if you begged me with such smile that is like a sun.....」

Although, Myuu was also a girl at that age. Perhaps she would need a weapon soon.....

Putting aside the hopeless Hajime papa who was pondering such thing, Yue took the initiative to act as guide.

「.....Right, everyone. This is the residence of me and Hajime in Tortus. This is our love nest.」

「This is Oscar Orcus-san's hideout isn't it!」

‘Aa?’ ‘Oo?’ Yue-sama and Kaori-chan glared at each other. This was a scene where anyone would definitely want Self Restraint-kun to put censor on the face of the two. That was just how terrible the two were making the expression that beautiful girl shouldn't show.

‘Okay okay, break it out you two~’, Shia & Shizuku separated the two. While that was going on, Hajime invited the parents inside the mansion. At the end of the line Yue and Kaori were being dragged by their respective best friend.

Tomoichi let out a long sigh.

「How beautiful.....What's more, to think that the building *doesn't have any joining point*.」

「Oscar was a transmutation master like me. This residence was also created using transmutation, so it's style is very different from a normal building.」

Tomoichi was earnestly letting out sigh of admiration seeing the strange architecture style that he had never seen before. His eyes were sparkling bright, like a child that was visiting an amusement park for the first time. Kaoruko was watching her husband who was like that with a warm gaze.

After that, Hajime showed around the living space and workshop, the treasure warehouse where many of Oscar's creation were still left behind, and the site of the storage place of the “Oscar's prototype – succeeded by Hajime” maid golem that was burned and destroyed by Yue in the past.

There were only novel things inside. The parents were excited from start to finish.

Especially when it was times like when they found “Prototype – Dragon Killing Sword” (Named by Oscar) in the treasure warehouse, all the men went into festive atmosphere where they all tried swinging it.

By the way, for some reason the one who handled and looked the best with it was Kirino-okaasan.

「And then this place here.....it's where we obtained the first age of god magic and learned the truth of this world.」

After opening the thick door at the third floor and entering inside, it was the room where the magic circle for inheriting age of god magic was inscribed.

Hajime showed a thinking gesture for a bit. Shuu asked him while his eyes were shining seeing the magic circle.

「Hm? What's the matter Hajime?」

「.....Aah, I'm thinking that I might as well introduce everyone.」

「Introduce? Who do you mean?」

「Of course, I mean the liberator who was the creator of this great labyrinth. The extraordinary transmutation master——Oscar Orcus.」

Saying that, Hajime sent an eye signal to Yue.

Right after that, a silhouette emerged in front of the chair placed at the back of the room. A black clothed youth——Oscar.

『You did well overcoming the trial and arriving here. My name is Oscar Orcus. The person who created this great labyrinth. Perhaps you will understand if I say that I'm a rebel?』

The entrance of the intellectual looking young man wearing glasses with his black hair tied behind his neck gathered the attention of all the parents who were curiously looking around inside the room.

「It's the recording medium Oscar left behind. It's something like his last will. When entering the magic circle after clearing the trial, he will show his figure to the dungeon conqueror. Right now it's just a past projection though.」

Even while Hajime was giving explanation, Oscar was continuing his talk with deep intellect and firm will behind his eyes.

The truth of the world, the path they had taken, and then their wish.

「.....They were, unable to win against the god. But, they didn't lose the battle.」

Yue talked with narrowed eyes. Unusually a deep respect could be seen in her

eyes. The parents felt a bit surprised at that. Someone who Yue genuinely and deeply respected from the heart was extremely few.

Kaori formed her words after her.

「They themselves were no good. But, they didn't give up the future. Believing that someday people who will inherit their power will appear, they vanished to the corner of the world. They even parted from their comrades.」

「That became our strength. Kaori was able to survive was also thanks to what they had left behind.」

With deep emotion Shizuku let out her words tremblingly filled with deep thought of gratitude. Aiko also spoke with a voice that was filled with similar deep gratitude.

「Everyone was able to return to Japan was also thanks to them leaving behind their strength.」

「Truly, they are worthy to be described as brilliant. Even in the long history of the dragon race, there were none who persisted in such firm and striking way of life like them.」

Tio closed her eyes as though praying for the dead's happiness in the next world and she silently gifted them with the greatest eulogy.

Shia lowered her rabbit ears solemnly and opened her mouth.

「Someone like Miledy-san was seriously annoying, but she even turned into a golem and continued to live.....a thousand years, ten thousand years? Throughout a long period of time that no one knew about, by herself alone..... she was annoying but, she helped up, saved the world, and died a noble death.」

「.....Nn. She went out with a smile. She was an annoying person but, she was a strong person who was worthy of admiration.」

「O, oi. Shia, Yue. You don't need to keep saying annoying every time.....no, she was really annoying just as you said but.....」

Usually Hajime would deliberately not read the atmosphere, but now that he was reading the atmosphere for a bit he was making that kind of statement, though naturally he was ignored.

『I pray that from here on you will live under free will.』

Oscar finished with that and vanished.

A tranquil atmosphere silently filled the room.

A beat later, Shuu and Sumire came forward. Tomoichi and others also came forward as though they understood what they were going to do.

All the parents put their hands together before the place where Oscar was standing and prayed silently. Their prayer was filled with gratitude and respect, and various other thoughts.

——'Nn. What to do?'

——'Hm? Nothing particular. In the first place, we were summoned by the god as he pleased and got told to go to war. That god is nothing but trouble. I don't give a damn what will happen to this world.'

Everyone went 「Hm?」 hearing that conversation. Hajime and Yue leaked out their voice 「.....ah」.

——'Yue, are you bothered about it?'

——'My place is right here.....I don't care of anything else'

After the last will of a deceased person, what's more it was the last will of a great person, for some reason a pink colored space was formed. Kaori's eyes turned hollow.

Not just the gaze of the parents, even the gaze of Shia and others toward Hajime and Yue became complicated.

Yue tried to end the projection right away, but Kaori took it over in the middle. Yue tried to protest 「What are you doing!」, but before she could,

——'Aa~, for now, this place is already ours, let's clean up that corpse'

——'Nn. Fertilizer for the field'

Next, Hajime-san took the ring that was the proof of conquering the dungeon from Oscar's finger.

They had conquered the dungeon so it was only natural to take it but.....

The figure taking off the ring without any hesitation was the figure of a pure outlaw who didn't possess the very concept of compassion or sympathy itself. Furthermore, that figure said 「Does this guy has anything else on him」 while rustling the black clothes around. Like a vulture.

The doubtful gazes of the parents and the wife~s were becoming reproachful eyes that made even Yue turned pale.

Hajime and Yue turned their gaze to the beyond with harmonized movement.

But, Shuu grinned widely and clasped his hand on Hajime's shoulder. And then, he spoke with a voice that was scarily lacking in intonation.

「Hajime. Do you know what is Tou-san thinking right now?」

「E, e~rr.....Tou-san, you know, though not much, I at least made a proper grave.」

「I see. Then I want to offer prayer in front of the grave, so show me the place after this.」

「Ro, roger. Then right away——」

Hajime immediately tried to turn around to gloss over the matter, but he didn't manage it. His opposite shoulder also got clasped by a hand. Whose hand? Sumire's.

「Hajime? Don't you have anything to say to Okaasan and Otousan I wonder?」

「Anything, to say?」

The smile of Sumire-okaasan became really deep. Hajime thought, 「Ah, this, it's that thing huh」.

That hunch was right on the money! Right after that, the eyes of Nagumo married couple slanted upward with great momentum.

「Don't treat the dead rudely-, this stupid son!」

「That person wasn't your enemy or anything right! Far from that he was someone who gave you important gift! This idiot son!」

Indeed, it was completely as they said. *Bam-*, Hajime-san received clenched fists on his head.

It was absurd to expect such emotion and common sense from Hajime of that time, there were various excuses he could make.

Although, now that he was harboring a definite respect toward Miledy and others the liberators, looking back at his action then, even he himself was thinking that perhaps it was a bit unforgivable.....

Because of that,

「So, sorry」

He honestly showed remorse.

「Go, Goshujin-sama art apologizing!? A dream! This art a nightmare! Shia! Help me to wake up!」

「Leave it to me! Shaoraaa-!!」

Thunderous sound.

A full swing of the war hammer. A silhouette flew into the wall and went through it. And then, the voice of happiness saying 「Thank you very much!」 with echo.

Shuu and Sumire turned their gaze to Yue as though nothing had happened.

「Yue-chan too! Your generally cold reception toward non family, well we don't mind it but, an act that is blaspheming the dead, Okaasan cannot admire that at all!」

「.....Ye, yes. I'm sorry.」

「Well, considering the situation at that time it might be understandable but.....treating the dead as fertilizer even though he didn't do anything bad to you, I don't think Otousan can overlook that.」

「.....Ye, yes, Otou-sama. When I myself watched that scene anew, I think that perhaps it's a bit unforgivable.」

‘I'm really reflecting.....’ Yue-sama was downhearted. ‘Otou-sama and Okaa-sama scolded me.....’ She was seriously depressed.

The demon king and his legal wife who achieved being the world's strongest for real were reflecting. It was an extremely miraculous situation. If the people

of Tortus saw this sight, they would go crazy or faint, or perhaps they would revere and worship the two parents similar like the mother of a certain goddess of bountiful harvest, no doubt about it.

There was nothing that was representing Oscar on the chair inside the room but.....

Hajime and Yue somehow got the feeling that he was laughing wryly at them.

After that, they offered prayer in front of Oscar's grave, pulled out the dragon woman who was stuck on the field, and then the group activated the past playback everywhere in the hideout while getting a glimpse of Hajime and Yue's life at that time.

It was truly a sugary livelihood where they could only be called as newlywed spouses.

Extremely high sugar content. The scenes that would undoubtedly give anyone sugar diabetes in one shot made Kaori's tongue clicking to generate like machine gun.

And then, Yue was looking smug even while feeling embarrassed. A flash of silver grazed her cheek.

「U~n.....」

「? What's the matter?」

Shizuku looked like she wasn't convinced somewhat. Aiko tilted her head and asked her.

「How should I say it.....some footage flew in here and there unnaturally..... somehow it's like I'm looking at an edited recording.....」

「Ah, certainly, there is that kind of feeling.」

It seemed it wasn't just Shizuku who was feeling that something wasn't right. Aiko also clapped her hands in agreement.

There, Sumire pointed at a door deeper inside the room and raised a questioning voice.

「Hey, Hajime. We haven't go there. What is behind that door?」



「Aa~, that place, it's that. The bathroom. It's connected to an open air bath.」

「My! That's great! So there is also bathing custom in another world! Or perhaps is it the personal hobby of Oscar-san?」

Saying that, Sumire turned her step toward the bathroom energetically. Hajime spoke toward his mother who was like that.

「It goes without saying but, we won't activate the past replay there.」

「I get it. There is also Yue-chan here, there is no way I'll be so sad that I'm going to intentionally watch my son being stark naked.」

There was one reaction to Sumire's words. However, everyone entered inside the bathroom while no one was noticing it.

「Ho~, it's a splendid bathroom!」

「There is like a waterfall coming ahead of our gaze.....it looks like Oscar-san was also talented when it come to architecture design.」

Shuu and Tomoichi were in admiration. Hajime poured his magic power to activate the Merlion hot spring version to show how the hot water came out from it.

But, at that instant,

「Aaa, my hand slipped~」(monotone)

Kaori-san, it seemed her hand slipped and activated the past replay.

What would slip inside a bathroom should be the foot, and even if the hand slipped why would the age of god magic got activated? But putting aside those questions, what got projected by the careless magic activation was the figure of Hajime relaxing in the hot spring at night.

「My, nice body.」

「!？」

「.....Oh my」

「!？」

By the way, the top was Kirino, and it was Koichi who turned toward her in a

flash. The bottom was Akiko, and it was Aiko who turned toward her in a flash.

「Hey-, Kaori! What do you mean your hand slipped! Dispel it right away!」

「.....」

「Don't stare hard at it like that! It's nothing you hadn't seen before! Aah geez, you aren't listening huh. Shizuku! Hold down that secretly perverted childhood friend of yours right away.....wait, why even you are staring hard at it like that huh!」

Hajime lightly slapped Kaori's cheek *pechi pechi* to return her to her senses while demanding her to dispel the magic once more.

「Come on return to your senses, hidden pervert meister!」

「I'm not a hidden pervert or a meister!」

「Who cares about that, just dispel it right away.」

「E, err, it feels a bit difficult! It's because my hand slipped! My hand keeps slipping!」

「What do you mean your hand keep slipping!?!」

「Like this, like a bobsleigh!」

「Bobsleigh!?!」

While the meister and Hajime were doing their comedy skit, the situation that Hajime feared finally arrived.

「Yue! Hide it!」

「.....Nn-」

The one who finally came was the past Yue. She immediately projected a swimsuit illusion above her past projection. The eyes of the male faction got protected just in the nick of time.

「Kaori」

「Uh, I'm sorry.」

Hajime was oozing out cold sweat at the accident that almost happened while sending Kaori a reproachful gaze. Kaori too reflected on herself that she was

messing around too much while dispelling the magic.

But, for some reason the projection didn't vanish. Inside the projection, Yue-sama who was scattering around a bewitching atmosphere in full blast for some reason was standing before Hajime.

‘Why didn't it vanish!?’ Hajime's expression was flustered, however, he immediately discovered the magic power stream using his magic eye stone.

The culprit, was the hopeless dragon.

「SHIAAA!」

「Ah, yes! SHAORAAA-!!」

「Thank you very much-」

The hopeless dragon vanished into the other side of the waterfall.

But, it seemed the projection cut off too late.

——‘I'm getting out!’

——‘You won't escape!’

——‘Wai-, wait, ah, AAA——!!’

There, the projection dispersed as though something precious had scattered.

*Shii~n*, a really awkward silence was flowing.

There, Yue's cheeks flared up bright red while she reported once more.

「.....Nn. Otou-sama, Okaa-sama. Let me apologize beforehand. It was delicious. Thank you for the meal.」

「Ah, yes, sorry that we can only prepare such meager meal?」

「No, Sumire, I think that's not the right thing to say.」

The awkward atmosphere became even more awkward. Shia and others were showing complicated expression that felt like saying 「Aa~, it was this timing.....」.

「Papa~. What delicious thing Yue-oneechan was eating nano?」

「.....Ask Remia about it later.」

「!？」

The question of a child that was troubling parents was completely thrown toward the mother by Hajime-san. His life gauge was at the red zone.

「I, I see. The past projection that looks edited is because something like this.」

「.....The projection got really heavily edited.」

That was how many daily scenes that were in the category of “We cannot show it okay!”. The blushing Shizuku and Aiko were restlessly looking around with indescribable expression.

Kaoruko and Kirino said 「Aa~, to be young」. They felt awkward, but they also gave a slight teasing atmosphere. On the contrary, the atmosphere of Shuuzou and Koichi felt half awkward and half lukewarm.

And then, Tomoichi was,

「Tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-」

「Ka, Kaori.....」

His expression was shuddering in respond to his daughters gatling tongue clicking that came from her grand self-destruction due to replaying the past as he pleased because of curiosity.

「.....It will be, lunch time soon, let's eat.」

「.....Nn-」

Yue was still bashful and fidgeting. Hajime had a distant look while announcing the end of the morning part of Orcus tour in order to change the atmosphere somehow.

Hajime and co easily returned to the royal palace using a gate. A long time had passed without them noticing while they were doing the Orcus tour. The time had gone long past noon.

Perhaps because they were shown various things, they forgot about their empty stomach. But now their empty stomach abruptly began to declare their existence. Hajime and co took lunch that was prepared by Hellina along with Liliana who almost cried because she got left behind while doing her work in

desperation.

They had fun talking about various memories, which caused Liliana's teary eyes to become increasingly sullen.

At the same time, she was also showing a superhuman technique of listening to Kaori's complaining 「Hey, listen to me Lily! That stupid Yue! That stupid Yue! She was an erorist-san! Hey, are you listening? Lily!」 that was like a machine gun while acting sullen while she was doing her work and also calming Kaori down at the same time, furthermore she was doing it while eating with a beautiful table manner.

Hajime slightly consoled such Liliana while the group finished their lunch.

「I never thought, that I would be left behind for real.....」

「No, my bad Lily. But you see, the power of Hellina's gaze was terrific. It told me 『There is, work. Taking, princess away, absolutely no good (monotone)』.」

「What's with the halting language. Or rather! I – a – mm! The princess! Hellina, is the maid! Why does Hellina get prioritized!」

「.....Haha-」

「Why are you laughing!?!」

Hajime looked aside with a face that seemed to say 'The after meal tea, is delicious~'. Liliana glared at him with a resentful expression. Though she got teary eyes so that expression not only lacked impact, rather it looked cute.

Liliana directed a tearful glare to the culprit who was her exclusive maid. Hellina bowed respectfully.

「My deepest apologies, Liliana-sama. However, in order to accompany the trip of Lord——cough-, Hajime-sama's trip starting from tomorrow, it is also necessary to finish within today all matters for the next couple of days that needs Liliana-sama's decision.」

「Pe, perhaps that's so but.....no wait, just now, didn't you say lord just now? You just referred to Hajime-san as your master didn't you!? Hey, Hellina!?!」

「Today the destination is Orcus Great Labyrinth. This Hellina know what is inside Liliana-sama's heart so well it's painful, but I believe the place Liliana-

sama should accompany them to should be the imperial capital that will be the destination starting from tomorrow.」

「Uu.....I cannot deny that.....but, I want to know about Hajime-san's past in the great labyrinth.....also, you casually ignored my question didn't you?」

「If Liliana-sama wish it, it will come true someday. The thing that has to be done right now should be done right now. I will sort out the work that can be postponed for later. If Liliana-sama's work get delayed, the lord surely will also feel worried for you.」

「.....You're right. I understand, Hellina. Also, now you aren't even hiding how you are calling him lord anymore. Please come to my room for a bit later. I will teach you once more who is your master!」

Hellina bowed respectfully. Shuu turned his gaze toward Hajime while feeling a bit concerned about the crisis the relationship of the master and servant.

「So Hajime. What are we going to do in the afternoon?」

「For the time being I'm thinking of going to Raisen Grand Canyon.」

「That's where the encounter with me happen isn't it!」

The rabbit ears moved *myon myon*. Shia looked really happy.

But, Kaori put a halt on that.

「Shia, sorry. I want to go to Orcus one more time before we go to Raisen Grand Canyon. Is it okay?」

「Hoe? I don't mind that but, is there still anything else to see there?」

They would use up the majority of their schedule here if they were also going to watch the minor detail. Shia tilted her rabbit ears, thinking that they should have seen all that should be seen.

「You see, the time when we reunited.....I want Otousan and everyone else to watch it.」

‘I see’, Shia nodded.

In this trip, it felt like Tomoichi and Hajime had closed the distance between them by quite much, but as expected, Tomoichi was still holding a strong

reluctance toward Hajime. That was why Kaori wanted to show her father the time when she was rescued.

「Yeah, I also want to see that no matter what.」

Shizuku too seemed to recall something about that time. She glanced to Hajime while blushing slightly.

Hajime turned expressionless just for a moment from receiving that glance. But, that too really only happened for an instant.

「.....I guess. The time after we came out from Raisen Grand Canyon would also be fine but.....there was also that scene huh.」

「.....Hajime. It's alright.」

Beside him Yue sharply noticed. She said “it's alright” not with a questioning tone, but with a tone that was filled with conviction. Hajime looked fondly at Yue in respond and caressed her cheek. As though to say “I'm fine”.

Hajime smiled wryly at Shuu and others who were tilting their head in puzzlement while gulping down his tea all at once. Then he announced their departure for the afternoon part of Orcus tour.

While getting seen off by the princess who had bloodshot eyes as though to say ‘Even if it killed me I'm gonna finish all the pressing work for these few days within today for suree~’, Hajime and co returned to Orcus Great Labyrinth.

Their destination was the surface level of Orcus Great Labyrinth——the floor 89.

Kaori's gaze slightly wandered off to empty air as though to look back to that time while she started talking.

「At that time, we advanced until the next floor, the floor 90.」

「I think it was around four months since Hajime fell into abyss.」

Shizuku added.

The place they arrived at while giving that explanation was the place where Kaori and co once fell into a desperate situation in the past. They were at a spacious space with octagon shape located in floor 89.

There was a large hole still gaping open at the ceiling and wall. At the ceiling was the trace where Hajime smashed through using pile buster. The tunnel at the wall was the improvised hideout where Kaori and others escaped for dear life while carrying the wounded.

There was a regenerating function for the stone bridge at floor 65 that was a destination for a trap, but the majority of Orcus Great Dungeon's surface level didn't have regenerating function. And so, the trace of battle from that time was remaining clearly.

Kaori performed the past replay. The time axis was seemed to be when they escaped from floor 90 into this room.

With Kouki in the lead, the pale looking hero party, Nagayama party, and Hiyama party showed up from the passage deeper inside. After having some words, Nomura Kentarou who possessed the vocation earth mage started opening a hole in the wall.

「We were ambushed at floor 90. By a demon race woman and a lot of monsters. All of the monsters were unthinkably strong.」

「Two of us were petrified, Suzu was also heavily wounded. The mental shock and the exhaustion from going through losing battle, where, it's just as you can see there.」

Hajime and Yue and the others also didn't know about the detailed timing when the demon race woman——Cattleya attacked. And so, they were watching with great interest at Kaori and the classmates who were escaping into the improvised hideout at that time.

Then, ahead of where Hajime and co were watching, Nomura and others were starting to talk to each other. And then, they were staring still without any word at one of the four passages inside the room.

「? What are they doing? .....Hah!? Kaori, replay the scene just now for a bit!」

「Eh? Okay but.....」

Kaori rewound the scene slightly. And then she resumed the scene.

This time she noticed. A black silhouette was soundlessly vanishing into the



passage.

「It's Endou! Endou is there!」

「.....Nn-, as expected from Endou! He couldn't be noticed just with a single playback!」

「Endou-san is really absurd isn't he. As expected from the man who could travel through the dungeon without getting noticed by the monsters even once desuu! That thinness of shadow cannot be copied!」

「Umu. It's truly a mystery. Even the projection of past replay inadvertently failed to notice him.....even within the long history of the dragon race, someone with shadow that thin art the first time.」

「Endou-kun.....I'm sorry that I always forgot to call your name when taking absence in the class! Sensei cannot forget Endou-kun's despairing expression when you got told 『Your number of attendance days is lacking』 by the first year's head teacher!」

A wailing resounded from earth.....it felt like that.

By the way, Endou-kun had perfect attendance. He had never even arrived late.

Anyway, all the parent~s thought of Kousuke and his parents and cried.

「E~rr, Kaori? Why did he go off alone?」

「E, e~rr you see, Endou-kun he, how should I say it, his presence, should I say that it is weak, anyway he is a person with constitution that is hard to notice. It's to the level that even monster will completely ignore him even though he is right before them.」

「.....Such human exist for real?」

「.....He really exist. I think that it's mysterious though. It's not a skill or magic. It's a constitution that he has since before we were summoned.」

「Even earth was relatively filled with fantasy huh. Otousan didn't know.....」

Anyway, thanks to the man who was nonchalantly within the category of mankind's strongest and could escape from the dungeon to the surface just by

himself, the reinforcement that was Hajime made it in time. The parents were given that explanation.

Tomoichi and others understood that he too was one of the benefactor of their daughters' lives. They asked to rewind the projection slightly and expressed their gratitude.

They couldn't find him just like how hard it was to find Wallo though. (TN: Ask google-sensei about find Wally)

'Eh? The projection has been rewound, so he should be right in front of us shouldn't it? Where?' While thinking that.

'Find Endou!' After spending a bit of time for that, the past projection displayed the attack of the monsters that were led by Cattleya.

The entrance of the hideout that was camouflaged was blown away. Kouki resolved himself and rushed out.

From there the situation developed quickly.

The hero's power that used Limit Break was absurd, however, Cattleya used Meld as hostage and sealed it.

Unable to retreat or fight, Kouki was defeated against a monster called Ahatd that was in a different level from other monsters. Cattleya offered a deal which was responded by Shizuku with a grave expression.

Shizuku desperately string together her words in order to find a path of survival somehow. Then, Meld who recovered his consciousness put his life on the line for the last struggle—he tried to explode himself.

「So he is Meld Logins-dono.」

「I see.....he is a magnificent warrior.」

Shuuzou and Koichi who were staring so hard at Shizuku's figure they could open a hole with their gaze saw Meld who got mentioned in the talk at the palace and raised voice of admiration.

But, right after that, even Meld's determination for death was sealed and ended in futility. He received a fatal wound and tumbled down on the ground. Seeing that, the expression of Shuuzou and others warped in grief.

The one who snapped seeing that was Kouki. Inside the projection, he displayed an astounding strength and cornered Cattleya once.

But, the matter couldn't be resolved that easily. At the eleventh hour he finally noticed that "he was turning his sword toward a person" and Kouki's sword turned dull. Regarding the matter of killing a living being, not to mention having the resolve for that, Kouki didn't even have the self-awareness of it. Cattleya laughed at that.

Like that the table was turned.

In the place of their trump card Kouki who became unable to fight, it was Shizuku who stood at the front line.

Although it was the period of time where she was unskilled compared to the present, her speed and sword skill were astonishing. Seeing their daughter in a genuinely desperate battle in another world, Shuuzou tightened his lips forming a thin line, while Koichi was clenching his fist hard.

And then, Kirino quietly grasped Shizuku's hand.

Right after that, Kirino's hand grasped so strongly that Shizuku felt pain.

——'Shizuku-chan!'

The scream of Kaori. Shizuku too also suffered defeat. She was literally vomiting blood and crouched down. As a mother, it was undoubtedly a sight that Kirino couldn't endure to watch.

「Ah, Kaori!」

「Kaori!」

The two who unconsciously yelled were Tomichi and Kaoruko. Ahead of the two's gaze, Kaori recklessly rushed out alone by herself from the party's formation that crowded to each other in order to protect themselves.

——'Ka, Kaori.....what are you doing.....go back quickly. You mustn't stay here'

——'No. It's the same anywhere. If that's the case, then it's better to be at Shizuku-chan's side'

——'.....I'm sorry. I couldn't win'

——'It's me who should apologize, for being unable to do anything than this.  
My magic power is nearly spent'

It was like their last words. No, those were truly their last words.

They were helpless. It was a complete checkmate.

AhadT approached as though to engrave that on their body.

The parents trembled seeing the sight that had gone past being urgent and could even be said as despairing.....

「It's here! Otousan Okaasan! Everyone pay attention! Here! Here!」

Kaori-san was greatly excited for some reason. Her fingers pointed out straight and asked for attention.

「.....Kaori. That's, don't copy.....my act before this.」

「Silence! It will be an important scene after this! After all it is Hajime-kun and my, yes, Ha – ji – me – kun – and – my! Scene of reunion!」

「.....Nn-, you don't need to emphasize! Stupid Kaori!」

'Or rather, Kaori, you remember most of Yue's speech huh.....', a lukewarm atmosphere flowed among them. At the projection Kaori and Shizuku were snuggling on each other where they were just a step before death, but the tension was completely dispersed.

Then, the next instant the ceiling burst. A giant stake with crimson spark running on it pierced AHadT along with the despair and pulverized them.

From the smashed ceiling, Hajime descended and landed lightly.

His back was turned toward Kaori and Shizuku as though to protect them, and he looked toward them across his shoulder.

——'You two are really close like usual huh'

Hajime smiled wryly while saying that to the dumbfounded duo.

Instantly.

「KYAAAAAAAAAAAH♪ HAJIME-KU~~~N!!」

「.....Kaori, noisy!」

Kaori grabbed Yue's shoulders and shook her back and forth while raising a shrill scream like a big fan accidentally encountering a celebrity.

It seemed she didn't even hear Yue's protest. Yue was already in a jostled state. Her reproachful gaze was rapidly evolving to become a super reproachful gaze.

「Otousan Otousan! See see!? It's moving right!? That's Hajime-kun see! And then, the one getting protected there, is me! Kufuu!」

「Ah, right, I'm watching. I, it's really moving」

'If only Kaori doesn't act so high spirited a bit creepily like this.' Tomoichi-otousan added inside his heart. Kaoruko put her hand on her forehead and her expression turned as though she was watching a troubling child.

And then, the Hajime-kun in question was covering his face with his hands. If there was a hole he would want to enter inside.

On the other hand, the other involved person which was Shizuku was

「.....」

She was staring at the paused projection of past Hajime's face from the side with a somewhat dazed expression *pohee~*.

「She fell in love.」

「So she fell in love here.」

「I see now.」

「!？」

The words of Kirino, Koichi, and Shuuzou caused Shizuku to twitch. She wouldn't deny that at this late hour, but just in case she mumbled「At this time, it's not like, I have self-awareness of it or anything.....」 with a small voice.

Gentle gazes showered down on her. Unable to stand it, she wrapped her ponytail around her face. Ponytail guard activate. Don't look at me!

Kaori who was in a good mood hugged Yue's head from behind and she nuzzled it in delight while saying.

「Theen, I'll put the scene in the looop~」

「.....Bakaori, don't get carried away.」 (TN: Baka + Kaori = Bakaori)

Yue lightly slapped *pechi pechi* the cheek of Kaori who was hugging her while she was going to forcefully end the past projection.

「Yue, my bad but keep the projection playing.」

「.....Nn」

Yue obeyed Hajime's words and forcefully advanced the past projection ahead. Kaori was annoying, so she reflexively wanted to end the scene.

Due to a curbstomp fight that would put off any ordinary person watching it, the powerful monsters were easily turned into mince meat. Just in case, faint mosaic were applied to the image by Yue's miraculous feat so the scene was kind to the eye compared to the reality.

Like that, that time finally arrived.

A single dry gunshot sound. It resounded excessively loudly.

Shuu and others didn't speak any word. They couldn't say anything. It was like there was a solid lock closing the box where their words were stored.

Fresh blood danced within their sight.

——'Why, why did you kill her. Is there any need to kill.....'

Kouki's words echoed.

「If you are watching then you can understand, the demon race is undoubtedly "person". What was done just now, was without a doubt a "murder".」

Shuu and Sumire silently looked back to Hajime who said that. Tomoichi and other parents covered their mouth and went pale.

Shuu walked toward Hajime. And then, in opposite of the time when Hajime carelessly treated the corpse of Oscar before this, he clasped his shoulder gently. He massaged the shoulder as though to loosen something stiff.

「Thanks for showing us that.」

Shuu only said that. He didn't say anything else.

Sumire was also the same. She only stroke Hajime's hair messily, then she only silently watched the continuation of the past image.

Things that should be asked had been wholly asked that time when Hajime returned home to them. What they wanted to say had also been wholly expressed in words.

There was nothing that they wanted to discuss once more, to say nothing of wanting to admonish Hajime or anything. They simply wanted to watch his experience with their own eyes. That was all.

Hajime didn't understand what should he call the deep emotion dwelling within Shuu and Sumire's eyes. However, somehow, he thought that the emotion resembled ocean.

While Yue and others were watching over them, Tomoichi and other parents snuggled close to Kaori and Shizuku, and then Aiko too.

Within the projection, Kaori was being shocked by Hajime's complete change, even so she said her gratitude that he was alive.

「Otousan, I was only lucky.」

「.....I see. No, you're right.」

Tomoichi looked at Hajime. With Japanese people's sensitivity, no, with a human's sensitivity, the act that occurred before their eyes where something that was hard to accept right away.

However, Tomoichi, and also Kaoruko and the other parents too were certainly feeling emotion that couldn't be measured with just ordinary common sense or ethics.

「Shizuku. You had done your best. You did great surviving.」

「Otousan.....」

「You fought well in order to protect your friend. I'm proud of you.」

「Ojii-chan.」

Koichi and Shuuzou naturally noticed. Shizuku was scared at the bottom of

her heart, however she faced Cattleya with a definite killing intent.

Both of them caressed Shizuku's head with clumsy hand manner. Shizuku wanted to cry slightly but then Kirino gently hugged her.

Like that, Tomoichi and others faced back toward Hajime and spoke out their thanks once more. Their words were short, but their words were filled with the deepest emotion until now.

The projection ended and silence returned.

For a while, everyone were entrusting their body and heart to the silence in order to sort out their heart.

Before long, unexpectedly it was Tomoichi who breached the silence perhaps in order to return the atmosphere to normal.

「Even so, when I imagine that my Kaori will get turned down after this.....yep, I want to punch Hajime-kun flying until the end of the earth once more.」

「Shouldn't that feeling be past its expiration date soon?」

「There is no expiration date to the feeling of a father who is thinking of his daughter you know, Hajime-kun.」

The atmosphere of the place softened just as planned from that conversation.

After that, Hajime and co looked around at the happening in Orcus for a bit more. Somehow it felt unfitting to come out from here and then go right away to a new destination and had fun there.

Within their chest there were complicated emotions that were transparent, complicated, clear but heavy, such contradicting emotions were jumbled within them. They wanted to keep hold to those feelings for a bit more.

And so, the group visited the sealing room once more with an atmosphere like taking a walk. It was Hajime's idea.

What he showed them there was the event before the legendary decisive battle.

——'Let's take her back, without fail'

——'Yeah. We'll take her back, without fail'



Kaori and Hajime were talking about their memory of Yue, and then they showed a determination that was like blazing flame.

Yue writhed while leaking out strange voice「Nfuu」. Kaori blushed for some reason while also incomprehensibly acting tsundere saying「I, it's not like I like Yue or anything, I'm telling you there is no way it's like that!」.

They also replayed past projection in Oscar's hideout once more, showing the time axis before the legendary decisive battle.

——'I wish for my life and death to be together with Yue-san'

Shia's resolve was displayed to Hajime. In order to take away the option of letting only her survive. If they were unable to save Yue, then she would rather die together with Hajime, so she wished.

'Obviously, rather I won't let you get away', Hajime responded with a smile.

Yue leaked out a voice「Nuwaa」as though she was in the verge of death. Shia blushed and said「Do, don't misunderstand, I simply super love Yue-san!」, inflicting a straight punch directly on Yue. Yue died in agony. She automatically revived though.

Through various things like that, everyone's feeling recovered their calm. Around that time.

「Now then, let's continue the trip.」

Hajime ordered that with a gentle voice. Gentle voices of agreement resounded.

Like that the group headed to their next trip destination——the Raisen Grand Canyon while looking forward to the encounter with a hopeless rabbit.

—

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

With this, Tortus travel journal Orcus arc is over.

I'm thinking to write another different story next time.

I hope that there will be another chance to write the continuation of this while feeling the nostalgia slowly.

Best regards!

—

PS

The story of training time in the abyss that appear in this chapter is an excerpt from a part of the LN volume 1's extra chapter.

For example, like Yuuka's standing that is based on the LN (the female student who was saved from the Traum soldier), this after story sometimes would reference material from there.

It will help if you readers can be magnanimous.

—

PS 2

Dragon Killing Sword => It's reimported from Nichijou lol

# Arifureta Chapter 330

## Arifureta After III Brutal Hero Shia Arc That Place is The Front Line City

—

(Translator Note: In the raw it was Ousatsu yuusha Shia, translated literally it means Shia, hero who beat the enemy to death with her bare hand. Something like that, so I just shorten it using brutal. Or perhaps brutalizer is more fitting? Anyway I might change the term later if the author shade some more light on the naming)

Author Note: Warning

This work is a fiction. It has no relation with the person, group, and city in reality.

In other words it isn't Akihabara, till the end it's the city of Akiba.

That's how it is, please remember it.

---

One day after several months had passed since Hajime and co returned to earth.

「Shia.....you are really going alone?」

The worried voice of Hajime resounded in the living room of Nagumo house.

Shia replied with a troubled expression while putting things like wallet and accessory into a rabbit bag that was embroidered with deformed rabbit mark.

「Geez-. Hajime-san is really a worrywart desuu! How old do you think I am?」

「Even if you say that.....you still haven't gotten completely used to the culture and sense of values here right? I don't think it's alright for you to go everywhere alone.」

「Now see here~. That's exaggeration when I'm only going shopping for a bit! I'm not a little kid you know?」

「But still, Shia. This is your “first time visiting Akiba” you know?」

The reason why Hajime was showing concern to an overprotective degree for Shia who was going shopping alone seemed to be that.

In front of Shia who was somewhat exasperated, Hajime showed a difficult expression and raised his voice 「No good. As expected I'm worried. I'm also going!」.

「Just what are you worried about..... It's a lovely city that is overflowing with the subculture that Hajime-san loves right? It's even get called as the holy land of the people with the same hobby like Hajime-san. And yet, why is Hajime-san acting like I'm getting send off into a battlefield?」

「Battlefield, huh. ....In a sense, you aren't wrong.」

Hajime muttered lowly. Shia tilted her rabbit ears limply hearing those words and made a doubtful face.

Hajime cleared his throat with a cough and declared once more with a serious face.

「Anyway! I'm also going with you!」

「Gee~~z. That's just no goood」

Shia's rabbit ears were flapping *funya funya* with delight and also embarrassment at Hajime's obstinate announcement.

Although, there was no way she could bring Hajime along right now.

「Someone with shadow that large under his eyes cannot come along! Hajime-san haven't sleep in these few days from running around to do information control for the sake of helping Aiko-san and creating new artifacts right? Please rest properly today!」

「No, I'm used to have all-nighter. If it's the current me who was trained in another world, I can go without sleep for a month easy.」

「Please don't familiarize yourself with not sleeping for a month.」

Shia hit Hajime's head lightly to scold him. She let out a long sigh, however she was happy that he was worried for her so she tried giving an alternative plan.

「Then, I will go together with Yue-san. Hajime-san will be relieved if it's the two of us right? Yue-san is generally a person with nothing to do in the house since coming here anyway.」

「!？」

Yue-sama who was watching the conversation of Hajime and Shia from the sofa in the living room with amusement got hit. She pressed her chest saying 「Hauu」 as though she got pierced by arrow from an unexpected place.

「No good. Rather, that's even more no good. Listen to me Shia. You don't understand at all about the place called Akiba. You or Yue going to that town, yes, it's like throwing raw meat in the middle of a pack of hungry lions.」

「I don't really understand what you are saying.」

「.....Then, I should also compromise here. Shia, in the first place your business isn't anything big right? Then, how about going together with me at the next holiday?」

「For me it's an important business desuu!」

‘Upsetting!’ Shia-san's rabbit ears bristled up as though to say that.

By the way, Shia wanted to go to the town of Akiba because today she coincidentally had free time, there was nobody else to play with than Yue-san who mostly had nothing to do, Hajime was in a state where he should sleep right away, and so it occurred to her to try taking a walk in the city of Japan that she still hadn't known much about.

And then, if she was asked why Akiba, it was for the sake of researching rabbit eared girls.

In earth, or rather in Japan, there was a kind of culture of loving animal ears.

It was a preference for their animal ears that were a target of persecution until only recently.

And then, there was also a lot of tales with rabbit eared girls playing active part in it. That was why Shia thought 「In that case, I have to study it desuu!」. Yes, in order to become a rabbit that was loved even more by Hajime!

For the time being, her plan today was to buy up all the product about the work where an absurdly powerful rabbit eared girl that was troubled by problem children rampaging in another world was playing active role, and the work of a uniformed rabbit eared girl who was controlling madness in a fantasy land.

Both rabbits in those works were skilled in housework and surrounded by many people with excellent capability but with problem children trait. Those points caused feeling of affinity to rise up inside Shia.

Also, she planned to buy anything she could get about works related to genuine hand-to-hand fighting. She already finished reading everything inside the book collection Hajime owned, and even though it was only half playing around she had finished learning most of the techniques that came out in them.

She was still unable to learn techniques from work with strong fantasy setting——for example the techniques of a certain bugged character like Shia Impaco or Shia Feveo. But Shia's body was really accustomed to techniques that were realistic to a certain degree.

Back to the topic.

Hajime who realized how firm Shia's determination (?) was let out a sigh.

His hand suddenly reached toward Shia's rabbit ears. He petted them *mofu mofu*.

「Nnh, nnu~. What is it, Hajime-san?」

Hajime said with a serious face toward Shia who was narrowing her eyes in pleasure.

「Shia, have a self-awareness. Your rabbit ears are the most valuable treasure of mankind.」

「What are you saying?」

「Mankind won't hesitate to go to war if it's for this.」

「Hajime-san, you are tired. Never mind that, please just go rest already.」

Hajime ignored Shia who was giving him an unblinking stare and put on ear cuffs on Shia's rabbit ears. The rabbit ears instantly looked like it melted into thin air and became invisible.

「You are tired with the usual hair band artifact to hide your rabbit ears right? I tried making ear cuffs type too. I improved it so it apply recognition obstruction on your appearance too. After all if you are strolling alone in the city, you will get hit on by men like there is no tomorrow.」

The rabbit ears flapped *myon myon*! The rabbit ears were as expressive as words coming from her mouth!

But, Hajime's face was serious in front of the bashful Shia. He grasped both of Shia's shoulders with a serious face that even looked a bit scary.

「Ha, Hajime-san?」

「Listen well Shia. That ear cuff is your lifeline. Be really, really careful in the town of Akiba. Don't you dare taking it off no matter what. ....After all Akiba is rough. No, perhaps it's the world that is stormy.....anyway, it will become really troublesome.」

「Ye, yes. That's, well, I won't take it off.....」

「Isn't this a bit too exaggerated when I'm just going to a lovely town that is overflowing with subculture?」, Shia's expression became really doubtful.

She self-concluded that as expected Hajime's head became a little strange like this because of the lack of sleep. Shia shouldered her rabbit bag and displayed her will to depart.

Shia who possessed a treasure warehouse was purposefully carrying the rabbit bag was in consideration when she had to take in and out item in the public.

At the entrance, Hajime was coming along with her to see her off. She wondered what Yue was doing, but Shia's excellent rabbit ears picked up

mumbling 「.....A vampire princess who mostly got nothing to do.....a vampire princess who is always in the house.....NEET vampire princess full speed ahead? .....There is no way.....」, so she ignored it while letting out a bit of cold sweat.

She decided to buy Yue's favorite sweets when going home.

「Then Hajime-san, I'm going.」

「Yeah. ...You bring your wallet? You know the direction?」

「Yes, no problem.」

「What about handkerchief and tissue? You don't forget your smartphone right?」

「.....I bring them. I'm telling you there is no need to be that worried.」

As expected, the sentences that were really like a parent acting worried for his little child going at her "first errand" made Shia felt a bit weary but.....

「You bring your Drucken? You have enough hand grenades?」

「I, I'm properly carrying my treasure warehouse you know?」

「Are your bullet magazines sufficient? Is your war preparation okay?」

「Who are you talking to!? Akiba is electronic item quarter isn't it!? It's not a battlefield isn't it!?」

Shia-chan suddenly became anxious. She came to think that Akiba was the front line with bloody wind blowing.

「.....Come back safely Shia. Show a good fight out there!」

「Is it a battlefield just as I thought!? Right in the middle of the city!? Japan is scary!」

Turning her back toward Hajime who made a sharp salute with a serious face, Shia departed while twitching.

While thinking for a bit that perhaps it would be better to just cancel this trip.

—

—

—



A few hours after that.

「Haa haa, kuu~, how persistent. So this is what Hajime-san was worried about!」

There was a silhouette nimbly running at the back alley of Akiba while their beautiful light blue hair was fluttering behind.

It was Shia who was cursing while her pure white miniskirt was flapping.

Her usual innocent smile couldn't be seen on her face. She looked bitter due to her own blunder and the demonic hand that was cornering herself exactly at this time. The rabbit ears she was proud of were also twitching around busily *piko piko* in vigilance to the surrounding.

Shia dodged trash can and piping lightly like an acrobat while rushing through the narrow alley between buildings.

She looked like someone who was attempting to escape desperately.....

No, in reality, unbelievably, at present Shia was being forced to escape.

There was no existence that could become a threat to Shia who was in the same inhuman group like Hajime and others. It was to the degree that all who knew Shia dubbed her as 「Real certain bugged character」.

She could pluck fired normal bullet from the air, on top of that recently she would say 「Please watch this Hajime-san! I finally mastered it!」 while perceiving railgun bullet by sight and dodged it like an agent from the Matrox. It caused Hajime to let out a bizarre groan 「Uboa」.

Such bugged rabbit was being forced to escape one-sidedly. The existence that forced her to do so was.....

「Fo, found heeer! Rabbit eared missyyyyyy!」

「Hii!?!」

Carrying a backpack on their back, clad in T-shirt that had the sentence 「This is my life」 skillfully written on it, blazing eye glint peeking out from between the long hair, while that hand was holding a solid looking camera——the “Akiba

warrior”, was right there.

Just a bit before Shia could rush out from the back alley, the door of a building’s rear entrance was slammed open. The young Akiba warrior who appeared from there made Shia spontaneously screamed pathetically.

That was natural. After all just a moment ago Shia’s rabbit ears detected that his presence was at the other side of the building. And yet, within an instant, right after she diverted her attention the young man appeared before her eyes.

‘This is earth isn’t it!? The peaceful country, Japan isn’t it!?’ Shia made a tsukkomi with a scream inside her heart.

The Akiba warrior young man faced Shia whose face was shuddering and raised his camera. Then he suddenly lowered his head in a flash.

「Ple, please let me take a photo!!」

「I told you already no-!」

Shia replied reflexively.

However, the young man was completely not discouraged! He didn’t draw back! He didn’t flinch! He didn’t look back! 「E, even so please-!」, even though he was stammering slightly, he bowed his head even lower with a posture that strangely radiated a strong will.

Seeing that there would be no end to it, Shia jumped to the building’s wall and kicked on it to jump over the young man’s head. She came out on a street somewhere.

Then, it seemed that Shia’s angry yell just now got heard, the bunch who were chasing after Shia before this— the group of warrior and gentleman was gathering in drove.

「Ra, rabbit ear-san-, please, allow us to take a pictureeee!」

「One shot, just one shot is fine, so-」

「Tha, that gaze, please turn it over here!」

「Is it okay to request a pose? I, if possible please take a gun finger pose. Also, can you make the rabbit ears to look a bit wilting? Or rather, I, I have a uniform

right here, i, is it okay to ask you to change into it?」

In the blink of eye Shia was surrounded by warriors and gentlemen. The youngest of them were at their teen while the oldest of them were at their 60. Swiftly a formation was formed with praiseworthy skillfulness. On top of that, there were even curious onlookers gathering thinking that there was some kind of event, finally even a crowd was starting to form.

「Uu, just what are you all saying. Even though there are also people wearing cat ears or dog ears. Even someone like the rabbit eared maid-san just now, somehow she was making an amazing movement, and yet why is it only me..... What Hajime-san said that 『Akiba is rough』 is completely right on the mark desuu」

Shia's face contorted looking like she was going to cry. Finally her surrounding was filled with Akiba's warriors, gentlemen, and ladies. They were eagerly aiming for the photo timing while waiting for Shia's permission.

By the way, the rabbit eared maid-san Shia mentioned. Shia only saw her from afar but.....

When the maid was doing her job attracting customer on the street, it seemed she discovered the crime of taking picture sneakily. The rabbit-eared maid-san broke into a run with terrific speed and in the blink of eye she subdued the criminal who was escaping like a startled hare while yelling some kind of technique name 「Lightspeed Tridenno Tackle!」.

Shia saw a hallucination. There was the image of a trident, overlapping on the hand that the rabbit eared maid-san stretched out.

Setting that aside.

About why the situation became like this, that was simply caused by Shia's painful blunder.

For Shia who had lived as a discriminated race for a long time, girl wearing animal ears by their own accord was a terribly rare existence. No, someone like Yue often performed “Yue-nyan, meow”, but that person was strange like that in various things, so setting that aside.....

Anyway, such girl was an existence that drew in her gaze and attention very

much.

That must be why. In the street that was already filled to the brim with people, Shia whose attentiveness was distracted bumped with another person, and in that instance her ear cuffs got caught on something and fell off.

Furthermore, she then acted in a way that was common for a panicked person.

When she tried to pick the ear cuffs in panic, her toes inadvertently kicked it away. That was her bitter blunder number two.

Unluckily, the ear cuffs that were tumbling away on the ground got bounced away like a pinball by the crowd and it flew away into the gutter at the side road with splendid trajectory that would make any commentator to yell 「GOAL!!」.

Shia tried to check inside the gutter in a flustered state but.....

If the ear cuffs were gone, naturally, it became exposed.

Yes, Shia's rabbit ears, and above all else, her beautiful look.

The beautiful long hair that reminded one of the pale blue moonlight, the beautiful face that would make foreign superstar to run away with their tail between their legs, the perfect body proportion that would put any model to shame.

Even though she was a super beauty but the atmosphere she was clad in was gentle and overflowing with loveliness that would make anyone wanted to look at her forever.

Such lovely girl who was already like a miracle even at the best of times, was

Of all things, wearing twitching rabbit ears *piko piko*.

At this occasion, the matter of the rabbit ears looking too realistic didn't worth any consideration. How was it moving, how their movement was just too natural.....such tsukkomi was buried deep at the bottom of everyone's heart.

Because, if they were a man, no, even if they were of the same gender, if they were someone who loved Akiba then they could only have their heart gotten stolen away!

The rest was inevitable. The warriors, gentlemen, ladies, and wizards of Akiba crowded like hyenas.

If they acted rudely toward Shia here, if they acted forcefully toward her, Shia would mercilessly punch them flying and disappeared right away.

However, as expected from them. They properly bowed their head and asked for permission before taking picture, and even though they were throwing their demand that was filled to the brim with their zeal without any reservation, they didn't force or threaten their target.

In the first place it was also Shia's fault for committing the blunder of losing her artifact even after Hajime's warning that it would cause a commotion. Conversely she was unable to bulldoze her way through them who were acting like this.

And so, she immediately ran away from the town of Akiba but.....

They weren't that soft.

They cornered Shia, just like how in the past the craftsmen of Heiligh Kingdom cornered Hajime using only their passion as their weapon!

With the astounding tracking ability and physical ability and coordination that was unthinkable to be carried out by fellows who only had met for the first time that made Shia couldn't help to make a tsukkomi 'Are you guys really just human!?', they approached her and earnestly begged for their request to be granted.

It was truly a situation of "Shia escape! But the enemy cut her off!". (TN: I think this is reference to Dragon Quest, when you try to escape from battle but the escape failed. Sadly I don't remember the exact notification message from the game English version)

She was unable to run away from the warriors, gentlemen, ladies, wizards, hunters, and searchers of Akiba!

Shia thought, 「The station is far away.....」.

「Fuu, it can't be helped. I don't really want to do something absurd in Hajime-san's world but.....rather, it's you all who are absurd! Surely just this much will

be fine!」

When the voice of 「Please, let us take a photo!」 was starting to become a loud chorus, she let out a long sigh while starting to walk briskly.

The crowd surrounding Shia in a circle was stirred, but she didn't pay it any mind and advanced straight ahead and then she stopped in front of a young man.

The young man muttered 「Eh, eh? M, me? Could it be, it comes? My springtime comes?」, but as expected Shia didn't pay it any mind and she grasped the young man's shoulders tightly.

The young man's face blushed bright red from having both his shoulders grasped by a lovely rabbit-eared beautiful girl who couldn't be found even in TV right in front of him. The surround became even more stirred!

The young man's face was vaguely filled with expectation, however, Shia heartlessly presented such young man with words that would be a reward for a minority of human with unique nature.

「I'm sorry. Can I ask you to kneel for a bit?」

「Eh?」

「Can you, kneel for me?」

Shia smiled sweetly while strengthening her grip to just barely the limit. The young man was taken aback for a moment, but for some reason his face became even redder and he bent his knees while his breathing grew a bit rougher. It seemed this young man too was a part of that “minority human with unique nature”.

Shia stepped on the shoulder of such young man. The young man spontaneously almost looked up, but right after that a great pressure assaulted him and he instinctually lowered his head. He was like a knight swearing fealty toward the princess.

The surrounding people gulped wondering if they were going to start abnormal this and that in front of this many people. The camera lenses were sparkling here and there.

But, the next instant, they all became wide eyed.

「Well then everyone, forgive me for the commotion.」

Shia bowed her head shortly along with word of apology, then right after that she put her weight into the foot stepping on the shoulder of the young man, and then she made a big jump right after that.

The young man was surprised that the recoil from supporting the jump of a single person was shockingly lacking and he turned around with a gasp.

Then, over there was the figure of Shia making a single rotation in midair while making the bald head of an uncle at the back as her next stool.

Like that Shia was making the warrior, gentleman, lady, wizard, knight, hunter, searcher, shop owner, rabbit eared maid-san, and residence of Akiba as her stepping stool while rapidly advancing through the crowd.

「I, I'm used as stepping stooooool!?!」

「Thank you very much-」

「My heart is jumping pyon pyooonn」

Everyone was greatly excited seeing Shia hopping *pyon pyon* beautifully by stepping on the crowd.

The rabbit ears waving *pyoko pyoko* and the rabbit tail shaking *furi furi*, and then the brutally bouncing twin hills *barun barun* made the many people to be just one step away from madness. The warriors almost turned into berserkers!

Of course, Shia wasn't doing this because she was aiming for it. It was something easy to leap over the whole crowd in a single leap.

However, such feat would be truly inhuman. Jumping by using people as stepping stools was just barely within the range of what could be processed as common sense.

Ignoring the noise of the people, Shia executed her last big jump along with a marvelous midair somersault that would make any gymnast went pale and landed lightly on the ground. And then without pause she dashed away like a startled hare.

The warriors who returned to their senses screamed 「HYA—HAA—!!」 and moved simultaneously. ....It seemed around half of them had transformed into berserker. Also, the rabbit eared maid-san was absurdly fast. The voice that said 「Please accept me as your pupil!」 seemed to reach Shia's rabbit ears but, surely it was just her mishearing, no doubt about it.

「This time for suree, I will reach the station of Akiba no matter whaaat! Don't look down on the rabbit who beat down even the god's apostle!」

Surely the apostles of god too would cry in the shadow if they knew they got compared with the warriors of Akiba. Especially Erst-san.

Like that Shia sprinted through the last alley and caught sight of the station at the front. She resolved herself that she wouldn't come to Akiba anymore without Hajime's company and she relaxed her tension from the relieve—it was then.

「Hae?」

Shia's foot that was stepping forward wandered in empty space. She unconsciously leaked out a stupid voice.

Losing the foothold where she should step on, her body shook forward while her gaze was turning. She saw a hole like a dark black hole there.

Just a moment before, there should definitely be a street there. There wasn't anything like a manhole with shifted cover. Above all else, the insistence of her instinct showed strongly that it wasn't just a hole.

Shia was going to fall into the hole, however, even while feeling shaken she used the power of “Air Force” that was built into her shoes with reaction speed that was worthy for a bugged character. She created a foothold to escape to the other side of the hole.

But,

「Wha-!? I'm getting sucked!?!」

Yes, the expression of black hole really fitted to describe that hole.

It was like the “Severance Calamity” of Yue. The extraordinary sucking power that was difficult to oppose was completely capturing Shia!



「Kuh, Hajime-san-!」

The surprise attack that was too sudden couldn't be handled by Shia whose battle instinct seemed to have grown slightly dull due to the peaceful days after the legendary decisive battle. At the end, she called the name of her beloved while getting sucked into the bottom of the darkness.

Silence returned to the alley where Shia vanished.

*Swirl*, there was only wind blowing vainly.

—  
—  
—  
—  
—  
—

After a sensation of great weightlessness, Shia felt the sensation of hard ground under her butt.

Light filled her field of vision and she couldn't see clearly. However, her excellent presence detection ability sensed the multiple presences surrounding her at the other side of the light.

「It seems I'm spared from getting instantly killed but.....the smell of troublesome thing is strong.」

Shia smiled wryly while pouring magic power into the treasure warehouse worn on her left hand's ring finger. At the same time she held up her palm horizontally and grasped. Vire Drucken that manifested at a superb timing settled into her hand.

It was an unexpected situation, the profound weight of her partner made Shia formed a fearless smile. The self-confidence to smash through any kind of situation and the resolve to reunite with Hajime and others without fail were dwelling inside her sparkling eyes.

Like that, Shia was on her guard while observing the situation. Before long the

light melted into thin air and vanished.

‘Now then, what kind of fellow is committing the foolish act of kidnapping me’, thought Shia while looking around her with her gaze dangerously narrowed.

「Oo, is it a success!？」

「As expected from the chief royal magician-dono.」

「Look at that beauty. It’s like she is the goddess of the moon.」

There were around twenty people being noisy in surprise and delight. Those people were wearing clothes like priest clothes or armor like soldier.

Shia stayed silent while her observing gaze looked around. A single youth who looked slightly exhausted walked in front of her.

The youth was wearing a magnificent robe that was decorated with geometrical pattern with ultramarine and silver color, and he was holding a cane that was made from wood that looked like twisted oak. His braided long hair had vivid silver color. He was wearing a small pince-nez glasses and his long-slitted eyes gave intellectual impression. He was a terrific handsome guy of intellectual type.

Such intellectual handsome guy faced Shia and opened his mouth, however, he was stopped by a hand grabbing his shoulder from behind.

「Wait Louise. Don’t approach her carelessly. That woman is holding a weapon. We don’t know what she will do.」

Saying that, the one who directed wary and suspecting gaze to Shia was also a terrific handsome guy. Vivid golden hair and golden eyes. Sharp gaze that was like a predator and trained body that was obvious even from above the light armor he was wearing. He was a man that gave the impression of a wild lion.

「Ee~, is that so? I think she is a really cute girl though? I want to get near her right at this very second.」

「Just shut up Phil. The opinion of a playboy doesn’t hold any weight.」

「You say that Eric, but inside your heart you also think that she is cute right? Besides, look, Greg who usually make uninterested face toward girl is

completely staring in fascination there.」

The person who appeared with frivolous comment was also a handsome guy as expected. He had slovenly appearance of greatly exposed chest while his finger was casually twiddling his wavy deep green hair.

In addition there was also a man with short black hair muscular build, but, as expected he was also a handsome guy of some kind of clichéd trope. He was staring intently at Shia.

Seeing them, Shia grew impatient and opened her mouth while lightly tapping Vire Drucken on her shoulder.

「Say, I don't know what is your objective in kidnapping me, but if you aren't hostile, then can you all explain the situation to me already? I want to go back home quickly.....」

Then, perhaps feeling irked by that attitude of Shia, the golden haired man who really looked like someone with arrogant personality——the man called Eric squinted his eyes and he was about to say something.

This time it was the silver haired and delicate looking man called Louise who stopped him. He made a gentle smile while speaking out their objective.

「Pardon our rudeness. We called you my lady to this place because we wish for you to save the world. My deepest apologies for our selfish rudeness. But, please, I beg you to save our world.」

Like that, decisively following the template, the extremely clichéd word was said.

「——Hero-sama.」

Their words and gazes were earnestly filled with great expectation.

Seeing that, hearing that, Shia reflexively,

「Eh, I don't wanna.」

Replied like that honestly.

A really painful atmosphere filled the place.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

In Brutal Hero Shia arc, it's basically only a story where Shia solve 90% of the problem all over the world (another world) with violence.

And so, there is also Shia arc that I had done before this, so I don't intend to do this arc for long.

Although, I have previous offense regarding the advance notice of the number of chapter, so I won't make any definitive statement!

Sorry if it become long.

Also, the chapter this time is the revised version of the side story I put in the activity report previously.

—

PS

Arifureta main comic chapter 25 is uploaded in Gardo.

Miledy battle is concluded there. Shia who is happy from Yue's praise is cute.

Also, mini Miledy is annoying in a nice way lol

Please take a look of it by all means!

Best regards.

# Arifureta Chapter 331

## Arifureta After III Brutal Hero Shia Arc Fly Until The Moon-! Desuu!

.

The silence was deafening. It was like the time had stopped.

「Err.....I don't wanna do it though.」

She made doubly sure! It was important so she said it twice!

The place finally turned noisy because of Shia's words.

Looking closer, this room had beautiful cylinder shape, the width was around the same with gymnasium in general, and inside it there were about thirty people.

Complicated geometrical patterns was carved under Shia's feet. There were the people who were calling out to her just now surrounding the pattern, and further around them there were people wearing robe or armor surrounding them. Although, there was just one person who seemed to be out of place due to the maid uniform that she was wearing.....

Anyway, their expressions were all similarly distorted with bewilderment, sorrow, and also indignation.

Among them, a young man who seemed to recover from the unrest earlier than others took a step forward.

It was the silver haired, blue eyed, intellectual looking glasses young man who was called Louis just now.

「Hero-sama. I am the chief spirit priest of Balted Kingdom's royal court——Louis Lektor. I am the one who summoned you here.」

Louis's robe swayed gently while he kneeled on one knee with a courteous manner. He then silently bowed his head.

「Your anger is only natural. My deepest apologies. But, I beg you, please understand that we don't have any other way. We don't have the slightest intention to be rude. If we have a method to contact you beforehand then we would dispatch a messenger first to ask for your consent——」

「Err, I'm not angry you know?」

「Eh?」

The intellectual looking young man slipped out a stupid voice that didn't suit his face. Perhaps it was just her imagination, but it felt like his glasses also slipped down slightly.

「Bu, but, just now, you said that you refuse to come to our aid.....」

Didn't that mean that she was feeling offended because she suddenly got summoned here without any explanation whatsoever beforehand? Louis asked that, but Shia spoke with a troubled look while tapping Vire Drucken on her shoulder.

「Well, certainly I'm thinking that this is really troublesome, but I'm not thinking that you all are rude or anything. If what you are saying about the danger to the world is real and you are grasping at straw as your last hope, that's, it's only natural for someone in your place to do whatever you can. ....I have memory doing the same thing myself, so it will become a boomerang if I get angry here.」

「I, I see.」

What came to mind was her figure in the past clinging on someone else with all her strength without any reservation at all. Shia's gaze became slightly distant.

「While it was an act that I did myself, the way I clung on someone else in the past was really something. I got elbowed on the stomach, showered with

electricity, got kicked, and in the end I was sent flying into a swarm of magic beasts, even so I believed without a doubt that person surely would help me!」

「.....In other words, you are saying that if I get elbowed, electrified, kicked, and in the end get sent flying into a swarm of magic beast.....is that, some type of monster? If I get sent flying into a swarm of them, you will help.....」

The intellectual type handsome guy Louis-san was trembling weakly while his face was turning pale. He was oozing out cold sweat like a waterfall.

The expression of the golden haired high-spirited young man called Eric shuddered as though to say 「Are you.....a demon」, the frivolous green haired youth Phil said 「I, is the girl from another world all like this」 with his expression twitching greatly, the black haired and taciturn young man Greg was closing his eyes while praying for Louis's happiness in the next world.

And then, the other people were also saying 「Te, terrifying.....」 while looking at Shia like they were looking at a demon. They were backing away.

「No no no! That's not it! I'm just recounting my experience! A long time ago I too was asking for help and the other party did that to me, that's all I'm saying!」

「That in itself, I think that person is a savage or something.....doing something like that to a beautiful girl asking for help is.....」

「Tha, that is, well, it's.....」

Her beloved person was called a savage but, Shia-chan, she was unable to object.

Thinking back, certainly she couldn't help but thinking 「What a thing that was done to me at that time.....」.

Shia got a faraway look once more while mumbling 「Come to think of it, even Tio-san suddenly got pile bunkered in her ass.....Yue-san also got her scalp shaved.....Hajime-san is merciless even toward girl isn't he.....」.

There, Eric cleared his throat and stood beside Louis.

「I am Eric Luxeed Balted. The king of Balted Kingdom. Let me ask you. What do you wish for? You who said that you understand our feeling stated that you

refused to aid us, then you must mean that we need to compensate you! What do you wish from us who are facing our destruction!?!」

It appeared that Eric who resembled a golden lion was a young king of a country.

From the start he seemed to be strangely tense against Shia. From that it seemed that the opinion of the summoner side wasn't united.

Shia didn't really understand why the king was opposing the hero summoning but.....

In any case, if the summoning was still carried out despite the king's opposition, the only possible hypothesis was that most of his subordinates were at the agreeing side.

In other words, it was a situation so pressing that they couldn't help but doing this even despite the king's protest.

Shia formed that conjecture while answering frankly.

「I don't want anything.」

「Wha, what did you say?」

Eric spontaneously revealed his bewilderment.

「Ah, if I'm forced to say, I want to be returned home but.....」

Shia said that as though she had just remembered it. Louis fixed the position of his glasses while speaking with a grave expression in respond.

「.....My apologies. We are only able to reconstruct the summoning formula from the old literature. The return method is.....」

Louis answered while getting cold sweat. But Shia only shrugged her shoulders casually. 'It's the golden pattern isn't it!' She said.

Eric questioned her once more while frowning.

「If you say that you don't even have anything you want then, why.....in the literature, it's said that the hero will lend their strength on their own will.....」

「I've never proclaimed myself as a hero. Besides, I don't know what do you want me to do but, something like saving the world is a serious affair. Wouldn't



it be accompanied by great danger? Furthermore it should be at the level that is beyond all of you.」

「What? In other words, you are saying that you are scared?」

‘Getting cold feet even before hearing the full story.....’, Eric questioned somewhat provocatively and also with exasperation coloring his expression, in respond Shia——

「Yes! Exactly!」

「Wha-」

She immediately answered bluntly without any hesitation.

Eric and everyone else lost their words. Shia smiled wryly toward them while saying.

「Now see here, even I have important people you know?」

「Important, people?」

Correct, she had a family. An important family of important people who treasured Shia above all else.

「My life, it doesn’t belong to me alone.」

「.....」

Her life that was treasured by them, there was no way that she herself could treat it so casually. An act that easily put her life at stake was like she herself was treating the family that was treasuring her irresponsibly.

「That’s why, first I have to prioritize myself above everything else. I cannot risk my life for the sake of a world and people that I don’t even really know. Of course, if there is someone asking for help and the situation isn’t that dangerous, I will lend them a helping hand but.....in a situation where there isn’t even a way to return back, in another world where I don’t know what could be here, I have to protect my own life above everything else.」

For the sake of her family. For the sake of her beloved people. For the sake of the people who loved her.

That was why,

「I'm sorry. I'm going to abandon all of you to protect myself!」

No one ever heard an abandoning statement this decisively. They could only become speechless.

If it was just a mere fright or self-protection that came from calculation, a ground for negotiation would still exist no matter how difficult it was.

They had done their best to prepare the material for such negotiation beforehand.

However, for someone to be this driven for their own protection so wholeheartedly and straightforwardly.....

「Fufufu.....you are a kind person.」

A tiny laugh and voice resounded inside the dead silent room. It was Louis.

He stood and walked in front of Shia. Shia went 「Heh?」 and tilted her head.

「Just now, you said that you are going to abandon us but.....」

Shia frowned in displeasure, wondering if this person was the occasional oblivious person who interpreted everything to fit their own convenience.

However, Louis kept gazing gently at Shia while even his comrades were looking at him strangely.

「For you who spoke that you will fully focus on your own protection, the proclamation just now is a poor move isn't it? The best way for you would be to pretend that you are cooperating with us.」

It was Shia herself who said that she had no one and nowhere to depend on in this other world. In that case, then certainly that would be the best way for her in order to secure the basic necessities for herself.

Eric and others gasped and looked at Shia after hearing that.

「And yet, you made your declaration even while still knowing nothing of the situation. That is.....your sincerity isn't it?」

She didn't want to trick them and imprudently give them hope.

That was why, first she conveyed her own will while knowing that it was a poor move.

While being aware of the possibility of getting thrown out into the world where she had no one to depend on.

「.....That's because a promise that is made has to be kept. My dignity, and my family's dignity is on the line.」

Just like he who responded to Shia's request for help at that time. Even when the elders offered a new and better offer which made Shia and Hauria clan became unnecessary, her most beloved person made his declaration without any hesitation of making a country into his enemy, just because of the reason "because that's the promise".

That was an important rule for the powerful, in order to not fall into heresy even if they were called a monster.

Shia averted her gaze awkwardly. Her gesture and words made Eric and others blinked with surprise. Her rabbit ears were swaying up and down *funyon funyon*. Several people blushed seeing Shia like that.

Louis's expression became even more gentle and he turned his gaze toward Eric.

「Your majesty. In any case, let's return to the palace. It's the fact that we are calling hero-dono here for our own convenience. We won't be able to talk about the matter ahead without first proving our sincerity to hero-dono.」

「Nuh.....got it.」

Eric looked reluctant, but looking at the way he was looking at Shia, it seemed that his severity toward Shia had lessened compared to before.

Certainly they were too impatient in their talk. First they should move to a place where they could calm down. Eric who was convinced like that offered his hand in order to welcome Shia to the palace——

At that time,

「For now, I'll show you to the palace. You should put down that dangerous weapon already——」

「!? This is too sudden!」

Suddenly Shia's rabbit ears stood straight, then right away with a terrific

speed Shia rushed toward Erik who was offering his hand to her.

The sudden action of the girl from another world who was holding a gigantic war hammer was responded by the royal guard captain Greg who was showing an amazing reaction speed.

He grasped Eric's collar and switched their position so that he was between Eric and Shia.

But, Shia didn't pause in her charge. Her palm pressed on Greg's chest and,  
「Nuguh!?!」

「Please stand back!」

With the overwhelming arm strength that was unthinkable coming from the slender girl, Eric wasn't even allowed to brace himself and he was sent flying backward.

‘Is the hero rampaging!? Is she rampaging because she think that she is going to be dragged to the palace!?’ The knights and mages were bewildered while thinking that. It happened at that instant.

Thunderous sound.

Dazzling flash.

The ceiling was annihilated, furthermore a light pillar pierced into the room.

The spot where Shia and Eric were at just a moment ago was completely swallowed by the gigantic light pillar along with the surrounding. The impact sent the people around flying.

(Electricity! It's an extra large lightning attack!)

Shia immediately deflected the shockwave that was assaulting her with a single wave of Vire Drucken while analyzing what happened in her mind.

It was just as she analyzed, the light pillar was emitting electrifying sparks which showed that it was a lightning strike.

Although, seeing how it was continuing to pour down without pause and the impact zone that was too accurate, it was impossible that this was a natural phenomenon.

As though to prove that, Louis who was similarly blocking the impact like Shia using some kind of method yelled with a pained voice.

「Celestial people!? So our action is noticed!」

The lightning was getting thinner. But they couldn't sigh in relieve yet.

Because Shia's excellent senses detected great torrent of power converging in the sky.

But, Eric yelled fearfully before she could say anything about it.

「Everyone, form the formation!! Something is coming!! Louis-, protect the hero!」

Not only Greg, Phil and other knights and mages were also gathering toward Eric's position all at once. Those who judged that they wouldn't get in position in time took anti-impact posture on the spot.

Louis who responded immediately to Eric's words muttered something while sliding toward Shia.

「Hero-dono! Don't move from there!」

Right after that, Louis's gnarled cane was tinged with light, then a half-spherical barrier was created.

Shia slipped out an admiring voice「Oo~」that was out of place, at the same time Eric at the rear pulled out the large sword on his back and stabbed it into the floor. By doing that, a barrier of faint golden vortex was produced.

The next moment.

The ceiling collapsed and fell like cannonball.

「Guuh」

「-!?!」

The large stone of the ceiling impacted the barrier. Groaning voices enduring the attack reached Shia's rabbit ears from everywhere.

(This isn't a mere collapse. This is.....wind's sound? Is this a more powerful version of "Wind Hammer"?)

Shia looked up to the sky. Her superior rabbit ears accurately perceived the phenomenon occurring outside the barrier.

The wind element magic “Wind Hammer” that Tio and Yue sometimes used. It was a magic that blew powerful gale to strike downward.

Right now what was attacking Shia was something more powerful than that. In a manner of speaking it was like a downburst.

「Kuh, no good-. The building won't hold! Hero-dono!」

「Wawa, oops!」

Cracks ran through the whole room like spider web. It seemed the building wouldn't endure even before the endurance of the barrier.

At this rate they would be blown away along with the barrier.....

Louis seemed to judge so. He tried to carry Shia by quickly leaping toward her.

And so, Shia swiftly dodged.

Louis-san made a face that seemed to say「Eh? It's a lie right?」 while passing through in front of Shia.

In that instant, the whole building was blown away in radiating direction. Naturally the people who were forming barrier and also the people enduring using shield and the like were similarly blown away.

Shia was sent flying by the violent squall and got thrown into air. Louis reached out his hand yelling「Hero-dono!」 but.....

For Shia, it wasn't the time for that so she turned away her gaze.

「The killing intent is high desuu」

Her rabbit ears were twitching *piko piko!*. Sharp wind slicing sound that was different from before entered her rabbit ears!

A stone that was the material of the former building was flying at her at that timing. Shia lightly hopped using it as her stepping stone and then an invisible wind passed through right beside her.

Furthermore! Even more wind slicing sound in great number! There was even flashes of lightning visible far above!

Countless wind blades poured down like heavy rain. In addition they were not visible to the eye. There was no way they could be evaded, and even if it was possible, most likely the lightning rain that fell in the speed of lightning after that would be inescapable.....

And so, Shia took a peek into the future.

「The safe zone is~, here!」

Shia stepped on empty air with a casual step and walked three steps ahead. The countless wind blades that rained down in an instant passed through around Shia in vain.

Without pause Shia took a step backward like a leaf swaying in the air. A flash passed through in front of her with lightning speed like a spear.

When she twirled as though dancing, it was like the wind blades and lightning themselves were falling while avoiding her.

*Ton-* She stepped on the air with light footsteps. However, in contrast with that lightness, Shia's body leaped backward like a bullet. The guillotine that was falling from the sky after that was hot on her heels, but Shia wasn't even grazed.

She easily got out of the attack range and landed on the ground, there she finally witnessed what kind of place she was at.

A round moon that was far bigger than the one at earth was floating.

What the moonlight shining down from the clouds' interval illuminated was dilapidated buildings.....no, many obsolete buildings that ought to be called an abandoned or ruin.

It seemed that all of them were made from stone. Half of them were crumbling, there was an arch that looked like it could collapse anytime, and straight stone pillars with unknown utility were standing in a disorderly fashion.

The cylinder building where Shia was summoned seemed to be a splendid building that was conspicuously big even among these buildings. Though there was already nothing remained of it except a crater.

A forest was visible at far away. At every direction. It seemed this bunch of

abandoned buildings that were like ruins were located in the middle of a forest.

「Uu.....」

A groan reached her rabbit ears. When she turned her gaze there, the maid-san wearing maid uniform who looked out of place was lying on the ground right nearby. Blood was flowing from her forehead. It looked like her consciousness was also hazy. She must have gotten hit by stone and received light concussion.

Then, the night sky suddenly became bright. It was a dazzling brightness that was different from moonlight or lightning flash.

「Ugeh, this time it's flame!? They are really brimming with killing intent!」

Even while she was cursing, countless lump of flame fell down as though a volcano had erupted.

Shia glanced at the maid, then she sighed deeply and said「It can't be helped」. She quickly carried her in her arms and leaped behind a large stone pillar.

A beat later.

Tremendous explosive sound resounded. The flaming lumps impacted and exploded, scattering flame and shockwave abundantly everywhere.

It was truly something that ought to be called a carpet bombing.

Shia peeked out from behind the stone pillar and looked around. She could see Eric and others enduring the attack desperately.

Shia immediately withdrew behind the stone pillar and lightly slapped the cheeks of the maid who was groaning「Uu~n」.

「Onee-sa~n! This isn't the time for sleeping you knooow~. It become really troubling right now you knooow~. Come on, please wake up!」

「Uu~, don't slap my facee~.....hah!? Where is here!? I am Dahlia!？」

‘Who am I!?’ That might be what she wanted to say before she bit her tongue. Or perhaps that was her saying her name properly? (TN: I don't know how to translate this one. In Japan ‘who am I?’ is ‘watashi wa dare da?’. Here the maid said ‘watashi was daria!?', it can sound like she isn't talking clearly because she



bit her tongue, or it can be interpreted that she is speaking her name Dahlia.)

The maid-san with blond hair and golden eyes, her hair bundled up with a barrette looking like she was in the first half of her twenties had beautiful face even from Shia's perspective. That beautiful face was flashing through many different comical expressions.

「Onee-san Onee-san. I understand you got your head hit and feel confused, but right now we are in the middle of extravagant bombardment. Please return to your senses quickly.」

「You are.....hero-sama!?!」

*Bang-*, explosive sound shook the air. Pebbles and dusts flew along with the impact. The stone pillar guard was going strong, but all of those flying at both sides woke up the maid completely this time.

「Hero-sama, you saved me? I'm grateful!」

「Your welcome. More importantly, what is going on? That glasses person said something about celestial people or something.」

「He, hero-sama, what composure.....as expected!」

「Ah, yes, let's set that aside for a bit now.」

The maid-san seemed moved for some reason. This person too was relatively composed or perhaps she had thick nerve.....Shia was thinking that while making a gesture of putting an object to the side.

The maid-san——when Shia asked to check, she didn't bite her tongue, instead it seemed her name was really Dahlia——looked up to the sky with an expression that was filled with unease and loathing.

「It's the celestial clan, hero-sama. They are arrogant bunches living far above in the sky pretending as the messenger of god.」

「God's messenger.....」

Shia's voice spontaneously slipped out「Uhee」. She had no good memory at all in regard of such existence.

「Most likely that bunch sensed hero-sama's summoning. They intend to

obliterate hero-sama along with all of us!」

Shia's rabbit ears jerked in respond. From the falling sound of the flame lumps raining down from the sky, the attack was in a direct course toward them.

Shia lifted up Dahlia into a princess carry and rushed away from that place.

Dahlia was surprised, but right after that she saw the place they were at just now got swallowed by flame blast and she gulped.

Shia immediately hid herself behind a half-destroyed building.

「Obliterating, that doesn't sound peaceful. Besides, that's strange. From what all of you said, aren't you all wishing to save the world? Why are they trying to kill you all who are intending to save the world?」

Shia implicitly asked 'Are you all lying?'. Dahlia quickly shook her head left and right in respond.

「You are wrong-, hero-sama! Please trust us! We are certainly wishing to save the world!」

「H~mm, then why? What is the objective of this celestial clan whatever?」

'She doesn't look like she is lying huh', Shia thought while asking so. Dahlia then informed a truly unpleasant information to Shia.

「The one trying to end the world is god——the divine spirits, that's why-」

「So it's that kind of pattern again!」

It seemed that it was that pattern again. Shia went 'Oh my god-' while looking up to the sky with both hands covering her face.

「The various divine spirits has given up on mankind. Indeed, mankind had done something to the extent that caused that decision. However, even if that is the case there is no way we can just allow ourselves to be destroyed obediently-」

「Somehow concerning words are flowing out like flood.」

Even when she appealed「I don't want to hear anymore!」 by flopping down her rabbit ears flat on her head, Dahlia-san's high speed explanation that was overwhelmingly lacking in detail continued rapidly like machine gun.

And then, Shia's excellent rabbit ears caught all her words without missing anything!

「The celestial clan obey the decision of divine spirit absolutely. That's because they are worshipping divine spirit. What's more, even if the people on the ground are destroyed, they alone are living in the sky. There is no way they won't help the divine spirits-」

「Aa~, so that's why. I who was summoned for salvation also become erasure target like this.」

「Hero-sama is a target to be erased!」

Even if she strongly said it like that..... Even if she clenched both of her small fists and strongly said that looking a bit cute.....

She wanted to punch that pretty face. Shia couldn't help but laughing drily.

Then, at that timing several people slid to where the two of them were at.

「Dahlia! You are safe! The hero!?!」

「Your majesty! Hero-sama is safe!」

The one who arrived with a grave look was his majesty Eric and Greg, Phil, and then several knights.

「We are running into the forest now. We'll return to the palace somehow.」

「But, your majesty. The celestial people are.....」

「Louis is holding them back for us.....we're going to retreat by ourselves.」

The mouth of Eric who said that was gritted tightly looking like he was enduring something that was hard to bear.

「No way.....even if it is Louis-sama who is called as the kingdom's strongest, he won't be able to face that many celestial people! Furthermore he is also terribly exhausted right now due to the summoning ceremony!」

「Don't say that-. I know it already-」

Shia guessed from that conversation.

Most likely, that glasses young man chose to use himself as sacrificial pawn in

order to hold back the enemy.

For the sake of protecting his master, and allowing the hero who was their hope to escape.

From the conversation right after the summoning, Shia understood well that the king Eric and his close aides had relationship as close friends. They were tied together by such strong trust to each other.

The fist of Greg and others were shaking because they had to use one such friend as a sacrificial pawn.

「Anyway we have to bring the hero to a safe place!」

Eric gave his order. Greg reached out toward Shia.

「Thi, this is heavy desuu. It's troubling if you all are risking your life for me as you please」, Shia said with a really troubled look.

Then, in that timing a voice came from the sky. The voice sounded irritated because the opponent just wouldn't die.

「Stop the useless struggle. It's unsightly.」

One of the celestial people who were above the clouds descended until few dozen meter above the ground. Something like a dazzling pattern was floating on his back while he was hovering in the air. He was a bald man wearing pure white priest's robe.

Just like his voice, his gaze that was looking down to the lower world was also colder than ice.

「Good grief, to think that there is someone who is able to revive the summoning method that should have been lost several hundred years ago..... you humans are really foolish without end.」

That extremely cold gaze was directed to the building where Shia was hiding.

「I know you are there, otherworlder. So you come to disturb this world once more like in the past.」

Louis and his caster subordinates hurriedly put themselves in front of his gaze.

Eric and others said「Don't come out!」 to Shia, but Shia shook her head saying「It's meaningless to hide」 and showed herself resolutely. Behind her Eric and others also came out preparing to fight.

「Hah. I brought a squad here just in case because we will be facing someone called by the summon ceremony but.....to think it's just a beastman girl.」

The scorn rode the wind and resounded through the night sky. As for Shia, she said「Hee, so beastman also exist in this world~. Ah, I see. That's why no one kicked up a fuss even after seeing my rabbit ears」 with comprehending face without even showing any displeasure.

Eric placed himself in front of Shia. He spoke vehemently toward the celestial man who was still looking grave.

「Celestial, I ask you to withdraw from here. Certainly, humans have harmed so much nature. We used the spirit element so excessively that it cornered the spirits. But, we noticed that foolishness. We are making preparation to recompense for that!」

「Hou, recompense?」

The exhibition of peculiar words that Shia didn't really understand caused Shia to be assaulted with an intense feeling of wanting to say「Let the concerned party take care of the rest」 and left this place but.....

Unlike Hajime, she didn't happen to have the lion heart that allowed her to intentionally ignore the atmosphere. Shia's heart was always the rabbit heart. (It was self-proclaimed though)

And so, she stayed in this place for the moment.

「That's right. We are amassing spirit elements and all the spirit stones that the people throughout the country have in order to return them to the star tree, to return the power of the world. Certainly we human might be foolish. But, we are a race that can notice our mistake and recompense for it! That's why, please——」

His majesty Eric desperately pleaded. But it was interrupted by a sneer.

And then,

「Worthless.」

It was dismissed with just one word.

Through the gaps of the clouds, countless dazzling light was created in the night sky. Those lights were like stars in the sky, however, they were raining down the smell of death which was too ominous toward the ground.

It seemed that the force of celestial people above the cloud was going to drop the light of judgment to the surface.

「Repent. The judgment is absolu——」

「Excuse mee~, can I interrupt for a bit?」

A voice that felt just too nonchalant was cutting across the vexed Eric and others.

The celestial man's glare pierced into Shia.

「I'm unable to understand most of the situation though. I was suddenly summoned just now, and then suddenly designated as erasure target with no question asked. Soo, please, it will be great if you can take those factors into consideration no matter what.」

「Worthless.」

As expected it was dismissed completely with one word.

「Your circumstance is of no relevance for us. Simply because you came here from another world, you are already an evil that is harming this world's order. Know that your existence itself is a sin.」

「Ah, now see here! Even I have family! Besides, they will come to pick me up in a day or two! Like that I think me being here won't be any disturbance to the world order or anything!」

Shia understood that Eric and others weren't bad people.

But, as expected it was her own life that should be prioritized. She was unable to risk her life to face unknown enemy for the sake of a world that she didn't even knew what its circumstance was.

Besides, it wasn't like she was completely unable to understand the reason of

the celestial people. Even Hajime was called irregular and the like at Tortus. For people who treasured the world order, something like people of another world was nothing but a cause of headache.

That was why, Shia did her best talking.

‘Let’s stop fighting. I’ll leave soon, so let’s not treat each other’s life so cheaply.’ She argued.

However, these celestial people, indeed, certainly it was just like Dahlia said, they were an existence that was like a walking lump of arrogance.

「Stop talking further. It’s filthy. A vulgar creature that cannot do anything other than crawling on the ground, who do you think you are talking to.」

「.....Regardless of your sense of value, even I have the right to live. My family is waiting for me to return home.」

「Right to live? There is no such thing. The right over life and death always belong to us, the celestial.」

No good. The talk wasn’t getting through at all.....

Shia’s rabbit ears tiredly slouched down with heavy gloominess covering it.

And then,

「It’s irrelevant even if they are human from another world. This family of yours must be inferior creature just like you without a doubt. If you say that they will come to bring you back, we will exterminate them until nothing rem——」

Suddenly the celestial’s words stopped. The person himself didn’t understand why he stopped talking.

Just,

「Inferior creature? Hajime-san is? Yue-san is? Otou-sama and Okaa-sama and everyone are?」

What was sure was that the pressure emitted by the rabbit eared girl who was muttering that was causing his skin to get goosebumps.

「Those words just now, I’ll pretend that I don’t hear anything. I will ask one

more time. Can you all please withdraw from this place? Can't both sides walk the path that doesn't endanger anyone's life?」

The celestial man showed his answer by creating a gigantic mass of lightning above his head.

There was no more delay. It seemed that the execution was absolute, as expected. A moment later, the gigantic lighting would surely trample the ground below.

So.

Shia leaped straight up and punched with her right!

「a, eh?」

It was like teleportation. The girl who was right below just a moment ago was in front of him. The celestial man who could do nothing except making stupid voice toward that fact, instantly, ate a hard fist that felt like there was steel inside it and he was sent flying!

The celestial man who was turned into cannonball pulverized an abandoned tower and pierced through! Without pause he opened a wind hole on the abandoned building that was on his trajectory before impacting the ground. He bounced like rubber ball while vanishing into the forest.

From the distance, several trees could be seen collapsing before finally there was a thunderous sound that was accompanied by dust smoke rising.

Perhaps that man was flying for around 400 meters.

Disturbance rode on the wind and rushed through the ruins. Through the ground below, and also through the clouds far above.

「I thought it will get blocked by someone at the level of apostle, but unexpectedly there is no resistance.」

The fist went *crack crack*. The neck went *clack clack*.

The treasure warehouse shined, an iron ball the size of a basket ball was summoned. That ball that was dragged by gravity and fell was lightly kicked up like performing football juggling. Vire Drucken was held up.



「How long you all are going to look down at heree! Fall down here-,  
SHAORAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!! Desuu!」

The out of place「Desuu!」echoed magnificently.

GOGAN- The impact sound of metal clashing sounded out, at the same time the metal ball that was hit by Vire Drucken flew vertically.

Midway it generated a membrane that looked like white air, and *paan* impact sound resounded through the night sky.

The celestial people recovered from their shock and hurriedly tried to shot down the flash but.....

They were already too late.

In the next moment, the metal ball that instantly flew to above the cloud powerfully burst out and spread ripples with vivid light blue color over and over again.

A beat later fierce vibration shook the air and thunderous roar fell like waterfall.

The clouds were blown away in a round shape and a splendid hole was created in the sky.

At the center of that hole that was created in the cloud, the moon could be seen completely. Clear moonlight fell to the ground, forming a heavenly ladder with superb position as though it had been calculated.

Shadows were falling in pieces, like people losing their footing from the ladder.

It was around ten people perhaps. The force of celestial people that was one-sidedly slaughtered from the sky.

Several people fell to the ground as they were and raised cloud of dust.

Only a single person flew away to escape, but the rest barely fixed their balance and headed toward Shia.

「Divine punishment-」

Countless flame lumps and lightning attacks surged toward Shia.

「Screw off desuuu!!」

A swing of Vire Drucken. *PAN-* A sound like the air bursting rang out, then it was like the air was distorted with the shockwave surging through it, erasing all the attacks.

「That's impossible!?!」

「Don't falter!」

One of the celestials opened his eyes wide as though he was seeing a monster.

A different celestial scolded him while manifesting a sword of compressed flame in his hand.

「Tha, that's!? Don't tell me it's light saor!?!」

「Li, ligh? Eei, it's too late to get scared now-. Die——」

*Begyo!* Such sound came out, at the same time Vire Drucken's horizontal swing hit the celestial-san along with the light saor (?). He was turned into the second pinball and flew into the forest.

「A mere inferior creature dare!」

「Receive your judgment obediently!」

Two swords approached. They weren't light saor (?), but physical swords. However, they weren't normal sword. Whether it was the pressure they emitted or the blade that was reflecting the moonlight, they were sharp thing that gave off impression of terrifying sharpness.

——*KAAN*

Such sound rang out. The sound came from Shia's hand and leg that blocked the swords.

——Shia-style metamorphosis magic Steel Garment (Nickname, Spirit Defense)

「Ha?」

「Eh?」

There wasn't a single scratch on Shia-chan's precious skin! The eyes of the two celestial-san turned into dot. Because, it's sword you know? A really sharp sword came slashing you know? It's so sharp it can sever a large tree with one stroke you know?

Or rather, how could *KAAN* sound came from human body?

「An opening desuu!」

Shia tossed up Vire Drucken. Aa~ndddd.

——Shia-style Double Lariat!!

Pleasant sound *gokyu!* sounded from the celestials' neck!

「Idiot! Letting go of your weapon like that!」

‘Like this, she couldn't create shockwave like before to erase the lightning!’, another two celestials thought and fired their lightning.

「Barrier desuu!」

「Aa!? Formid! Churchila!」

Using Shia-style Barrier, the celestials whose neck made *gokyu* sound and got invited into heaven reincarnated into splendid meat barrier. They got burnt black and fell to the ground. Even the cremation was perfect.

During that time, Shia snapped the falling Vire Drucken into her grasp and then she made use of the centrifugal force to throw it.

The two celestials barely dodged, but they gasped seeing the passing war hammer.

Because there was a chain stretching with clinking sound from it.

「Funnuu!」

It was a yell that was filled to the brim with charm. However, if the chain that was linked with the handle was pulled by inhuman physical strength.....

Naturally, the huge war hammer was pulled back with a movement that ignored the law of inertia.

「Guaa!?!」

An impact came from behind right after they thought the hammer had passed through. One of the celestials was squashed as though he just got run over by a truck.

——Shia-style Rabbit Punch (War Hammer version)

「This-, this damn monster-!!」

The last celestial was covered all over with lightning spark. Shia grumbled 「Mumu-, it's like Hajime-san's Lightning Clad!」 and she strengthened her vigilance.

The celestial charged forward like a streak of flash. Both his hands were grasping lightning ball that looked like plasma. A pressure that could scatter human body just from touching it could be felt from them.

And so,

——Learned from Hajime Yakuza Kick!!

「Gobouo!?!」

Shia's kick splendidly ran into his solar plexus.

The spark vanished and the celestial man was staggered while holding his stomach.

The celestial was wordlessly closing and opening his mouth like a fish gasping for air. Ahead of his gaze Shia was twisting her body greatly. Her hand that was holding Vire Drucken was turned backward as though she was drawing a bow.....

「No matter what kind of circumstance there is, no matter what kind of existence is the enemy, I won't surrender my right to live.」

The rabbit ears stood straight. The rabbit tail also stood straight.

「If you wish to kill even after everything that I said, then there is no choice!」

「Wa, wait-」

The celestial man squeezed out his voice asking Shia to stop, but Shia hit him with her unflinching gaze.....

「Fly until the moon-!! Desuu!!」

GON- The sound resounded and a single shadow flew.

Dancing at the center of the beautiful moon.

Shia relaxed her swinging posture and placed her war hammer on her shoulder.

She tapped the war hammer on her shoulder while looking down. There, she saw the young king and his people watching in a daze with opened mouth and stupid looking face.

From where they were standing, it was a scene of a rabbit eared girl standing in the middle of the large moon.

The light blue hair glittering from the moonlight looked far removed from reality when it was swaying by the night wind. It had mystique that stole everyone's gaze unconsciously.

'I see.'

Everyone was convinced.

That she was special.

Putting aside whether she was the hero that was extolled in legend, without a doubt she was a special girl.

Because, she was that terrifying,

She was so terrifyingly beautiful,

And then, because she suited the moon so much like that.

.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Forgive me for the story and world view that are like the default (sweat)

Shia arc is mainly Shia-style violence, so it will be great if you can enjoy that part.

.

Nichijou chapter 25 is posted at Gardo Comic.

Lily is.....lol

Also, Samba Yue-san can only be showed somewhere huh, was what I thought.

Please try reading it no matter what!

# Arifureta Chapter 332

## Arifureta After III Brutal Hero Shia Arc I'll Rabbit You Up! Desuu!

.

A horse cart was running along the forest while vibrating and making rattling sound that didn't sound gentle to one's butt.

It moved in the way that hid itself from the bright moonlight.

Although, there were several knights and mages riding horse around a horse cart, so it wasn't really hidden.

It was running along the forest was only for peace of mind.

From its running speed that was too fast to be called stealthy, it could be clearly seen that the group was wishing to reach their destination as fast as possible.

The inside of the horse cart that was hurrying through the road like that was filled with really awkward silence.

(This feels absurdly awkward desuu~)

It was oppressive.....well, not really, but the silence that was containing delicate tension that was observing how the other party would act was silently giving damage to Shia's rabbit heart.

If she had to say, yes, it was like that.

She was feeling like a transfer student in her first day.

Who should she talk to? In the first place should she be the one who started

the talk? Or rather, if you guys are going to glance like that then it's fine if you call out to me you know? Look, there must be at least one person in the mood maker role right, there is right? It's fine even if you call out to me cheerfully you know! C'mon!

That was how she felt. The mental state of meaninglessly checking one's own belonging to ignore the awkwardness, such feeling!

The cause was obvious.

The battle VS celestial race just now.

And then, the overwhelming physical power.

'Get close and punch! That is exactly the ultimate skill!' The battle that seemed like to claim like that with its simplicity and clear cut intend without concealing anything, it seemed to carve something unforgettable in their mind.

Their eyes that were looking at Shia when she lightly landed on the ground were similarly filled with awe, as though they were witnessing the descend of genuine goddess——or rather a fighting god.

It was to the degree that everyone starting from the king Eric simultaneously kneeled without delay.

It went without saying that Shia got flustered by that. She hastily said 「Please don't knee~! You there, please don't worship mee!」 and made everyone stood up. It even made she herself to be the one who suggested to go to the kingdom by saying 'Anyway first let's go to somewhere where we can calm down'.

Also, the royal capital was in a different place from that old ruin where the literature of hero summoning was discovered.

Shia reflected of such thing while peeking out from the coach's window. The wind was making her rabbit ears flapping while she was praying to the moon.

(Hajime-sa~n, Yue-sa~n! It's fine if you come to pick me up right at this moment you knoww~)

Reach! This feeling!

「Shia-sama.....you're beautiful.....」



It seemed that her prayer reached. To the maid-san in front of her. The rabbit heart's range appeared to be relatively short.

It was different from the content of her prayer, but finally the silence was broken.

Shia smiled sweetly while turning her gaze to the maid-san——Dahlia.

For some reason she looked intoxicated. It seemed that she was fascinated by Shia who was looking sorrowful while the moonlight was illuminating her from the window.

「Err, thank you very much? But, Dahlia-san is also beautiful you know?」

「No, no way.....that praise is too much for me. Compared to Shia-sama who is strong and beautiful like the goddess of the moon, the likes of me is a mere pebble on the roadside!」

Dahlia-san clenched both of her small fists and spoke insistently with rough nasal breathing「Funsu-」. “Raising both hands and clenching fists” seemed to be the peculiarity of this person.

「Pebble on the roadside you say.....you don't need to abase yourself like that. Or perhaps, someone as beautiful as Dahlia-san is the standard of this world?」

Shia wasn't giving flattery or anything, even from the perspective of Shia who was used to seeing transcendently beautiful women and girls, Dahlia was a beauty whose humility just now only sounded like sarcasm.

Although, thinking carefully his majesty Eric and Louise and others too, the male camp was also a complete line up of handsome men. Shia tilted her head wondering if it was this kind of world or perhaps country.

Louis who was sitting beside Shia sighed in relieve. He must have been searching for a talk starter. He looked relieved and joined the talk.

「Not at all, Shia-sama. Dahlia is a beauty who is even praised as beauty princess in our country.」

「Beauty princess? Is she a princess?」

Then, what's with the maid uniform? Shia's head was tilting in confusion even more.

By the way, the way Louis called Shia changed because after that battle both of them made their self-introduction once more.

For Shia, being called a hero vividly reminded him of a certain someone, and it was a title that would produce black history to call oneself like that. And so she asked them to be spared from that. As the result they compromised by calling her Shia-sama.

「She isn't a direct descendant of the royal family. Though she is a duke's daughter, so she has the blood of royalty in her.」

The one who answered in the place of Louis was his majesty Eric who was making a sullen expression for some reason. He was sitting diagonally ahead of Shia and he had been crossing his arms all this time.

His atmosphere made her wondered whether he was in a bad mood but, the source of the glances was this guy. It was transparent that he was immensely curious about Shia.

Louis smiled wryly while continuing.

「Honestly speaking, we never thought that a lovely woman like Shia-sama would appear from the ceremony of hero summoning. Even in the literature it was mentioned that all the heroes who were summoned in the past were male. That's why.....」

「Aa~, in other words, a honey trap?」

The words of denial came from duke's daughter maid Dahlia.

「It's not trap or the like. I'm resolved to offer both my body and heart to the hero.」

「I won't deny that there is the calculation of increasing the hero's favorable impression toward our country.」

The words that Louis said with a wry smile were certainly really blunt.

However, from their story, it seemed that Eric, Louis, and then Dahlia. Also, Greg and Phil, these five had the so called childhood friend relationship. It seemed everyone was treasuring Dahlia.

Although it was by the person's own will, to offer such woman to a hero

whose personality wasn't even certain seemed to be a terribly bitter choice for them.

Even so, there was no one with greater aptitude than Dahlia to keep the hero company.

「Ahaha.....it feels like that is too blunt but, I'll interpret it as the sincerity of Louis-san and everyone. But, why wear maid uniform? It's too strange for someone who is praised by the people as beauty princess to dress like that though.....」

「? Isn't maid uniform the battle outfit and also the greatest dress for woman?」

「.....」

‘This gentle faced glasses, is his head alright.....?’ Shia thought with her eyes spontaneously turning reproachful.

With a bewildered face Louis said,

「The hero-sama in the past introduced this outfit. The hero said that this is the most prominent outfit in the other world.....」

「I'm sorry for our world's idiot herooo-」

‘A Japanese. That hero was absolutely a Japanese! Furthermore that person must be an Akiba warrior desuu!’

Thought Shia while she apologized reflexively. The bastard hero acted as he pleased because this was another world and made his own preference as tradition. That damn hero.....

The inside of the coach turned uproarious at Shia's sudden apology. The people outside the coach seemed to hear the voice too. Various words like「What happened!?」 or「Crap-, has his majesty angered Shia-sama!? He will turn into mince meat!」 could be hear from them.

「Ju, just what's with you!」

His majesty Eric told the outside that it was nothing while complaining to Shia. It was a problem that she found it difficult to say anything about.....or rather, explaining about the unique people that was shouldering unique karma even in

earth——the Japanese was extremely difficult, so Shia only laughed to divert the question.

※ Warning! This is the personal opinion of Shia who is another worlder!

「Ahaha.....it's nothing. More importantly, how long it will be till we reach the kingdom?」

「Ri, right. I believe we will arrive around dawn.」

It was dangerous to march throughout the night. However, they couldn't stay for long in that place after the attack by the celestial race. There was a need to return to their country and hardened their defense even if they had to act a bit recklessly.

Shia frowned slightly and opened her mouth.

「In that case, my pick up might come faster than we can arrive there.」

The expression of his majesty Eric turned grave. Dahlia turned an entreating gaze toward Shia, while Louis showed a sad expression that was mixed with perplexity.

「Shia-sama. What could you mean by someone picking you up? If it's alright with you, please kindly let us know.」

Crossing over worlds wasn't something that could be done casually. It was an act that twisted the principle of the world.

For Louis who was the kingdom's greatest and strongest caster who was called as genius with no one to contest it, it took him nearly ten years since he accidentally discovered the lost literature of hero summoning and reconstructed it. In the literature, there wasn't any mention at all that the ceremony of returning back the summoned person had ever been held.

「Err, well, how should I say it, if it's my family then they can normally cross over worlds.」

Shia's instinct told her that Louis and everyone were relatively good people. Although, she didn't really know them well, furthermore when the other party was at the scale of a country, Shia's mouth wasn't so loose that she would lightly prattle about her family. She naturally spoke ambiguously.

Louis's glasses glinted.

「By that, do you mean it's the person who elbowed and electrified Shia-sama in the past?」

「Tha, that's right.....」

「In other words, that person is someone so powerful that he could do such thing to someone at your level?」

「Well, yes.....」

*Gulp*, the sound of swallowing saliva resounded. It might be Eric, or Dahlia, or perhaps the other two.

A tense atmosphere was flowing, as though they were imagining a monster that a fighting god like Shia was helpless against.

Actually, even that monster recently would spoke shudderingly「This bugged rabbit!」 seeing his prided bullet (normal bullet though) got normally dodged or plucked from midair but.....

Shia guessed what Louis wanted to say and replied first.

「But, I think it will be difficult to beg for help from him you know?」

「.....That is, as expected it's because of the same reason like Shia-sama?」

No, simply because he would feel it was troublesome. He was a person who was absurdly dry toward other people.

Such words weren't said by Shia-chan who read the mood. She was different from Hajime! Really different!

Shia smiled vaguely to dodge the question. Then Louis pondered with a difficult expression.

「Shit-. This is why I opposed something like hero summoning-」

His majesty Eric cursed with a choked voice. Dahlia paid attention to Shia's expression while she immediately said「Your majesty-」 to stop him, but surely he was accumulating a considerable amount of stress. The young king who was standing at the front of the path of salvation of the world that was heading to ruin discharged his words as though to spit out that heavy pressure.

「This is our, mankind's karma. We who are living in the present should be the one to shoulder our ancestor's sin-. We shouldn't rely on someone from another world from the very beginning-」

「Your majesty..... But, this is the conclusion from discussing it many times——」

「I know-. I know but still-, Louis! Me agreeing to it is my weakness-. In the first place it's nearly impossible to obtain salvation with only our strength. I understand that, that was why I also clung to it-. I harbored hope-」

That was why, he harbored even stronger hope after witnessing that much power, but because of that.....

「I know that this is just an unjustified resentment! Even so let me say this, Shia Hauria-. You are——cruel-」

「.....」

Certainly, it was a terribly unjustified resentment. Shia was only getting kidnapped. She was simply brushing away the sparks of disaster coming down on her. There wasn't the slightest reason for her to be criticized. Rather, it was Eric and others who were very cruel for asking her to risk her life for the sake of strangers.

He understood. Surely, most likely, as the only one who opposed the hero summoning, he was the one who understood it better than anyone.

However, the face of his retainers that flashed at the back of his mind, the face of his retainers who were waiting back home while believing that they surely would return together with the hero.....  
hope

And above all else, the face of his kingdom's people who he should protect.....

The dam of the young king's words was destroyed.

His majesty Eric covered his face with both hands and hung his head down. That appearance was like an old man who was completely tired of life.

It was thoughtless words toward the hero who they personally summoned. However, both Louis and Dahlia also stiffened as though they had lost their words. That expressed their feeling more eloquently than any words.

They had failed in the hero summoning.

They were unable to obtain hope. Those realizations.

「.....Why is it me who got summoned I wonder.」

‘If it’s hero, there is someone else who possessed that title, and yet’, Shia thought with an expression that looked like she just got stuffed full with bitter things.

At the same time, for some reason she recalled back.

About her family who sacrificed their life for her.

Escaping from the sea of trees, chased by the empire, hunted in the great canyon.....

Everything of that, was for Shia’s sake.

Family, would never abandon family.

Because they were the rabbitman race, who were the weakest among the beastman race, and because of that they were tied together with the strongest bond.

That was why, until the very end, because she understood that they wouldn’t abandon her, Shia ran.

Toward the sign of hope that was showed to her by her power. The power to peek at the future.

Believing that the future could be changed, she paid no mind to her appearance and acted with literal “desperation”.

Right now, seeing the king who was hanging down his head, she suddenly thought.

If, at that time, Hajime and Yue deserted her, would she also hold unjustified resentment? And then, would she lament and crumble down like this?

She didn’t even want to imagine it. However, it was a most terrifying “what if”.

*Gloom.....*, her rabbit ears naturally drooped down.

Perhaps that was why. When she noticed, her words resounded within the oppressive atmosphere.

「Come to think of it, what was that about spirit art or spirit element?」

「What?」

「Hah?」

「Eh?」

Question marks in three different shapes floated in the air. Everyone was taken aback by the question that wasn't reading the atmosphere.

Shia added more questions without paying that any attention.

「Like the flying method of that celestial being-san, or divine spirit? something, various things were mysterious.」

「No, I think the way you punch is far more mysterious though?」

‘That wasn't power output that can be displayed by slim girl, or the whole mankind even.....’, that tsukkomi of the heart of his majesty Eric felt like it could be heart. Louis and Dahlia also nodded deeply.

‘Let's not mind that!’, Shia made a gesture like she was putting a box to the side while speaking with a wry smile.

「I said it before this, “If it's not that dangerous then~”.」

In this world the celestial race was the messenger of god. And then, looking at how the king of a country Eric was interacting with a man who wasn't even the king of the celestial race as though the other party was his equal or even higher in status, it could be determined that in this world the celestial race was a superior race that was placed in really powerful position.

However,

「Those celestial people, they were ordinarily weak.」

「We, weak.....certainly, Shia-sama was overwhelming but.....」

Louis showed a twitching expression.

When Shia asked 「Those people, how strong they are among the celestial



people?」, Louis thought for a bit before answering 「They must be around the middle. The elites would be several times stronger than them」.

Shia nodded with 'I see' and said.

「As I thought they are weak. At present I'm not feeling any danger. Of course, there must be those that even more above the elites but.....」

「But?」

「For now, even if they become ten times faster I don't think they will reach the speed of sound.」

「Yes?」

「They also don't have anything like constant deployment of attack that will deal lethal wound just from touching.」

「Shia-sama? What are you talking ab——」

「They also don't have martial arts that is installed directly from god.」

「.....」

「They also don't have the physical strength to split the earth with one attack.」

「.....」

「Also, it doesn't look like they will crawl out infinitely like cockroach!」

「Shia-sama. I think that's not a living thing anymore.」

Louis-san, correct answer.

It wasn't a living thing. Naturally. After all that was exactly the "god's apostle".

The complexion of Louis and everyone recovered a bit hearing Shia's remark. 'Could it be.....', such thinking was welling up.

「Shia-sama, could you perhaps——」

「Please don't misunderstand. I won't ignore my family who come to pick me up and run around for the sake of this world with just me alone.」

「.....」

‘But’, she continued. Her gaze was directed toward his majesty Eric. The gentle aura that could be vaguely seen in those eyes made his majesty Eric held his breath reflexively.

「If I’m fighting together with my family, of course I will also do my best. In order for that to happen, I will at least help to persuade them.」

Just like what Yue did for her in the past.

「That’s why, please teach me about this world. If there is something rare here that would make anyone unable to say troublesome, surely my family too will lend their help for everyone.」

Actually, if Shia asked then Hajime surely, no absolutely wouldn’t refuse. Far from that, he would instantly read Shia’s feeling and said 「Say what you want」 with a gentle expression to her, no doubt about that.

Even if it was about a world unrelated to them. Even if there was unknown danger existing.

There was no need to talk about merit or demerit. That was what family was.

However, she didn’t want that. Not just Shia. Yue too, Kaori too, Tio too, Shizuku too, everyone else too, they absolutely didn’t want to think “We are family, so Hajime will do anything if I ask him”.

They wouldn’t speak it out loud but, if Hajime heard it then surely he would say 「It’s fine even if you all act more spoiled though.....」 with a wry smile.

The demon king was really sweet to his family. It was sweetness to dripping and melting degree.

To be Hajime’s wife, heart that was strong in various senses was necessary.

Shia thought of her beloved person while forming her words.

「And then, if my family lend their help」

Eric and everyone stared back in fascination at Shia’s eyes that were sparkling with pride and confidence.

‘Ehem!’ The rabbit ears curbed up while Shia declared.

「There won’t be anything to fear anymore! Whether it’s fate, or an

impossibility, everything will get solved all at once!」

Eric, Louis, and also Dahlia, they all were captured by an intense feeling that couldn't be expressed in words and couldn't say anything.

They thought that they had to say something here, but it was as though their throat was stuffed with something and words couldn't come out. In exchange, their blood boiled as though there was strength that lost its destination inside them rampaging to search for outlet.

*Thump thump*, their heated blood flow could be heard inside their ears. Their brain felt dizzy from the heat as though their head was boiled up. They couldn't take off their eyes from the rabbit eared girl as though their gaze was sewed on her.

Even so, perhaps the obstinacy as the king, or perhaps simply because as a man he was unable to endure getting one-upped continuously by a girl.

His majesty Eric's hand reached out toward Shia's hand that she placed on her lap as though he was getting pulled while,

「Shia, you——」

「Please stop calling me without honorific.」

「Ah, yes.....」

Shia-chan! She absolutely wouldn't yield what couldn't be yielded!

The inside of the coach that almost got completely enveloped by a bizarre heat instantly chilled down due to Shia's smiling rejection.

By the way, for his majesty Eric it was his first experience replying 「Ah, yes.....」 like this toward a woman.

「A, ahh, Shia-sama. His majesty is near your age.....just calling you with your name is.....」

Perhaps unable to watch his majesty Eric whose expression was dumbfounded as though he just got hit with an unexpected slap, Dahlia timidly speak considerately but,

「Rather, it's because he is an opposite sex who is almost the same age with

me. I won't mind if it's an elderly or a small kid though.」

It seemed she somehow felt unpleasant to have man the same age with her other than Hajime calling her name directly. Of course, if it was with someone who was close with her to a certain degree——for example, if it was with the classmates at the present time then it would be okay even if they called her name.....

Although, at that time the demon king punch would come flying from Hajime so no one called her by her name without any honorific.

Anyway, it appeared she wanted to be spared from a man who she only had just met to call her like that. Add 'san' or call her with her family name.....such wordless demand was keenly conveyed to everyone.

Shia's guard was solid.

*Cough-*, Louis cleared his throat to change the atmosphere. He glanced at the king who was still dumbfounded and opened his mouth toward Shia.

「Ee~, then, Shia-sama. While presumptuous, please allow me to explain the situation.」

「Yes, Louis-san. I will properly open my rabbit ears, so best regards.」

*Whoosh-!!* The rabbit ears turned toward Louis. Louis's cheeks loosened.

For some reason his gaze was really warm since when Shia declared that she would abandon them at the place where she was summoned. It appeared that he liked Shia's straightforwardness.

According to the explanation of such Louis.

It seemed that an energy called spirit element existed in the nature of this world.

Spirit element was the energy source for every kind of tool. It became the cornerstone of mankind's development. Especially the technology to generate a phenomenon using the spirit elements——the spirit art was a primary factor to mankind's development.

Other than being a technique to cause pseudo natural phenomenon, spirit art was also a technique to reinforce the body and healing.

(It's not really different from magic isn't it..... But, my magic power doesn't react at all, is it a different energy?)

She had no analysis ability like Hajime, so Shia thought like that with her instinct.

Louis confirmed that Shia seemed to comprehend and continued explaining.

「The development of technology and tools, and then the expansion of living area by means of reclamation.....that was how mankind developed. By using spirit elements and spirit arts, the development progressed at an accelerated speed.」

However, spirit element is a finite resource that was produced by nature. Human themselves also produced it to a certain degree inside their body, but it was minuscule compared to nature.

Also spirit elements aren't a resource that was granted to only mankind.

「There is an existence called spirit.」

「Spirit.....is it?」

「Yes. The will that is born from a natural object or natural phenomenon is called something like that.」

Shia vaguely recalled a certain belief of Japan that she heard from Hajime while thinking.

(If I remember right.....gods are residing in everything. That's why, let's treasure everything, something like that. The eight million gods was it again?)  
(TN: A belief in Japan that there is many god for everything, around 8 million of them. Ask google-sensei for more detail)

It was said that spirit had tens of thousands of varieties that was proportional to be considering existing in all creations. The representatives of spirit could be found in the nearby phenomenon——like spirit of wind, fire, water, earth, or so many others.

In general the shape of spirits was like a ball of light, what they were saying was also mostly unclear. However, there was also existences among them who was able to communicate their will clearly, and many of such spirits were able

to take the form of small person. Of course, there were also spirits in the shape of insects or animals.

And then, those spirits,

「They make the spirit elements as their energy source.」

「E~rr, in short, the meal of the those spirit-san are spirit elements?」

「Ahaha.....exactly. And then, that's exactly the cause of the emergency for mankind.」

Shia interpretation made Louis showed a warm expression that seemed to want to say 'How really cute', even so his expression immediately turned pained and he continued.

「Fundamentally, spirits obtained vitality by having meals of spirit elements that is produced from the nature like from earth, plants, and so on. And then, spirits are able to put the nature in order.」

「But, mankind developed.....using spirit elements, consuming the nature, is that it?」

「It's just as you say.」

Human dug out the resources underground in order to make tools.

They fell forests and cleared the land in order to widen the living space.

Because of that a great amount of spirit element was consumed.

Trashes that were hard to be disposed were piling up.

Pollution filled the water.

Wounds that couldn't be healed were engraved into the land and rivers.

Technology advancement accompanied the development, the convenience of living became better, safety level increased, and the population explosively multiplied.

And then, the resources got consumed with accelerating speed further and nature was polluted.

In the end of all that,

「When population increases, peoples sense of values also become diverse. When a country is developed, even greater greed is born. As the result, what happen next is.....」

Historically, it occurred within a certain cycle.

「War is it?」

「Yes, Shia-sama. We were in a war just twenty years ago.」

This world, or rather this continent other than the oldest country Balted Kingdom which was a human country ruled by his majesty Eric, there was also the country of beastmen called Tinted Beast Kingdom and the country of demon race called Rated Demon Kingdom.

「Hm? Demon king? Demon race?」

Shia tilted her head. Because words that also existed in Tortus suddenly came out.

The one who answered her with disgusted expression was his majesty Eric who was staying quiet and left the explanation to Louis while resuming stealing glances at Shia.

「Those guys started to call themselves like that since the war twenty years ago. They claimed things like spirit's protection, the protection of natural environment, and faith to the spirits are worthless. They even changed the name of spirit element and spirit art into demonic element and demonic art with the reason of ridding themselves from such sense of values.」

「There is no need to hesitate to use spirit and spirit art because in the end it's resource that mankind discovered and it's technology that mankind built up, that's the claim of the demon race's side. They called it the doctrine of technology's supremacy, that even the problem of spirit element and resource drying up, everything can be solved using technology. Who cares about spirit or whatever, rather they are unnecessary! That's what those guys are insisting.」

「That's really.....」

Shia made an expression of being unable to say anything.

Louis continued.

「Because it's that kind of country, their sense of values make the matter between their country and other country including our country to become greatly problematic. The country that reacts the most sensitively is the country of the celestial people, the Honted Celestial Kingdom.」

「The country of those celestial-san is a country that hold faith to all the spirit-san and divine spirit-san isn't it?」

「Yes, exactly. Their sense of values is completely incompatible with the demon kingdom.」

「And war occurred because of that?」

‘Yes’, Louise nodded.

The people in the demon kingdom were unique race that produced spirit element within themselves in a different scale compared to the human race and beastman race. Those people established and developed their own country.

Exactly because of that their sense of values was different from others.

And then, although their population was the fewest among all countries, they could use powerful spirit art because of that. The demon king was selected based on their ability, the demon king of this generation also possessed outrageous power.

「And then, the celestial race is also special. They don't use spirit art. Even without using such thing, they are able to directly ask the spirits to cause every kind of phenomenon.」

Spirits that were able to clearly communicate their will were really few. However, the celestial race was able to communicate even with spirits that didn't have distinctive will.

Inevitable their power was vast. It was natural, after all the nature was their ally.

「The war continue for long, many countries are swallowed by the flow and participated in the war, and then they were eliminated.」

In the end, what left were only the four countries that were mentioned just now.



「War accelerate technology development. With a speed to a terrifying at that.」

It seemed the demon kingdom not only rivaled the celestial race, far from that they even developed weapons one after another that could obliterate even the divine spirit who intervened in order to protect the nature. Of course, the amount of spirit element consumed by those weapons was also tremendous in proportion to the effect and power.

「Now that you mention it, what kind of existence divine spirit it? Hearing the title made me think of them like the higher class of the spirit-san.」

「My apologies. My explanation was lacking. However, Shia-sama. It's just as you discerned. Your perception of them is mostly correct.」

‘However’, Louis continued.

「Shia-sama. Please imagine a natural disaster.」

「Natural disaster.....like typhoon, earthquake, or cold wave.....those kind of things?」

「That's right. Divine spirits are those things taking human form.」

「Offu」

Shia unconsciously made a strange voice. That wasn't in the level of higher class of spirit anymore. ‘Oh my god, ain't that the fury of nature itself’, her expression was like that.

By the way, those divine spirits in general had the appearance that was almost the same like human and possessed high intellect. Even throughout the history, only several of them had their existences confirmed, the foundation of nature—wind and fire and water and earth and the like, it was thought that the divine spirits ruled over each of those aspects.

And then, the demon kingdom seemed to manage to repel a manifested divine spirit although only barely. They used a lot of weapons that consumed great amount of spirit element, and the demon king himself consumed the spirit element of the nature like it grew on trees.

「Although, it was really just barely. Even they who believe that the

development of technology will turn all impossibilities into possible got really frightened as expected.....」

The development of technology still couldn't catch up in order to defeat a divine spirit. Although, if they succeeded to repel a divine spirit, they would surely be able to defeat it too. Right now it was necessary for them to buy time.

They who made that judgment was,

「They accepted to negotiate with us.」

「Aa~, I see. Was it the salvation plan to return the spirit element to the star tree something and ask for forgiveness?」

In response to Shia's words, it was his majesty Eric again who cut in with a sternly handsome expression.

「Those guys are really a race that know no shame. Right now they are acting ingratiatingly and even accept having the spirit element inside their body getting collected, but at the bottom of their heart their ambition must be still blazing fiercely.....something has to be done about them as soon as possible.」

「Even if the demon race had to be destroyed.....」, such words were explicitly conveyed.

Also, with the demon kingdom responding to the negotiation, naturally it was necessary to increase the feasibility of the salvation plan.

That was,

「That's where the hero comes in then.」

「The star tree.....the north of the continent. It's the gigantic tree located at a solitary island across the sea that is called the "land of the beginning". It's an existence that is said to be the first one to produce the spirit element, it's also said to be the very will of this world. Also, it is called as the mother of all divine spirits and spirits.」

According to a manifested divine spirit, the drastic consumption of spirit element and nature destruction was weakening the star tree remarkably.

At this rate the star tree would perish and the balance of the natural world would also greatly crumble, the divine spirit said.

Therefore, there was already no more time for delay, the star tree, and then the divine spirits decided to destroy the mankind.

But, at that time Shia's rabbit ears suddenly twitched in reaction to something.

With a really natural movement, she aimed Vire Drucken in bombardment mode to outside the window.

A beat later.

A burst slug bullet flew along with an explosive sound. The horses neighed and the royal guard captain Greg who was riding right nearby along with the other guards were shocked.

At the same time, the head of a beast that was like a frenzied boar rushing out from the forest got blown up.

There was something that looked like a dull yellow gem buried on its head, but it also got blown away and reflected the moonlight sparkingly.

「Ah, sorry. I interrupted you. The animal-san came attacking full of killing intent so I unconsciously」

「Ah, pardon us for making you bother with that.」

Louis-san said thanks even while getting a little bit of cold sweat.

From the window Greg's masculine face silently peeked inside.

「.....Shia-sama. My deepest apologies.」

「No no, it's like a conditioned reflex for me. I should be the one apologizing for taking away your job.」

「.....No. That was magnificent.」

After staring fixedly at Shia, Greg's lips loosened slightly and he nodded. He immediately took distance from the coach and gave instructions.

「That's surprising.....Greg-sama just smiled.」

Dahlia went 「My!」 with her hands pressed on her cheeks while saying such thing.

「Eh? It's something shocking? He is human so I think it's normal to smile though.」

Even a certain vampire princess who was believed to have default expressionless face toward other people was actually a really happy-go-lucky in the inside. She wouldn't laugh loudly or anything, but her expression was quite abundant in front of relatives.

However, Greg-san's expressionless level seemed to far surpass the vampire princess.

Dahlia said.

「The probability of meeting divine spirit is still higher than him smiling.」

「Just how expressionless he is!?!」

The sound of clearing throat 「Cough」 could be heard from outside the coach. It might be a warning from Greg-san to not say needless things.

Dahlia leaned closer to whisper into Shia's ear and said 「Greg-sama's ear is really good, so surely he could hear Shia-sama's words just now」. She added that perhaps his attitude was softening because Shia became a little bit cooperative.

‘I see’, Shia nodded in acceptance.

Louis smiled wryly while returned the talk on its track.

「It's a nice timing, Shia-sama. About the beast just now, that wasn't a mere animal. It was a special beast that is called spirit beast. It can use the power of spirit.」

That spirit beast was exactly their prime reason to summon Shia.

「The star tree is rejecting us. The path to the north is lived by great numbers of spirit beast. Currently they will mercilessly attack anyone heading to the north.」

「Naturally, the spirits beasts will get stronger the closer we are to the north isn't it? Also, it feels like the celestial-san and even the divine spirit-san will naturally come out too.」

「Exactly.」

In other words, their reason for summoning hero was for cutting open the path.

It was in order to return spirit stone, gem that could store spirit element back to the star tree. And then it was for the sake of obtaining the last chance to beg for mercy toward humans.

Because with just themselves they wouldn't be able to overcome the fierce attack of the great number of spirit beasts and the divine spirits.

「.....That's why, Shia. We are asking——」

「Your way of calling.」

「Shia, dono-. Can we ask for your cooperation?」

Shia wiggled her rabbit ears uneasily at the question of his majesty Eric that was filled with expectation and anxiety.

「I cannot give any guarantee.」

「Tsu.....」

His majesty Eric gritted his teeth at Shia's blunt words.

「But——」

Shia was going to continue, however, her rabbit ears reacted once more and her words stopped.

「? What's the matter, Shia-sama?」

「No, just thinking that the weather is a bit bad.....」

There was a low sound that resembled earth tremor. There was also the existence of spirit beast, so Shia strengthened her rabbit ear's hearing, even so it was a small sound that she could only catch slightly.

Right after that,

「Eric!」

「Phil, what's the matter?」

Outside the window at Eric's side, the one who appeared upside down was

the frivolous looking green haired young man——Phil Espion.

In the military he was the captain of the scouting force, at the same time he was also the captain of the royalty's direct intelligence corps. This time too he went ahead of the path to confirm whether there was any danger, and it seemed there really was something.

He leaped to above the horse coach and peeked inside from the window upside down. That was just how hurried he was.

「I can see flash of lightning from afar. It's not something natural looking from the intervals of the flash. It looked like it's flowing toward the direction of the capital.」

「-!?!」

His majesty Eric immediately pushed Phil aside and took his head out from the window. When he looked up to the sky, although there were some clouds, the sky was really clear as far as the eye could see. The light of the moon was beautiful.

Tonight the wind directly blew from the front. Even though there was thunderclouds in eyesight range that was generating flashes of lightning fiercely, no sign whatsoever could be seen from the air and also the night sky.

And then, what clinched it was.....

「I used spirit communicator but to contact my subordinate at the relay point but.....no one is replying.」

Spirit communicator——it was a long range communication device using spirit element. It seemed to be using the vibration of spirit element. It was a convenient tool, but actually five kilometer was the limit of its range. And so when communicating in super long range, personnel to relay the verbal message was necessary.

Phil's subordinates were standing by to serve as relay by hiding in the village or hideout along the road until the capital, but it seemed that all of them fell off the grid.

「Shia! Can you ride a horse!?!」

‘The way you call’, Shia tried to warn, but she read the atmosphere and answered 「I can」 for the time being, while thinking that later she would beat the way he should call her into his body.

「Abandon the horse coach! Everyone, we are returning to the capital in full speed!」

His majesty Eric loudly commanded from the window. Obeying him, the horse coach was immediately stopped. Louis and Dahlia too swiftly got down from the coach.

When Shia got down, the horses were immediately released from the coach and the driver got on one of them. The knights rode on the other horses, and the conspicuously splendid horses they were riding until now were handed to Eric and others. It seemed those horses were only temporarily rode by the followers, but originally they were the horses of his majesty Eric and others.

Shia wished to ask various things about the circumstance, but she closed her mouth when his majesty Eric reached out his hand toward her with a serious face.

He looked really tense.

「Ride in front of me, Shia!」

「Even the patience of saint will eventually run out you know?」

Shia looked reproachfully at his majesty Eric who was casually calling her without honorific while quickly dodging his hand that was trying to pick her up.

And then, her treasure warehouse lit up.

「Tha, that’s?」

Not only his majesty Eric, everyone also opened their eyes wide.

「It’s my partner desuu!」

After saying that, Shia cut short the explanation and straddled her partner.

Yes, Shia’s partner that was handed over to her from Hajime, the cause of her game of tag with polices late at night in the city.

The magic powered motorcycle – Schutaif!

※ Good child must not imitate it. Let's adhere to the traffic rule!

「Come on, what are you doing standing in a daze like that! It's some kind of bad situation right? We are departing!」

「Ah, yes.....」

His majesty Eric pulled back his hand that was wandering in a lost in the air and cleared his throat once.

He pulled himself together and gave the order.

.  
. .

One hour of riding after that.

The horses seemed to be strengthened by a spirit art, so they displayed a good speed. Their endurance seemed to be strengthened to so they didn't show any sign of fatigue.

Like that several black smokes rising to the sky came into view.

What came into their sight the closer they got was a village that was turned into ash. There was no house that retained its original shape, there were several craters on the ground, and the fields were ravaged.

And then, there was offensive smell from among the burnt smell piercing the nose.....

Shia knew.

This smell.

In the past, when they were pursued by the empire, this smell accompanied their scorning laughter.

Yes, the smell of her burnt family——

The smell of burnt people.

「.....Louis! Leave behind several people who can use healing arts! Search for survivor!」



「By your will!」

His majesty Eric bit his lip. Louis accepted that royal edict and sent hand sign to his subordinate.

They didn't slow down the speed of their horses and passed through the destroyed village.

The black cloud seemed to be heading straight to the royal capital as expected. There was no sign of them catching up.

That stimulated the anxiety of his majesty Eric and his subordinates even further. It made them felt vexation that made them want to scratch off their chest.

「.....Eric-san. Is this what got mentioned in our talk before?」

「That's right. That is truly the divine punishment.」

His majesty Eric said that as though to spit out. Shia drove Schutaif in parallel with him while pondering for a bit.

Before long, her gaze became distant.....a beat later.

「Should I go ahead?」

「What?」

His majesty Eric looked down beside him hearing those words that were filled with unexpected strong will.

The straightforward eyes of Shia who was looking up from the position that was lower than the horseback caused his majesty Eric to unconsciously gulp.

It felt like his heart jumped inside, but he ignored it and asked.

「.....Is it okay?」

Shia made an expression that looked troubled, as though she had bitten something bitter, it was an expression that was hard to describe.

「I have said that I'll at least help persuading my family. As expected , I won't be able to sleep well if everyone get turned into ash before that.」

She was unable to be as decisive as Hajime, and she was unable to discard

herself to the degree of a certain hero.

She would face what came later, later. Now she would run with all her strength for the sake of the future that she wouldn't regret.

That was Shia.

If she didn't know anything about the circumstance, she could also pretend to not know.

However, she had heard the circumstance and felt sympathy.

If she said something like 「As I thought this look bad so I'll run away」 here.....

——It's a promise after all

The wound in heart. Important memory. Shia's pride.

His majesty Eric surely couldn't read those feelings, but he seemed to comprehend something and nodded.

And then,

「Pursue the thunder cloud. That way is the capital. ....Please, Shia.」

「Your way of calling.」

「Ah, yes. ....Shia, dono」

His majesty Eric felt quiet scared at Shia whose face became blank for a moment.

Leaving behind him who was making twitching face, Shia step fully on the accelerator.

.

.

.

She advanced in a speed that left behind even the wind.

Shia explosively advanced using the automatic ground flattening function using transmutation magic and the deployment of barrier path that made it also possible to run in midair.

Midway, she found several villages that were similarly turned into ash.

She couldn't pick up the groan of even a single survivor even when she focused her rabbit ears.

She wondered just how many people had died.

After advancing while thinking of such thing, her rabbit ears finally heard a clear thunder. She leaped to the sky and accelerated further.

Before long, she could see at the other side of a large hill. There.....

「.....This is terrible.」

It was a large capital blazing in flame, with agonized cries echoing loudly.

The outside and inside the city walls were blazing up. Lightning was attacking unceasingly. A beat after the thunder there would be explosive sound ringing out, each time a building would be blown away.

The solemn and huge building at the center——most likely that was the palace. That place was covered by a shining dome that defended against the lightning.

However, each time it was struck by lightning that fell like intense rain, the dome would greatly bend and flicker, its scale was reduced little by little. It was only a problem of time before the dome got destroyed.

Instantly.

A clear vision crossed Shia's mind. The vision of her dying from lightning that pierced herself like spear.

「——!!」

She instantly leaped back. At the same time, the left behind Schutaif was pierced by the lightning spear.

Schutaif was blown away while scattering away broken pieces at the same time with a thunderous roar.

「Aa!! My Schutaif-taaann!? Even though it's a new one that I asked Hajimesan to upgrade from zerooo!!」

Putting aside the danger that almost killed her, there was almost nothing that

could beat having one's new vehicle getting damaged in dealing mental damage.

‘How could you!’ Shia thought while turning her gaze ahead, there,

『So you come, child of another world.』

There was a good looking man that was emitting sparks. He was shining gold like a lightning that was taking human form, a man with terrific body build. His upper body was naked, while his lower body was wearing something loose that looked like hakama. His voice was like heavy bass sound but there was no discomfort from hearing it, however, it felt like the voice resounded directly inside the brain.

Shia went 「Uhee」 at the pressure she felt and her face grimaced.

There was no doubt. He was equal or superior compared to god's apostle.

『Forgive me』

Although, he was far more humane compared to god's apostle. It looked like he also had abundant emotion.

Even now his face looked really sad.

And then, he threw a gigantic lighting spear while still looking sad.

「Wawawah!？」

She could see the vision of death once more.

She survived without problem by finishing dodging an instant before the lightning spear was thrown. But, instantly she could see her death by a hand strike that pierced her chest from behind.

「It's a bargain sale of future sight desuu!？」

Shia forcefully twisted her body and dodged.

At the corner of her sight, she could see the sparking good looking man appeared all of a sudden.

That good looking man vanished with light *pashi* sound.

At the same time she got a vision of death. An extra large thunder strike from

right above.

Dodge.

Vision of death.

Evade.

Vision of death.

Evade.

「——!!」

The verge of death after so long. There wasn't even any time to breath. Things like counterattack was out of question.

She merely focused all her strength in slipping through the descending scythe of death god. She relied only on the notification of the future sight and continued to dodge the lightning fast death!

Seen from the side, it might look like a girl was dancing in the middle of wild lightning.

After making the dry sound *pasha*, the good looking man appeared at slight distance away.

『Oh child of another world. Please stop struggling.』

「Fuu fuu. I cannot agree to that——divine spirit-san.」

He was truly a divine spirit. The avatar of lightning. No, perhaps he was the very lightning cloud that covered this capital.

Shia caught her breath while trying to say something.

「Please listen to me.」

『I wish to at least grant you a tranquil death.』

「No, before that you see, perhaps repairing this world is——」

『Oh child of another world. Oh pitiful child. Please forgive my powerlessness that is unable to return to where you should belong.』

「Hello? Are you listening? You know, soon someone will come to pick me——」

『Now, close your eyes. Feel peace. I won't let you feel pain.』

No good. The talk didn't go through at all.

In a different meaning from the celestial race.

Shia realized. He was undoubtedly within the category of “god”.

He felt sadness. He even felt pity. He even respected the weight of life and watched over the quarreling people even while feeling pain in his heart.

However, his decision was absolute.

There was no ground there for man's will to intervene.

He was truly, the personification of unreasonableness.

The decision of god, was absolute.

「Haha.....I've really done it. I made a really stupid choice even for me.」

Hajime was really spoiling her so he would not blame her, even so it felt like Yue would scold her.

She easily made her conclusion just because the first enemy wasn't any problem, and completely underestimated the enemy's mightiness.....

Because, look.

The vision of death was flooding her head so much like this.

That was why,

『Oh child of another world. Oh child of man. This is for the world. Perish.』

「Hah! I refuse.」

Shia grinned widely and fearlessly, and swung Vire Drucken.

A sound that tore through the air burst out before it was tapping lightly on her shoulder.

「If there is no choice but to fight then I can only fight. I will acquire the right to live without fail.」

As a matter of fact, the power of god was unreasonable.

The decision of god was unreasonably absolute.

Especially.....

「I don't give any damn whether you are divine spirit or whatever. This little me here, is a wife of a godslayer you know?」

As long as that “absolute” wasn't beaten to death by even more unreasonableness.

*DON-*, magic power that shook the atmosphere pierced to the sky. It was a beautiful torrent with faint bluish white color.

The divine spirit's expression changed slightly for the first time toward the fighting spirit the rabbit eared girl threw at him from the front.

Facing that divine spirit, Shia's rabbit ears stood up straight,

「I'll rabbit you up! Desuu!!」(TN: Honestly, I don't really know how to translate this sentence. In the raw the words are 'うっさうさにしてやんよ！ ですう！'. It's read 'Ussa usa ni shiteyanyou! Desuu!' The word usa is taken from usagi (rabbit). Ussa usa is a slang word in Japan without clear meaning, only that it's related to rabbit. From the implication it might mean I'll rough you up or I'll mess you up, but I don't know how to include the rabbit implication in the translation like that. Tell me if you have any better idea)

She howled powerfully as though to blow away the lightning cloud.

.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

# Arifureta Chapter 333

## Arifureta After III Brutal Hero Shia Arc I'm Opposed to Violence! Desuu!

.

『.....This is really something. Also, pitiful.』

The divine spirit said that seeing the faint bluish white torrent piercing the sky and opened a hole in the black thunder clouds.

That was all.

It was a great power for a human, if she kept living there was no doubt that she surely would become a heroic figure.

However, it was meaningless because she would perish.

How pitiful that was.

That was why, at the very least he would end this instantly.....he thought.

『Dance, children of heaven.』

Lightning flash ran through the thunder cloud and thunderous sound rang out. It was exactly as though gods were roaring in anger.

「Mumuh」

The rabbit ears stood straight! The vision of death assaulted Shia!

Shia unconsciously groaned.

Because although she tried to dodge, however there wasn't any place to



dodge from the start!

Instantly, extremely huge lighting that covered the sky descended from right above.

Sparks burst out from empty air and high waves of lightning manifested.

It was an attack that enveloped Shia.

The flash painted the world white.

It was an overwhelming lightning storm that seemed to say if the enemy would evade, then they simply needed to provide no place to escape from the start.

That was truly an absolute death that couldn't be escaped from even if she could see it.

The unreasonableness of god.

And so,

——Level V

The thunder roared a beat later than the lightning flash. A cute voice that shouldn't be audible resounded through the interval.

And then, the moment the storm of divine lightning that had finished its role was about to disperse,

「URYAAAH!!」

『!?』

This time the expression of the divine spirit definitely changed clearly.

The attack that should deliver absolute death.

As though to break through that light, that despair, the approaching rabbit eared girl was——unharméd!

The fierce shock delayed his reaction by a beat.

Even though he possessed perception ability that was worthy for a god, when he returned to his senses in surprise he was inside a kill zone that was impossible to escape from.

What filled his field of vision was the huge war hammer's hitting surface.

The attack of the war hammer that surpassed the speed of sound caught the divine spirit along with a sound that split through the air.

『Nuo!?!』

At the instant of the impact, the divine spirit was assaulted with fright and immediately crossed his arms.

Impact!! The divine spirit who seemed immovable was sent flying like a pebble.

He was spinning in the air before stopping somehow while sparks surged from him.

『Guuh. Impossible-. A mere blow is injuring me-』

An agitated voice echoed at the sky of the capital.

He was lightning itself. If he transformed into lightning instantly, every physical damage would be nullified.

Attack from spirit art would be effective, but even that wouldn't be able to catch his lightning speed movement.

Since his birth, throughout the ten thousand years of history, he had no experience of getting hit hard.

The girl before his eyes stepped on the air and charged forward to deal even more blow. The divine spirit unleashed lightning attack to all direction once more.

However.....

「Explode! Smash! Desuu!!」

Shia who was swallowed into the lightning was as expected, she was only stopped for a brief time. The lightning's effect was lessened, at the same time she charged forward as though smashing through the flash.

『Impossible-』

The divine spirit immediately took distance with lightning speed.

Yes, one of the gods that was the avatar of thunder cloud chose to escape from human opponent.

Without even any time to realize his impossible action, the divine spirit agitatedly yelled toward Shia who was still rushing toward him.

『Why aren't you harmed!?!』

「Guts!!」

‘That’s absurd!’ Divine spirit-san’s face seemed to say that. Even though he was a handsome man, that expression made his expression looked somewhat like a disappointment.

Shia instantly closed the distance and swung down an attack to the divine spirit from overhead.

『Slow-』

Surely his perception ability was also at godly territory. The divine spirit didn’t show unsightliness for the second time.

He vanished with a light sound *pashi-*. Right after that, several dozen divine spirits appeared around Shia who hit empty air.

『It’s the end for sure this time.』

The arm of the divine spirit emitted spark while enlarging. Furthermore it transformed into the shape of spear. It became spear wall from all directions and attacked Shia.

He didn’t know what kind of method she used to dodge inside the ultimate lightning attack before this. But, in that case, he would just finish her with his own hand directly without fail. It was an attack that was truly filled with the determination of certain kill.

But, Shia didn’t dodge or anything from the beginning.

Shia didn’t move from that place and silently closed her eyes. The divine spirit who thought that she finally gave up was,

『Impossible-. What is that!?!』

The agitated voice that came out from who knew how many times echoed in

the night sky once more.

——Shia-style space magic Half Transition

That magic that could also be called as a failed space magic was a method of absolute defense that worked by forcefully shifting one's own phase to neutralize all attacks.

Shia who became half-transparent wasn't in this space at this instant. Thus all attacks slipped through her!

The lightning spear arm dispelled. The divine spirit was going to switch to another attack even while feeling agitated.

In that instant, Shia's eyes snapped wide open. From being half transparent she took back a definitely corporeal body.

「Go fly-!! Desuu!!」

『Guah!?!』

A single extreme strike. Vire Drucken that used impact to accelerate instantly from its standstill state sped up even more by Shia's physical strength while rotating like a pinwheel.

The war hammer that was swung horizontally blown away the divine spirit radially.

In addition, Shia grabbed the leg of the divine spirit that was above her head and mercilessly threw it in the place of her war hammer toward the divine spirit below her.

A flash dispersed in an instant and the clones of the divine spirit vanished all at once. The main body of the divine spirit materialized a slight distance away along with a spark.

『Not just hitting me but even catching me? Just what have you done——』

「Guts!!」

It felt like a voice 『Shiiitt-』 that sounded like the divine spirit was grinding his teeth reached Shia's rabbit ears. His appearance was barely maintaining his dignity, so surely it was just her imagination.

By the way, it wasn't guts, but soul magic.

Even if his true body was something vague like lightning, him existing like this meant that there was soul residing in him. The essence of soul magic was interfering with existences that possessed no corporeal substance. Shia possessed no talent for magic to a sad degree, so she could only use it for grabbing and hitting the target.

Although, the divine spirit was looking really wary toward Shia who caught him even though it wasn't even an attack of spirit art.

『.....It seems, I have to recognize it.』

「Oh? You are going to be open to dialo——」

『Thou are, even more a threat than the child of another world who visited in the past.』

「Ah, so that's what you mean.」

‘Even though I’m feeling a bit hopefull!’ The rabbit ears raged.

『Let me revise my perception. Thou are an enemy of the world that ought to be removed!』

「.....I got designated as an enemy of the world. Even though, I’m a forest bunny who love peace, it’s inscrutable desu.」

‘That self-recognition itself was inscrutable.....’, surely if it was the classmates they must be thinking so.

In any case.

「Well, I’m the demon king’s wife anyway! Let’s just consider that as an honor here!」

『I will pay thou with death, for order and peace!!』

Even though she should be summoned here as hero, she was instead in a completely opposite position. Shia smiled bitterly at that while taking stance with her war hammer.

Instantly, vision of death attacked Shia like a high speed slideshow.

「Kuh, too fast desuu!!」

His tactic changed. There wasn't any more powerful wide range attack that left big opening. He also didn't stay at close range.

The sound of lightning firing consecutively burst out. Countless sparks flew around in empty air like sparklers.

In one second there were uncountable attacks coming.

Yes, it was a flawless hit & run in lightning speed.

(So he is getting serious! The attack's sharpness is at a different level!)

Overwhelming speed that was incomparable from before. No, it was a phenomenon that should be called teleportation already.

(I cannot dodge completely!)

Shia screamed inside her heart. Even though it wasn't simultaneous attacks, the speed made it looked like that even with Shia's perception ability.

The moment she dodged by slouching her fist, a knee strike aimed at her face.

Unable to dodge, she defended with Steel Garment. The impact felt like she was hit by her own Vire Drucken. Her body was forcefully thrown up and bent backward.

Throughout the pain Shia also unleashed a kick, but the divine spirit wasn't there anymore. In exchange she was shown a vision of death. A moment when a lightning speed kick that approached from behind attacked the back of her head and exploded it.

「Nnnniii!!」

She raised a voice of fighting spirit and forcefully rotated Vire Drucken behind her. The tough war hammer became a shield and she avoided death, but this time she was blown forward.

A presence of death approached from behind. Shia rotated her body like pinwheel by making use of the attack's momentum and struck behind her.

As expected he wasn't there.

And then, a heel drop kick was approaching before her.

「——!？」

『Fall』

Thunderous sound that split the air resounded. Right after that, Shia fell with several hundred million volt lightning strike swallowing her.

She was struck down as though telling her it was insolence to be in the sky with a human body.

The impact came along with a thunderous explosion. A crater was created at the plain at the capital's outskirt.

*Pashi-* along with that sound, the divine spirit already descended at the edge of the smoky crater.

『How suprising. So thou are still alive.』

「.....Haa haa, obviously.」

The smoke was blown by the wind and cleared up. Shia spat out blood 'peh' at the center of the crater.

If the classmates looked at her appearance, they would open their eyes wide in shock. That was how great her injury was.

Her skin swelled red due to the lightning that she couldn't dodge and even the Steel Garment couldn't block. Her hair and rabbit ears were also burnt here and there, there were traces of hit here and there in the shape of internal bleeding.

Furthermore, due to arms and legs that were transformed into lightning spear or sword in the middle of the fight, blood was flowing from some spots that were shallowly slashed.

『.....Only that much injury.....it's a power that surpassed what is tolerated for a human.』

「Haa haa.....yes, it's only this much. Your fist was really lukewarm. You are lacking in spirit.」

'Haa fuu', Shia caught her breath and showed a fearless grin that closely resembled a certain someone.

The divine spirit was slightly pressured and held his breath. However, he

immediately sent a sharp gaze at Shia.

『But, it's only a problem of time. You cannot catch up to me. The strange technique that neutralized my attack. You also didn't use that. Are you unable to use it anymore? More than this and you will only prolong your agony uselessly.』

「So?」

『.....I wish, to grant you a tranquil death.』

That was his compassion. The divine spirit who said that was unreasonable, but surely he was someone kind.

That was why,

「Hah」

Shia laughed it off.

Because in this world there was nothing more despicable than giving up.

Because what that beloved person taught her, was “tenacity”.

『.....How foolish.』

The divine spirit slightly closed his eyes, and then, a grand killing intent boiled up.

At the same time, Shia leaped from that place with all her strength. She escaped from the crater and moved by rolling on the plain.

Lightning consecutively stabbed the spot where she was standing just an instant ago. The several hundred million volt of lightning strike that didn't give any sign beforehand became a squall from the lightning cloud in the sky and rained down.

Thunderbolts fell down like countless pillars lining up throughout the pillared corridor of a shrine. The divine spirit weaved through the gap of the pillars and approached near.

An instantaneous sure kill attack came at Shia.

(As I thought-, this is harshhh!)



Shia gritted her teeth, evaded the fierce attack desperately, defended, and endured through it.

A one-sided defensive battle. It was as though she couldn't counterattack at all.

She might have died already if she wasn't in the state of body strengthening level V.

Yes, if it wasn't for the body strengthening "level V".

Shia's wound was increasing even with Vire Drucken and Steel Garment.

However, Shia wasn't trying to *strengthen her body even more* no matter what.

Vision of death was rushing around inside her brain in high speed even now.

The ability that automatically showed the future that directly led to Shia's death inevitably consumed magic power. Although the magic power consumption was exceptionally less than the original Future Sight, it couldn't be trifled with by any means in this battlefield where dozens of visions of death were attacking in a second.

And then, the Half Transition that also consumed absurd amount of magic power had been used three times. Thinking how she had only used it once at the decisive battle against the apostles, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that the magic power consumption had been drastically improved, but.....

Even so, even more consecutive use than this wouldn't be really possible even with the magic crystal she had.

Her situation was gradually getting worse.

Just as the divine spirit pointed out, it was getting worse for her.

As long as Shia didn't finish this fight at once using the maximum body strengthening that is.

But, Shia didn't do so. She simply endured. She determinedly endured!

Just how long she was doing that? Thunder roared each time the divine spirit moved in lightning speed. The plain already looked plough from several million

thunderbolts, countless craters were created.

Just how many intense attacks that changed even the geography was sent at her?

Shia was full of wounds all over. Even Vire Drucken was already blown away and tumbled far away, right now it was like she was a boxer that was cornered into the corner, covering her head with both hands while maintaining her defensive stance.....

Her expression hidden behind her guard couldn't be seen.

Did she notice?

That before she knew it, many people were watching from the capital's outer wall.

And then, Eric and others who finally caught up just now were staring from the hill slight distance away speechlessly.

That figure looked as if to say, that she wouldn't let him lay his hand on the people of the capital further than this.

Seeing that girl's appearance, a lot of people were crying.

The people who fell into despair and could only wait for death were praying!

And then, in order to try to save such girl, no, even if it was something impossible, even without the order from the king, the capital's army couldn't keep staying still like this and prepared to sally out!

『.....Why won't you fall』

The divine spirit muttered while scattering sure kill attacks.

It wasn't known what he wished to obtain from his voice.....even so if it had to be expressed, there was an emotion like awe included in it. Did the person himself notice that?

She had received attacks that it would be strange if an ordinary person got evaporated or pulverized by several hundred of times over. And yet why, is she still able to stand tall and so imposingly?

Even though she should be completely helpless, why is it that her heart didn't

break!?

『But, you cannot move anymore. It will be the end with this.』

He took distance and changed his arm into a spear. It rotated in a spiral and spark ran through it. Several lightning that fell from the sky converged into it.

Seeing that Shia had no spare strength left, he prepared to launch a big attack once more.

「Shia!! It's enough-, ruuuuuuunnn-」

His majesty Eric's scream thundered.

「Kuh, make it in time-」

Louis focused his strength into his cane with his expression distorted in impatience.

「Shia-sama!!」

Dahlia's sorrowful voice reverberated.

And then,

『Order to the world』

The avatar of thunder cloud became a streak of light in preparation of the one hit certain kill attack and charged.

And so,

「Don't call me over familiarly! Desuu!!」

She punched with a right straight!!

『Goa!?!』

The ultimate cross-counter beautifully, perfectly hit.

The lightning spear grazed Shia's face and stabbed the empty air in vain. Shia's right straight bore into the right cheek of the divine spirit.

Even though it was lightning speed that shouldn't be possible to be confirmed by sight or anything.

Even though until now, she was only able to dodge by knowing in advance

using vision of death.

The counter that Shia unleashed was so perfect it would make anyone fall in love!

The divine spirit helplessly got deflected back like a light that was reflected by a mirror!

He flew, bounced on the ground, and then without stopping he gouged a deep trench on the ground before he finally stopped.

『.....Guh, impossible. That's an accident.』

The trembling voice showed that he definitely felt the damage. The divine spirit instantly entered into the world of lightning speed from his downed posture.

And then, he circled on Shia's back within an instant and lunged with lightning hand chop——

*Bam* A pleasant impacting sound resounded. At the same time,

『Nugua!?!』

The divine spirit's scream also resounded.

He was blown away once again due to the countless impact to his face. This time he barely recovered his balance and quickly took distance. There, the divine spirit saw it.

Shia let go of her stance.

No, that was also a stance, the divine spirit sensed. It wasn't that defensive stance of covering her head with both arms, she lowered her right fist to below her chin, and lowered her left arm to form 'L' shape, most likely it was a more offensive style.

Yes, that was

——Shia-style boxing Hitman Style

Another name for it was Detroit Style. The jab of the left arm that made use of snapping the arm was like a whip.

「Fumu, it's working quite well. It's worthwhile learning this properly from You

oube.」

*Tap tap* Shia's feet rhythmically stepped on the ground, then when she also launched some jabs to familiarize herself, *bam bam* a sound as though the air was ruptured rang out. That wasn't jab anymore.....it felt like earthling would say that after seeing this.

Not just once but even twice, the divine spirit was blown away.

That fact caused his majesty Eric who was about to charge forward to unconsciously stop with his mouth gaping wide open. The people of the capital also fell dead silent.

Within that atmosphere, Shia looked at the divine spirit who wasn't moving in fear wondering if it wasn't a coincidence.....

The right fist that was held below her chin moved away.

And then, her finger crooked into inviting gesture.

It was clear even without words. Even the divine spirit understood it well.

So to speak, 「Come on, what's wrong? Come at me」 was what she meant.

『.....Don't make light of me. No one can follow my domain!』<sup>speed</sup>

*Pashi-* Electricity was discharged. Toward the direction of the left arm that was in unprepared state. From there he was going to strike with a kick instantly——

『——』

*Pashi-* He vanished. Aborting his attack.

This time he moved in lightning speed like teleporting to the opposite right side.

And then, a hand chop——

『——』

Another abort. He continued to move around Shia looking for an opening.

The domain of lightning speed where the surrounding lost color and even the flow of time looked slowing down was a world of only his.

In that world, there was no way anyone could perceive him as long as they didn't have the power to peek at the future like Shia.

It was a domain that far surpassed the limit of perception ability of the race called human. It was exactly because of that it was a god's domain!

And yet.

And yet even though that was the case.

How!

(Our eyes met!?)

The divine spirit screamed inside his heart.

Aa, look.

Again.

The eyes of the girl who was alertly holding her stance.

They were following.....

Him who was inside this absolute territory!

Even though she was definitely unable to see him just a while ago, now he couldn't get away from her gaze!

*DON-*, the ground exploded.

When the divine spirit who was seized with fear got taken aback in surprise, the figure of Shia who took a step was before his eyes.

「Shih」

『NUOOO!?!』

He desperately dodged in panic. But, the left arm that warped like a whip was already hard to predict even at the best of times due to its trajectory, what's more it was fired constantly aiming at his future position!

Not only was she able to see. His very movement was seen through!

「I can see! Even I can see! Desuu!!」

『It's lightning you know!? There is no way you can follow it with your eyes

isn't it!?!』

It should be impossible. And yet, as expected Shia's gaze was chasing him no matter where! She was certainly chasing the lightning speed with sight!

Even when he circled around, even when he rapidly approached from the front, the fist of unparalleled accuracy came flying! Even when he temporarily retreated, he was cut off instead at the place where he was running.

It was as though he got locked on, the barrage of fist caught the divine spirit and wouldn't let go. The accuracy, the speed, and also the foresight, they were increasing in precision moment by moment.

Like that, finally,

「Shaoraaa-!!」

『Gahah!?!』

The divine spirit who received ten left jabs in an instant stopped moving. In that instant, Shia's full powered right fist dealt a severe body blow.

The fist that also used soul magic was literally a fatal attack that resounded until the divine spirit's soul!

The divine spirit's body bent into '＜' shape and he stumbled.

「Seeii!!」

In contrast with the yell that gave cute impression, the might of the launched kick was completely merciless.

The divine spirit hung his head down. His face completely ate the kick that approached from right below and his head snapped up.

Yes, he was unable to maintain the lightning body and his head snapped off from his body!

The slender and long leg that vertically stretched up as though to pierce the sky was beautiful.

『Kuh, you damn——』

The divine spirit immediately sparked and regenerated, but losing his head created an instant of fatal opening in his consciousness.

*Grab-*, two arms circled around him from behind. The divine spirit's words spontaneously stopped. When he looked across his shoulder, a grinning rabbit eared girl was there. My, how cute. And then there was nothing scarier than that.

「DOSSEEEIII!!」

『Wa, wai——』

She didn't wait.

Divine spirit-san experienced his first back drop in his divine life. 『Pugya!?』 a scream that was unbecoming for a divine spirit was raised and his head snapped off once more.

*Pashi-*, the divine spirit attempted to take distance somewhat looking like he was panicked and desperate.

Rather than regenerating his head, first he got to get away from this rabbit eared girl somehow! Such will could be glimpsed from him.

The divine spirit who somehow regenerated shouldn't feel anything like physical exhaustion, and yet he was breathing roughly 『Zee zee』.

Surely it was the fault of mental exhaustion due to damage to his soul or the unknown existence of the absurd rabbit.

Shia faced the divine spirit with vigilant Hitman Style once more. The divine spirit also faced her with a look that had lost all composure.....

『Wha, what's going on! Thou, what happened with thy wound!?』

He slipped out a voice that sounded like a shriek.

That too wasn't unreasonable. After all, the bruises and gashes from before, and then the burn and her tattered state that should be on her body were somehow getting healed normally!

The cause was of course,

——Shia-style regeneration magic Guts Healing!

It would be impossible for fatal level heavy wound, but something at the level of bruise, broken bone, burn, and light abnormal state would be healed



completely in a few minutes.

And so, naturally, her answer to the divine spirit was also,

「With guts!」

『Damn youu-, guts again!』

「Anything can be done if you have guts desuu!」

『Aren't it too almighty!? Child of man is really terrifying huh!』

Everyone could easily guess how really terrifying it was from how the divine spirit was speaking as though making a tsukkomi which he had never done even once until now.

Perhaps he was starting to view her as an existence of equal level because dialogue was starting to form between them.

『In the first place, how can you follow me! How can you keep up with this speed!?!』

「Gu——」

『Enough with guts!!』

「I got used to it!!」

『Damn youu, that kind of reason isss』

Shia was sticking to defense determinedly while observing fixedly from the gap of her guard wasn't just for show.

For Shia, body strengthening max was truly her trump card. With training, right now she was able to reach “Level X” with her own strength even without Cheatmate or Last Zell.

However, if she reached that state, she would be unable to move for a while, and at the very least her battle strength would decrease considerably.

She heard that there were multiple Divine Spirits, so she wanted to avoid bulldozing her way through with physical ability in case the worst happened.

In that case, she thought that the enemy's attack itself wasn't even disintegration attack like the god's apostle, also it felt like she would be able to

barely endure using body strengthening level V and Steel Garment, in addition there was also how she felt that she had become dull after the decisive battle due to distancing herself from real battle, so she wanted to take back her “instinct” here.

Thanks to that, it was guaranteed that Hajime would open his eyes wide in shock when she returned to earth.

After all with her becoming able to follow lightning speed attack with sight and dodged, furthermore she even became able to land a counterattack, it meant that she became able to dodge even Hajime’s prided railgun.

The bugged rabbit was becoming even more bugged the more she fought!

『.....It can’t be helped.』

The divine spirit who somehow recovered his calm muttered with small voice.

Actually, a clear death didn’t exist for divine spirit. Although, they also weren’t invincible. Because they were existence of nature phenomenon with their own will, their existence was depending on their will——in other word their mental strength.

In other words, if they were damaged to the extent they lost the willpower to regenerate, they would lose strength or get forced into dormant state for a while. They would become unable to materialize for a few years to dozens of years.

That was why the divine spirit resolved himself.

And then, Shia sensed it.

Right now, the divine spirit’s mind was certainly taken off from her. His fighting spirit, his killing intent, were averted from her. But, she was able to sense only his hostility.

In other words, the divine spirit was going to pull back from this place. At the same time, there was the possibility that he would return leading even more force.

That was why,

『We, the divine spirit protecting the mother, the great tree, will never let

thy——』

「Level VII」

An impact attacked the divine spirit. It was a super fast punch that couldn't be responded to even though he didn't let his guard down.

However Shia accomplished it without moving from her spot. It was a flying fist that she could do for the first time in the realm of body strengthening Level VII. Yes, it was fist pressure! Just like a certain chairman of a hunter association!

The divine spirit should just run away and vanished like startled hare instead of giving tedious talk.

Because he didn't do that, his face got blasted and he was forced into an instant of stagnation. And then, the next moment, he lost the possibility of retreat for eternity.

『Kuh, another strange technique is——!?』

When he was taken aback with surprise, it was already too late.

She wasn't ahead of his gaze, and an unpleasant premonition came from behind.

The divine spirit looked back across his shoulder and saw it.

That was, a falling red moon.....

「You won't be able to escape from this forest rabbit! Desuu!!」

Which was the crimson colored war hammer that his eyes mistook.

——Shia-style metamorphosis magic Crimson War Hammer

A war hammer created from blood using blood manipulation.

It was mercilessly swung down as though being sucked toward the future location where the divine spirit was going to escape to with lightning transformation.

A severe tremor that resembled an earthquake shook the capital's outskirt. A shockwave that shook even the atmosphere attacked the people of the capital and his majesty Eric and others above the hill.

Clouds of dust rose as though an explosion had gone off.

Everyone held their breath and the area fell dead silent.

Right after that, 「Ah」 a voice was raised. It was unknown whose voice it was. Everyone was lured by that voice and looked up to the sky.

And then they saw.

The dark cloud was vanishing as though melting into the night sky. At the other side, the perfectly round moon was peeking out.

Unbelievable. That was what they thought, but the phenomenon happening at the night sky was telling the fact more eloquently than anything.

The wind blew and the cloud of dust was clearing up.

The gaze of the people and his majesty Eric's group returned from the sky to the ground.

There,

「Fui~~, it has been a long time I've gotten a fight that made my blood boil and my flesh dance like this.」

There was the rabbit eared girl there wiping the sweat on her forehead while letting out a really relaxed voice.

The war hammer was vanishing like crimson petals scattering and fluttered in the air.

In exchange, Vire Drucken came flying toward the hand she outstretched. *Pashi-* It made a pleasant sound when Shia caught it before giving it a swing. She put it on her shoulder where she tapped it *tap tap*♪

Under her feet, a sparking sphere as big as a fist was rolling while pulsing. It looked like it was twitching and convulsing.

The light sphere that was most likely what the divine spirit was reduced into was stepped *mugyu!* by Shia so it didn't escape. And then, she said 「You finally become quiet」 while her finger pointed to the light sphere in a snap, and she said with a loud voice.

「I'm opposed to violence desu! Let's talk with each other peacefully!」

She was the true hero who accomplished the great achievement of defeating a divine spirit.

The hope of mankind.

They understood that. But, in everyone's mind.

'That rabbit eared girl, is dangerous as heck.....', they thought.

「Ah, also *your majesty*. That was the fourth time you called me so over familiarly wasn't it?」

「!!?」

In his majesty Eric's mind. 'I'm in a heck of a trouble.....', he thought.

.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Material introduction

- Hitman Style and Flicker Jab

Shirakome's knowledge only came from Hajime no Ippo's Oshiba-san.

By the way, in the drama CD of volume 7 Shia heard it from Hajime and reproduced it when facing scoundrel at Fahren, but in the WN version the setting is she learned it only from You Oube.

Similar with the drama CD, other than that things like space COC, magical Hakkyouken, and sex commando gaiden are also used.

- Fist pressure

The material is from Hyakushiki Kanno, but it also came from a certain dandy glasses's laiko. Though Shia didn't put her hand into her pocket.

There are updates in Gardo!

- Nichijou chapter 26 Shia's housewife power lol

- Zero chapter 7 It's Oscar's battle chapter. Though at the end it's that person who carry out the day as expected lol

They are published free of charge, so please go take a look!

Best regards!

# Arifureta Chapter 334

## Arifureta After III Brutal Hero Shia Arc I Killed Him, Desu?

.

「.....Hajime, wake up. Hajime.」

A voice that was like a breath of fresh air entered inside his very heavy head.

「.....Hajime. Shia is.....Shia is.....wake up, Hajime.」

The familiar lovely voice had a reverberation that sounded vaguely agitated.

*Shake shake* The small hand was shaking him. The sensation felt like he was in a cradle that invited sleepiness instead.

「.....Hajimeeee. Wake uuup. Shia is~」

*Shake shake.* In addition, *bum!* a weight came down on his stomach.....

Sleepy. He was really sleepy. But, it seemed his beloved vampire princess wanted Hajime to wake up no matter what.

It wasn't a trivial matter for her to be this agitated. Even his brain that was working dully from sleepiness's attack could sense that at least.

With hardship, Hajime faintly opened his eyelids that were transforming into powerful magnet.

「Aa~, Yue?」

「.....Nn, Yue here.」

It was Yue-sama. Yue-sama who looked like she was fretful for some reason, or perhaps looking troubled, was straddling Hajime's stomach with expression

that was hard to describe.

「What's wrong, why are you making that face? Did something happen?」

His voice was filled with heavy sleepiness, however, Hajime asked while caressing Yue's head with extremely gentle hand motion.

Yue narrowed her eyes pleasantly for a brief moment, but she immediately renewed her expression as though to say 「This isn't the time for this!」.

「.....Hajime, trouble.」

「Huh? Did I make some trouble?」

「.....Nn, wrong. Hajime didn't cause any trouble. You were just sleeping normally. Rather, thank you for the wonderful sleeping face.」

「Ah, right. So? What is it?」

「.....About Shia.」

「Shia?」

It seemed there was a trouble that happened to Shia.

Hajime focused his eyes and kicked his awakening brain into gear while asking what Yue meant.

The straddling Yue-sama made a really serious expression.

Hajime was filled with bad premonition. 'Don't tell me.....' he thought.

Did Shia turned the city of Akiba into a scene of carnage?

Did the warriors raised their howl?

Did Shia's rabbit ears get targeted by them whose boundary was broken?

Or perhaps, had the world already moved?

Every possibility formed and vanished, formed and vanished.....

In that case, this might be bad even if this was Shia they were talking about.

In the end, would she be able to escape from that city that had been transformed into a wicked haunt with her own strength?

No, Yue was making a grave expression like this, perhaps the SOS had already



arrived!

The battle strength of that city's warriors, gentlemen, ladies, *etc.* when finding prey was something that couldn't be measured with logic.

After all, it surpassed the agents under every country government at the very least!

「.....Hajime, listen calmly.」

「Yeah.」

Hajime gulped while staring back at Yue's eyes that looked like they were going to burst into tears and listened.

「.....Shia is, Shia is-」

「What happened!?!」

「.....possibly thinking that I'm a NEET!!」

Yue's voice echoed like a scream.

*Tick tock tick tock*, the sound of the clock's hand was echoing excessively clearly. The room was deathly silent like a grave.

The tearful Yue was making a really grave expression just as before.

「For now, calm down.」

That was Hajime's first sentence after calmly listening.

「Whatever.....」 was written on Hajime-san's face. The completely spoiling Hajime-san who would forgive almost anything as long it was Yue made a still stare that was reminiscent of Yue. Furthermore, he immediately put back the blanket over himself and moved to shut out Yue from his mind. It felt like the voice of his heart 「I'm sleepy here, stupid idiot」 could be heard.

Yue's face turned into one where it looked like she had received the biggest shock of her life. If this was in a manga then a sound effect word *GAAAN!* would be drawn behind her. Or perhaps there would be lightning strike and sound effect *PISHAA!!* on the background.

Yue grabbed the blanket barrier that covered Hajime until his head and started pulling insistently.

「.....Hajime! Hajimee! Listen ! Listen to mee!」

「.....What?」

「.....If Shia thought of me as a NEET, I, might die from shock.」

「You are immortal.」

「.....The wound of the heart cannot be automatically regenerated.」

「.....Is your mental strength soft like tofu huh?」

Most likely it was like that because the other party was Shia. The strongest vampire princess-sama was unexpectedly weak against a blow from someone she liked.

Hajime insistently tugged on the blanket to pull it back on him while answering half-heartedly.

Yue insistently tugged on the blanket to pull it away while speaking with a serious face.

「.....I, have a thought. That rather than being told right from the front, being told from words that appeared inside a casual conversation is more damaging.」

‘Generally a person with nothing to do in the house.....’, certainly, it sounded like a true feeling that inadvertently leaked out.

She got the feeling that since coming to earth, Shia’s respect toward her was fading.

Certainly there were times when she put her clothes into the washing machine while there was still tissue in her pocket (three times) and she got scolded with fury like erupting volcano.....

There were also times when she forgot her turn to take out the trash (four times), it angered Shia greatly.....

When she took care of the whole thing with azure dragon because it couldn’t be helped, Shia looked at her with a really exasperated gaze for some reason.....

She got reminded frequently about the classification of laundry.....

‘Wait a second Yue-saaan! Please don’t roll around at that kind of placeee. I cannot vacuum that place like thii~s’, she was often told like that.....

However! Even with the me who am like that!

「.....I want Shia to look at me with her usual respect and affection filled gaze!」

‘What should I do?’, Yue-sama turned a pleading gaze while shaking Hajime repeatedly *shake shake*.

Hajime wordlessly turned his eyes at the clock. And then, his gaze became really complicated.

「It has been two hours since Shia went out huh..... Just how much are you troubled by this?」

Yes, *two hours* already passed.

During that time, this vampire princess-sama was sitting and hugging her knees on the living room’s sofa while acting dejected all this time.

Hajime let out a sigh, then he suddenly reached out to Yue and pulled her under the blanket.

「.....Hajime?」

「For now, let’s sleep. You will feel refreshed for sure when waking up.」

‘Perhaps’, he said inside his heart. He pulled back the blanket over himself while making Yue as his body pillow.

「.....Muu. Hajime is avoiding the question.....」

Sleeper’s breathing immediately came out from Hajime. Yue pouted her lips while looking up from his chest.

After staring fixedly at him for a while, Yue was also lured by sleepiness. Her eyes drooped and she squirmed in her search for the best position.

And then,

「.....Nn. I’ll give Shia a firm talk when she come home.」

She wasn’t an idler by any means. She was only enjoying the time where she wasn’t doing anything!

In other words, she was always super busy at any time!

‘Will it become evening when she return home? Shia, won’t she come home quickly?’ Yue thought while entrusting her body to Hajime and joined him in his afternoon nap.

「.....Good night.」

.

.

「Good morning!」

Dahlia’s energetic voice resounded in her rabbit ears.

「.....Morning.」

Shia returned the greeting even while not stirring at the slightest. And then, her voice was terribly bitter.

She was imposingly standing still while crossing her arms. She was watching the morning sun completely rising to the zenith of the hill from the window of a luxurious room.

Yes, she was watching the morning sun.

The night was over and the morning arrived. Furthermore, several hours passed.

And yet,

「My pickup hasn’t come.」

Her rabbit ears, her eyes, and also the corner of her mouth were twitching. Her eyes looked completely angry.

When looking at her wristwatch, eight hours had passed since she was summoned. She went out of the house before noon, so at this time the evening had passed since a long time ago already. It was dinner time.

Then, there should be a phone call to Shia who hadn’t returned home, at the same time they should have noticed that she couldn’t be contacted.

And yet, her pickup hadn’t come.

Could it be, that the gap between worlds were larger than she expected and

the magic power requirement was harsh?

She was thinking such possibility, but she still felt a it sad due to the expectation she held at the beginning.

She couldn't possibly imagine, that to think *only two hours* had passed at the other side.

And then, she also never imagined that her nonchalant words had deranged Yue.

(We, well, it must be that. Surely there is a problem with the magic power requirement, yep. Even the transfer to Tortus is still in the middle of research to make it simpler I'm told.)

Shia convinced herself somehow.

Beside such Shia, Dahlia bowed with a reserved attitude humbly.

「Udar-sama, good morning.」

『Right.』

The reply came from the sphere of light.....the divine spirit of thunder was floating lightly between the rabbit ears of Shia who was standing imposingly while staring at the morning sun. His name was Udar. His true name was longer, but it seemed that was how he was called because humans could pronounce his real name.

『By the way Shia. Respond to me already. This is the first time I'm ignored like this. I don't know what to do.』

*Float float, float float. Whirl-.*

Udar-san made an appeal about his own existence toward Shia with a somewhat pleasant impression.

Wonder why? It was nothing more than a light ball, but it looked sad somehow.....

「Eh? What? I'm sorry, I didn't notice at all.」

『.....I'm, a divine spirit though.』

「Right now you are just a ball though.....」

『.....That's, right isn't it』

*Flo-loat~, flo-lo-lo-loat~.*

It somehow looked like it was crying.

Now then, why was the divine spirit of thunder cloud Udar was staying at Shia's side in this state?

To explain it simply, the divine spirit who bore a wound in his heart due to Shia's blow that resounded until his soul became unable to maintain his human form and got reduced into the state of being a light sphere.

However, Shia had no intention to annihilate the divine spirit, so she didn't even deal the finishing blow to Udar. Like that, Shia requested the bewildered Udar 'I'm begging you, let's have a talk'.

She was victorious in battle when challenging a divine spirit like him right from the front, however she merciful and didn't take away his life. Her wish was only to have a discussion. It seemed that left really deep impression on Udar.

In the first place he was the loser. In other words it was equivalent that the will and determination of a divine spirit had lost against what Shia had.

In that case, 'It's only right that I respond to the wish of this strong, beautiful, and noble girl!' it turned like that.

In any case, even if they were going to talk the royal capital was in the middle of full pandemonium and the damage was enormous. The night was also late, there were a mountain of things that had to be dealt with.

And so, Shia who had rendered a distinguished contribution was to rest in a room in the palace. Eric and others would prepare a place for dialogue with the divine spirit after the sun rose, and they ran about to deal with the aftermath before that.

And, that was how they reached this point.

『Shia, Shia. When will the pickup you mentioned will come?』

*Boing boing*, Udar who landed on Shia's head went *boing boing* while asking. Even though he was a ball of light, his movement was like a slime for some reason.

「H~m, they haven't come at this time, so perhaps it will take a bit longer.....」

『Will it be alright? Our mother Lutria is weakening moment by moment. There won't even be ten years.』

「Ahaha, I also won't wait that long.」

Udal bounced *boing boing* on Shia's head. The gap from his good-looking man appearance was terrific. His appearance was practically like Puyoooyo.

By the way, the mother Lutria he mentioned referred to the will residing in the star tree. The mother of all divine spirits and spirits.

Shia put the bouncing Udar on her palm and smiled wryly while saying 「As expected from god. Their sense of time is really different」.

「.....Divine」

Dahlia who was silently watching such interaction of Shia and Udar unconsciously whispered that.

In her eyes, with the dazzling morning sunlight was illuminating them from the window, it seemed that to her it looked like a greatly exalted existence of the divine spirit and the beautiful hero were frolicking with each other.

It was as though she was witnessing a myth that was talked in the book. She watched enraptured.

「Dahlia-san?」

Shia tilted her neck seeing Dahlia whose mind went into a trip.

「My, my apologies! I have only seen a divine spirit-sama calling a human with their name and acting intimately like that only in books so, I unconsciously」

Dahlia returned to her senses in surprise and bowed respectfully.

「The preparation of breakfast will finish soon. Before that, how about taking a bath first?」

「Aa~, I see.」

She was also recommended to take a bath first before she was guided to her room, but as expected, Shia had no intention to expose her defenselessness in this place where she didn't know what would happen and firmly refused.

However, Shia was a wholesome woman. She loved taking a bath. She didn't feel refreshed at all with just lightly wiping her body.

She endured thinking that there would not be a problem entering the bath and relaxed after her pickup came, but now her heart shook when it looked like her pickup would come late.

Although, she didn't know when a divine spirit like Udar would come.

Udar guessed Shia's worry that was wondering what to do and called out.

『Shia, are you being wary?』

「Yes, well. There is no guarantee that Udar-san's comrade won't come after all.....」

『Then leave it to me.』

「Eh? Will you stop them from coming?」

『Right. They will listen if I call out to them.』

He was really cooperative as though that situation where words wouldn't get through to him at all was just a lie. No, rather it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that he was being friendly.

Shia said 「In that case.....」while moving her rabbit ears back and forth *piko piko* happily.....

『It also has been a long time since I took a bath.』

「.....Yes?」

『It's something unnecessary for a divine spirit. But, in the past I imitated a human and often took a bath. It was really pleasant, I like taking a bath. Now, Shia, let's go take a bath——』

Shia clenched her fist *mugyu*- with the divine spirit located above her palm.

『Shi, Shia. I'm feeling a bit of pain. My inside is going to leak slightly.』

Udal raised a complain, but the pressure that Shia's smiling face emitted stopped his words.

「What are you doing trying to nonchalantly enter together?」



『I, is there any problem?』

「This no good god-, desuu!」

*Pugyu-!!* The clenched fist strengthened the pressure. Udal hurriedly argued vehemently.

『I see, I understand now Shia. You are feeling embarrassment right? I know that the child of man feel resistance when their naked body is seen by the opposite sex.』

「That's how it is.」

『Right. But, let me say that there is no problem.』

「Yes?」

『Certainly I have a nature as a male god. However, I like Shia. Male and female with good will toward each other will interact nakedly with each other. In other words, there is no pro—』

*Mugyugyugyu!!*

Udar-san fell silent. It looked like he was going to dissolve and vanish even now might be because he was just one step before annihilation from Shia-style Iron Claw. The figure of a good-looking man opening his eyes wide in fear could be seen somehow.

「I'm sorry Dahlia-san. As expected, I really want to take a bath, so can I entrust this to you?」

「Eh!?」

The divine spirit-sama was tossed away like pebble by Shia who was staring reproachfully. Dahlia's expression shuddered while catching the ball in desperation.

After that, Shia firmly refused the assistance of the maids and took a bath at ease.

.

.

.

『Shia, that was horrible.』

「I'm sorry. God is fundamentally unreasonable, so I thought that I won't be able to enter normally without making you faint.」

『.....』

Inside a spacious room of the palace, Shia was sitting at a round table and replied to Udar's complain with a blank face.

As expected it seemed Udar really intended to do that from how he was falling silent.

『Isn't that alright? Shia, I like you. That strength which defeated me, that nobility and beauty which persisted in righteousness. I will even welcome you as my spouse.』

「Sleep talk when you are asleep, desu.」

Shia stuffed her cheeks with vegetable breakfast while making reproachful stare. Udar slime was sagging *monyon* on her head. Perhaps his words were said quite seriously.

But, there, a single man raised his voice as though to say 'I cannot endure this anymore!'.

「Oi, Shia! Why——」

「Your way of calling.」

「Guh. Aren't you allowing Udar-sama to do so!?!」

It was his majesty Eric. The king whose face was beaten up black and blue until dawn and now his handsome face looked like a Buddha statue. Right now he had a light black and blue face due to healing using spirit art. Even now spirit art healing was being applied to him, so he would surely recover completely after dozens more minutes.

In addition, other than him Louis, Greg, Phil, and Dahlia were also present on the breakfast table.

「That's, well, he is a god. Because he is an existence that has lived for several thousand or tens of thousands of years.」

As expected, it seemed that Shia didn't intend to insist on the way Udar was calling her name.

「Even so, if he is seeing me not as “child of man” but as a “woman”, there will be a need to have him rethink about the way he is calling me.」

When Shia sent a glance, Udal was lightly floating *float float* on air. He gave the impression that was like 「Eh? I cannot hear anything though?」.

Shia made a reproachful glare that seemed to say ‘This god~’ while ignoring his majesty Eric who still looked like he wanted to say something and asked.

「By the way, is the dealing with the aftermath going well? I think that the people of the capital also know that Udar-san is here but.....won't that cause a great opposition from them?」

Udar's divine punishment came down on a lot of the populace.

Although Shia defeated him, she didn't deal the finishing blow. That fact must have become known throughout her walk until the palace that was like a parade.

Although Udar wasn't in human form, if there was a light of spirit drifting beside Shia, those who didn't realize that it was the defeated divine spirit would be the strange one. Shia was amazed that riot like 「Finish off the weakened divine spirit!」 didn't happen on the way to the palace.

「It seems, there is a bit of discrepancy in Shia-sama's perception toward divine spirits.」

The one who answered was Louis who was watching the exchange between Udar and Shia with a smile that looked like it was pasted on his face.

「Discrepancy?」

「Yes, Shia-sama. First, it's like what I said in the beginning, divine spirits aren't evil by any means.」

Yes, they weren't evil.

They didn't consider life as light by all means. They were existences that watched over the world, watched over the people, and loved life. There wasn't any existence that loved this world as much as them.

Even if they destroyed villages without giving any room for compromise, even if they rained down thousands of lightning on the capital, there wasn't any ill will in there, they also didn't feel any pleasure from that.

「Shia-sama, we.....especially, the people of our oldest country the Balted Kingdom deeply understand that.」

『.....Right. We aren't laying our hand on the children of man by choice, the children of man are also one of the precious lives filling the world.』

「.....Yes, Udar-sama. Therefore, this is what we think when the divine spirit lay their hands on us. “We are the one who made them do this”.」

「I, see?」

For Shia who didn't have good recollection toward existence called god, it was a sense of values that was a bit hard to comprehend. She wondered whether in the end, the people who lost their precious people could be convinced like that.

Louis who guessed that nodded with a wry smile.

「Just as you guessed, not all people can be convinced like that. The prime example is the demon kingdom but.....」

「Aa, I see. ‘That’s intolerable, so we’ll oppose by developing technology!’ It’s like that isn’t it.」

「Exactly. That is their root, the feeling that is their origin.」

His majesty Eric stared at Udar with an expression that hid his emotion while continuing.

「Last night, Shia was there so no one acted violently. Rather than fear and grudge toward Udar-sama, their heart was filled with hope that is you. I don't know what will happen as time pass but.....even so, all the people of my country know. The karma of human forced Udal-sama and the rest of the divine spirits into this action.」

「I see.」

Certainly, the populace of the capital raised a fervent cheer at Shia.

They witnessed her great exploit of defeating a divine spirit, and then that

divine spirit recognized her and stayed close to her. Such hope had appeared for them. It wouldn't be strange that rather than the execution of the divine punishment, it was the fact that the divine punishment had been averted that had won their heart for Shia.

Phil who was also someone in charge of intelligence must have investigated the feeling of the capital's populace since the morning. He spoke the result.

「There is no sign of riot at the present. It's all thanks to Shia-chan——」

「Aaa?」

「I, it's all thanks to Shia-chi!」

Phil sweated coldly from Shia's ominous gaze while changing the way he called Shia slightly.

「.....The knight order is also considerably harmed. But, at present there is no one whose blood got into their head. Shia, it's thanks to you.」

「.....Haa. Your welcome.」

The gaze and words from Greg that were filled with sincere gratitude made Shia gave up correcting the way he called her while she let out a deep sigh. If she didn't do that, the conversation would drag on.

She munched on a vegetable stick that was like a carrot in high speed like a rabbit.

Seeing Shia who was a bit sulky like that, the look on his majesty Eric's eyes softened slightly while he asked.

「So, Shia. It seems your pick up hasn't arrived, what will you do?」

「Let's see.....although they haven't come, as expected I believe they will come for me within a few days. During that time, I will standby here while being on guard against new divine spirit-san perhaps?」

「Is, that so.」

His majesty Eric crossed his arms and fell into his thought. After a little while he lifted his face and turned his gaze toward Udar.

「Udar-sama, what do you think about our determination and atonement?」

There was unexpressed wish in those words that if Udar was in acceptance, perhaps he could assist them to reach the location of the star tree. If there was permission of divine spirit like Udar, then perhaps the hindrance of divine beasts could be removed.

However, Udar's voice was cold.

『Our mother Lutria has despaired over you “humans”. Do you think that there will be a parent whose heart won't be chilled when turning their blade toward their children?』

「That is.....」

『Even so our mother Lutria continued to be merciful toward you all. Until the brink of the collapse of the world's equilibrium. But, what she loves isn't just “humans”. She also has to protect her other children.』

「.....」

His majesty Eric bit his lower lip in shame because of their selfish and convenient wish. Louis and others were also the same.

Udar was unmoving as though fixedly watching them. He slightly flickered.

『But.....after coming into contact with all of your hearts like this, I myself, think that perhaps there is hope.』

「Udar-sama.....」

He was defeated by Shia and communicated with them from up close like this. He was able to understand that certainly a part of humanity had reflected on themselves. However, as expected, in the end it was “too late” already by the time the divine spirits had genuinely moved into action. That was why, divine punishment with no room for argument rained down because it was already a time where nothing could be done with just words anymore.

『.....I will cooperate. This is also a request from Shia after all. However, I have lost almost all my power. I cannot do anything considerable.』

「Even the path toward the star tree?」

『Right. Even if my voice reach's her, surely mother won't listen.』

‘Above all else’, Udar continued. His tone of voice was strict.

『The root of the problem isn't the drying up of the spirit element. It's the heart of humans who won't change at the drying up. You understand that don't you?』

「Yes.」

『We know. That the children of man are like tree leafs that is carried by the wind. A fixed sense of values won't change easily. It cannot be changed. You will be strongly blown, drifting, and cannot stop until arriving at the end.』

Especially, when there wasn't an impact that could blow away even the wind.

「Our plan of salvation.....is meaningless, is that what you are saying? That there is no saving the children of man?」

『As long as you don't change.』

A sorrowful atmosphere filled the place. Their plan for salvation was denied by the divine spirit himself that was protecting the star tree. It was like their hope was cut off.

But, there an out of place light tone resounded.

「Then, we have to work hard to reach the star tree-san isn't it?」

His majesty Eric and others were flabbergasted by the indifferent tone. They were putting on expression that was saying what is this person saying when the salvation plan had gotten rejected just now.

「Shia. Aren't you listening? There is no salvation for human, we were just gotten told that clearly.」

「Then, you are giving up?」

「Tha, that's——」

「Impossible right? You cannot do something like giving up the live of your precious people. Then, don't just talk pointlessly, first you need to act.」

‘In the first place’, Shia continued. The attention all gathered at Shia. It was as though they were staring at a light floating inside darkness.

「Not apologizing because you won't be forgiven, that feels really no good. If

you do something bad, apologize even if you won't get forgiven! Isn't that just obvious?」

「Eh, ah, tha, that's right.....」

「Yes. ....Certainly, it's difficult for everyone to change. But, Eric-san and everyone here has changed. You all reflected from the bottom of your heart and are desperately struggling like this.」

Shia smiled brightly and spoke.

「That's why, Udar-san's heart is also moved. All the same the star tree-san might also recognize Eric-san and everyone.」

Till the end it was only “might be”. The prospect was slim. It was so bad that it wasn't even a gamble.

However,

「Even though it's despairing situation, even though it's a reality that make you want to cry, it's not a reason at all to give up. It's nothing more than a reason to do your best with everything you have.」

Because,

「The future, it can be changed if you do your best with everything you have. At the very least, I believe so.」

His majesty Eric and everyone thought, if spirit of word really existed, then her words must be it.

In Balted Kingdom, throughout generations it was said that the oldest spirit art was words itself. Even without spirit element filling it, words had power. That was the spirit of words. (TN: Another hard to translate phrase. There is a phrase in Japan which is called “kotodama”, it consisted of two kanji, the kanji of word and the kanji of spirit. Translated it means soul of language or power of words, translated literally it means word spirit)

Everyone forgot to even breath and they were charmed by the girl whose eyes shined like the cloudless sky.

「If your surrounding is pitch black and you cannot see anything ahead, let's just run! It doesn't matter where. Let's run thinking that surely it will connect to



a good future! No matter the case, first it starts from there!」

Everyone somehow understood that surely that was what she had done until now. For the sake of the future she wished for, she always ran with all her strength.

‘Haa’, a shaky breath leaked out. It was his majesty Eric. Inside his chest, a burning emotion that felt like it would burn him to ash and a big emotion toward the strong girl before him which he couldn’t express in word were filling him to the brim. He let out a long sigh.

His father the previous king died early and he became a king when he was still a young boy and continued to run at the front for the salvation plan. A pressure beyond description was always weighing him down.

It was to the degree that if he learned that the hope called hero wasn’t a hope at all, he felt like he couldn’t stand up again. That fear made his body and heart screamed and he rejected the hero summoning. His whole body felt terribly heavy as though he was shouldering a giant rock.

And then somehow, he now was feeling unbelievably light from just a single sentence.

「.....Yeah, you’re right. It’s just as Shia said. We have no future anyway. Then, we only have to do what we should do.」

It was a quiet voice, however, it was a voice that was far more powerful than everything until now. His majesty Eric renewed his resolve.

Then, Louis let out a sigh as long as his majesty Eric’s and turned a gaze that was filled with affection that would make anyone who saw it to feel bashful toward Shia while continuing after Eric’s words.

「Yes. In any case we have to apologize first before thinking whether mankind can continue to exist or not. In anything it’s important to take responsibility, no matter whatever the result is.」

Greg, Phil, and then Dahlia too, they were looking at Shia with a gaze that was filled with burning passion of different types while continuing.

「.....First, let’s show ourselves to the star tree. I want the star tree to know

that human's sincerity hasn't run out yet.」

「That's right isn't it. There is no meaning in just standing still.」

「I'm unworthy and inexperienced but, I too will do everything that I can!」

Seeing them like that, Udar flickered a bit strongly. He didn't say anything, but he looked somewhat happy.

His majesty Eric kept gazing passionately at Shia while concluding their plan ahead.

「Then, we will concentrate at organizing the allied force while waiting for the arrival of Shia's family.」

The allied force here referred to the elite gathering of the strongest elites from three countries, the Balted Kingdom of his majesty Eric here, and then the demon kingdom and the beast kingdom to form a mixed force.

It had been planned since long ago. Messengers were already dispatched within the night and it was arranged for the force to gather within a few days.

In addition of the mankind's strongest battle force, there would be Shia who defeated even a divine spirit. With them the possibility to reach until the star tree was great, but it seemed his majesty Eric intended to wait until Shia's family arrived just as he promised.

「Although, Shia.」

「Yes?」

Even while she was still feeling a bit irritated by the way she was called without honorific, Shia wiped her lips clean after finishing the breakfast and replied.

When she turned her gaze there, the expression of his majesty Eric was faintly blushing for some reason. His gaze was also being averted shyly.

‘What, acting fidgety like that. This guy just ain't decisive huh’, Shia thought, but let's put that aside.

His majesty Eric said 「As a king, it's necessary to exchange opinion properly in preparation of the worst」 in advance with an unnatural attitude, then he said it.

「If, this is only a what if. If no one come to pick you——」

「They will come.」

Shia's face was blank. But, his majesty Eric was a person with steel in his spine who wouldn't give up calling Shia without honorific even after getting beaten up black and blue. He was doing his best believing that the future can be changed!

「However, you see. You said that they will surely come before dawn, but in the end they didn't come. In that case, the worst case——」

「Won't happen.」

「If, only if. If that happen and you don't have any method to return——」

「I'll return even if it kills me.」

「If there isn't any method! It's fine even if you stay here forever! In that case, you will surely feel lonely. It won't be bad even if you make a new family here. In that case, outside you are the hero so it will be better if your partner with someone with considerable status. For example, someone of the royalty or——」

「Please wait, your majesty.」

‘It seems the beating is insufficient desu. All right, I'll turn you into a queen with the smash I directly succeed from Yue-san.’ Shia thought while she was about to stand up from her chair. It was at that timing that Louis interrupted his majesty Eric's words.

The glasses glinted. His mouth was forming a smile, but it was strangely pressuring.

「Shia-sama is denying that she is the hero. Perhaps it's too rash and imprudent to state that a royalty will be worthy for her with the consideration of her being the hero.」

「.....What did you say?」

「In the first place, she won't be able to live in peace if she become a queen for example. I'm in objection of putting a heavy responsibility on Shia-sama.」

「Hou. Then, are you saying that there is other worthy partner for her?」

「That will depend on her opinion, so I cannot say anything. Ah, but please don't worry. This is not a matter that your majesty needs to trouble yourself with. About Shia-sama, as the one who summoned her I have responsibility to look after her.」

*Twitch* A vein pulsed on his majesty Eric's forehead. In respond Eric's smile was also deepening. However, his eyes weren't laughing at all though.

「.....Eh, what is this, this situation.」

Shia couldn't hide her bewilderment at the battle of words that suddenly started.

Even during then, this time Greg spoke out「She is a warrior. Then, I who am the knight order captain can also talk to her in the same language」, and in response Phil spoke out「What are you saying, Greg never talks most of the time! At that point, if it's me I can make a lighthearted atmosphere and able to have Shia-chi enjoy herself you know」.

Then, next,

『.....Hmph. Shia is a gifted woman who can defeat even me. The likes of children of man couldn't possibly be worthy of her.』

Even Udar began to join the battle.

「Even Udar-sama.....as expected from Shia-sama. You are popular!」

「Eh? Aa~, so it's something like that?」

「It's like that!」

Both Dahlia's hands clenched energetically. She informed the right answer with her usual gesture.

Her attitude before this was relatively sharp, and she even beaten up his majesty Eric and Udar viciously, and yet why did it turn like this.....Shia was bewildered. Or perhaps, were they Tio's compatriot? A masochist king and god, honestly, she couldn't bear watching something like that.

(Or rather, even though I have Hajime-san. Trying to seduce me even though I

have a husband, are they looking down on me.....)

Shia grimaced in distaste but, there she went「Eh?」.

(Come to think of it, have I mentioned that I have a husband?)

Thinking really carefully, she only mentioned “family” with the consideration of hiding information.

In her left ring finger, a ring that she received at Tortus before going to earth was fitted in. It was the proof that she was the demon king’s wife. She wasn’t his wife based on earth’s law, but the fact that she was a wife was generally accepted by the surrounding.

However, right now no one reacted at the ring on her finger. Perhaps, in this world there wasn’t a concept of wedding ring.

Shia thought that she should make it clear before even more meaningless thing happened and she opened her mouth.

「Say~, actually . I’m marri——」

In that instant, Shia took a single leap and landed on the opposite side.

「.....Hou. Amazing reaction. I should have erased my presence completely.」

Those words were filled with admiration and interest. And then, it was a terribly sexy voice that would strongly stimulate the opposite sex.

Before anyone knew it, a single man was inside the room without any warning. He was right behind the chair Shia was sitting before this.

Glossy black long hair. Intellectual eyes with long slit. Bewitchingly shining pupils that were like amethyst. He was a terribly good looking man. His body was wrapped with a jet black and luxurious outfit.

His reached out hand stopped above the chair. From the hand’s position, that hand must be trying to stroke Shia’s hair.

The good looking man who was smiling bewitchingly caused his majesty Eric to return to his sense a beat later and he raised his voice.

「Arogan-dono!? Why are you here!?!」

「My apologies for the unannounced visit, Eric-dono. I was unable to suppress

my excited heart after hearing the momentous news of the hero summoning and the defeat of a divine spirit.」

「The messenger shouldn't have arrived already but.....should I say that it's as expected from the demon king-dono. As always, you have a long reach.」

The man called Arogan shrugged. Surprisingly, it seemed he was his majesty the demon king of Rated Demon Kingdom. Most likely he made his subordinate to monitor the capital and grasped the information earlier than anyone using some kind of method.

Although, there was a limit on being outside common sense with how he suddenly arrived in the palace, and alone on top of that.

Such preposterous his majesty demon king Arogan moved his gaze toward Shia who was behind his majesty Eric. And then, he suddenly chuckled 'fuh' and the next instant, his figure vanished. But right after that, he was instantly in front of Shia.

「Wawah, oops.」

The distance was too close. Shia took a few steps back. The wall was right behind her.

「Nice to meet you, hero-dono. I am the king of Rated Demon Kingdom, Arogan Spervia Rated. To think that a person with strength to defeat a divine spirit could be a woman this lovely, it's really unimaginable. Please, allow me to ask your name.」

His majesty demon king Arogan smoothly approached while smiling. With his terribly good looking face and the bewitching atmosphere he wore, the average woman would be entranced by him.

「Ah, yes. Nice to meet you. I am Shia Hauria.」

「Shia.....even your name is beautiful.」

The smile strengthened. Really this demon king seemed to be really knowledgeable on how to use his good looks. He came until a distance where his hand would be able to reach if he reached out and even then his body kept closing the distance.

His majesty Eric and others spontaneously tried to stop him but,

「Wha-, barrier!? Arogan-dono, what are you planning!?!」

「What, I only wish to spend time together with Shia for a bit. Eric-dono had been together with her all the time last night correct? Isn't that unfair?」(TL: Ew that suggests Shia slept with Eric...Hajime won't be happy desu)

Saying that, his majesty the demon king Arogan looked back across his shoulder and smiled charmingly at everyone who couldn't approach due to the barrier.

And then, his hand thrust right beside Shia's face when she was close to the wall. It was the so called wall bang. He stared into Shia's eyes straightforwardly right from the front.

「Err, you are too close, so can you back away?」

「.....Hou.」

Normally, at this point most girls would become weak kneed. He himself seemed to have absolute confidence in his charm. His eyes expressed his confidence that there was no woman who wouldn't fall to his advance.

Seeing Shia who wasn't just completely not agitated and instead even looked annoyed, his majesty the demon king Arogan was increasingly growing even more interested and his other hand reached out.

It seemed that the objective was Shia's chin. So to speak he was going to attempt lifting her chin.

「If you do that, I will have to resist. Even though you are a king of a country, I won't hold back you know?」

Suddenly a chill assaulted his majesty the demon king Arogan. His hand unconsciously stopped.

「.....Then, if I overcome that resistance, will you become mine?」

His hand reached out once more as though to say 'interesting'.

And so,

「Fuhn」

「Mu?」

Shia's elbow struck. To the wall behind her. With an thunderous sound the wall behind her was pulverized into dust.

——Shia-style Wall Bang

When she got wall bang done to her by anyone that wasn't Hajime, she used this technique to pulverize the wall to erase the existence of the wall itself that was sandwiching her.

Shia who took a step back at the created space displayed herself swinging back her fist with a smile toward his majesty Eric and the others who were trying to dispel the barrier behind his majesty the demon king Arogan.

Everyone behind the barrier instantly noticed. They went 「Hyaa~~~~」 and jumped away from the line of fire.

Right after that,

「Level VII」

「!!?」

The pressure instantly shot up.

His majesty the demon king Arogan who underrated her due to his own good looks, status, the situation and so on was,

「Narcissist should die, no mercy. Desuu!!」

He opened his eyes wide and tried to do something, but in the end he couldn't do anything and his face ate the godspeed fist that could hit a divine spirit. It *scattered him away*. Even the wall behind him was also smashed up along with him, and he became scattered sparkling particles.

Shia who saw that was,

「E, eh? .....Could it be, I killed him?」

She didn't intend to go that far though.....

Shia thought while sweating coldly.



.

---

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The latest update for the main story comic version is posted at Gardo.

It's love comedy chapter at Masaka Inn lol

When I saw Sona appeared, it make me want to write her again.

The chapter is posted free of charge, so please go take a look!

Best regards!

# Arifureta Chapter 335

## Arifureta After III Brutal Hero Shia Arc Now, I Become The Wind! Desuu!

.

Around the time when the sun would soon reach the zenith.

A cute humming was resounding in a corner of the courtyard in the palace of Balted Kingdom.

「Funfunfu~♪ Fufu~♪ You are really late Hajime-sa~♪ Come quickly Yue-sa~♪ The bunny of~, Nagumo Family is riight heere you know~♪」

Correction. An original song that surpassed a humming was resounding. From Shia.

Her rabbit ears were twitching *piko piko*, and her rabbit tail was shaking *shake shake* while she was singing. Several maids including Dahlia were watching such Shia smilingly.

If Shia was singing while admiring the flowers that were blooming profusely in the courtyard, surely they would watch enraptured at a beautiful girl frolicking with flowers.

Though unfortunately, what Shia was admiring right now was a lump of metal.

「Pain, pain, fly away~, my soul friend Schutaif-ta~♪」

Shia's soul buddy—magically powered two-wheeled Schutaif.

It was her beloved vehicle that was sent flying from a lightning spear of several hundred million volts. It was damaged here and there, but when Shia diligently checked it like this in the courtyard, it seemed that it didn't have any fatal damage. It was a small mercy that the weapons loaded in it didn't explode. Right now she was washing it with appreciation of its service to her.

Now then, Shia who literally made his majesty Arogan who suddenly appeared at the breakfast went splat, why was she working hard to give maintenance to Schutaif as though nothing had happened.....

The truth was that his majesty the demon king Arogan was apparently a kind of clone. A spirit art or something that Louis was also able to perform after a fashion.

It was a body made from spirit elements, so naturally it could also fly. It could also perform pseudo teleportation by means of binding and reconstructing spirit elements. Because one could travel far faster with it rather than traveling in the flesh, it was often used as messenger or the like.

It was a convenient spirit art, but in the end it was something like an illusion that only created an outer appearance using spirit elements. Originally it didn't have a material body, to say nothing of performing magic with it.

But, in regard to that, it was just as expected from the demon king. In a feat of skill the clone was given a substantial body and the caster could even use spirit magic remotely to a certain degree. Thus resulting in a creation of a clone that was completely the same as the real thing.

Although, even for someone at the level of the demon king, "Shia-style straightforward right straight" seemed to be beyond his imagination.

Not only in the senses of the fist's power and speed, but also in the sense of experiencing getting punched in the face by a girl of that age.

Seeing his majesty Arogan who was smashed apart and reduced into sparkling particles, his majesty Eric and Greg made twitching faces, while Louise smiled widely, Phil went pale, and Dahlia showed a face that was even more sparkling than the particles.

Within the atmosphere of heavy silence, they broke up for the time being to

take care of various businesses including confirming the true intention of his majesty Arogan who suddenly visited. Shia didn't really have anything she particularly needed to do, so that was why she was servicing Schutaif appreciatively like this. She was passionately wiping the frame with a sponge that came with it.

(Come to think of it, I missed my chance to mention about Hajime-san.....)

Shia suddenly remembered and her hand stopped in thought.

The arrival of her popular period that visited her suddenly. She felt an emotion that was akin to bewilderment. After all, until Shia encountered Hajime she was living under the concealment of her family. Before she met Hajime, she had never interacted with opposite sex other than her relatives.

And then, since her existence was discovered in Fea Belgen, she was swimming desperately in a sea of malice and hostility. Even after meeting with Hajime, even though there were people who desired Shia as slave, there wasn't anyone who came into contact with her with pure affection.

Of course, it was also caused by Shia blatantly directing her immense affection toward Hajime alone, so no one tried to lay their hand on her but.....

Anyway, she had almost zero experience of being popular. Since coming to earth, sometimes there would be passerby attracted by Shia's appearance and made a pass on her (a part of the classmates called them the hero passerby), so it wasn't like her experience with this was non existence.

But, most of the time beautiful women and girls like Yue and others would be nearby, naturally those people's eyes would be turned toward them too, so her awareness that "I am popular" was thin.

Furthermore, even those occurrences lately never happened. Hajime created the artifact of the recognition obstruction, and even before that Hajime's existence was well-known. Men who tried to make a pass at Shia wasn't a hero passerby anymore, they were already nothing more than an applicant for a novel way of suicide.

(Nufufu~, that Hajime-san, even though he is endeavoring to be peaceful, when it come to us he will immediately enter demon king mode)

Shia sang in a good mood while polishing Schutaif diligently.

(He should come to pick me up tomorrow, or the day after tomorrow at the latest, it will be fine if I introduce him then~)

While she was thinking lightly like that, the shining slime Udar who was on Shia's head like usual called out to her.

『.....It's really something.』

「Eh? What is?」

Shia tilted her head. Udar jiggled *poyoyon* and leaped on top of Schutaif while continuing his word.

『After receiving my lightning, how did it come out of it with only a part of its armor blown away? What is it made of?』

「Rather, I was the one who was shocked that its armor was blown away even if only a part of it though.」

『That war hammer too. In the end I couldn't destroy it and could only make you let go of it. I know nothing that boasted toughness to such degree even among divine spirit arms.』

「Divine spirit arms? What is that?」

According to Udar, tool that was using spirit element was called as spirit instrument. And even among them, tools that are forged personally by divine spirit was apparently called as divine spirit arms. It seemed to possess powerful strength that are on a different level from divine spirit arms.

Actually, the great sword that his majesty Eric possessed, that too was a divine spirit arms that were handed down from generation to generation in the kingdom. Its name was "Tarnada", and it was able to manipulate wind.

「Hee.....it's like what we called artifact in our place. But, if it's something that Udar-san's people created, aren't you going to take it back now that they are opposing your side?」

『It won't be able to do anything to us anyway when it's used in the capacity that humans can handle.』

It wouldn't amount much to anything if not by abnormal being like Shia or exceptional existence like his majesty Arogon. By the way, according to Udar, Louis also possessed strength that was close to his majesty Arogon. When he wielded his full strength and worked together with his majesty Eric when he was using a divine spirit arms, the two of them might possibly display strength that was equal or surpassing his majesty Arogon.

「But, a divine spirit was repelled when attacking the demon kingdom wasn't it?」

『It wasn't me. It was Oros.』

「Oros-san? Is it a different divine spirit?」

『Correct. He is the divine spirit of earth. I met him before coming here. Oros told me that apparently the spirit element weapon of that country is even more of a threat than the demon king.』

There Udar was emitting a dark atmosphere that could be guessed even with his light sphere form.

『I was told, that the earth was screaming.』

「The earth, was screaming?」

『What that country created thoroughly sucked up the spirit element of the earth. Not only that, it seemed that even the spirits of earth were sucked in to bring further destruction.』

It was as though the earth was screaming at that time. That was why Oros pulled back.

Certainly, Oros who received terrific destruction was injured in his soul, but it wasn't to the degree that he had to retreat. However, he was unable to continue listening to the screams of the earth even more than that.

『Objectively speaking, it might be a bad move on Oros's part to retreat like that.』

If he kept attacking, the demon kingdom might fall. In the end, he was only postponing the problem. The earth might be screaming again in the future.

Oros understood that and yet didn't attack till the end was because of his

terror. It wasn't a terror for his own destruction, it was a terror toward the scream of the children, the spirits. As a divine spirit, as the executor of divine punishment, it could be said as an unbecoming failure.

However,

『I cannot bring myself to criticize Oros. I too understand his feeling painfully well.』

「Is that so.....」

Shia wondered what she should say. Shia gently moved the depressed Udar from above Schutaif to her palm. She was unable to find any words and only patted him in consolation.

Shia thought.

In earth, a world where information was overflowing, she saw and heard many things. The problem of this world was similar to earth's problem.

Population explosion, drying up resource, pollution of land and air..... The difference was in the divine spirit. A world where the scream of the natural world could be heard and a world where it couldn't be heard, which one was more fortunate she wondered.

Shia didn't know. She didn't understand, but when she looked at the dejected Udar, she was unable to consider it as other people's problem.

It was then, she suddenly could see flickering light at the corner of her vision. 'Oh?', when she tilted her rabbit ears while turning her gaze there, she could see a light sphere that was really similar with Udar was converging around Vire Drucken that she put near a flower bed nearby.

『It's my children. They are spirits of lightning. It's unusual for them to come out in front of people. Is it because I'm here?』

「Now that you mention it, recently the spirits-san too won't come near human settlement isn't it?」

Were they relieved because the embodiment of lightning cloud was nearby? However, in spite of that they weren't gathering toward Udar, rather it looked like they came out because of great curiosity toward Vire Drucken. A part of

them also came toward Schutaif.

「Are they curious toward the artifacts?」

『Hmm. No, that's not it. Shia. These war hammer and two-wheeled vehicle, do they have the function to stockpile lightning?』

「He? Lightning? .....Aa! They have!」

Shia took Vire Drucken into her hand and poured magic power to activate one of its gimmicks. Right after that, Vire Drucken sparked *bachii bachii bachii*.

The lightning spirits went 「Waa~~~h」 and crowded toward it in delight.

「It has electricity storage installed. It's a function to electrify the opponent when locking weapon with them, but it's faster to send the opponent flying so I've never used it you see~. And so, I completely forgot about it~,ahaha.」

『Ri, right. I see.』

Udar couldn't really laugh as someone who had been sent flying before. While Udar was somewhat creeped out, Shia also made her own body to spark bluish white.

「Like this I can also wrap myself with electricity after a fashion as a part of body manipulation, but in the end it's only to the degree of static electricity that is only useful for playing a prank.」

She would use it to shock Yue's butt when Yue transformed into lifeless Yue and wouldn't move away from in front of her vacuum cleaner. Yue would raise a cute scream 「Hyaa!？」 and moved away squirmingly while holding her butt. It was a cute sight and actually it became Shia's favorite scene recently.

At the beginning she learned it in order to wake up Hajime at the morning when he just wouldn't wake up, but it didn't work on Hajime who possessed “Lightning Clad”. Rather, she was the one who got electrified and dragged into the bed instead. Honestly it was faster to use “Shia-style Good Morning (Physical)”.

Dahlia and others who saw from afar how Shia was enveloped in bluish white spark went 「My!」 and they pressed their hand on their mouth. The lightning spirits also similarly went 「My!」 and converged toward her. They twirled



around Shia as though they were dancing.

『.....It looks like they like you. Shia, the spirits are in high spirit, saying that it's comfortable beside you.』

「Is that so? Wait, wawah, please don't play with my rabbit ears! Hyah!? Inside the clothes is not allowed~! Ah, please don't pull my haiir!」

The spirits were making ruckus looking like they were having a lot of fun.

Udar's atmosphere became really gentle seeing that scene of the spirits being playful with fondness toward Shia. His depressed mood just now cleared away as though it had never happened. Such scene between human and spirit was nostalgic, and then this scene was how the world should be originally. He himself also seemed happy.

Above all else, the emotion he directed toward Shia was really warm. No, rather it had reached a passionate degree.

『However, Shia. As the personification of lightning cloud, I cannot just ignore how you mentioned that the power of lightning isn't really useful.』

「Even if Udar-san say that, you understand right, after experiencing my battle style? By the time an opponent enter the state of weapon locking with super heavy weapon like my war hammer, it's the same like entering a disadvantaged situation. They can only get blown away.」

『In other words, in an instant of contact——if you can inflict electric attack to the opponent through a blow in that moment it will be effective enough right? Or perhaps, it will be fine if you fire lightning attack like me.』

「That's, well, that might be so.」

『Right. Then let's try it.』

Udar hopped *poyon* and moved onto Vire Drucken. And then he called out 『Children, lend me your strength』 to gather the spirits on him. They became together and vanished into Vire Drucken.

「Eh? Wait a second Udar-san? What are you doing?」

『Mumu? What is this? I don't understand. However, well, what complicated and precise making. As expected the child of another world cannot be

underestimated..... Hmm, is it like this?』

Somehow Shia got a bad premonition. She swung around Vire Drucken like a small lucky mallet while saying 「Udar-saa~n, don't enter inside as you please~」.

Because, thinking really carefully this was extremely bad. Udar and also the spirits were all personification of lightning. And then Vire Drucken was a weapon loaded with ammunition.....

『Observe carefully! This divine spirit of lightning cloud, Udar will grant new power to Shia Haur——』

Electricity ran fiercely. Vire Drucken emitted spark and flash. It was like the hammer that was possessed by a god in a certain Avengeo group.

Then, explosion. Along with an explosive sound.

Shia screamed 「Hyawaa~」 while tumbling. Udar and the spirits who were sent flying rotated high in the air. Dahlia and others who were watching from afar were also screaming 「Kyaa~」 while rolling on the ground.

*Boom* Vire Drucken fell on the ground and caused a tremor. Black smoke rose up from any holes on the war hammer. The outer shell wasn't harmed, which was as expected from Hajime quality. It appeared that Hajime had properly put countermeasure so that the war hammer itself wouldn't become unusable even after the unlikely chance of explosion occurring inside.

Although, there was no doubt that the whole ammo loaded inside were annihilated now. Its function as war hammer wasn't affected, but it might be dangerous to use its shooting function without having Hajime checking it first.

Udar slime fell with a plop on the ground. Shia wiped away the soot while sending him a reproachful glare.

「After a close observation, my partner is reduced into a terrible state though?」

『Incomprehensible.』

For Udar who didn't know about ammo, it seemed he didn't understand why the explosion occurred.

Shia thrust her finger on Udar slime and spoke while grinding on him.

「Could it be, that? You are thinking about the future ahead and tried to destroy my weapon while you can right now?」

『It's a misunderstanding. I did it thinking of Shia's sake. I thought that a weapon of this level will be able to endure divine spirit armsification.』

「But it exploded.」

『Right, it exploded. Even before that, my power couldn't be accumulated well. So a material from another world will have different property huh..... I think it will go well if there is spirit stone with high purity included into it though.....』

「Well, I will believe that you did that with good intention in mind. Thank you very much, Udar-san. But, it's forbidden to experiment on my partner further than this.」

She had no intention to entrust her partner to anyone other than Hajime. Udar hung down his head hearing Shia asserted clearly that it was forbidden to enter Vire Drucken. He was like.....someone who failed in increasing the positivity level.

There, a commotion and loud footsteps could be heard.

「Shia! Are you safe!? What happened!?!」

His majesty Eric and the royal guards including Greg came running. It seemed they rushed here after hearing the explosion.

Seeing Shia crouching down while poking at Udar slime, they thought that perhaps she was crouching because she was injured and approached her in hurry.

Looking at his majesty Eric who was reaching out with both hands, perhaps he was going to hold her up with both hands.

Of course, Shia swiftly dodged by rotating her body. His majesty Eric went 「Ah」 and his balance crumbled. And then, like that he dived on the dejected Udar.

An awkward atmosphere hung in the air.

「Are you safe, Shia-sama?」

「Ah, yes. ....Sorry for causing commotion.」

The royal guard captain Greg ran near in worry of Shia's condition as though nothing had happened. Shia replied with a wry smile.

During that time, his majesty Eric stood up while shaking from either anger or shame.

「.....My apologies, Udar-sama. For pressing down on you.」

『.....It's fine, I forgive you.』

Somehow, their heart as man seemed connected with each other. The hardness of the guard of the woman they liked created a friendship that surpassed the barrier of man and god.....perhaps.

His majesty Eric stood up as though nothing had happened. He coughed once and opened his mouth while looking at Shia.

「Don't make me worry so much. If something happen to you, I.....」

「Er~r」

The passion burning in his eyes was amazing. Just what in the world she did to make him harbored such emotion toward her. Shia completely didn't understand. It felt like a feverish feeling that was unlike all of those hero passerby who were only attracted to her appearance would be transmitted through the air.

Like this, it might not be good for her to just nonchalantly dodge him while waiting for Hajime's arrival before saying 'I'm already married desu~'. Thinking that, Shia tried to open her mouth once more.

However, it was as though some kind of curse was hanging over them. Another hindrance entered. Furthermore it was a really emergency news.

「Your majesty-. A news came from the demon kingdom——what are you doing, your majesty?」

Louis arrived riding on something like a flow of light. Perhaps it was a travel method using spirit art. When he was going to report something, he witnessed his majesty Eric reaching out toward Shia along with a passionate gaze. His glasses glinted while he asked with a smiling face that looked empty.

「I, I'm going to check for injury——」

「You can't do that you know? Or rather please don't touch me.」

Thorn of words that didn't contain even a shred of deredere came back to him. His majesty Eric's heart was stabbed. There was no sweetness at all in it so it only felt painful.

While that happened, Shia also casually took distance from him. It also plainly dealt damage on him. The physical distance represented the distance of their heart.

「More importantly Louis. You have something to report right? I'll hear it.」

「Oops, that's right. Your majesty, the true reason of his majesty the demon king Arogan's visit has come into light. His subordinate received communication from his country and came to convey it to us.」

「So a spy infiltrated us, well, let's put that aside for now. And?」

「Yes. His majesty the demon king's objective is——reinforcement request.」

His majesty Eric's eyes opened wide.

Louis reported the detail while the air of the place became tense all at once. According to the report, the divine spirit of the earth Oros resumed the divine punishment to the demon kingdom. Furthermore, this time he even led a large force of celestial race with him.

The force had already reached a distance of half a day away from the demon kingdom's capital.

「So that's the reason of Arogan-dono's irrational visit. He didn't show even the slightest unrest but.....was he actually agitated inside?」

His majesty Eric nodded in understanding. Shia also nodded deeply.

「I see. So he approached me also because he wanted to win over the hero with certainty.」

「No, that's the nature of that person. If he see a beauty, he cannot help himself from seducing them. What's more, he was really interested in you Shia.」

「I cannot comprehend it.」

Even if she was told that she caught the eyes of that man who was like the personification of narcissism, furthermore combined with how his majesty Eric and others called him as “demon king”, it only made her felt really weary.

In addition, she made a pass on woman when coming to ask for reinforcement, and in the end got blown away which delayed the reinforcement request itself. It couldn't even be called a joke. For a guy like that to introduce himself as “demon king”, even as a joke it felt like it would make Shia's discomfort index to burst through the max value.

Shia shook her head to drive away the unpleasant feeling and talked to Udar to change the topic.

「The report said that the distance is half a day away but, is Oros-san's traveling speed really not that fast?」

『That's not the case. He has an appearance of the land taking human form. Most of the time he is as big as ten children of man, but he can change his size at will. If he turn bigger, his traveling speed will also grow faster in proportion.』

Apparently Oros's appearance was like a giant golem. Normally he was as tall as ten humans, so he must be around twenty meter or less. If he enlarged himself, his travel speed would change with the enlargement of his step's width.

However, in that case the reason why it would take half a day for him was unclear. Udar sensed that doubt and answered with a groan.

『It must be the expression of his resolve. That this time, he absolutely won't pull back no matter what. At the same time, he is compelling the people of that country to resolve themselves.』

Oros's slow approach was the same like a convict's walk climbing the stair toward the gallows for the execution. Each of his step was the stair that the demon kingdom climbed to their doom.

『What will you do? O child of man. O king of this country.』

Udar's solemn voice resounded. His voice was filled with dignity that was

unthinkable coming from his slime shape until now. That was unmistakably the questioning of god. Even without eyes, Udar's gaze was obviously being directed to his majesty Eric.

His majesty Eric clenched his fist and gritted his teeth. He showed an expression of enduring a great pain. It was obvious that a deep conflict was tormenting him.

If thinking normally, in a sense the best way was to abandon the demon kingdom that still hadn't abandoned their ambition even at this point and in the future. If they were ended by divine punishment, one concern toward the future of cooperation with spirits would disappear with certainty.

It was the rational thinking. It was the best thinking as a king of a country. Because making a choice of which to sacrifice and which to let live was a duty that was imposed to king.

However, but.....

「Someone who will abandon his fellow kind, who is also a partner who though imperfect, had made a promise to help each other. Will someone like that be able to live together with the spirits-san in the future ahead?」

His majesty Eric, no, everyone there became taken aback. Their gaze moved toward the voice. It was Shia who casually said that while checking Vire Drucken's state.

「Shia.....but.....」

「Ahaha, please don't mind it too much. I am not the king, so I cannot think like a king. Just now in the end is only my own thinking.」

Shia herself was smiling wryly, saying that her thinking was too optimistic and idealistic.

‘Aa, but.....’, his majesty Eric thought.

「Doing everything you can, for the future you wished for, is it.....」

His heart suddenly turned light. Once more the words, attitude, and way of life of the girl before him were clearing away the weight of his heart.

His majesty Eric looked at Louis and other with a troubled expression.

Interestingly, everyone also made the same face. His majesty Eric felt like he was going to burst laughing. He somehow endured it while staring at Shia, then he turned his face toward Udar once more.

「Udar-sama. We will go to reinforce them. We will fight Oros-sama until our words reach him.」

『I see.』

「Surely you have seen through it. Of the ulterior motive of Arogan-dono and the people who admire the demon kingdom. As expected, we who will try to save them are really a sinful race.」

『I cannot deny those words.』

「Yes. However, even so, I want to show our sincerity with this reinforcement.」

『Sincerity? By trying to defeating a divine spirit?』

「No. We swear that we will never abandon anything anymore, not a single thing. This is our sincerity in protecting that oath.」

『.....』

Rational judgment, pursuit of the benefit for one's own country or possibly the benefit of the race called mankind, necessity, calculation, greed fulfillment.

Such things were enough already. In exchange of their development until now through those means, they ended up making light of many important things. And then, as the result, they were heading to destruction.

Then, let's take back the sense of values that was obvious as a human, as a country. Let's just protect them simply because they had promised. Let's save them because their conscience was screaming to save them. Let's carry up the morals that were only natural for human to possess. Let's run forward for the sake of idealistic decision rather than realistic decision.

They were going to be destroyed anyway. Then, let's return to the starting point. Let's return to be the "human" that the mother the star tree and the divine spirits surely loved at the beginning.

『.....I see.』



Udar's reply was only that. But, surely the gentle atmosphere they vaguely felt from him wasn't just their imagination.

His majesty Eric digested the fact that no rebuking words came from Udar, then he turned his gaze toward Shia.

「.....Shia. It will be too late if we don't sally immediately. Your family won't make it in time.」

「I guess.」

Originally, it would take a whole three days to rush from Balted Kingdom to Rated Kingdom even when forcing a horse that was strengthened with spirit arts to run until they die. However, when the salvation plan was decided in the meeting of leaders of the three countries, they were given a flying dragon from Tinted Beast Kingdom. If it only carried the elites, they would be able to arrive in just a day.

And then, if it was Rated Demon Kingdom, they would be able to hold out for a day although they would be greatly damaged.

「.....I will keep the promise. I won't force you to do anything until your family come.」

「Is that so.」

Hearing his majesty Eric's words, Shia turned a smile where it might be the first time she directed such expression toward him. Seeing that smile, his majesty Eric unconsciously hid his mouth with his hand while looking aside. It seemed that the stimulation was too powerful.

However, there was Louis's wide grin ahead of his averted gaze, so he hurriedly returned his gaze. It seemed that the stimulation was powerful.

「But, I wish that you immediately come to help us if you succeed in persuading your family. We swear we will hold out until then. That's why, that's why Shia. Can we hold out hope? That you will come to save us?」

His gaze was hot. Like a man who before heading to the battlefield was making a promise with his lover to reunite once more. Louis and others also stepped forward and left similar words. As though they were trying to carve

their existence to Shia even for just a bit more. Udar too also bounced *poyoyon*.

Shia smiled wryly and shook her head. His majesty Eric and others distorted their expression in pain.

「There won't be any meaning to a promise if there is no opposite side to keep it.」

「.....What?」

Shia swung Vire Drucken. Putting aside its shooting mode, it had no shortcoming as a war hammer. Next, Shia straddled Schutaif and poured magic power into it. Instantly, *KIIIIIIII* Schutaif started with such starting up sound. There was no problem with its running function.

「Now then, my Schutaif-tan, compared to a flying lizard-san, which one is faster I wonder?」

Shia said such thing with a chuckle 'nihi'. His majesty Eric couldn't hold himself back anymore,

「Shia!」

He was overcome with emotion and stepped forward to hug her. And then, 「Oops」 with such light voice Shia kicked him flying and he vanished behind a flower bed.

Shia might have gotten used to it because she then addressed Louis as though nothing had happened.

「I'll tow a carriage behind, so can I ask you to make the preparation? I will be going really fast, so please prepare something sturdy.」

「As you wish, Shia-sama.」

Louis also bowed his head respectfully as though nothing had happened. As though it was Shia who was the one worthy for him to offer his everything to serve her.

Like that, Louis immediately turned around to prepare for the expedition while giving instruction to his subordinates. Then he looked back after a few steps and,

「Shia-sama. Something has been on my mind since the first time we met.」

「Yes, what is it?」

He said along with a pure smile that contained no hidden meaning that the females of the kingdom were greatly in love with.

「You are really a softhearted person.」

「.....」

Shia's rabbit ears went limp. Her troubled expression might be because of her self-awareness that even while she wished to make a clear distinction like Hajime and Yue, in the end she couldn't really do that.

In the past, Shia's mother told Shia that she wished to become a hero even though she was rabbitman. She didn't want to become a forest rabbit that could only run and hide, but a hero that could protect anyone.

The woman possessed a heart that was stronger than anyone, but the cruel fate gave her the weakest body of the weakest race.....the wish and disposition of such woman had been inherited by her daughter with certainty. Furthermore it was to an extraordinary degree.

Perhaps, it was exactly because of that she was chosen.

To be the savior of the screaming world.

To be the <ruby>brave<rt>hero</rt></ruby> that could protect everyone.

.

.

Thirty minutes later.

Shia and everyone else became people of the sky.

At the lead was Schutaif. The sky road from the barrier created by the other world's bike realized the world's first midair wheeled travel through the large carriage it was towing behind. [ED:E.T.？]

「Shi, Shiaa! I, is this really all right!? Or rather, isn't it fine to slow down a bit more!?!」

「It's fine! There is nothing better than going fast yeah! Desuu!!」

Shia was really in a good mood that it felt like a cry of 'hyahhaa' could be heard.

Toward such Shia, his majesty Eric who took out his face from the carriage's window and called out to her was turning pale because his breathing was obstructed by the wind pressure. No, he was simply turning pale from the terror of running midair in a speed that was nearly 200 km/hour. (124.27 mph)

Inside the carriage that was connected to Schutaif, there were Louis and others the childhood friends group. Other than them there were also people selected from the best members the knight order and the palace spirit artist division had, five people each from those two groups were inside the carriage too. But everyone was sticking close to the wall. They didn't move at the slightest while their expression was stiff.

They would die if they moved.....their expression seemed to think that.

Shia's rabbit ears flapped wildly from the wind pressure. She was driving wildly while sometimes she would make eccentric poses that looked strange but curiously left impression in the heart. There was nothing more that could enter her rabbit ears when she was in that state.

His majesty Eric pulled back his face inside the carriage with an expression that had given up on various things. He was also praising himself who tried to ride together with Shia on Schutaif at the beginning but ceased from doing that because he got a vague bad premonition.

But, right after that, Shia's voice resounded from outside.

「Mumu-! No one will be able to stop the current me yeaah! Desuu!」

His majesty Eric and everyone made a face that said 「Hm?」 and looked at each other. The next moment, consecutive explosive *boom!* sound resounded. The carriage was shaking from the shockwave, which caused the knights to also shake in their boots.

「Shi, Shia!? What happened!?!」

「The celestial people-san got in the way, so I threw explosive slug bullets at

them!」

「Ce, celestial people you say!? Kuh, our reinforcement was predicted——」

His majesty Eric gritted his teeth while sending signal to Louis with hand gesture to intercept, but the next moment another *boom!* explosively resounded.

「Shiaaa—!! Are you alright!?」

「I'm fine desuu! There is no problem! Fu-ha-hah! Try to stop me if you caa~~n desuu!!」

*Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom♪*

In between of the consecutive explosive sounds, they could vaguely hear scream like 「Gyaaaah」 or 「Hii~」 or 「Goddamn iitt」.

In addition, there was a voice saying 「Now, I become the wind!」 in a good mood, at the same time the carriage accelerated even faster. The G-force pressed on everyone and they turned pale while clinging desperately on the wall.

「Your majesty-. I propose to attach handrail in the carriage's seat or wall!!」

「Accepted!! Do it right away if we go back safely!」

「By your wiiiiilll」

*Rattle rattle-, creak creak-, mekyo!* Ominous sounds were resounding from the carriage and everyone became tearful while the proposal that Dahlia desperately yelled was adopted instantly. The brawny knights gave a thumb up at Dahlia tearfully.

After that, the carriage curved with terrific centrifugal force, rolled over upside down, and so on. His majesty Eric and others who had their fill of a fun time like jet coaster became even paler than a drunkard this time.

After a while 「I took care of them~」 a carefree voice could be heard. In that moment everyone thrust both their hands to the sky and cheered loudly.

「We are saved! Saveeed! We surviveeed! Let's go home quickly!」 Their atmosphere was like that.

But the way, Shia defeated the attacking celestial people not with shooting. There was no change in Vire Drucken that it would be dangerous to use its shooting mode without maintenance first.

And so, 「Rather, it's troublesome to reload before shooting, it's faster to just throw it!」 under such thinking, she threw the explosive slug bullets to defeat the enemy. The bullet speed wasn't really different from when it was fired normally.

The multiple battles that she went through since coming to this world was rapidly transforming Shia into monster. But, luckily or unluckily Shia herself wasn't really conscious of that.

Louis who checked the situation outside the window fixed the position of his glasses while opening his mouth.

「Your majesty. It's the Enaton Hill. We have already traveled through two thirds of the distance.」

「.....Amazing.」

The distance that would take a day even when using a flying dragon. This was going to be finished in just around three hours.

The yell 「Fuhah, fuhahahahah. The sky of other world feels super goooooooooodddd-desuu!!」 of Shia whose tension was climbing in proportion with the speed pierced everyone's ear.

It was a bit scary, but she sounded like she was greatly delighted so his majesty Eric's lips naturally slackened.

Louis who saw that narrowed his gaze.

「Your majesty, what is your intention with Shia-sama?」

His majesty Eric was taken aback by the sudden question and his eyes opened wide. He wondered what was Louis thinking at this kind of time, but Louis's eyes were unexpectedly serious so his majesty Eric mended his expression.

「What do you mean with that question?」

「You understand right?」

It was about his feeling toward Shia. Even though not even a day had passed since they met, his heart was turned toward her as though a spirit art of charm was put on him.

「Shia-sama will return back to her original world when her family arrive to pick her up.」

「.....So what?」

「I'm saying that your majesty ought to draw a line properly.」

His majesty Eric's mouth frowned. He understood but didn't want to recognize it. Such feeling could be clearly seen from him.

「.....What about you yourself, Louis. You are the oldest one among us childhood friends, but until now I've never heard any serious romantic talk about you. You made a face like you aren't interested to woman, but you are sending really passionate gaze toward Shia.」

It was a meager counterattack from his majesty Eric toward Louis. He pointed that out with a sulking tone toward Louis who was his best friend and someone who was like a big brother to him.

Before anyone knew it, everyone's gaze inside the carriage was gathered toward the two. However, even within that atmosphere Louis didn't turn timid and replied with a wide smile.

「If this heated feeling is called love then, yes, certainly I'm harboring love toward Shia-sama.」

「Nuguh. Tha, that's really straight.」

「Yes, if I face your majesty straightforwardly, then your majesty will also face me back straightforwardly just like usual right?」

「Muu.....」

While thinking that 'I really cannot go against this guy', his majesty Eric raised both his hands in surrender pose and replied back.

「Let's see..... It's the first time I feel like this. I don't want Shia to go home. I want her to be together with me in this world.」

「Yes, I also think the same. And then, surely it's not only me and your majesty who think so.」

Louis said that and smiled. His gaze moved toward Greg and Phil too.

「After all, she is a girl who charm even a divine spirit like Udar-sama.」

「For certain.」

Phil spoke while shrugging, while Greg affirmed with a small smile.

Gentle smiles between fellow people who understood each other spread inside the carriage.

「Now then, from the perspective of the country it will be a matter for great congratulation if Shia-sama is wedded with your majesty, but personally it's hard to accept for me.」

「Yo, you really said it straight huh, Louis.」

Louis continued while pushing up his glasses.

「Although, it's a fact that her heart belong to her family, it won't be a trivial matter to change her mind. It's my thinking that here we should band together and cooperate to convince her family.」

「That's logical. In any case, we have to make them think that it's fine for Shia to remain here.」

「At this point, I believe that she has no bad impressions of us seeing how she is helping us so much like this, but I don't think that it's so far to the degree that she is holding affection for us.」

「The prospect is grim.」

The four male's heated discussion continued. While that was happening, only Dahlia alone was strangely dripping cold sweat.

(.....If they are thinking that Shia-sama is charming, why aren't they considering the possibility that she might have someone already in her original world?)

She recalled Shia's figure when she was singing at the palace's courtyard.

(“Hajime-san”.....it will be great if it's just my imagination but, somehow Shia-



sama's atmosphere felt different only when she was speaking that person's name.....)

Dahlia-san's female instinct was sharp and clear.

The words "grim prospect" that Greg spoke. In reality it might not be just a mere "grim prospect".

Dahlia averted her gaze from the four men who was passionately discussing of how to make their advance toward Shia, looking like 「If that is the case then, I cannot watch this anymore!」.

For Dahlia herself, it would feel terribly lonely to part from Shia. She wanted to become even closer with her. That was why, if it was a discussion in order so Shia wouldn't sever her connection with this world, she would happily participate but.....

(Shia-sama! If you can please play the requiem for them as soon as possible!)

Dahlia prayed to the Shia in her heart for the slightest mercy.

And then, whether that prayer actually reached or not, actually since some time ago Shia had stopped yelling completely. From that fact, and from the fact that Shia's rabbit ears were rabbit ears of hell, it could be easily guessed.

They didn't know. Outside the carriage, the person they were discussing was writhing and couldn't endure being there saying 「Stop it~, don't have a love talk in a range where the person you are talking about can listen~!」.

Like that, just as Dahlia wished, Shia resolved herself that she had to perform the requiem over them as soon as possible, but right after that,

「Oo!? Eric-sa~n-, Louis-sa~n-, something huge is coming here!」

「! What, what's going on!」

「Huge thing you say.....」

Everyone heard Shia's yell and leaned out from the window simultaneously to look outside. The sight that flew into their eyes made them gazed in wonderment.

「Wh, why are you here!?」

His majesty Eric questioned while addressing the existence lying in wait for them by floating in the air ahead with a loud voice.

「Tinted Beast Kingdom's, beast king——Gruelle Dullac Tinted-dono!」

A red dragon was hovering as though to block their way. He was his majesty the king of beast kingdom who had completely transformed into a beast using a spirit art.

.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Nichijou's latest chapter is updated in Gardo Comic.

The nostalgic expression technique.....

Perhaps I have to make Shia do something like fourth wall breaking soon at least lol

The chapter is posted for free, so please go take a look!

Best regards!

# Arifureta Chapter 336

## Arifureta After III Brutal Hero Shia Arc But I Refuse! Desuu!

.

It was a majestic red dragon. Wind could be seen faintly whirling around its body that was sized as big as a house.

『This is the first time we met since the conference of the three countries isn't it, youngster of Balted.』

The voice sounded like it resounded from the bottom of the dragon's stomach. The jaws that were lined up with sharp fangs didn't move, but the vibration of the air could be felt so apparently the words themselves were transmitted normally.

Shia thought 'The way he talk is different from Thio-san huh' while judging that the dragon wasn't an enemy and put a brake on Schutaif.

She confronted the red dragon midair on a bike that had a carriage attached.

『I've told you every time, please stop calling me youngster, Gruelle-dono. I am the king of Balted.』

『Fuh, forgive me. I am completely unable to forget the you at your youth.』

His majesty Eric who leaned out from the window asked the dragon to correct his words with a bitter face.

Apparently his majesty Eric and his majesty Gruelle were old acquaintance. Their countries were neighboring each other without any particular quarrel between them, in addition their two countries were fellows surviving countries

among the three remaining countries, so it was only natural.

In contrast with the dragon's fiendish appearance, it seemed his majesty Gruelle had gentle disposition. Shia thought so from his voice and atmosphere.

The dragon eyes of his majesty Gruelle moved toward Shia. And then, his breath was taken away. He looked at Shia once more from closer and he seemed to have something in his mind from the way he was staring fixedly at her.

『.....I'm surprised. I presume that you are the hero. To think that the hero is a fellow tribe member and a girl who is this beautiful.』

「Er~r, nice to meet you, king of the beast tribe. My name is Shia Hauria.」

Shia kept sitting on Schutaif, but she bowed her head briefly just in case. However, she somehow got an unpleasant premonition and her lips were subtly twitching.

『Pardon my rudeness.』

His majesty Gruelle said that and the next instant, he was wrapped in light. Then, a beat later he transformed into a red haired dandy handsome man. His appearance looked like someone whose age was at the late forty. An attractive middle-aged man who was overflowing with dignity and youthful vitality. There were only dragon wings growing from his back.

His majesty Gruelle then lightly flew to Shia's side and,

「I am the king of Tinted Beast Kingdom, Gruelle Dullac Tinted. It's a pleasure to make your acquaintance, o beautiful hero of fellow beast race.」

He said that and smiled while taking Shia's hand and moved his lips toward the back of her hand.

First thing first, Shia swiftly dodged. It might be a typical greeting, but even if what she did might be rude, she couldn't tolerate a kiss from the opposite sex. She also couldn't help but sensing an ulterior motive from how he excessively stressed the part of "beautiful" and "fellow beast race".

「Im sorry, I'm not used to this kind of greeting. Besides, right now we are in a hurry.」

They were marching with uncommon speed and also travel method, so it wasn't like they didn't have some leeway, but Shia spoke that excuse in order to avoid any troublesome matter.

「I see, that was really rude of me. It's really unbecoming of someone of my age to be this high spirited after witnessing your loveliness.」

「.....Is that so. Thank you.」

‘Somehow it feels like many of the kings of this world seems to be playboy.....’, Shia thought while exerting herself to prevent her expression from spasming. Whether it was the demon king or the beast king, Shia was extremely troubled whether she should called them as idiot who couldn't discern the situation, or whether she should consider them as composed king who was unperturbed in any kind of situation.

As someone who knew Tio's grandfather——Adol Claus who was also a red dragon who was the very picture of honesty and sincerity, she was unable to hold a good impression about the king of dragon man in front of her no matter what.

While she was thinking that, his majesty Eric timidly got down from the carriage and stood on the sky road that was made from barrier. He walked toward Shia while sending a helping hand.

「It should be fine to postpone the formal introduction for hero-dono who was successfully summoned after we overcome the danger that is occurring right now.」

「Hmm. Danger is it?」

「Yes. For you to be here, it means that you also received request for assistance from the demon kingdom just like us correct? In that case, we have to hurry right now.」

He said words that sounded like a citation of Shia's words. His majesty Eric glanced at Shia and nodded.

Shia also nodded while grinning with feeling of gratitude at the helping hand from his majesty Eric.

His majesty Eric, was shot. His cheeks blushed and his hand covered his mouth while he looked aside. Inside her heart Shia made a tsukkomi 「Are you a maiden!」.

「.....I see. Although the strength of Louis Lector was needed for the summoning ceremony, as I thought apparently it's a mistake entrusting this to other.」

Such small whisper was carried away by the wind. It was only picked up by Shia's excellent rabbit ears. Shia could somehow understand what the meaning of that whisper was from how his majesty Gruelle was looking alternately at his majesty Eric and Shia.

(Even though it's our first meeting, what's with this? Certainly there is merit in winning over the hero but.....I can sense a sentiment that is more than that.....)

From the conversation of his majesty Eric and others on their way here, and how the way they looked at Shia was identical with how his majesty Gruelle and his majesty Arogan acted, she couldn't say that it was just her imagination.

(That Erst, did she put a curse of charm or something when I defeated her?)

Shia's popularity period was so amazing to the degree that she had such doubt. Perhaps, Shia was an article of the finest quality for the sensitivity of the people in this world.

「I was waiting here due to that matter of reinforcement request.」

Shia was taken aback by the words of his majesty Gruelle and she returned back from the vortex of her thought.

「What do you mean? Do you mean that you wish to match our pace in heading there as reinforcement?」

There was a small forest below if they looked down. The figures of beastmen could be seen here and there down there. Most likely they were elite force that was the royal guard of his majesty Gruelle.

His majesty Eric and others couldn't help from frowning.

The location of the three countries from each other was positioned like a triangle. Which was to say, the route to go to the demon kingdom from Balted

Kingdom wouldn't overlap with the route from Tinted Beast Kingdom.

The success of the hero summoning along with the degree of the hero's strength had been conveyed to the beast kingdom before dawn using flying dragon as messenger. The reinforcement request should be coming to the beast kingdom at around the same time with that.

Then, it could be surmised that the best way to be reinforcement was to fight together with the demon kingdom to buy time until the hero arrived rather than intentionally flying to different direction and lying in wait like this.

Furthermore his majesty Gruelle shouldn't know about uncommon transportation method like Schutaif, so he should be under the impression that Balted Kingdom would be coming using the flying dragon his country lent to them. In other words, he must be planning to wait here for one whole day.

Furthermore, he quickened only his departure so he would be able to intercept Balted Kingdom in this route with certainty.

If the intention from such act was compared with the way of thinking of his majesty Gruelle that they knew well then.....

「No, I came here to stop you all.」

「As expected huh.」

It was like that. His majesty Gruelle was waiting here in order to stop the reinforcement from Balted Kingdom. He prepared a powerful card of the king personally coming to stop them courteously.

「Eerr, what does that mean? We cannot go to help? Is the people of beast kingdom in the same position with the celestial people?」

When Shia asked her question with perplexed feeling, his majesty Gruelle smiled wryly and shook his head.

「No way, the celestial people consider us as enemy. There is no way we can join hand with them. But, we are simply thinking that we shouldn't reach out to help the demon kingdom.」

In other words, it was something like that. There was no need to go as far to fight a divine spirit to protect the demon kingdom. Rather, they had no

intention to go against the divine spirit by not getting involved. 'Please help yourself to the sinner, judge them as you please, that is the expression of our remorse', they wished to convey that by doing this.

Apparently the king of the beast kingdom was abandoning the demon kingdom.

「Your majesty Gruelle, that's no good. That is no different from what we have done until now. The sincerity that human should display shouldn't be something like that!」

「You are really young, Eric-dono. As the king of a country, I cannot praise such thinking that is making light of the benefit for your own country.」

「That way of thinking is what invited this situation!」

「There is no guarantee that we will end up safe by opposing divine spirit. You are getting carried away due to the hero's power, young king.」

「There is no point seeking any guarantee at this late hour-. Why won't you understand that the only path left for human is to advance forward!」

「It's you who are the one who won't understand. You cannot call yourself a king without being able to make the decision to obtain benefit.」

It was a thorough rationalism. His majesty Gruelle shrugged in exasperation and behaved as though he was talking with a little kid.

Next he asked Shia「Won't you come to me rather than staying under this kind of immature king?」 with his gaze. Shia didn't really change her expression and simply looked back at his majesty Gruelle with a fixed stare. She looked like she was trying to ascertain something.

His majesty Eric couldn't control himself from the attitude of his majesty Gruelle that was like that and spoke roughly.

「Who will listen to an opportunist like you-」

「.....I won't stay quiet if you intend to mock me you know?」

「I spoke the truth. You completely ingratiated yourself to demon kingdom's technology supremacy ideology, but when the divine spirit started to act you immediately turned around to the plan that our country carry out. And yet,



even then you still acted subservient to the demon kingdom and wouldn't give any satisfactory help to us until Oros-sama attacked!」

「Watching for opportunity is also the role of the king. What is bad from ascertaining the feasibility of an absurd plan?」

「Feasibility you say? Then, why did you suddenly become cooperative after Oros-sama attacked the demon kingdom? That's unrelated with the plan's feasibility right? You simply abandoned the demon kingdom and turned side toward us!」

「Good grief.....I don't come here to listen to a child's temper tantrum.」

His majesty Gruelle shook his head with a wry smile and this time he directly offered his hand toward Shia.

「Shia-dono, although you are someone who has defeated even a divine spirit, surely this action isn't something that is completely not dangerous for you. There is no need to head to a meaningless battlefield. Won't you come together with me to the star tree? If the demon kingdom is judged, the star tree too should understand that there is already no more bad people among the humans.」

「Your highness Gruelle-, you are really-. Now it's the hero you are currying favor to-!?!」

「This isn't currying favor. I hope that you will see this as me possessing the eyes to perceive the tide of the time, or perhaps even the destiny. Unlike you.」

His majesty Gruelle was completely unperturbed. He didn't give any glance at his majesty anymore and simply preached the rational and beneficial path to Shia. He offered his hand implying that taking his hand was the best course of action, that it wasn't Balted Kingdom, but Tinted Beast Kingdom that would welcome her as honored guest.

Shia looked at his majesty Eric. His majesty Eric was looking at Shia with pleading gaze.

Shia smiled wryly and looked at his majesty Gruelle. His majesty Gruelle smiled kindly. He invited Shia with eyes that believed the survivor would be those who could ride on the tide called destiny skillfully.

「I am a commoner, so I don't understand about how the king think. That's why, I also cannot deny the way Gruelle-san think. To always side with the advantageous direction for the sake of one's own country's benefit.....perhaps that is a correct decision that is only natural for the king.」

「Shia-dono is truly wise.」

「Shi, Shia.....」

The smile of his majesty Gruelle deepened. Shadow of despair colored the expression of his majesty Eric.

The next moment,

「But I refuse! Desuu!」

Shia's expression changed completely.

Her smile crumbled and the bewildered king Gruelle asked「Why?」.

「I'm unable to like such thing.」

「.....What do you mean?」

Shia proudly answered toward the dubious expression and words of his majesty Gruelle.

「There is also a person of dragon clan in my family. That person is always sincere. She is unshakeable. She honor righteousness, she would stake her life for the sake of benevolence, even if it's a stupid choice, she will never take back what she has decided.」

「.....」

「She who is like that hold the pride as the protector. We too proudly consider her as the one and only protector. Even though normally she is always fooling around, when the time comes, when it is necessary, she will always show her back to us. A back that is worthy for the princess of the dragon clan, a great, noble, sublime, and the most beautiful standing figure.」

Even though her voice was quiet, for some reason a terrific pressure could be felt from it. His majesty Gruelle lowered his hand from the pressure.

「For me, that is the kind of person a “dragon race” is.」

That single sentence spoke the story more eloquently than anything. His majesty Gruelle couldn't even be compared with "her".

No, more accurately if Shia's feeling was to be expressed, it would be "what a miserable state". Her feeling would be 'I'm amazed that someone like you is the same "dragon race" like "her", furthermore you are even introducing yourself as king'.

From the beginning she was unable to harbor good impression toward him for some reason was because of that. Shia's discerning eyes informed her that he wasn't a "dragon race" that she knew. And then, 「Aah, even though you are a "dragon race", don't show such appearance to me」 her instinct was feeling unpleasant. It was as though one of her important family was dirtied.

The sky was silent except for the sound of the blowing wind.

While no one was saying anything, Shia suddenly made a wide smile that blew away such atmosphere.

「*Beast king-san*, I apologize. I will go with Eric-san and everyone to persuade Oros-san!」

Behind her Eric made a guts pose that pierced to the sky. The inside of the carriage was getting roused up with 'hip hip hooray'.

His majesty Gruelle lost his smile from before and turned expressionless. Was he feeling rage from reading Shia's emotion? He was simply looking at Shia fixedly with colorless gaze.

Shia confirmed that Eric had returned inside the carriage and started Schutaif. She advanced in a way that went around his majesty Gruelle. Even when she passed beside him, in the end his majesty Gruelle only stared at Shia and didn't do anything.

In response to him who was like that, Shia stopped for a moment and looked across her shoulder before saying.

「Beast king-san, forgive my presumptuousness but will you allow me to speak about an experience of mine?」

「.....Speak.」

Shia listened with her rabbit ears to the beastmen standing by below that were getting into commotion that Shia and others were going to pass while she said.

「Certainly it might be stupid to go against the flow of the river. But, I also feel doubtful for those who only ride on the flow simply like leaf or searching only for gentle stream. Because, based on my experience, that kind of people——」  
——Have no future

Although his majesty Gruelle didn't know about Shia's vocation "Divination Master", something must have come in his mind seeing Shia's figure talking about the future. He didn't say any objection, and only slipped out 「Is that so.....」 while saying nothing else.

「Then! I pray that I will be able to meet everyone in a good future!」

‘What a thing to say to a king!’ Shia thought while smiling slightly shyly before driving Schutaif away fast.

Beastmen riding flying dragons were rising up from the forest one after another. His subordinates were calling out to him, however, his majesty Gruelle didn't reply.

He was simply watching the back of the leaving Shia silently.

.

.

「Your majesty-, the barrier won't hold anymore!!」

「Golem's emergence is sighted at the west gate! Three hundred in total-. The third defense corps is pushed back!!」

「The fourth and seventh spirit cannon corps are retreating from the front line due to running dry! Please send reinforcement!」

「Your majesty!! The sinking of the ground won't stop-, at this rate-」

「Messenger from captain HENZES of the eight defense corps! Intrusion from the breach, increasing! Many are injured!! The first defense line is abandoned!」

Hearing the reports about the unfavorable situation that were coming one

after another, his majesty the demon king Arogan was grinning fearlessly while getting cold sweat.

As a king, he absolutely couldn't show any fretfulness. But, soon he was about to become unable to avoid his fearless grin from spasming.

「Deploy all the defense corps. What about the repair of Tyrant?」

His majesty Arogan reduced a squad of celestial people whole outside the barrier from the viewing platform at the highest floor of the demon king castle while asking.

「It's seventy percent finished. Currently it's in the middle of getting re-erected. If it's fine to aim manually, it will be able to fire in ten more minutes.」

「Do it in five.」

Tyrant——the spirit weapon that the demon kingdom boasted of. It was a huge tower that reached 300 meter with shape like a tuning fork. It could absorb the spirits of the land, vibrated the spirit element in high speed and fired it. The spirit element itself couldn't endure the vibration and would immediately self-destruct, but in that moment it would indirectly create shockwave.

The power was something truly worthy as the crystallization of the demon kingdom's technology. When it was fired to all direction, anything inside the range of 1 kilometer around the capital, even a mass of rock would be pulverized indiscriminately. If the opponent was human, they would be driven into a state that was unable to battle even within the range of 2 kilometer.

If it was fired into a single direction, the power and range would increase even further. Previously, it was also this weapon that drove away the divine spirit of earth Oros. His large body that was two hundred meters high in total was pulverized many times.

Of course, Oros could regenerate as many times as he liked as long as there was ground so the demon kingdom couldn't win completely, but there was no doubt that it dealt a serious damage to a divine spirit.

Although, even that super weapon right now was destroyed by Oros's first attack and became unusable. Fortunately the damage wasn't fatal, so it would

be able to fire as long as the tower was raised with spirit art.

「However.....your majesty, is it alright? Using Tyrant will be a violation of the treaty regarding the salvation plan.」

A man in his prime with splendid moustache growing on his face——the confidant of his majesty Arogan, Barius——asked with a hesitant tone.

Collection and relinquishment of the spirit element refined within human body, prudence in using spirit element resource, and then directly pleading to the star tree to beg for coexistence with the spirits. Those were the gist of the salvation plan. Therefore, when the alliance of the three countries was formed, naturally the banning of the use of a weapon like Tyrant that thoroughly consumed vast amount of spirit element along with the spirits was one of the conditions.

If they used this nightmarish weapon once more, who in the world would believe the words 「We are reflecting. We will reform ourselves from now on.」 coming from their mouth. The salvation plan would be a failure when they used it. They had to resolve themselves for the demon kingdom to be isolated after using it.

Toward his anxious confidant, his majesty Arogan didn't slow down his attack toward the army of the celestial people while answering coldly.

「Barius. Look at our country.」

The capital was split. The ground was cracked in radiating shape like a spider web. The ground was split by Oros's first attack.

It seemed that Oros's slow pace was to invite negligence. The demon kingdom's attention was fixed into his gigantic body, while in actuality he sent small clone of himself for surprise attack. In order to first make Tyrant unusable above all else.

It was the demon kingdom's trump card, so the security for it was heavy. His majesty Arogan who immediately noticed Oros's clone immediately crushed it, because of that the Tyrant avoided complete destruction, but the shockwave greatly damaged the capital.

And then, severe earthquake was assaulting them even at this moment.

Oros's towering body was sending down fist on the barrier like a meteor. The powerful attack of spirit art from the army of celestial people that numbered of 2000 people was also attacking the barrier without pause. The size of the barrier was being reduced in every second.

In addition, small golems were physically tearing down the outer wall and flooded in. They clung on the barrier and started to recklessly attack like a battering ram.

Even inside the barrier there were golems swelling up from the cracks running on the ground. They couldn't help but to send battle force to the center of the capital. It was a situation where it wouldn't be strange for the inner part to collapse anytime.

Many citizens and soldiers were already parting from this present world.

The countdown toward the end of the country was starting.

「Should we perish graciously for the sake of the world's future? Foolish. Such outrage, that haughtiness of the god is unforgivable.」

For his majesty Arogon, he was planning to wait until the very limit. Right now in this world existed a way to cut through this situation without using Tyrant.

He didn't see it by himself so he couldn't be sure, but certainly there was a divine spirit of lightning cloud beside her who was so exhausted he couldn't even take human form.

If it was against a woman, no matter who they were they would lose the strength in their knees when his smile and words bathed them. But that beautiful, interesting girl wasn't only unperturbed, she even punched him.

If she and the divine spirit of lightning cloud held back Oros for them, then the possibility of realizing the salvation plan would <sup>buying</sup> <sup>time</sup> heighten drastically.

Although, there was no guarantee that reinforcement would come.

「Have your majesty considered the possibility of them abandoning us?」

「Do you think that lizard king who favor turncoat diplomacy won't admonish that inexperienced king?」

His majesty Arogan understood well how his country was seen, how they were evaluated by others, how was the personality of the kings of the other countries.

That was why he sent his projection to directly cajole the inexperienced Eric. And then, because the hero was unexpectedly a beautiful girl, he believed that the possibility of reinforcement would increase if he made her his captive and made advances on her. He never thought even at his wildest dream that a fist would fly into his face.

「If they abandon us, then we too will give up the salvation plan. In any case, everything will be over if we don't survive. If we are able have a way of thinking like contributing to the future by perishing, we wouldn't join something like salvation plan from the beginning.」

「It's just as your majesty say.」

The world of man had to be ruled by man.

They mustn't be controlled by the sense of values of god. Such unreasonableness couldn't be forgiven.

They mustn't be imprisoned by the old convention. Advancement and progress were exactly the characteristic of human. Existences that obstructed that couldn't be forgiven. They had to fight resolutely.

That was the fundamental values of the demon kingdom. It was the people who were charmed by those values who were the people of this country.

And then, the person who obeyed those values, who were given expectation by those values, and aimed to even further height was none other than the demon king Arogan Spervia Rated.

「Your majesty!! Oros is-」

「——」

A report was screamed.

When they looked there in surprise, the surrounding ground was undulating and bulging up. The soil became a high wave and massed into Oros. At the same time, Oros was enlarging in size even further.



「Impossible.....there is no record of this.」

Divine spirit ought to be opposed, so naturally the demon kingdom was researching them thoroughly. In the literatures, there was no record of Oros enlarging bigger than 400 meter. There was no such thing even in the legend and tales when the divine spirits were fighting enemy of the world called the outsiders or in the incidents when they were involved with the historical heroes.

Oros who finally reached an unprecedented enlargement of 600 meter which might never to be seen again in the future raised a sound that shook the air and he lifted both his arms. The joined hands became one which created a terrifically huge lump of rock. It was a giant fist that blocked even the sunlight.

「Reinforce the barrier!! Wring out all your strength!」

Things like calm order or fearless grin were all blown away at this moment. The order's volume that was magnified with spirit art was broadcasted around. The spirit artists who deployed and maintained the barrier poured their spirit element with deathly desperate look. Even his majesty Arogan poured his tremendous spirit element like water to reinforce the barrier.

But, in front of the god's crushing hammer, all that effort was just too transient.

There was a thunderous explosion as though the world was split.

The barrier showed an instant of opposition, but the next instant cracks ran through and it shattered like broken mirror.

A direct attack to the capital was barely avoided, but the spreading shockwave mowed down the citizens and soldiers. The buildings that were already brittle from before were blown away.

It was a great disaster that was truly like a falling meteor.

And yet, the divine punishment apparently wouldn't forgive them even at the slightest with just this much.

Shadow covered them. The huge shadow that blocked the sunlight.

「You bastard-, I won't let you-」

Extremely fierce light of spirit element burst out from his majesty Arogon who opened his eyes wide. It was an overwhelming torrent of power that was worthy for a demon king.

「Element is water, stream shape, distance seven, coordinate formula——”Raging Stream”」

Right after that, Oros who was holding aloft the crushing hammer was enveloped by water stream that suddenly manifested from empty air. It didn't look like the water itself had any particular effect, but the second attack that was immediately released——the freezing air froze the soaking wet Oros.

*Creak* Creaking sound resounded. The hammer that was going to fall exactly at that timing was stopped.

「Element is earth. Compressed state, distance seven, coordination formula——”Hades”.」

Right after that, the ground below Oros's feet immediately caved in. It was a bold attack that was opposing the divine spirit of earth by caving in the ground, however, it was enough to break Oros's balance coupled with his frozen state.

The ground shook with tremor and cloud of dust rolled up grandly while Oros fell on one knee.

「Element is mixed, the main is wind, the sub is flame. Converged shape, acceleration formula four times——”Flame Cluster”」

Wind growled and the air was filled with heat. Wind and flame were gathered and mixed in front of the hands that his majesty Arogon thrust out, showing radiance like plasma. The next moment, it was fired and exploded at the center of Oros without missing.

The instant it hit, explosion and shockwave surged and shook the air.

The cloud of dust was instantly cleared by the wind blast. Ahead, there was the figure of Oros with a large hole opened in his chest and his right half being partially destroyed. The power that partially destructed a giant with size bigger than 600 meter was terrifying. The power of the demon king was displayed fully here.

But,

「.....Good grief, even though I have used a third of the spirit element inside me, this is just too unreasonable.」

As expected, their base power was too different. With the sound *prang*, Oros broke through the freezing and gathered raw materials from the ground in the blink of eye, repairing his body.

『Repent』

A heavy voice that was like crawling out from the bottom of earth echoed. It was Oros's voice that they heard for the first time since this battle began.

*Gogogo*- Rumbling that was like the shaking of the ground was resounding while Oros's large body was rising up. He spoke while lifting up both his hands into a crushing hammer once more.

『O world, obtain peace』

「Divine spirit! Listen! We have prepared to repent!」

His majesty Arogan deployed a barrier while yelling once more the sentence they had been yelling all the time since the opening of the battle. However, Oros's movement didn't stop. The second crushing blow was descending from the sky.

It hit the barrier.

「Guuh」

He groaned while his peerless handsome face twisted, even so he poured all his strength into the barrier.

Surprisingly, the second divine punishment was deflected along with an explosive sound even though only barely. It seemed his majesty Arogan included the spirit art of wind blast just now into the barrier.

But, it seemed that his resistance only went that far. The demon king lost his strength and fell on one knee. His subordinates starting from Barius ran toward him, but their expression twisted into despair.

The hammer was already lifted up as though nothing had happened.

「The Tyrant!?!」

「-, Not yet-. The celestials are hindering them.」

It seemed that the trump card wouldn't make it in time. His aides, his own art, and his prided spirit weapon that he developed himself laid out multiple layers of barrier to protect the king.

But, most likely, no, undoubtedly their barrier would be unable to block the next attack.

Seeing the god's hammer was going to be dropped anytime toward a corner of the demon king palace where surely the demon king was located, all the soldiers and all the citizens were drowned in despair.

Other than the force whose objective was to destroy Tyrant, the celestial people had stopped attacking when the barrier of the capital was destroyed and they were looking down as though they were the witness to the divine punishment. Their expression was completely dyed with joy.

『For the sake of mother Lutria.』

Perish. He informed so and executed the divine punishment.

His majesty Arogan glared at the mass of rock that covered the sky and,

「Someday human-, will reach all of you bastards!! Remember that!!」

He yelled——

「SHAORAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!」

A piercing yell of fighting spirit surged up. What came flying like a streak of flash was a rabbit eared girl clad in bluish white radiance.

In opposition of the falling giant hammer of god, was a war hammer that although huge was only in the level that could be handled by human in the end.

The girl who stepped on midair with deep stepping sound brandished the war hammer behind her with her body twisting like a bow.....and she swung.

And then, it was blown back.

Without any petty trick. Without even any technique. Without even any spirit art or any mysterious phenomenon.

It was blown back simply by pure violence right from the front!

「.....Impossible.」

From the first time since he was born, his majesty Arogan's beautiful face crumbled into a stupid look.

Around him, there were Barius and others whose jaw dropped down so wide it felt like it would fall off. From here and there voices like 「Lies.....」 「Is this a dream」 that were escaping reality leaked out.

And then, Oros who was a divine spirit that embodied firmness also wasn't an exception.

『.....No way』

His posture was forced into banzai gesture and he hurriedly separated his hands that were fused into a crushing hammer. He recovered his balance with both hands while stepping back one step, two steps from the impact.

Ahead of the gaze of all these people, the rabbit eared girl——Shia was,

「Fuu, I barely made it in time.」

She swooped back her rabbit ears *fuasa*-. Vire Drucken tapped *tap tap*♪ on her shoulder. Bluish white magic power glittered and the hair that was the same color with the wind fluttered. The dreamy beautiful legs lightly stepped down.

Like a flower of wide petals blooming in the battlefield, she was so lovely to the degree it was like a joke.

「Now, Oros-san! Let's talk!」

Her voice resounded dignifiedly. That figure charmed the demon king, the people, and then, even the divine spirit.

.

.

At the same time.

「Nuooh」

A scream resounded inside the room. Hajime's body leaped up in shock.

He blinked inside the dim room with its curtain completely closed.

——Chu~, chu~

The light weight his body was feeling was something he was very familiar with. His memory was hazy, but he somehow recalled how he half-heartedly handled the no good vampire princess and dragged her to him.

When he turned his gaze that was in order to ascertain it.....

「.....Yue. She is doing her sleep sucking again.」

Sleep sucking——that was Yue-sama's bad habit (?). Just as the words meant, she was sucking while half-asleep. Even now she was hugging Hajime closely while her mouth sucked on Hajime's neck.

The sensation of her tongue crawling on his neck made him felt a bit of shivers. He looked at the curtain that had faint light shining in from it while feeling the sensation. It looked like the sun had slightly set.

He groped for his smartphone and made it display the time and he felt understanding. The time was about to reach four o'clock at the afternoon.

「So I slept for nearly six hours.....I must be really tired. I overestimated my toughness a bit too much.」

Like this, Shia was right telling him to rest, Hajime thought with a wry smile.

The sleep sucking that was continuing even now along with the sleep of nearly six hours made his head felt clear even though he just got woken up.

For the time being, he tickled Yue's side in the attempt to remove the sleep sucking. Yue let out a strange voice 「hahih」 and her mouth opened. Removal success.

Yue's hands wandered around as though to say 「Ha, Haijme whereee~」. Hajime smiled wryly at that while gently fixing the disordered hair of the waking up Yue.

At the same time, he felt a presence inside the house and tried searching in detail.

「Tio and Remia, and Myuu too had come home.....Kaa-san is also here. ....

Shia is, not home yet?」

He didn't find Shia's presence. It appeared she still hadn't come back from the Akiba battlefield.

He checked his smartphone, but there was also no call from her.

「.....She is looking around that place really enthusiastically huh.」

He tried saying that to himself but, somehow, really for some reason his chest felt a vague uneasiness.

It felt like his head that was cleared throughout the rest was raising an alert.

Hajime wordlessly took out the compass from his "Treasure Warehouse". Perhaps noticing that Hajime's presence that turned sharp, Yue woke up in a snap.

「.....Hajime? What's the matter?」

「Shia still hasn't come home.」

Yue looked at the clock and tilted her head slightly. There was still some time before dinner. The time was only slightly entering evening. She wondered what the problem was.

From a glance, Hajime could be seen as a fiercely possessive boyfriend who confirmed with GPS her girlfriend's location in succession as though he wanted to constantly grasp her position.....

Naturally, Yue didn't have such thinking. Hajime was getting serious about Shia even if only slightly. It wouldn't be strange no matter what happened. She immediately woke up fully and be still while waiting for Hajime's words.

Hajime's magic power surged and the compass activated. It loyally carried out his order to search for Shia's location.

But.....

「Tsu, no, reaction?」

「.....Hajime?」

The compass's effective range was in proportion with the amount of magic power poured into it.

With the magic power he poured right now, just a mere distance from here to Akiba, no, even if it was anywhere in Japan the compass would be able to cover it. And yet, there was no reaction. Shia wasn't within the search range.

Hajime leaped down from the bed and his magic power surged even more. As expected, there was no way the activation of magic power that tremendous would be unnoticed. Downstairs he could feel Tio was taken aback. The sound of her immediately going up the stairs in hurry could be heard.

The door was opened loudly *bam* and Tio entered.

「What's the matter, Goshujin-sama. What art——」

Tio asked forcefully, but seeing Hajime's tense atmosphere and Yue's serious expression, she immediately closed her mouth so to not disturb their focus.

A beat later, Hajime opened his closed eyes.

*Shiver-*, Tio's spine shuddered. Hajime's other face that she hadn't seen for a long time——the face of the godslaying demon king was there.

「Coincidence? Or else a deliberate act?」

The others must be curious of Tio's hurried look and followed after her. Remia, Myuu, and then even Sumire and Shuu peeped inside and their eyes opened wide.

「.....Hajime. Shia?」

「She isn't in earth. She is in another world that isn't Tortus.」

「Muh, doth that mean she was summoned by someone?」

Hajime shook his head. He must mean that he didn't know.

‘But’, Hajime continued.

「If that's the case, kuku-. Just whose woman do they think they are taking away without permission.....I've gotta make sure that they thoroughly pay their debt.」

「Tha, tha-tha, that's right Goshujin-sama.」

Tio pressed her hands in prayer inside her heart. If Shia was sent into another world accidentally because the border that separated the worlds were shaking



or something, then that was still alright. But if that wasn't the case.....'then those people really hath done something stupid. I wouldst at least pray for their happiness in the afterlife.', Tio thought.

「Tio, call Kaori and others. Our magic power stock is unreliable after the previous gate opening. In preparation of the worst case, I want to keep in reserve a stock of magic crystal so we will be able to return right away.」

「We art going to collect the stock for going there from those with magic power? So it's not enough with just us, Shia hast been sent to a really far away place.」

Tio immediately began to contact Kaori and others. Myuu's face peeked out from Tio's side.

「Papa.....Shia-oneechan, she is alright?」

Next, Remia, Sumire, and Shuu too were asking worriedly. Hajime shrugged and answered.

「No way that bugged rabbit will get done is that easily. We are going to bring her home before dinner, so don't worry.」

「Yes nano!」

「Certainly, this is Shia-oneechan we are talking about! Much less god, even if the whole myth come attacking she will flatten everything and come home like normal! Rather, it feels like she will even be in good mood from a mortal combat with god of war that make her blood boil and her flesh dance! Nano!', Myuu replied energetically.

Myuu's smiling face made Hajime said 「Ri, right. You really get it, Myuu」 and he nodded while feeling slightly creeped out.

From how her 'nano' was said with forced timing, somehow it felt like Myuu's relationship with Shia was the best among all the big sisters, or rather it felt like she received the biggest influence from Shia. If before long Myuu started saying things like 「Go fly till the moon! Nano!」 or 「Right now, Myuu become the wind! Nano!」 while riding bike, what should he do.....Hajime papa thought with worry.

While that was going on, multiple magic power reactions came from inside the house. Kaori and others who received the call must have used their personal gate key to teleport here.

Hajime patted Myuu's head while switching his feeling. From a model Japanese who loved peace, to demon king mode that would kill even god if it was necessary.

He gazed at empty air and thought of his beloved family. Since when did she vanish? When he thought that it happened while he was fast asleep, a killing intent that was targeted to even himself was welling up. Surely even right at this moment she was waiting for their arrival impatiently.

「My bad, Shia. I'm going there now.」

It was a proclamation that was dripping with rage that although small, was overflowing.

Five minutes later.

The godslaying demon king teleported to the world that kidnapped his bunny wife.

.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

About Shia arc, apparently there are a lot of the readers who got vexed by it, my apologizes. It really makes me keenly realize my inexperience (sweat). I will do my best to make everyone's attachment to Shia to bloom profusely, so I beg you all to please not abandon [Arifure] even from here on and take care of it.

.

PS 1

I noticed from the comment I received, I made a mistake with the timeline of Brutal Hero Shia arc. I didn't consider the time difference from the several

hours Shia spent in Akiba, I'm sorry! I will revise the needed sections. It's complicated so generally it will be like the following below (in my mind). Please use it as reference.

[Shia side] [Hajime side]

10:00 (Going out) 10:00

| 2h | 2h

12:00 (summoning) 12:00 (Hajime sleeping, Yue hugging her knees)

0:00 (Time after summoning) |

| 8h | 2h

8:00 (The pickup ain't coming) 14:00 (Ignoring Yue's worry, sleeping again)

| 1 h |

9:00 (Bathing, splattering demon king, etc) |

| 3h | 2 h

12:00 (Thunder god hammer creation failed) |

| 4h |

16:00 (Arriving in demon kingdom) Around 16:00 (Hajime, turning back into demon king)

To everyone who informed me of the timeline, thank you very much.

.

PS 2

Actually this month, I'm right at the midst of publication work, perhaps the update for next week will be difficult. I want to go limit break and update as much as possible, but if there is no update it will help if everyone can understand that Shirakome has entered Level X and has no spare strength. The week after that.....should be alright. Best regards.

.

PS 3

Brutal Hero Shia arc is far before the traveling date with Shia arc. And so I think there is many inconsistencies but, it will help if everyone can be magnanimous. It will be great if I can deal with it like the other timeline inconsistencies in my activity report that were pointed out by everyone. Forgive me for always doing whatever I please following the momentum!

.

PS 4

About Shia's breaking the fourth wall that was alluded last chapter, Shirakome's image is like Odonge that came out in the video called GF2 in Niconico douga. ㊥p㊥-sama, thank you for the magnificent creation! Everyone too please go take a look no matter what!

.

PS 5

Salmon sandwich was sold in Seven Eleven-san!